



Chosen by a Friend.

R.R
Motsepa

"It's him ...the tiger in
my dreams "

Chapter #1

Her: (crying) Please Rose ..let me go

Rose:(crying) No ...I cant ..

Her: (crying) you have to let go and that way -you will live a better life

Rose: (crying) I dont want it ,I want you

Her: (crying) You have to let go ,your hurting me .Please..

Rose: (crying) Nakedi noo!

...

Rose popped her head off the pillow with sweat all over her face and a pounding heart screaming "Nakedi". Her eyes wondered around her elegant room only to find herself only there .It was already morning and another day without her best friend. Tears filled her eyes as she broke down crying .It has been four years but it feels like yesterday. This

incident blocked her way forward and she see's Nakedi around the house. She rarely smile. Nothing seems to be able to lighten up her mood and tickle her for her to let out her pleasant giggles ever since. Her parents tried with gifts and taking her to their events, fashion shows and all those trips that rich people go to ,but it seemed to be slowly building walls around her heart and painting her blood black .Her only wish was to wake up with Nakedi by her side .

She tried running away and sneaking out but they always found her before she could get any further. Even people around her were never able to make her lough nor smile a bit .

She was rich with nails ,had everything but in the inside-she was screaming on top of her lungs with no one-no one to help .

He rolled off the bed in tears and went to her insuit where everything was neatly beautiful, her towels

were all white and it surely smelled girly .She stripped naked and opened the cold shower crying under it .The cold water poured from her head and down licking her smooth, radiant skin .

After few mins she stepped out and dried herself before applying a lotion and got dressed in her classy clothes. She grabbed her phone and went downstairs greeting everyone she met on her way down . She reached the table and sat down with her parents who were already ready for work.

Her:(slowly) morning

Them: Morning darling/ morning princess

She served herself and started eating as her parents looked at her.

Mother: How are you today baby?

Rose: Fine , I'm..fine

Father: You sure?

Rose: (nodding)

Mother: Hunny you dont look fine to me ,you look pale .Talk to me .

Rose: I said I'm fine mom ! Can't I have peace? At least once so that I can have my breakfast in peace! Is that too to much to ask for ?!

Father:(half shouted) Rose! That's not a good way to talk to your mother, apologize!

Mother: No it ohk ..it ohk (to Rose) Sorry baby ..I didn't mean to upset you.

Rose: I'm sorry too .I lost my appetite (stood up) have a good day .

With that she walked up the stairs to her room and opened her laptop then attended online classes.

Meanwhile downstairs...Her mother looked at her

father who seemed not to be bothered that his daughter is slowly fading.

Mother: (scoff) So you're seriously going to ignore what just happened?

Father: What? Rose needs to forget about that girl and understand that I'm also trying to protect her from the world out there, it's not safe. She needs to get that that friend of hers is dead and six feet under and she'll never see her again, she's no more. She needs to grow up.

Mother: Jack!. Protect her from the world out there? For what? Do you even know nor realise how long she's been locked up in here? She never even got the chance to enjoy her teen years. She never got the chance to make new friends. She never got the chance to- DATE!

Father: No daughter of mine is going to date until she's 35 and Rose is still 18. That means not in the next 17 years. Or if she wants to date, I'll personally look for a boy for her. That way I'll also be saving

her the heartbreak. If she wanted to those friends
you're talking about, she would have had them by
now.

Mother: Are you nuts?! How will she when she's
locked up like an animal? Do you even hear yourself?
You want to arrange my daughter's marriage? I'm a silly
woman? Over my dead body Jack! You hear me
?Over my dead body!

Father: Watch your words! Who said anything
about marriage? You're twisting my words.

Mother: Wow!

With that she stood up and went to take her bags on
the couch.

Father: What about your breakfast?

Mother: I lost my appetite. I'm off to work, have a
nice day.

Father: I thought I was going to drop you off?

Mother:(scoff) Helang! You know what - Thanks but I think I'll drive myself today.

She left leaving him alone on the table full table .He sighed then snapped his fingers and asked the maids to clear the table then stood up and took his brief then left .

In a Cruise

Abigail leaned on the balcony only in her silky gown and watched over the ocean as the the cruise drove along .It was a beautiful morning. She took a deep breath inhaling the morning ocean air .She felt bold arms wrap around her tiny body and comfort, safety along with love covered her .It was Breeze.

Breeze : Morning ..

Gail: Morning

Breeze: how are you ?

Gail: I'm good and you baby?

Breeze : im also good.

The was a moment of silence as they both looked over the ocean.

Breeze: I wish Sagi was here with us and the vacation starting so that we could have our time alone.

Gail: Same here, but the Enterprise won't run its elf, we cant put our full trust on Sam and Billy. On the other hand Sagi ,we left her alone ,running this things by her self. She must be depressed by now .

Breeze: Yeah she must be ...

Gail: (turned with a concerned face) I'm worried about her (teary)

Breeze: I know...but cant we make this a bit longer ?Sagi can handle the Club, Farm and Enterprise.

Besides she can pull all the jobs more than anyone and do good .Common bbe I beg you .

Gail: No ...and you promised to sell the vlob .I feel cozy about this .I don't like her around all those thugs ,I know she knows and able to take care of herself but I don't like it .

Breeze: I understand you and I totally hear you but baby that club is my baby ,the only thing I started from scratch until it was one of the highest clubs in the country, the one that fed and raised me when my family was fucked .

Gail: And Sagi is your wife Breeze! (calming) ohk..I get you ...but can you please find her a better place to work ?That way she won't be risking her life each day .

Breeze took a deep look in her eyes and for some reason he felt what she was saying. He let go of her waist and leaned on the balcony as the soft air hit softly on his skin .His second wife has always been the one to take bullets for him now and then .The

one who was stronger than them all and also fearless. The one that always hid her pain just to make sure their all fine ,wouldn't it be good to consider?

Gail:J ust think about it ohk..?

She kissed his back and walked back inside leaving him in thoughts.

At the Taxi Rank

It was always busy as always. People running up and down looking for the right taxis to get to their destination. On the other side of the road ,there would usually be people who sell fruits, vatkoekes ,cigarettes, coffee or tea and also snacks to be able to feed their families back at home .On the corner of de rank there would be a group of man gambling.

On the side of the road-a young man looked sideways before crossing the road checking his pockets heading to the gambling corner. He took out R10 and looked at the board and today they started with spinning. He searched his back pocket and there were two five rams coins. An older man span his coin then he quickly put down his with tails and swallowed as more people put head since the first one put heads .The old man looked at the ten of them who put the money and smiled b4 quickly removing his hands and frowned looking at the tails .Kagiso quickly grabbed the money and smiled as everyone looked at him pissed .He frowned looking at them and took one cone and span then everyone put money on the board but six of them won all the money and shared it .

Later around 15h00 -They were now playing dice and carss .After he failed twice ,Kagiso went to the bathroom and his R600 in his safe pocket in his boxers and went out zipping his pants to cover up .He went over with only R50 and played until they

thought he had nothing left them still paying.

On his way he passed by the shop and bought vegetables, fruits, meal and bread then he left .

He got home and found his sick mother on the ground crying and begging as 4 men threw their stuff out of the house. He threw everything down and ran to his mother and hugged her .

Kg: What are you doing? You can't do that !

Man: You haven't paid your rent and you know you have to pay the rent in the first 2 weeks or you're out!

Kg : But man I told you I was gonna pay you .Here!

He stood up and went to his bag and took out R200 and added it with the R400 he earned today then gave it to him .The man counted the money and looked at him with a smirk .He rubbed Kagiso's

shoulder and Kagiso slapped it off then the man called his man and they walked out of the yard. Kagiso looked at them as they walked out when he spotted a girl in a white dress that was below his knees. She had long hair looking towards him but her face wasn't clear. His mother choked from the tears ,he quickly went to her and held her hand taking her into the house while she cried. He helped her lay on the old bed and went to get the rest of their stuff outside .He looked at the side of the road and the girls wasn't there anymore, probably caught a taxi .He sighed and went back inside with their stuff and packed them back before he started cooking.

After a while he served his mother and went to sit on the stoop and ate his . His eyes welled up with tears to the thought that his mother could leave him anytime and he'll be left with no one but himself. He has to find a way to make money everyday and buy her medication or she could get worse.He had applied for jobs but still there wasn't any response even today .He rubbed his tears and swallowed

before starting to eat .

Kagiso: (low)I guess I have to go back to stealing from people's houses .Police wouldn't always catch me .Gatta do what I gatta do ..

- .
- .
- .
- .

.And there we go ! Our first chapter of the story ,hope you like it .If not drop your feelings on the comment section and I'll try again.

Like, share and COMMENT

[08/02, 13:18] Lynne : Chapter #2

The next morning Kagiso tossed yo his mothers rankled beautiful face .Though she was a bit darker

,he could see a bit of himself there .He kissed her forehead and got off the bed and went outside to fetch water and used premas tove to warm it .When it was wa he poured in a bath dish and bathed whole his mother was still asleep. After few mins he applied lotion and got dressed .Though he wasn't rich ,he's clothespins ware always tidy and he smelled fresh .He brushed his hair and put on a cap before disposing the water .He came back and prepared a porridge and ate before saying his good byes .

Kg: Mom ,mama ?

Her:(sleepy) mmhh?

Kg: I'm going to the side of the road at the mall .I'll see you when I get back .

Her: Oh ..please take care of yourself, dont worry about me .

Kg: You know I will ..and dpnt forget to take your medication were making progress here .

Her: I wont .

Kg: Ohk bye ,love you .

Her: Love you too .

With that he went out the door .It felt really heartbreaking everytime he left her behind all by herself. No one in the neighborhood ever accepted them .And ..he couldn't blame them after all the troubles he's coused just to put bread on the table .He arrived at a taxi rank and climbed a taxi and after a while it was full and it left .

He got off and went to stand on the side of the road with other man who tried to stop cars for a piece job .

Guy: Hey man ,what's up?

Kg: Good man ,you ?

Guy: I'm good .Demn you look good ,they're going to choose you as always.

Kg: (chuckles)why do you say that ?

Guy: Common dude everytime when your here your the only one they pick . They even ask about you when your not here .Last week non of us was picked because all of them said they wanted you .

Kg: You lie

Guy: I'm serious. Man you should find a real job using that .Tell them to hire you instead of them going around looking for someone to do so .

Kg: They wouldn't.

Guy: They will.From the point of view you seem like you put effort and hard work in what you do and that's why they want you most of the time to do the work .

Kg: Nah man I don't think so .

A luxury car stopped and everyone else ran over .The window opened and the lady looked at all of them with too much makeup on while chewing a gum .

Her : I'm looking for someone who can fix broken pipes .Any one here ?

Man: I can .

Her: Ohk get in .

Everyone else stepped back and the man got in the car and the lady stopped looking at them .

Her: anyone who knows how to trim ?

Everyone:I can

[08/02, 13:19] Lynne : Continuation#2

Lady: Anyone who can trim?

Everyone: I can.

The lady looked at them before choosing an elder man then he got in before she drove off. Kagiso

looked at the car as it disappeared and coming to think of it ,that was his dream car made him think even lesser of himself. Was he ever going to be able to be like any other people his age . I mean he's already 22 with no plan or lead to his way forward to success. Always its him on the streets, he doesn't even remember how it's like to spend the whole day at your place with no worries on what your going to eat tomorrow,clothes and shelter. He sighed before looking up the sky then went to join other man as they tried stopping cars . A bus slowly drove by to on the other side of the road and stopped at the bus stop and opened the door. His eyes ran to the bus when they landed on a girl sitting by the window looking toward him and still even today her face wasn't clear . He looked at other windows and other people were clear and when he looked where the girl was, she wasn't there but a an old man . His heart skipped when he looked around to see if anyone else saw that but nop ,they were focused on what they were doing. He thought maybe it was his mind playing tricks with him when he shook it off and continued trying to

stop cars.

AT THE LYONS MANSION.

Around 3h00pm, Rose stood on her balcony looking down at the helpers as they loughed, high-fived and playfully hit each other .Them calling each other friends and teasing each other . How free they looked .She bit her lower lip as picture of her friend laying helplessly on that hospital bed popped right infront of her eyes . That girl was more than just a friend to her but family , more like a sister. The only person she was able to communicate with freely so . The only friend she ever had since childhood . Nakedi was a joyful , delightful and contented girl and when she loughed ,she loughed like a baby. She was always pleased and cheerful and right that was the reason why she couldn't see the pain she was carrying. Fighting cancer and rape at the same time . She could only imagine the pain . Nakedi was always the first person to see when she was not

ohk but she couldn't . She couldn't see her even when she was on a break down nor see a clue that her friend was going through the most .So much for a good friend . Her cracking voice when she told her she "couldn't take it anymore" laying there . The way her bones showed up and her under eyes with no hair. How she told her "the pain was too much " . When the doctors came in and tried escorting her while she held on to Nakedi's motionless body screaming her lungs out . All that came before her eyes like a movie as tears burned her eyes .She went back to her room and picked Nakedi's picture on her study table and hugged a dear life out of it .She screamed her name melting down her fluffy carpet crying out loud .

Rose:(crying) I'm so so sorry. Come back..

#At A CRUISE PARKING

Breeze put one hand in the pocket while another

one held Gail's waist carefully helping her off the boat leading her to the car . She fixed her shades as the wind took her summer dress and got in the car . They were now the center of attention course most people will turn on their toes looking at them . Must be fun being born into the Lyons family, well at least that's what they thought . The guards put the bags in the trunk and gave Breeze the keys and he drove off . The guards went to theirs and sped after them . Breeze took off his shades and pulled Gail's hand and kissed it .

Breeze: (smiling) Your so beautiful you know that?

Gail: (blushing) you tell me almost like everyday.

Breeze: and I'll continue reminding you . Your a part of me ,my heartbeat.

Gail: and Sagi?

Breeze: There wouldn't be a heartbeat without a heart right?. If there is no heart there wont be a heartbeat and if there's no heartbeat the heart will die. So you both complete me babe .

Gail: Ncoow you miss her ?

Breeze: Very !

Gail: I miss her too. I cant wait to see what she has prepared, I'm sure she outdid herself. She's a great cook.

Breeze: you both are . I love you babe.

Gail: I love you too .

He kissed her hand and stepped on the accelerator as she giggled while the guards sped after them trying to catch up .

#AT BREEZES HOUSE

Sagi took the cooking spoon and scooped soup from the pot and tasted, she slowly rose her head from the spoon taking in the deliciousness down her throat . She smiled impressed and took a table bowl and poured the stew before taking it to the

dinner table that already had different kind of delicious dishes. She nicely placed it down and put the dish cloth on her shoulder holding her waist smiling impressed. She covers the food and went back to the kitchen to wash the dishes she was using before going to take a shower.

.

After a while she walked downstairs wearing buddy outfit with wet hair talking over the phone.

Sagi: Olebile I told you that Breeze is on his way and he'll see you tomorrow. Why do you keep insisting that I should tell you to expand? I know nothing about this shit he put on my desk all I know is attending meetings and reporting. I know nothing about Russians being the suppliers or whom ever fuck that is. I distribute I dont give orders.

Olebile: Yeah your right you distribute, but please girl, give the word out were losing profusion money here. If you do this the supply will be high and that way well make -

Sagi: Dude no! I dont want this to blow in my face , I dont want to get punished for some shitty shit dealings I know shit about . I let Breeze know about this so you guys can talk it out though I know he wont agree to this course recently there was an arrest of Danger .They found bricks in his trunk Olus he was high. So please do push me to do something I'll regret doing .

She hang up before he could go any further and poured herself wine anxiously waiting.

On the side of the road.

The sun was scorching hot when Kagiso lifted his shirt and wiped the sweat off his face and took off his cap fanning himself. He put in back on and saw a sport car approaching when he lifted his hand trying to stop them . His face dropped from the speed slowly this guy wont slow down and hear him out . Great he was with a girl ,no wonder . The car

passed with high speed followed by what seemed like their guards . He sighed and looked around him ,it was only him self . He sighed and tried one more time but no one stopped. He eventually gave up and walked to the rank searching his pockets and he only had money for return. He saw a man standing by his taxi and today was one of those dire desperate days for money to him . He swallowed before walking towards him .

Kg: Dumelang .

Man: Goreng monna?

Kg: uhm ..a gore selo . Eer malome I'm looking for a piece job .

Man: Nah boyza today those other boys had already washed it as you can see but come back after a day ,i promise I'll give you a turn for R50 .

Kg:(bit lip) kea leboga malome .

Man: xap motlogolo.

Kagiso looked around and all this taxis here were clean . He spotted an elder woman sewing with a table of fruits by her side. He took a short prayer in his heart and walked over to her .

Kg: Thobela bagolo.

Woman: thobela ngwanaka , how are you?

Kg:I'm good but (heavily sighed) not really.

Woman: What's wrong aren't you here to buy something ?

Kg: no ..I am looking for a piece job .

Woman: oh I'm sor-

Kg:(bowing) I'm desperate hle mma . I, I have a sick mother at home and I(teary) and I'm the only one she has and she's depending on me . I need the money even if its R5 to add so that i can buy her medication. Anytime soon she might leave me . The doctor said i should make sure she takes her medication daily. I know bringing this up wont make a way for me but please mma , I need help . I could

do anything, anything. I can even wash clothes, dishes, clean yards, massage, dig toilets or clean them, mma ease help. I have a lot to cover in a month plus rent or we will end up under a bridge again. Please help me, even if it's not you help me find one mma I'm beg you. (teary)

Just the tone of his voice brought tears to the woman's eyes as she stared into his teary desperate eyes. Only if she had a child who cared this much about her instead of sleeping around and being brought back in different cars. Him bowing down like that holding the old woman's hand caught people's eyes but he cared less. The woman noticed all the eyes and stood up and held Kagiso's shoulders helping him stand and for some reason she felt like giving him a hug and hugged him. Care and understanding covered Kagiso as tears rolled down his cheek.

.

.

. Comment for more

.

[08/02, 13:20] Lynne : Chapter 3

Still hugging, the woman felt his tears wetting her on the back and waited a few more minutes until he calmed then they broke the hug . He wiped his tears and looked at the woman who gave her a crate and they both sat down . This boy was clean to be the one crying and begging strangers for help. He had long hair that was plated cornrows and he was light skinned. She never saw a man looking good with plated hair until today . She thought they were crazy but today it was proven otherwise course this one changed the declaration. She smiled wondering who the woman was who gave birth to such a boy who loved her to that extent.

Woman: have you eaten anything?

Kg: aowa mma.

Woman: you can have a banana ,apple and that piece of a watermelon there . I'm sure it'll balance.

Kagiso looked at her and she smiled at him and he returned it before doing as he was told . The woman gave him a table knife so he can be able to cut the watermelon . After he ate his stomach was satisfied and he went to throw the peels in the trash bin and came back sitting down.

Woman: You ohk ? Your full?

Kg: yes thanks a lot mma.

Woman: your welcome my boy . My name is Sylvia Kani .

Kg: oh sorry ,I'm Kagiso Mokwena .

Sylvia: ohk. So my boy this is all I can offer you I have nothing else . You'll be helping me with the table while I make dresses and beads . I know it's not what you expected but this is all I can help with .

Kg:(smiling) thank you so much . It's more than

what I expected thank you.

Sylvia: you're welcome my boy .

They continued chatting trying to know each other as more customers came . Around 5pm they packed everything put them in a wheel barrow and Kagiso pushed it to Sylvia's house . When they got there he helped her put everything inside and walked out .

Sylvia: here, take this and add to your mothers medication money . Take two apples and bananas for her .

Kg: thank you but you already did enough and I really appreciate your-

Sylvia: Your so disrespectful my boy . Don't you know that you cant decline an elders gift ?

Kg: I uhm ..

Sylvia: (loughs) take it before I slap you .

They loughed and he took the R50 and the fruits before they hugged and he left to the rank ,cought a taxi and went home.

.

After a while he got off the taxi infront of his gate and he payed the driver before he drove off . He got in and closed the gate and went to the house and knocked . He knocked several times and when there was no response he walked in with a pounding heart. The candle was not lit and the house was dark . He lit the candle and looked around when he saw his mother laying on the bed . He walkd over calling her and gently shook her as he felt his heart beating hard on his chest .

Kg: mama ? Mama?

Her: (sleepy) mmhh ..

He heavily breathed out and touched his chest

before smiling and looked at her as she turned looking at him then smiled.

Her: (smiling) your back? You've been gone the whole day, I was so worried about you.

Kg: yeah I'm sorry about that.

Her: its ohk.

Kg: Did you have your medication?

Her: I did. I hope I get better soon.

Kg: you will. Have you eaten anything?

Her: yeah, I even tried cooking pap and cabbage. Have you?

Kg: mmmh yep.

He walked to the pots and opened them before serving himself. He went to wash his hands in a bowl and came back then started eating sitting on plastic chair.

Mother: you should take a bath , you smell sweat.

Kg: (loughs) no I'm not going to bath today .

Her: you are or your sleeping on the floor. Your not entering this bed smelling like that and I told you not to stand so long on the sun and I'm sure you did . Hunny you'll bleed, you know that.

Kg: yeah I know. I wont stand on the sun I promise.

Her: great. So how was your day ?

Kg: it was drowsy but I managed to find a little job that will keep us going for now . I will be working to sell fruits with mme Sylvia. She was kind enough to let me hustle with her .

Her: oh ..may God bless her . Please thank her for me and I'll go thank her when I feel better.

Kg: I will mom .

#At Breezes house

Sagi played a game on her phone laying on the couch when the door opened. She threw her phone on the other couch and ran across the room to the door. Breeze walked in pulling the case but dropped it when he saw Sagi running over and caught her. She wrapped her legs around his waist and they tightly hugged before they leaned in for a passionate kiss. Breeze wrapped his hands on her thighs balancing her before breaking the kiss.

Breeze: hey smucles.

Sagi: hey baby. How are you?

Breeze: now I can fully say im good. And you?

Sagi: I can say the same.

They kissed one more time and she slid down. Gail walked in and she went to her hugging her and pulled her face French kissing her and broke it.

Gail: ohk someone missed me.

Sagi: a lot . Let me help you with that .

They helped each other with the bags while Breeze pulled the bigger one and they went to put them upstairs and came back to the dinner table.

They all settled down and Sagi opened the food . The aroma hit their noses and their mouth watered instantly. They served themselves and poured whine .

Gail: baby say grace.

Breeze: (choked) excuse me what?

Sagi: say grace its your turn .

Breeze: common wives . The man of the house just returned and already your saying I should pray? .
Where will I start?

Sagi: how ever you want .

Breeze: I'm a sinner he wont listen to me.

Gail: who said so ?

Breeze looked at them , and yep they were serious.

Breeze: ohk let's raise our glasses .

Sagi:(loughs) raise our glasses for what ?

Breeze: you girls said I should pray and when I say raise your glasses you ask why ?

Gail: We aren't praying gangsterism here why should we raise glasses?

Breeze: so should I say bow your heads ?

Sagi: and hold hands babe.

Breeze: ohk ...let's bow our heads and hold hands .
You guys are making me your pastor.

Gail: just pray.

They all bowed their heads and waited for about a min without Breeze praying when the girls rose their heads looking at him bowing his head without

saying anything. They laughed cursing him to raise his head looking at them with a smile .

Breeze: and Aman. You girls aren't well mannered ,why are you laughing while I'm praying?

Gail: you weren't praying.

Breeze: I was .

They laughed and asked him to pray again but he refused so Gail prayed and they started eating while chatting.

At the Lyons Mansion

Rose's mother Jane ,walked passed her daughter's room and stopped on her toes looking at her door . She hasn't seen her today. She walked over and knocked but there was no response. She slightly opened the door and walked in switching on the

light . She turned and found laying on the bed facing the ceiling then she walked over sitting on the edge .

Not knowing what to say she layed next to her also facing the ceiling. Rose turned her head looking at her .

Rose: mom are you ohk?

J ane: Are you?

Rose: yeah...I'm fine.

J ane: baby...you know you can always talk to me right (facing her) I can see that your not alright. I've been pretending to be strong thinking you'll get on your feet but hunny not only are you hurting, your hurting me your mother . I get hurt seeing you like this . Everytime I pass this room and hear you sobbing , you dont understand how much heartbreak it puts me through. I know what I'm about to say will sound vigor but hunny, she's gone . She's no more and there's nothing we can do about that . I wish it was possible to bring the dead back

but it's not. Nakedi is gone ,gone and never to be seen again .

Rose: (teary) mom stop rubbing it in .

She stood up and Jane rose her upper body looking at her .

Jane: it's true and you have to -

Rose:(crying) mom stop ! You said enough already!

As she was about to say something her father Jack entered the room and looked at them then at Rose . Rose's heart cracked before he could say any5course surely whatever is going to come out of that mouth was no good. Not good at all .

Jack: Rose ? What's wrong ?

Rose: nothing dad .

Jack: doesn't look like nothing when you have a river flowing on your cheeks. Hunny what's wrong?

Jane: nothing, we were just having a mother and daughter conversation and I guess I pushed too hard-

Rose: (crying) you pushed more than hard mom ! That was my-

Jack: so it's about that stupid girl. Rose what's wrong with you , now your overdoing it my girl. No one mouns for over a year especially for a friend. Baby get it into your thick skull "Shes dead and six feet under " shes no longer available.

Jane :Woaw ! I think you also said more than enough. Let's get out of here .Hunny get some sleep and well talk tomorrow.

Rose: I hate you both ,how could you!

Jack: Rose ! She's dead ! You buried her ! Stop with your nonsense and find other friends if you want them . We cant keep pampering you like your still a baby or you just lost her . We also lost friends that we grew up with from when we were 6 but we

managed to move on. You're not giving that girl peace, let her go. When the sun rises tomorrow I don't want to hear anything about that stupid girl anymore in my house. And if you cry, make sure that you cry for a reasonable thing, of course, if it's that girl, I promise to give you the most hurting punishment you won't even think of shedding a tear ever again. You're 18, for Christ's sake!

Rose stood there as her throat dried and tears streamed down her cheeks, looking at her furious father, not blinking. Jane's tears burned her eyes, and she exited the room to the main bedroom with tears rolling down her cheek. The fear and hatred in her daughter's eyes.

Back in Rose's room, Jack looked at her and went to take Naledi's framed picture as Rose looked at him.

Jack: This is the thing that keeps you crying now and then? A picture?

Rose:(crying)Dad please put it down, I promise I

wont ever cry again ,please put it back. Please ..

She said that quickly wiping her tears and put her hands together begging him .She fearfully went over looking in his angry eyes and with shaky hands she took the picture from his grip and held on to it .

Jack: hunny I love you but if I have to do this for you to be yourself again I will.

Rose:I know .

Jack: wipe your tears and go to sleep . Good night .

He opened the blankets for her then she got in still holding that picture and he covered her kissing her forehead and left switching off the lights . Rose put the picture on the headboard and looked at it as tears rolled down to the pillow. Somehow she wondered if her father was right or he was just talking out of hatred for her friend . She closed her

eyes trying to stop the tears while in thoughts and eventually fell asleep.

.

.

.

Comment for another one

.

.

[08/02, 13:20] Lynne : #Chapter 4

#At Kagiso's house

Early in the morning, Kagiso looked at himself on the cracked mirror before taking a brush and brushed his hair then put it back wearing a cap . He went to dispose the water and came back making himself a cup of tea and sat down getting lost in thoughts . His mother tossed and turned and finally opened her eyes and looked at him with the cup on

his lips . She lifted her upper body and balanced with her elbows looking at him .

Her: Hey ..

Kg:

Her:Kagiso ?

Kg: ...

Her: Hei wena!

Kg: Huh?

Her: Who is she ?

Kg:Who is who ?

Her: the girl your thinking about. The one making you stare out space consuming your mind like that .

Kg: (scoffs) No one mom .

He said that standing up and washed the cup in a bowl and wiped it putting it back . He turned to his mother looking at him and she had that " I dont

believe you " look on her face . He walked over and went on one knee looking at her .

Kg: What ?

Her: You tell me . Who is she ?

Kg: Its nobody.

Her: Cant be "nobody " . Your handsome I'm sure girls throw themselves on you .

Kg:(loughs) Mom.

Her:I'm serious.

Kg: No girl will fall for someone like me .

Her: Why not? Your a hardworking man and your handsome? Why wouldn't they?

Kg: The world is different now mom.

Her: How different Kagis o?

Kg: Mom , girls this days aren't like the ones you guys were when growing up. They want guys with money ,man in suits ,man with nice hair cuts , man

with cars and houses . Not us who walk and ask for piece jobs on the side of the road then come back home with a small green plastic bag that carries only 2 apples and a cabbage. They want guys wholl take them to a salon and plait long hairs and put fake lashes. Guys wholl take them out to restaurants at night , buy them expensive gifts ,give them money for spars,nails,pay their rants ,actually pay their bills and a lot . Wholl date a like me with long hair cornrows on his head? . A guy who wears old clothes that are layed on the ground in the middle of a shining bright sun light sold only R10. A guy staying in one room? A guy with two boxers ? No one's daughter will fall for that,not even the one who grew up in poverty. As for the rich ones they would dare stoop so low. I doubt someone like me will ever have a family. I'll even die being the Kagiso I am ,without a girlfriend.

Her: (sadly) but you used to have a girlfriend.

Kg: (stood up) where is she now? Married. Shes married and has two children with a husband whose a secretary while shes a nurse . Living her

life . The one just used me .

Her: The other one who? Used you how?

Kg: Masedi . Never mind how she used me . Let's just leave it like that but know that I'll never have one . Your the only one who loves me and I'm happy with that, with you .

He kissed her forehead before hugging her for a while feeling the comfort and love in her warm arms laying his head on her chest .

Her: oh my boy ...dont ever think so low of yourself like that , dont look down on yourself like that ,ever. She'll come when the time is right . You still have a long way upon your life with so much blessings, forgive up on yourself like that . Your dream of becoming a lawyer will finally be true ,even if it doesn't work out God has a precious blessing for you. I love you my boy .

Him: I love you too mom .

He stood up and kissed her cheek and left .

#At Breezes house

The golden sun light peeked through the curtains and hit Gail's closed eyes when she frowned and pulled the sheets on her face. She opened her eyes and got out of bed naked going into the ensuite.

She walked into the shower naked and balanced the water before standing under it. Last night was amazing and hot . She could barely feel her legs and her pussy was on fire and swollen. She tried touching herself but stopped before she could and stepped out wrapping herself in a towel. How the hell does he do this ? Course clearly if she's swollen so is Sagi . She looked at herself on the mirror dripping water and took another towel wiping her hair. She walked out and went to her closet and got dressed before going to sit in front the mirror applying no-bake up make up and tied her long hair

before wearing a Brazilian weave . She looked at herself before taking it off and tied her hair into a bun then applied styling gel doing edges.

Meanwhile Breeze turned to her side using his hand looking for her but it was empty then turned to Sagi and pulled her in for a cuddle while she was sleeping. He kissed her neck waking her and lifted her leg inserting her tiger in her swollen cookie and she released a soft moan .

Breeze: (cursing through teeth) fuck.

Sagi: (moaning) aah baby I'm..I'm oh God..shit .

He kissed her neck while the other hand twisted her nipple relaxing her and slowly grind in and out of her . Morning session.

Meanwhile, Gail shook her head with a smile looking at them through the mirror. She could only imagine what her pussy was like or what's going to happen to it after this . Thank God she escaped it .

His erection doesn't easily go down but maybe after 3 or 4 rounds when alone. But her mounds plus watching them like that made her want to get undressed and join in but no - she had to get back on duty today.

She wore her ear-rings and stood up wearing her heels before grabbing her hand bag and laptop bag . She looked at Sagis face and licked her lips before walking over kissing her while she mounded in her mouth . She rubbed her other boob kissing her harder .She broke the kiss and smiled biting her lip and walked out .

Outside Jack parked his car besides Sagis and sighed looking at it . This girl never liked her even before dating his brother and now she's even worse. He doesn't know why but they never saw eye to eye. He started the engine putting the gear on reverse when someone knocked on the window.

Gail: hey you

Jack: sister in law , how are you ?

Gail: I'm good, and you?

Jack: I'm also good .

Gail: Are you here for your brother?

Jack: yeah but I guess I should get going course I'm not gonna see him with her around. I don't know what I did to your sister wife for her to dislike me like this . Did she tell you why she hates me ?

Gail: Whatever feud you have with her is non of my business. And no she didn't tell me why but for my point of view I think its because of the danger you and your older brother James once put Breeze in when he was young.

Jack: so Breeze told you guys about that shit that happened a long time ago? Why can't he just move on and let that go ? I said we're sorry.

Gail: Setting a house on fire while someone is inside and setting up their parents to death is not something you can easily forgive. You and your brother James tried to kill him when he was young

and that thing is still eating him that his brother tried to kill him for inheritance. You both new that they were going to give most of the wealth to him and planned to kill him by burning the house he inherited while he was inside , J ack!?

J ack: We were young, I was 19 and I didn't know what I was doing and I wasn't thinking. J ames was 23 . But now I'm 40 I know better and I'm sorry. I really am .J ames is also paying in jail . I'm sorry .

Gail: your apologising to the wrong person. You owe that to your little brother .

J ack: I thought him and I were good and on the same page ,so I guess I was wrong.

Gail: he's a gangster J ack. You made him who he is . You turned him into a monster he is so convey your cause . But carry it carefully. - brother in law.

She got in her car and started the engine.

J ack: Where is he ? I need to talk to him . I need

someone to talk to about something.

Gail: he's out . He's at Ellie's house there only Sagi inside. You should say "hi"

Jack: NO! no ...I think I'll just head back . It was nice seeing you .

He reversed and drove off and si did Gail .

Inside Breeze held on to Sagis waist giving her last strokes and pumped his shoots inside of her before sliding out and his juice slid out of her pot down her inner things . She melted on the bed with a throbbing pussy and sweat all over her . He just drained all that energy put of her .

He walked to the bathroom and prepared a bubble bath for her and went back then carried her and put her in the bath getting in with her ,letting her rest on his chest playing with her hair as she dozed off in the bath .

#At the Lyons Mansion

Jack parked his car outside then leaned back getting lost in thoughts . He almost killed his brother because of money and property. Proving himself to people who cared less that he was a man . Helping set his parents death. Tears burned his eyes when he took a deep breath and stepped out walking inside the house .

He walked upstairs and took a deep breath before knocking on Rose's door . The door opened and she leaned on it looking at him . Her eyes were swollen you could tell she slept crying last night. This baby right here was his happiness before but right now she had turned into a real bellyacher .

Jack: how are you hunny ?

Rose: I wasn't crying, I promise this is just uhm ..I yesterday

Jack: i know..its ohk .

He kissed her forehead and looked at her before walking to the main bedroom and threw himself on the bed while Jane took her coat and car keys.

Jane: your back already?

Jack: couldn't see him.

Jane: let me guess..Sagi?

Jack: he went to his best friend's house , Ellie .

Jane: ohk ..im if to work . Good bye .

Jack: But I said I'm sorry . How long do I have to apologize? The rest of my life ? He wants me to kiss his toes ? He can kiss my ass course I'm not going to do that.

Jane: Stay away from Breeze. He doesn't like you , he hates you . Your suffocating him with your presence let him be . Its enough you killed the boy in him already so let him be before he does something stupid.

Jack: so you also are on his side ?

Jane: there aren't any sides here hunny . You tried to kill him dont you get it ? He's a gangster now ,a feared one so let him be before he kills you without remorse .

Jack: Whatever I'm not giving up on my brother .

Jane: Which one ? James or Breeze? I mean we both know that Breeze wants nothing even a bit to do with him .

Jack: (sigh) We're Lyons . I'm sure we'll work this out when he comes back put of jail.

Jane: good luck.

Jack: right cause I'll need it .But I wanted to only .

Jane : I thought you didn't like talking about this . How come are we talking about it and not Rose?

Jack looked at her as she grabbed her car keys and walked out .

#At the taxi rank .

Kagiso smiled at a lady and put what she wanted in a plastic and gave it to her and she gave him money and she left . He sat down and looked at Sylvia as she made the traditional beautiful isicholo . He had always seen this and it looked so amazing worn by young woman.

Kg: so what's that signify?

Sylvia: oh this my boy ..this hat is mostly worn by married Zulu woman . But I guess we Africans lost our roots and now everyone wears it as a fashion trend. Those days once married, a Zulu woman would wear this hat on a daily basis to signify her married status .

Kg: oh .. and the beads?

Sylvia: This Zulu beads were used to as a language between male and female to express their feelings ,massage from opposite sex and relationship status.

Kg: they're beautiful. I'm a Pedi but I don't know anything about our traditional attire. Can you tell me?

Sylvia: (smile) so am I. The Pedi attires . Well they are the most colorful of the South African cultural attires. The rich vibrant colors represent happiness. Being bright yellows, blue, pink white turquoise . We are much more like Ndebele course we are renowned for our bead work design and rich colors. I dont know if you know but we also have what we call it Ntepa and Lebole .

Kg: yeah I heard about them and I've also seen them . They're pretty cool. What are they made of ? Course they weigh a bit ?

Sylvia: (loughs) you lie they dont

Kg: in telling you mma.

Sylvia: they are made out of animals skin.

Kg: Wow .. can you teach me how to make a bracelet?

Sylvia: for who ?

Kg: me !

Sylvia: huuu...

Kg: for real . It'll be myn .

Sylvia: ohk ..take the beading wire and cut the length of about 3-4 inches long .

He took the beading wire and cut it without measuring when Sylvia loughed looking at him .

Kg: what?

Sylvia: that's not 3-4 inches ,thats 20 . It'll be good for a necklace.

Kg: then I guess a necklace it is !

.

.

.

.

.

Comment please

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:20] Lynne : #Chapter 5

At the taxi rank .

It didn't even take him so long to get hold of it . After being showed there and there he managed to continue on his own and made his piece. It wasn't really hard as it seemed but pretty simple.

It was bright and beautiful with a diamond pattern in the middle. Sylvia looked at the necklace and smiled admiringly and looked at him .

Sylvia:Wow ! I'm impressed!

Kg: Thank you mma.

Sylvia: you even made it better than I thought it would be. You used only bright colors and it attracts. Its really beautiful.

Kg: (smiling)Thank you mma . I think I'll give this to my mother just to show how much I love and appreciate her .

Sylvia: that's sweet of you . (Thought for a sec)
Maybe you could help me both sides dont you think ?
You'll also help with the beads while I make dresses that way we'll be able to raise more money quickly.

Kg: I'd like that . As for this one - this one is for a special woman close to my heart.

Sylvia: That's sweet my boy . So what are we making next ?

Kagiso raised the necklace admiring it when a car stopped in front of their table and the window rolled down . A man in a suit smiled taking off his glasses looking at the necklace.

Man : Eita mei brah

Kg: Eita . How are you ?

Man: I'm good . That's a beautiful necklace right there .

Kg: Thank you. I wouldn't have made it without this beautiful woman here's help .

Man: wow . It really is beautiful , bright and it shows that it was made by an elated person.

Kg: thank you.

Man: How much is it ? Are you selling it ?

Kg: uhm ..sell? No . It was specially made for someone.

Man: From the diamond sign- I could tell she's lucky . Ohk cxxl man .

Kg: Wait.! I can make you one if you want it .

Man: really? Man I'm getting married in two weeks and my fiance doesn't have a necklace. Were having a traditional wedding so I want it to be a gift .

Kg: Yeah ..I'll make one for you .

Man: (smiling) thank you man . Can you also add a bracelet?

Kg: yeah ..when do you want them ?

Man: how fast can you finish both of them ?

Kg: come back after 3 days , I promise you'll find them ready .

Man: (smiling) how much will it be ?

Kg: uhm ...

It was for the first time being asked about a price and on top of that he came before he could prepare himself. He bit his lip and looked at Sylvia when she smiled and turned to the man .

Sylvia: that would be R500 my boy .

Man: (jaw dropped) ohk ..

Kg: uhm ..

Sylvia: You want her to look amazing and beautiful in her attire right?

Man: yeah ...

Sylvia: woman like to look good and classy even in their traditional attires . She wants to feel strong and stand tall owning up her crown . They want to feel themselves in their attires. To look absolutely stunning.

Man: (sigh smiling) ohk it's set. I'll come get them on Wednesday.

Kg: Wont disappoint.

He drove off and Kg sat down and smiled with a fist on his lips amazed . Was it really that good ? . He loughed and hugged Sylvia and sat down surprised.

Kg: he liked it !

Sylvia: I told you its stunning . Maybe that's what your good at ,design.

Kg: Wow ! I cant believe it . So there's a better way to make money without steeling or gambling? Why didn't I think of this !

Sylvia: better get started !

Kg: did you really have to charge him that much? R500?

Sylvia: you'll understand why I did when you get there now get started.

#At Breezes house

Sagi sat on the towel in her swim two piece applying a nail paint . Breezes phone rang by her side and she quickly finished up and closed the nail paint . She grabbed the phone and frowned looking at the J ack's call and waited for it to cut . He called again and she looked at Breeze swimming in the pool then switched it on and blocked J ack then smiled putting it back .

She grabbed her drink and drank looking at Breeze

as he swam to the stairs and walked out .

It was like she was looking at a magazine cover .
Damn her man was handsome . She bit her lip
looking at him and he sat next to her with a towel
around his neck .

She looked at his watery face ,God them lips !. She
bit her lip when he leaned in for a kiss and they
melted on the towel spilling the juice. He got on top
of her and his hands cursed her body and slid his
hand in her panties when she held his grip stopping
him.

Sagi: (sulk) baby no ...

Breeze: I know .. I'm not going to fuck you .

Sagi: it hurts .

Breeze: I know..Let me help ease the pain .

She hesitantly let go of his grip and he slowly
leaned back looking in her eyes . She had light
brown eyelids with long lashes . She was also hairy

with baby hairs that slightly touching with the eyebrows . Her heartily lips were to crave for . He slowly slid his hand between her legs touching her swollen cookie and she flinched a bit biting her lip . He kissed her and untied the side of her swimming panties . He kissed her going down her belly button . He looked at her face when she raised her head a bit looking at him and layed back looking up the tree . He used his hand to curse her boob and slowly went down her cookie working his magic on her . She lifted her upper body as her body heated and the sensation covered her whole body . She closed her eyes mouning biting her lip and bit her finger using her other hand pushing him further in between her legs spreading them# \$-

#At the Lyons Mansion

Rose went through her Instagram pictures and comments before logging out and went to YouTube looking at cooking videos . At her age she still

doesn't know her way in the kitchen. Talk about washing her own laundry. The only thing she knows is washing her panties and bras . She sighed and went on an online shopping website and bought few tops ,hoodies, dresses and jeans. She wore her morning shoes and walked out her room and went downstairs. What she liked about the shop is that it didn't take time to deliver. Anytime soon they might be on her doorstep. She went to the kitchen and sat on the high chair looking at the helper cooking.

Rose: hey .

Her: hey Miss Rose

Rose: please just call me Rose . No need to be formal with me ,I'm your age mate I'm sure .

Her: how old are you ?

Rose: 18 ,you?

Her: I'm 20 .

Rose: oops! I'm too forward.

Her:(loughs) not really. J ust that I look younger,

your not the first person to assume I'm 18 but mostly think I'm 15 or 16 .

Rose: oh ..

Her: yeah .

She kept on cooking while she sat there pressing her phone. A while later a door bell rang and another maid went to check who it was .

Man: delivery for Miss Rosella Lyon .

Maid: oh ..she's here .

Man: ohk , please sign here for me .

Her: ohk ..

She signed and they exchanged smiles then he gave her the huge box and left . The maid struggled a bit with it but managed to put in on the table looking at it . It must be fun growing up rich. You can easily order whatever you want and whenever

you want . Shopping sprees . Everything of this family was expensive . She went to the kitchen and called her and she took her box to her room .

Main 1: she's living wethu!

Cooker: Yeah she is . Mme tota o bonala as a itumele . She's always crying.

Maid 1: Yeah I noticed . I heard she lost her best friend and ever since , she was never seen on the streets . No one ever saw her outside this house except when she goes out on those what you call ? Fashion wara-wara.

Cook: I can imagine.. o toga a utwile bothoko fro her to be like this even after all this years .

Maid: Haayii mina ngicabanga uguthi she's just being like any other rich kids nje . Crying over nothing . If she was my daughter, I'll slap her so hard she wouldn't even remember she had a friend she loved in a week .

Cook: (ignoring) Aona tiro Sindiswa ? {Dont you

have work Sindiswa }

Sindi: I do ..bu-

Cook: then get back to it before Mr Lyon comes back .

Sindiswa rolled her eyes and went back to work leaving the lady cooking.

Meanwhile Roses tears burned her eyes leaning on the wall holding the box . She sighed gaining her strength and went to her room . She kicked the door closing it and put the box on the bed taking everything out . She took her camera and set it up nicely on the tripod and wore her new clothes taking pictures. A little distraction always helped put the mind at ease.

.
.br/>.

[08/02, 13:20] Lynne : #Chapter6

Three days later- Kagiso drank water from the bottle and put it down continuing to make the necklace . This was the 4th piece and he liked how it came to be . Sylvia smiled looking at him . He put his all in whatever he does and that's what made him who he is . The love he puts in whatever he did made his work bright and beautiful. He was really an amazing boy . A car parked in front of them and the man from the last time stepped out .

Man: hey ..

Kg: hi ..how are you doing?

Man: I'm good ..excited! And you?

Kg: I'm also fine .

Man: Unjani ma?

Sylvia: Ngiyaphila my boy wena?

Man: I'm also fine .

Kagiso took out the necklace and bracelet and gave it to him in a plastic . The mans face brightened looking at the beautiful and colorful pieces. He smiled and took out his wallet taking out the R500 and gave it to him.

Kg: Thanks a lot man .

Man: No thank you. This are beautiful, I'm sure my wife is going to love them . Your really good dude .

Kg: thank you .

Man: you should open a business and make more . I'm sure people will support you . Add a bit of art-like drawings and all those things people like to decorate their homes . People like having something of their roots in their home . Decorate dishes ,furniture's and whatever that can make the house look amazing.

Kg: (chuckles) dishes ?

Man: yeah ..not like you'll be using that paint you add with water right? You will need that one they

use, not that paint used at schools right?

Kg: (chuckles) Paint?

Man: (loughs) yeah whatever it is you can do it . You can draw right?

Kg: yeah ..

Man: then make use of that skill ,take it out on something and earn money . You can draw and go to Anna's Gallery at the mall and sell it . She supports young artists and I promise by the end of the month your piece would be bought by then. Anyway thanks - keep it up . Your really good .

Kg: sure ..

The man got in his car and drove off while Kagiso was lost in thoughts. Sylvia smiled looking at him lost like that looking at where the car was .

Sylvia: "Design " I told you .

Kagiso looked at her as she smiled carrying on sewing like she said nothing while humming. He looked at the unfinished necklace and shrugged continuing when three girls walked over and bought 2 bracelets.

At the Lyons Mansion

Jack walked in the house unbuttoning his jacket and went upstairs . He put everything down and walked to Rose's room but he wasn't there . He walked to the cinema but she was also not there so he walked to the gym and found her on the cable cross over machine. He watched her as she carried on training until she was done sweating and did the burpees . Only if her training and getting fit like this made her think clearly and help move on . He sighed and walked over as she wiped the sweat off her and took of the headsets looking at him.

Rose:(heavily) dad ! I didn't see you -hear you ..

Jack:(scoffs) you wouldn't with those loud things and drowning yourself in a gym .

Rose: mmh..

Jack: how are you ?

Rose: I'm ohk ..I wasn't crying I promise. So I found a new hobby -ill keep training when I feel like crying missing her .

Jack: hunny when I said I'll punish you when you cry I, I didn't mean like you shouldn't crying literally. I didn't mean it like you should be afraid to cry . Its ohk to cry but - the way you are doing it its -

Rose: Annoying?

Jack: enervating and throe. Hunny you -

Rose: I heard you dad-(swallowed) I'll never cry ,maun for my friend. She was my friend! My sister!

She said that leaving the gym and jogged to her room and locked. She ran to the shower and opened it standing under it still in her gym wear with tears flowing.

Meanwhile Jack clenched his jaws and took out his phone and tried calling Breeze but it still didn't go through. He went to his office downstairs and used the telephone calling him .

At Breezes house.

With the laptop on Breezes laps , they layed there watching the movie REAL HUSBANDS OF HOLLYWOOD loughing while eating pop corns. Breezes phone rang by Sagi when she reached for it and frowned. She had no choice but to give it to him . Breeze looked at it and sighed putting the laptop on Gail getting off the bed wearing his shoes and walked out . Sagis bit her lip and threw a pop corn in her mouth when Gail chuckled looking at her.

Gail: baby they're brothers .. you know there's nothing you can do to separate them.

Sagi: I wonder what trouble he bring him this time .

Gail: Do you really have to think he brings trouble everytime he calls?

Sagi: isn't what he always do? J ack always drags him into his shit and Breeze is the one that's always left in the middle. Their brother is in jail and now he throws his curses at Breeze who has to help him with his mess . He uses Breeze as a weapon and I dont like it , not even a tinny bit .

Gail: I get you , but J ack calling him doesn't have to always mean he is in trouble . They could be talking about a family matter or checking each other the way siblings do .I know J ack is fucked up but giving him a chance wouldn't hurt .

Sagi: I bet it will .

Gail: Have you realized that he already thinks you hate him ?

Sagi: I'm glad he does course he literally goes against my stomach.

Gail:(loughs) your crazy ...is there anyway to

convince you otherwise?

Sagi: (frown) No .

Gail loughed and she got closer to her and put the laptop In the middle and continued watching .

Meanwhile Breeze sat on his chair in his office talking on the phone .

Breeze: So ..is this why you called me brother ? To tell me about your family matters ?

Jack: I want you to tell me if I'm wrong or right . I mean I want to protect her from any health issues and from the world out there . When I told her she cant leave the house year back I was trying to protect her from the m-

Breeze: (sarcastic)Russians that you made a deal with and it went straight south.

Jack: yeah- that ..Now when I said I'm going to punish her is like i said I'm going to kill her . She is always scared now and -

Breeze: (sigh) so what do you think ?

Jack: well I think I'm right . I-

Breeze: So if to you it looks right- why does my opinion matter ? What difference will it make course you listen to no one except your brother James ?

Jack: He's also your brother Breeze . And I think maybe your opinion will make me see things differently and be able to walk with my daughter on the same pace . My family is tearing apart and I cant loose them , I cant loose my daughter to a silly girl in a grave .

Breeze: Wena Mr Mayer listen..I'm not a good advicer but I think the first step is to quit your shitty job . It's best if you leave it course it has brought nothing but danger to our whole family . I'm not going to always be your shield everytime you put you and your families life in danger. And you leave Rose moun for as long as she wants , who the fuck told you that when a pers on is mourning your losing them to the dead . Stop calling her friend names ,your pushing her away course you call her loved

one names . Let her cry for however she wants , isn't she has nothing else to do ? . She has no friends, she's always locked in the house because her father doesn't want to man up and find another job that wont put her life in danger , she was taken out off school and put home forced to attend online. Man you've fucked up your kid .

Jack: What are you saying? That I should quit my job and let my daughter decay away from me ?

Breeze: I don't know.. do whatever you want . Quit and let Rose be or you go ask for an advice from your brother .

Jack: I knew talking to you was like talking by myself. I wont get answers .

Breeze: Ndoda leave Rose alone. She'll stop whenever she wants to . Who forced you to stop crying after you set up your parents death ? You mouned over 2 years plus regre-

Jack: Breeze this is different. Rose has to let go , we all let go in the end what's so difficult for her to -

Breeze: Let my niece be . Let her cry for all she

wants.

Jack: Cant believe you support this shit she's doing!
She's overreacting!

Breeze: So ..?

Jack: And you are , you know what? Bye Breeze.

Breeze: And stop threatening that kid or you'll have
to deal with me .

Jack: I'm the father here .

Breeze: and I grew up being threatened now and
then ,so I wont let anyone go through that while I'm
here .

Jack: I didn't even mention what the punishment
was !

Breeze: I don't care . Little you say to a girl her age
can course a huge damage and she might end up
committing suicide. And coming to think of it -thats
my only niece and my favorite one . So I wont let
one get to her like that ,not even you.

Jack: This is my daughter Breeze.

Breeze: That's my niece Jack .

Jack: I'm the father!

Breeze: I'm the uncle.

Jack: I know what's best for my daughter ! And as the father, I'm not letting her get stuck to that girl !

Breeze: and as the uncle im telling you to let her be .

Jack: Your so pathetic! I dont even know why called you course clearly you-

Breeze: I got no space for you - right .

Breeze hang up before he could go further and his eyes landed on a black and white portrait of his wives hugging shirtless with only jeans intimate with wet hair . He smiled when his phone rang .

Breeze: Olebile.

Ole: What the fuck dude! Why the hell do you have to call my name like that ?

Breeze: (chuckle) how did I call it out?

Ole: (intimating) "Olebile " what the hell man ? No need to sound bold on my name ! "Olebile"

Breeze: (loughs) What do you want?

Olebile: I was just gonna say "hello " but with the way you called out my name I have to say " fuck you" .

Breeze: I thought by the time I come back you would have changed .

Ole: You know what? I'm having a party on Friday, get down. There'll be some people I'd like you to meet.

Breeze: Sure ..see you there .

Ole: come with my wives please.

Breeze: I will.. buy them non-alcoholic drink .

Ole: sorted.. " Olebile " jeez dude .

Breeze loughed before hanging up and walked to the kitchen and took out an icecream and 3 spoons

then walked back to the room.

The girls moved aside and he got in between putting the laptop on him and they enjoyed the icecream.

-
-
-
-

[08/02, 13:21] Lynne : #Chapter 7

Around 19h00 , Breeze walked out of his closet wearing his black hoodie and went to check Sagi in their closet, he found her applying a lipstick bending over the mirror. He hated seeing her in a short dress like this going to a club . Of course he runs it and she can take care of herself but there was just something about seeing your wife going to work in something so short that when she bent over

your mind just blows off . She turned on her heels wearing a black mask in her black short tight dress that revealed her hourglass figure. She was light in complexion . She always looked good in whatever , she was too perfect to be working in a club at night surrounded by men . She pulled her black puffy coat and purse and walked over hugging him.

Sagi : What?

Breeze: I dont like that dress Sagi . Take it off .

She pulled away from the hug and went to stand in front of the mirror turning around checking herself.

Sagi: I dont see anything wrong with it , why should I take it off ?

Breeze: Sagi your a married woman, what the fuck is that ?! That dress is too short for someone whose been married for about 2 and a half year .Who the hell are you trying to impress ? Dont see your

showing off my shit !

Sagi: Breeze since when did you start complaining about my dressing? Why the fuck now ?

Breeze: I wont repeat myself dress properly according to your status ! I'll be in the car !

Sagi: What's wrong with you ?! Breeze I'm working in a club ! I cant just show up in a long dress as if I'm going to a gathering or shit ! I have to dress like it .

Breeze: Sagi change the fucken dress or stay home !

He shook he's head before stepping out going downstairs. Sagi turned with a frown and looked at herself again on the mirror. She took it off and wore a sweater with a short tight , long socks and kicks adding with a cap . She took her bag and put in everything she would need for the night.

Meanwhile...Breeze lifted Gail still kissing her and put her on top of the counter.

Breeze: you sure you dont want to tag along? Sagi might need your help there .

Gail: No ..I'm tired, after I'm done with those files and going through some documents I'm going to take a shower and get in bed .The Gallery was busy today , we had almost like 10 people who came to show us their work , so we signed them in and now they are part of us Gail's .I'm sure Sagi can handle the night like she always does alone. She's good .

Breeze: I'm impressed. Never thought art can make such amount and a lot of people are into it . But babe please ...you'll need someone to take care of you, and i will.

Gail: (loughs) you'll be busy Breeze, I dont want to be a burden.

Breeze: My burden..

Gail: no ...you go , I'll be fine by myself, I promise.

Breeze: ohk ..give me a kiss.

She giggled leaning over kissing him as Sagi walked to the fridge taking out an apple and bite it . She walked over when Breeze broke it and took her off the counter and Sagi kissed her goodbye. Breeze kissed her cheek and held Sagis waist leading her out to the car .

Breeze: Wasn't hard was it ?

Sagi: Whatever...

Breeze: what was that?

Sagi: it wasn't!

Breeze: good girl, I love you .

Sagi: love you too .

He pulled her hand and kissed it before putting it on the gear and put his on top changing gears with her as they sped off .

At Kagiso's house

Kagiso and his mother sat under the moonlight with steel cups in their hands drinking tea while he's mother wrapped herself in a blanket.

Kagiso: You are getting better and better mom . I'm proud and happy.

Mother: I told you that no sickness can knock me down so easily , just like that ! . No my boy! Not when I still believe in the most high God that never forsake us . Soon I'll be standing strong again. There was no way I was going to leave you to struggle in this world alone, I wouldn't rest. Let's thank God for still keeping me here with you .

Kagiso: (smiling) Amen . I have something for you .let me get it inside.

He went inside and came back with the necklace in a plastic bag and gave it to her .

Mother: Is this a snake?

Kagiso: (loughs) Mama why would I give you a snake?

Mother: Ke tlare eng e kwagala o kare ke noga .(What do you expect me to think when it feels like a snake)?

Kagiso: (loughs) no ma , it's not a a snake .

Mother: hhhmm.

She opened tore the plastic and took out what was inside. She raised if up and the bright moon lightened it up as it sparkled a bit . The bright colors smoothed her heart when a smiled built on the side of her lips . She smiled looking at it and turned to her son pulling him into a hug , tightly hugging him.

Kagiso: (smiling) mama sharp.

Mother: this is so beautiful, thank you my boy .
Where did you buy it? How much was it ?

Kagiso: actually I didn't but it . It was specially made for a woman close to my heart , my queen. For you mom .

Mother: (teary) oh modimo! Thank you very much my boy . I love it . I knew one day you'll find your passion and this is it . Its beautiful.

Kagiso: thank you . I already sold few pieces and someone said I should also start drawing and take them to Gail's Gallery. She's also at artists and also supports young artists to reach their dreams . If I can draw something beautiful and eye catching I can take it to her , she will buy it from me with a reasonable price I put on it . Then she will take it up in her Gallery and see how many people like it and how much they bought it so that next time they'll buy it personally from me .

Mother: Oh ... I don't know how it works but I heard that that girl helped grow a lot of artists and now they are on their own. I'm sure she can help you you too .

Kagiso: I hope. But I don't want to get stuck with

her forever, I want to start my own business too. I don't know what it will be off but I want to start it -

Mother: Kagiso look, I hear you. But let's take one step at a time, and you'll tell me about that business when you're stable, and financially. It's a good idea but take it slow. I'm proud of you.

Kagiso: thanks mom.

At The club.

Breeze parked his car and they both stepped out and he threw the keys to a young man who caught them smiling. He waited for Sagi and she held his hand and kissed his cheek.

Guy: (smiling) Boss!

Breeze: how have you been?

Guy: I've been good, just that Olebile wasn't taking up with me.

Breeze: what did he do ?

Guy: he said I he doesn't want me anymore at the door as a guard , he says I'm young . Now he put me here , he says I should only help with cars.

Breeze: I'll talk to him .

Guy: thanks boss . Boss lady .

Sagi: Hey Sammy.

Guy: you gud? You look different tonight.

Sagi: (sigh) i guess it was time for a little change .

Sammy: you look beautiful . As always.

Sagi: thank you .

Sammy: good to have you back boss.

Breeze: Xo .

They walked inside the building and he got in the car and took it to the garage.

Clubs like this ones are always full and lit . Had the best liquors , best strippers, tough management and

always had something new and entertaining everyday. Full of hot chicks and niggas , gangsters. No teenagers are allowed to enter the premises , not when your below 18 course anytime a bullet can fly up the sky. Air Night Club was one of the top clubs around and every youngster couldn't wait to get in and feel how it felt to fly in the face of danger like everyone else. It's always a full house at Air Night club .Sagi and Breeze parted ways and she went to take her gun putting it on her waist and took out small bags of pure cocaine and went to give them to the barman and others to the stripper's. Meanwhile Breeze got in a lift and went to the roof where the meeting was . He raised his arms and a member of the other gang searched him .

Breeze: Don't you think you would have found it by now ?

Guard : I need to be sure .

Breeze: mxm .

The guards stepped back and he walked over bumping shoulders with everyone.

Olebile: what took you so long ?

Breeze: I'm here now , am I not?

Man: Stone right?

Breeze: nop ..

Man: oh forgive me fore being forward, I confuse you too ..You must be-

Breeze: can we cut this short I have another meeting to attend.

Man: Sure ..have a sit .

They all sat down and the waiter poured then glasses of whiskey and they drank discussing gangster related matters.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:21] Lynne : #Chapter 8

Around 12H00

The top roof was all quite with only the sound of music down at the club heard. All men looked at each other as their bodies itched to see each other's bodies laying in a pool of blood. Breeze looked at

them and bit his lip before sitting down.

Breeze: so you telling me that , hold on man [laughs)
hold on .. What ? ! Are you being for real right now ?
You want me to be be involved in a trafficking?
What i look to you Dan? A sales man or something?
Man get the f*** out here?

Man: In other words..yeah ..But not a sales man.
That's just like overreacting don't you think? Ok
Scar it's not like it'll be the first time playing with fire
here you always do. All we need is for you to help
us with the cops . I know you have connection
inside so help us with blinding them so that we can
do this fast. We only need help with your
connection system that's all

Breeze: okay biggy stop calling me names . I'm not
Scar . Stop f***** playing. Let's say I help you,
whats there for me? I mean... I gatta know what's
there in the bag for me.

Men: 4 million.

Breeze :(frowned) men get the f*** off my building

before it crash your skull.

Dan: Think about it Air.

Breeze: I dont help when coming to that shit . Kids?
Woman?

Dan:says someone who sells them cocaine.

Breeze: (loughs) That was a great one, I'll give you that. But I'll advise you do your research next time before coming to f*** off on my face. Now get your a***** of my f***n building. Dont forget your puppets on your way out . They making my club grouch.

Dan: J ust think about it Air.

He said that walking towards the elevator .

Breeze: oh ...and don't even think about going off the route with me . If I dare hear a word about a missing kid or woman , I'm fucking you up man. I wont hesitate to get on a flight just to put a bullet in your skull.

Dan: is that a threat?

Breeze: nah take it as a promise.

With that said he got into the lift with Odirile and exchanged dare looks with Dan as the door slid close

Odi: Really man? You just turned down a deal ! That shit can get us vending.

Breeze: Would you have rather preferred I give them your sister?

Odi:Why the fuck would you give up my sister for ? Man that was our ticket to the elevate that you just turned down. What the f*** were you thinking letting that s***t go . All you had to do was -

Breeze: Stop yelling! Dude were talking about forcing people into prostitution, pornography, make them perform sexual acts to dozen of men.

[08/02, 13:21] Lynne : #Chapter 8 Con..

Breeze: Stop yelling.! Dude were talking about forcing people into prostitution, pornography, make them perform sexual acts to a dozen of a fucken night. Transport them from city to city feeding them drugs and making them sex slaves. They could be in danger of physical injury from violence, health issues including sexually transmitted diseases. Imagine if it was your sister, Botle .Going through all that s*** knowing that you my friend, you are the f***** reason why she's there. You know.. sometimes man you have to think outside the box ,put yourself in the shoes of those who will be victims. Think twice or maybe thrice ..maybe fourfold.

The lift stopped and he stepped out leaving Ofirile in thoughts. He eventually got out before it could close him in and he went past the crowd to the bar.

Odirile: I'll have a tall vodka cranberry please.

He turned around and watched the crowd go crazy to a song and spotted Breeze walking up the stairs and stood at the VIP balcony looking down at the crowd. Maybe he's right . He got he's drink and drank watching ladies shake their futures.

Meanwhile Sagi walked over to Breeze and hugged him from behind before standing by he's side .

Sagi: you ohk?

Breeze: yeah ..are you?

Sagi: mmmhh.. did you get it ? I mean the deal ?

Breeze: nop ..

Sagi: that bad?

Breeze: extremely..

Sagi: what was it about?

Breeze: I'd rather not talk about it .

Sagi: I can take that .

She leaned in kissing him when he's phone rang in his back pocket when Sagi took it out . He grabbed her hand loughing through the kiss and leaned back winking at her walking away. She smiled looking at him and also got back to work.

Breeze: yeah?

Voice: Boss we got hit?

Breeze:....what...?

Voice: We got hit , 21 bricks are gone along with the truck.

He cut the call and jogged down the stairs meeting Odirile on the way out and got in the car driving off.

At the Lyons Mansion

Still in her beauty sleep , her brain started to perk up . Her muscles became temporarily paralyzed and her eyes darted back and forth. In her dream she was sitting in the dark when she heard a familiar voice , it was her friend. A smile built up on the corner of her lips when she saw her . She tried hugging her but she couldn't move . Her smile dropped and her heart started racing. All of a sudden a cold chill ran down her spine and the hair on her arms rose . She looked at her friend when a roar startled her.

.

.

[08/02, 13:21] Lynne : Con2

In Rose's room

She looked at all side when she saw an animal structure slowly walking over . This was not like a pet. It was big . Her heart pounded hard on her

chest when tears blurred her sight . She blinked a few times and looked at the structure, it wasn't clear but surely it was walking towards her . She looked at her friend who was smiling and tears rolled down even more .

Nakedi: you should find him Rose. He's waiting for you. He's looking. You'll be happy again. Find him , and when you do ...dont let go , let your heart be . He's your happiness . Find him...find him...find him...he's your happiness .

She was slowly fading away and the animal was getting closer and closer . She could literally feel her heart beating hard to a point it could crush her chest . She tried running but she couldn't . She tried lifting her legs but nothing changed that . Still crying and trying she started screaming. She couldn't understand why all of a sudden.

Her body shook and she popped off her bed like popcorns with her legs shooting up. She was

covered in sweat, shaking with a pounding heart unable to breathe properly. She felt like she was still in her dream course for a second her room looked dark. The air in the room covered her making her feel like she was in a bathtub full of ice breathing hard. She didn't even realize that her parents were in her room. She tried taking a deep breath when she coughed unable to breathe properly. She rolled to the side of the bed course she forgot how to breath when Jack coughed her before she could fall. Her eyes wandered around her room with suspicion and paranoia.

Jane: Rose ! Rosella ! Look at me hunny!
Breath!...Try breathing! Slowly..!breath..

Jack: Were here! It was just a dream! Its ohk..

She did as she was told and finally came back to her senses and coughed up. She melted in her father's arms crying and he rubbed her back with a breaking heart. Tears burned Jane's tears and she

joined in and they all hugged sitting on the floor.

.

.

.Comment

.

.

[08/02, 13:22] Lynne : #CHAPTER 9

AT BREEZES

Early in the morning, Breeze parked the car and he stepped to get Sagi. He picked her up from her seat while she's asleep and kicked the door before walking into the house carrying her. Yesterday was a very busy day for her. He climbed the stairs and headed to their bedroom where Gail was laying asleep peacefully. He put her next to Gail before pulling the sheets on them and walked to the shower throwing clothes on the floor. He balanced

the water before standing under it letting the water lick his skin. He held on to the wall with both hands and his eyes landed on his tatted hands with his wives names. He smiled thinking of the day they convinced him to have them at the club. That was a month before their wedding. He still could not believe that he got married to the both of them and that they loved each other so bad they could kill for one another . They did not get along at first ,but now they are unseparable . Talk about sister-wives love .He shook his head blushing under the water and looked up. After a while he stepped out and grabbed a towel wiping himself heading to his closet ,got dressed in his pjs .He walked out and went to join them in bed pulling them closer to him, laying their heads on his chest and kissed them on their heads before dozing off.

At Kagiso's house

Around 10H00 in the morning ...Kagiso finished up

sweeping the yard and picked the rubbish with his hands putting them in a bucket before taking it to dispose it on the other side of the road. He came back and took the bucket behind the house .

Sweating under the blazing sun , he took off his shirt to wipe the sweat off when a car parked next door . He stopped wiping himself and looked at the car . An Audi rs8 . A woman stepped out followed by her daughter sulking with headsets on . New neighbours . At least new faces around here. He scoffed before walking into the house .

Meanwhile the young lady that was sulking swallowed after what she just saw . He had a great body . She looked at their yard and couldnt understand why a handsome man like that would live in such a place, course demn! thats a man right there . She hasnt seen his face yet but she could tell that that hair looked good on him . Her mother called her and she pulled her case walking into the house were she found her mother with the landlord laughing.

Mother: Bonolo get the bags inside and stop sulking . I long told you that we were going to move from Santon .

Bonolo: you could have left me with dad mom. And besides aint i old enough to make my own -

Mother: go to your room young girl. Baby i thought we talked about this . I got a new job , thats why we had to move here so i could be close by. I cant keep traveling a long distance a sleep only few hours them same routine . Im a psychologist , i need enough rest so that i can help people . I cant help them while im sleeping .

Bonolo: thats all you ever cared about mom ! your job .

She walked further not knowing where is where but she made up with a room that has a window facing Kagisos house . She put her stuff down and walked towards the window and opened the curtain looking at his house . Already she was starting to stalk . The door made a sound when Kagiso stepped out

wearing a cap and headed to the gate when she quickly walked out of her room passing by her mother rushing.

mother: where are you going?, we need to talk.

Bonolo: im going for a walk , ill be right back .

Mother: but hunny you dont know anyone around here?

Bonolo; IM COMING MOM, WONT BE LONG .

Mother: ohk, you be safe alright ?!!

Bonolo: promise!!!!

She jogged out the gate and saw him walking fast when she ran after him until she caught up . Her heart was pounding ,and every step closer to him felt heavy .

Bonolo: hey ..

Kg: hey ..how are you ?

Bonolo: im good ..you?

Kg: im good too.

Bonolo: Bonolo.

Kg: sulker ..Kagiso

Bonolo:(laughed) Sulker? i wasnt sulking , we had an argument in the car about something .Where are you heading?

Kg: to the shop . I want to buy something there .
You ?

Bonolo: im here with you ,aint i ?

Kagiso slowed down to the reply with a frown and she brushed the embarrassment with a cute joking laughter but he didnt take it . She looked up at him , and man was he handsome. His heart shaped lips and that adams apple .Light skinned . She thought she has seen them all ,but now she didnt know anymore . He wasnt tall but a little on the tall side, medium .He was handsome from the depth of his

eyes underneath the cap to the gentle expression of his voice .She traced his hands that had veins with her eyes,they were hard with broad fingers .

Impossibly enormous hands , at least thats what she thought. His slap could definitely break you jaws.She smiled sweetly looking at him trying to show she meant no disrespect.

Kg: didnt ask you to come with me .

Bonolo; im so sorry that was rude of me . I asure you im not the kind of person . im sorry.

Kg: its ohk ...you got a bad way of asking to walk with someone .

Bonolo:(loughs) i can take that . S.. Kagiso... tell me about this place , i mean im new here so , i think it will be a great idea to have someone to tell me about it . Show me around . Can you ?

Kg: sure ...

They crossed the road and went to the shop having

a light conversation .

AT the Lyons Mansion

Rose walked downstairs wearing her pj with messy hair and went to join her parent on the table having breakfast. Jane looked at Jack before clearing her throat looking at Rose. From the look of her mothers face she could tell it wasnt what she would like to hear ,especially still trying to figure what her dream was about . She put her glass down and looked at her parent .

Rose: I know i scared you but i promise it wont happen again . Ill start going to church and see if i could get better , course last night ...i saw horror in my dreams . And no dont ask me about it course the last thing i want is to go see a therapist or go to the Sanatorium . I promise you im good . Oh ..and dad , you said i should tell you whatever i want right and youll get it for me since , well - im not allowed to

get out of the house right? i was thinking maybe you could get me a new laptop ,a Macbook . Oh and i need one room in the house , i want to turn it into a studio. And dad your going to help me ,both of you actualy. One other thing is ... since im 18 i need my own car and a house .

Jack: what? are you ohk ? fever or something ?

Rose: no dad...you want me to get over Nakedi right? then i guess thats the price you both will have to pay .

She said that and stood up like she didnt make an adult demand and walked back to her room were she got naked and got in a bath. Downstairs her mother and father looked at each other stil surpris ed.

mother: i want my daughter back ! this is not funny anymore . Shes losing her mind .

Jack: i think its about time she got back to the

sanatorium . They tried the last time and im pretty sure they can do even better now .

Mothe: J ack i cant lose my baby over a nightmare in a single night , we have to do something . If sending her back there will help get things better then lets do it .

.

.

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:22] Lynne : #Chapter10

During the day

Today was a roasting day . Everyone on the streets

was under a shade hiding their skins from the scorching sun . Kagiso and Bonolo walked under the taxi rank shade to a man who was selling lollipops and bought two before they went to another one and bought spinach.

Walking with a girl was certainly something he was not used to, so it was definitely awkward for him . Plus her outfit was stunning, showing that she was from a rich family.

She was neat with her hair styled with styling gels and with butterflies on her two buns . She had a cool golden skin color with full lips , hazel prominent eyes , short in height and a little bit of a curved forehead making her look even beautiful . Her body was just normal , middle sizes .

As they were walking back home enjoying each other's company laughing- Do you know that kind of feeling of feeling like you're being watched? Yep that one . As they were walking down the road an unusual feeling washed over his body and a cold chill ran down his spine . He stopped on his tracks and turned around with the lollipop in his mouth and

for some reason he turned and his eyes scanned around couldn't see anything. Confused Bonolo also stopped and looked at the direction he was facing but didn't see anything but a taxi that stopped and passengers got off before it drove off.

Bonolo: Are you ohk ?

Kagiso: yeah I'm fine...yeah ..just ..

Bonolo: just...?

Kagiso: uhhh.. just heard a familiar voice calling me .

Bonolo: but no one called you. I mean if they called you I would have also heard them.

Kagiso: Maybe it's my minx mind playing tricks with me. So ...why did you guys leave where you live before?

Bonolo: well...how should I start this ..k.. My mother and father got divorced, reason being dad was cheating o her. It wasn't for the first time he cheated on her,but she decided to stay for my sake.

Kagiso : oh...sorry about that . It must've been disturbing seeing your parents part ways after so long .

Bonolo: it was . But no matter how hard it hit me, traumatized me that my family was tearing apart the was nothing I could have done to restore it . It was a glass that was already broken. Having them part was the most stressful thing I ever went through. Her crying out her love and pain out every chance she got had an effect that I started fighting at school. When they called them ..non if them managed to show up so suspension during exams it was . Plus every now and then getting to see my own father come pick up his other children at school teared me inside that I ended up being diagnosed with an Adjustment disorder.

Kagiso: What's that ?

Bonolo: uhhh...its like ..it occur mostly when you have a hard time coping, you react stronger expected in a situation.

Kagiso: sounds serious. Are you ok though ?

Bonolo: you can say that. I've been taking my medication so yeah . Thank God they managed to put me first and put their differences aside before it was too late . They took me to a psychotherapy. Gave me emotional support and all that . And he's wife wasn't as bad as I had thought. She would sometimes tag along with dad and made me understand that she might not be by blood but she's also my mother. And guess what?

Kagiso: what?

Bonolo: that didn't sit well with my mom ..crazy as it is. So she decided to look for a job and place elsewhere. God must have been on her side course she found them within 4 months and that's how we ended up here.

Kagiso: can't imagine me going through all that . But at least you still have a dad ,shelter, a mother and a mother by blood and they all work fine jobs and able to take care of you . Now look at you , healthy and back on your feet You should be grateful.

Bonolo: I wish I could, trust me I do .

Kagiso: so a divorce can be that scandalous?

Bonolo: (laughs) Gothae 'scandalous ' ..its far more worse than that especially when they were married for over 17 years . It has a huge effect on children.

Kagiso: kana how old are you ?

Bonolo: I'm 20 ,you?

Kagiso: (laughs) No way ! You look like your 15 or 16 . I'm 21. J eez ..I thought your still a kid , underage.

Bonolo: common man ..your a months older than me . Ska mpona kele slender wa akanya gore I'm still a kid , I'm old .

Kagiso: Damn ! Tswana girls are full of surprises !

Bonolo: what about Pedi girls?

Kagiso: our girls are ...manly kind- butcxxl unlike you .

Bonolo: (laughs) Manly!?! Kana o dogs batho ra .

Kagiso: Whatever..and please dont call me "Rra" or

is it "Ra" , you making me feel old . No disrespect though .

Bonolo: ohk ..but when a person calls you that it shows that the respect you . J ust like when you guys say 'morena' or monna .

Kagiso: Understood ..but imagine calling me 'Ra' in public..especially in your height, common..

Bonolo: why what's wrong with it ?

Kagiso: just that that "Ra" would be much appreciated in private not in public. Feel what I'm saying? (Wink)

Bonolo: (laughs) you're dirty minded Kg.

Kagiso: in a guy brah ..its in my nature.

He said that with a serious face and a stern voice giving her chills and giggles. She playfully smacked him on the shoulder cursing everyone around to picture them as a couple. But again the feeling returned as they were busy laughing and Kagiso pretended to be running turning back

checking her and around not to alert her ,but still couldn't see anyone watching them. So he carried on playing with her all the way home ...

At the Lyons Mansion.

Rose stared at her laptop with her hands on the keyboard as the dream kept on repeating its elf in her head . She clenched her jaws and hit her head a few times hoping it will erase the memory but nothing happened, so she hit harder pulling her hair as tears rolled out her pressed eyes.

Rose: No no no no !! NAKEDI PLEASE!!

The door flew open and the maid from last time in the kitchen rushed to her pulling her into a tight hug . Rose played her head on her chest crying and she softly rubbed her back calming her down. Still rubbing her back hundreds of questions ran

through her mind . How is one so obsessed with the dead? How does a person moan for so long ? And many more. Rose finally calmed down and dozed off on her chest . The maid(Dineo) looked at her cute round face and smiled before laying her down and pulled a fleece on her . She headed to the door when Rose stopped her .

Rose: please dont go ..dont leave me ..please ..

Just the sound of her voice brought a heartbreak to her . She slowly attempted to walk out but thinking of leaving another girl who is in need of her help structure her and she closed the door walking towards her . Rose made a space for her and she got in bed and pulled the fleece on them . Dineo smiled and pulled her putting her head on her chest and they both relaxed until they fell asleep

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:25] Lynne : #Chapter11

In J ack's office

J ack swang around with his chair and faced outside the huge window looking at the beautiful view of the mall . Cars and people doing ups and down ,going in ouy . His daughter used to love going shopping. She used to shop like there's no tomorrow and most of the things she bought ,she would end up giving them away . She used to get cheered up easily, with something so small like a hug .

But then that girl died along with her friend and only her corpse is left walking around.

At this point he hated Nakedi to an extent that when he thought about it he could just go there and dig her out to feed her remains to crocodiles. That girl died ,and when she died she pulled his daughter

with.

The slightly opened and a man with huge belly in a suit walked in smiling at him . He stood up smiling and they shook hands before they both sat down.

Jack: Jacob ..man I haven't seen you in a decade. Where have you been?

Jacob: I've been around . Isn't that lenna banna lere lathile ? Kana retswa a long way back . After you got married you never bothered to come check on us who were still on the market. You instantly distanced yourself from us.

Jack: I had to course you guys were not as good as appeared. Besides I had to move away since I had found a job here and wanted to start my family far away from home . That place kana ene e mpakela stress hela course everytime I looked at my parents house memories would just occupy me. Di memories tse maswe hela . But now I guess its getting even worse . I think maybe my parents are

punishing me or something.

Jacob: Jang yanong?

Jack: I think they are punishing me through my daughter. She had a friend and they were so close. When she died I guess she took along with my daughter course now my daughter a living ghost. She gets nightmares, doesn't want to go out, she cries all day even after this years. She is always hurt and I put the blame on me. All the bad choices I made when i was young are back to hunt me and my baby pays the price. I dont even know what to do next. I tried giving her whatever she ever wished for but still. A day ago kana she had a nightmare. My baby was paralyzed from that nightmare for almost like 3 f***n minutes. Shaking as if she saw a ghost, terrified asf. Like she was dragged into a horror. Sweaty and unable to talk nor breathe properly. Now she hadn't stepped out of her room since and its slowly killing me seeing her like that. (Swallowed) Shes slowly losing her soul to that girl who is six feet underground and when you talk, it's like your trying to replace her friend or disrespecting

the dead. I just don't know anymore.

Jacob: Have you tried taking her to the mental hospital?

Jack: we did . But it didn't work . See we once took her to the hospital and hell yeah it worked,! But it wasn't for long till she was back to moaning her friend.

Jacob: you should try further and don't give up on her. Take her to see a psychiatrist maybe she'll be able to open up and talk . Talking is one other way to healing faster. If she cant tell you guys what is wrong or her feelings, then find a professional who will openly talk too. And in her state you should limit what you say to her , she might not be stable and end up committing suicide. People like her are most likely to committing suicide without thinking twice . Take her to a psychotherapy. Give her all the support she needs course with you as her parents by her she would fight ten times harder to set herself free. Stay positive. Don't go anywhere near her with a negative mindset course all the things you say are calculated and added together.

Jack: Your right..I cant loose her . She's my only seed in this world.

Jacob: Then do all you can to help her , try beyond expectations and power. She's not gone ,she's just locked in a cage and need a hand to reach out.

Jack: yeah neh ..So how is your life going? How are the boys?

Jacob: They're good. Lefa is married and Donald is returning from the states. And because I know how stupid my sin is ,he won't bring a wife along of his choice. He'd rather fuck the whole of South Africa than being loyal. Hes afraid of commitment and that's going to end in a few months.

Jack: meaning?

Jacob: meaning I'm returning the old rule of our great grandparents. I'm going to look for a girl to marry him as soon as he lands. Same day!. Ke lapisitse ke makgakga aga Donald. That boy o rata kuku Jack! . Lenna kele rragwe ke a e rata hela mosimane yo e tile go mmola. When he was in school we would get complains that he had sex

with girls in the toilets. Their parents would threaten to sue or open a case but eseng wame boy. He went on . I payed a lot of money paying for damages he coused at school. Worse part in the toilets, against the wall ! He's addicted.

Jack: (laughs) like father like son. You also would fuck a lot you cant handle. I wonder how you were able to pick one out of all and move with her. He is you !

Jacob: Kana yena o worse. Thank God he finished school without a record. Anyway..I came by to say high ,I have to head back. See you around.

Jack: Thanks for the chat ,it helped. Maybe we should do dinner sometime.

Jacob: yeah ..here's my card . Call me anytime. Where's Breeze by the way? Haven't seen him since he was 13 . Rumors say he runs the street and owns that successful club. Is he gangster or something?

Jack: you're the only one who doesn't know Breeze is a gangster. He is feared around here. Got

married to two ladies. Sweet and psycho.

Jacob: (laughs) that's a package of every polygamy. Another one has to have morals while the other one loses it in a split. It was nice seeing you man.

Jack: You too . O ba dumedise ko lwapeng.

Jacob: You too.

The bro-hugged and he left leaving Jack in thoughts. He sat down and picked his phone calling his assistant.

Jay: hey..can you please help me find the best Psychotherapist in town. --- No I'm ohk its for someone--thank you, please clear my schedule for the day I have a headache. --ohk bye .

He picked his brief, phone and car keys and went out .

At the Mall

Gail walked around the shelves pushing a trolley picking something's while humming a song . She stopped picking some teen stuffs and put them in the trolley heading to the wine section. She smiled looking at her favorite wine and picked 3 of them before going to take an olive oil. She pushed her trolley and went to pay when a tall dark beautiful man caught her attention shouting over the phone walking over. She took out her card and when she was about to pay a strong arm stretched giving the cashier a card.

Man: I'll pay ...

Gail: uhm no ..thanks but I have my card an-

Man: i insist.

Gail: ohk ..but dont expect anything in return.

Matter of fact buy her lunch course i was about to buy her one, so add it on top . Shes a friend.

He turned looking at her with a smile and she looked away with a serious face . The cashier looked at them before going to get what she would like for lunch and came back scanning everything. Gail turned and picked her shopping bags before smiling at the cashier who smiled back happily.

Gail: (winks) girl you just scored yourself a lunch, lucky you .

Cashier: Thank you mam.

She walked away as the man smiled impressed taking his card biting his lip and followed her to her car. She put everything in the boot and frowned looking at him leaning against her car.

Gail: move ..I have a husband to feed your wasting my time .(checked her wrist) and he hates it when I don't follow time. Tloga .

Man: (smiling) you're so miserly.

Gail: excuse me?!

Man: you just robbed me R200 saying I should buy someone lunch claiming her your friend. Funny thing is she played along with you. Sgebengu!

Gail: you insisted remember? Now get out of my way.

Man: you're good at this, using this pretty innocent face to it. What more are you capable of? Course now I already know one, which is the ability to fool someone.

Gail: Murder. That's what I'm capable of.

He looked at her neutral face and frowned but eventually smiled stepping aside and she got in. He took out his business card and threw it on her lap smiling.

Man: like to see more of you thug. Enjoy the rest of your day beautiful.

He walked away before she could say anything and she smiled looking at the card on her lap. She picked it reading his name. "Mxolisi". She shook her head before putting it aside and drove off.

At Breezes house

Breeze slowly opened his eyes to Sagis baby face and kissed her forehead before heading to the shower.

After a few mins he stepped out and wore his clothes before going downstairs.

He checked his phone and it had several missed calls and messages, he sighed getting a pear and went to sit down. A call came through and he but the pear answering.

Odirile: dont tell me you just woke up.

Breeze: Rile what do you want ?

Odirile: I want your a** here at the club in 15 minutes.

He hang up before he could respond and Breeze sighed throwing his head back . He took out his phone and dialed Jack but he didn't pick ,tried rose but still. He hated calling his sister in law course always it get awkward and uncomfortable somewhere during the call . He dialed her and she picked up after few rings .

Jane: (softly) Hello?

Breeze: hey , how are you ?

Jane: I'm fine ,you ?

Breeze: Godd . Is Jack around?

Jane: I'm at work so I'm not sure if he had already knocked off or what? Try calling the house telephone.

Breeze: ohk..are you sure your ohk though? You sound down . Is everything ohk?

Jane: I'll be fine

Breeze: So your not fine ? You just said your fine when I called. You lied when you know I hate being lied to Jane . What's up?

Jane :(scoffs) You hate when they lie to you but you lie more than anything in this world. You lie all the time but do not want us to lie back.

Breeze: you won't understand, myn is a habbit and hobby. That's why I'm pretty good at it and able to see when one is lying. And when you lie I feel like you're teasing me saying I cant lie ,so I get angry.

Jane: (laughs) what?

Breeze: yeah..so what's going on?

Jane: (sigh) I'd rather not talk over the phone .

Breeze: then I'll see you later .

Jane: (softly) ohk .

The was silence as they both waited to hear if the other still has something to say but nothing, so they stayed like that with their hearts racing for about a minute.

Breeze: bye ..

Jane: bye..

He hang up and looked at his phone before heavily sighing. He went upstairs and wore his sneakers before taking his car keys and left minutes later Gail drove in .

At Kagiso's house

Around 19h00 PM. Kagiso walked out of the holding a dry bread in his hand eating and sat on the stoep. He finished it and layed down facing up the sky looking at the stars.

A smile built from the corner of his lip and shook his head .

Kagiso: (smiling) Bonolo

He closed his eyes smiling and replayed today's day. She's so zest . She doesn't care about his status . She doesn't even look down on him saying he is leaving in a one room shack . Eating spinach with pap. Leaving with his mother and all those hurtful things they always say to him . He sighed as his mind suddenly drifted off like a switch.

He slowly opened his eyes to a dark night with birds flying up the sky . He turned his head to the right and there was nothing but tall scary trees . His heart pounded and he stood up . He was in the middle of a scary forest . He turned around looking at the unfamiliar place with no direction or way to show how he got here . A movement came from the branches and he turned around as his heart raced.

He heavily breathed at took a step when he suddenly stepped in water. He looked down and the water was clean reaching up to his knees. His hands shook from fear getting sweaty. He looked around and the forest was now in water and the water turned dark. Slowly he could feel his foot on the sand, he wasn't wearing any shoes. Something slightly touched his foot and he could literally feel his heart beating on his throat right now. He rubbed his face with his shirt and when he let go looking around further he could see a flower on top of the water. As he tried breathing properly something quickly passed behind him touching his shoulder. His heart almost jumped out but he stood still unable to move.

Voice: (whisper) The flower..the flower..flower..flower...

He could literally feel his heart beat hard on his chest from the whispering. He tried running away

but his knees failed him unable to bent and help him run. He slowly took a step by step trying to change direction but his legs would only move towards the flower and nowhere else. He took a step further, but before he could put his foot down he faced it elsewhere when he twisted his ankle and fell in the water screaming in pain.

Kagiso's mother rushed out of the house as soon as she heard a loud bang on the ground and saw Kagiso sweating dusting himself standing up and sat on the stoep. He rubbed the sweat with his shirt and pulled his leg to his lap examining it with shaky hands.

Mother: Kagiso keng?

He did breath excercises and leaned back holding

his chest and sighed in relief as his mother looked at him not knowing what to say.

Kagiso: I almost died

His mother frowned looking at him rubbing the sweat off his face and breathed heavily.

.

Comment

.

.

[08/02, 13:26] Lynne : #Chapter 12

At the hospital.

Around 21h00. Jane injected her patient before pressing a cotton where she injected him .

Jane: hold this for me please. Thank you.

He held on and she went to check his file before writing something down and wrote a letter for him . She tore it and put it in an envelope and handed it to him as he pressed his arm .

Jane:(chuckles) it ohk .. you can let go it's not like your bleeding. Just a drop .

Man:(smile) You'll never know, maybe I bleed when I get injected.

Jane: though a smaller wound of an injection . Please . Here ..you'll pass by the clinic and they will give you your medication. Your improving, keep it up .

Man: thank you Doc .

Jane: don't mention it .

He stood up and took the letter before he went out .

Jane sighed taking off the glove and threw them in a bin before washing her hands . The door slowly opened and she turned looking at Breeze with his hands in the pockets.

He looked smart in sweat pants and a big hoodie hiding his half of his face. He always preferred black and it sure looked good on him . Will he ever wear suits?

Breeze: Staring is rude.

Jane:(embarrassed) kidding me ..I wasn't staring. Why would I stare ?

Breeze: you dont have to deny it . Its normal..but disrespectful.

He sat down and she pulled a tissue wiping her hands . She threw it away and sat on her chair pulling it unknowingly that her dress revealed her boobs. Breeze's eyes jumped to her chest looking at her smooth babies. His pants stretched and he

cleared his throat looking away putting his hands in the pocket leaning back as she sat properly pulling her dress up her chest .

Jane: you ok?

Breeze: hmm?

Jane: O siame?

Breeze:(cleared throat) yeah ngi'right . Wena?

Jane: uhm ..

Breeze: no lying Mrs . What is it?

Jane: its Rose . She is starting again.

Breeze: Starting what? You can talk to me .

Jane: I'm worried about her . Breeze my baby is dieing and my hands are tied . There's nothing I can do to help her (teary) . I tried with medication, taking her to the hospital, therapist,vacations and all but my baby is slowly fading . All she ever thinks or talk about its Nakedi. When you try to help her it's like telling her to forget Nakedi and replace her .

Recently she's been having nightmares and when she wakes up she struggles to breathe and her body become temporarily paralyzed. She always drags her soul back from these nightmares and I'm afraid that one day she'll die in them. (Crying) And I can't lose my only fruit Breeze I can't. She's obsessed with the dead. I once caught her wearing her clothes. Then the other time she lit candles in the house saying she's talking to her friend asking her to return to her. A day ago she had a nightmare and she was shaking, I mean shaking to an extent that the bed was also moving. Crying in her sleep screaming. (teary) Screaming her name! I don't know what that girl did to my daughter. I used to love her but now I could just die and kill her in spirit course she's turning my daughter into an evil angel. Seeing her in this state is eating me Breeze. I..I..I don't know what to do. I tried taking her to church and they prayed for her and still. That girl is holding on to my daughter and doesn't want to let her go. Rose is possessed. My only rose. The flower of my womb! (Crying)

Breeze looked at her not knowing what to do as she put her hands on her face crying in them . His throat dried and he swallowed. His wives used to cry and he knew only one way to comfort them but he couldn't do that to her . He bit his lip and rubbed them with his thumb looking at her as she cried.

Jane: (sniffs) And guess what your brother does to worsen the situation ?

Breeze:...

Jane: he makes threats! Threatens Rose !. Now Rose is always in fear and pain . Does it ever occur to him that he is making things even worse? Who knows maybe when he did those threats Nakedi got even angry and now she's doing her most .

Breeze:..

Jane: (crying) I cant loose her.. I cant . Maybe I should go visit her at the cemetery and ask her to let Rose be . She can make me suffer on her behalf

then course this is more than she can handle. It's been years now Breeze. Years !!

Breeze looked at her as she turned pink from her crying. He clenched his jaws fighting himself. He wasn't good in advices or comforting. He tapped his foot on the ground a few time and bite his lip before standing up and went to her side. He helped her stand and pulled her into a hug .

His hug raised her body cells from sleep . She hasn't felt bold strong arm around her body in years . She's used to a big belly pushing in her hungry stomach further in . Oh.. and he smelled so good .This guy was a turn on . What is so difficult that Jack is not able to have this body ?

Her body heated as her panties soaked . She wrapped her hands around him smelling in his cologne. With her head on his chest she could feel his heart beating fast. She blushed as his weapon poked her stomach.

Meanwhile Breeze kept saying small prayers in his

heart for his boner to die but it stretched even further.

Both of them wondered "Would it be a bad idea ?"

Jane rose her head looking him in the eyes with her hands still wrapped around him . He looked nothing like Jack and their big bro . He took his mothers beautiful face course she could see her mother in law in a man form. And boy did he look cute . She bit her lip and went back laying her head on his chest wondering what was running in his mind course his face was just neutral.

Meanwhile with her in his arms Breeze pressed his eyes . She had brown tempting eyes with heavy lower lips . He promised to never do this . He closed his eyes with " Shes your brothers wife " words repeating in his head . But then the memory of his brother setting fire to the house while he was inside rubbed those words off . His parents murder.

Revenge occupied his head as he fought the urge to pick her up but no he couldn't.

He held her waist closer to him making her feel his

dragon and pulled her chin to his face kissing the
shit out of her . He took off her coat and lowered the
strings of her dress down and her breasts pointed
at him . He bit his lip and nipped her as she
mounded holding his head . Damn he was good .
She pulled his head for a kiss and slid her hand in
his pants and gasped through the kiss . She pulled
away from the kiss and bit her lip looking at him
,again he had a neutral face but now with those
eyes . She bit her fingers when he tossed her to the
table pushing everything aside with her . Her heart
pounded as he lifted her dress up . He stepped back
a bit looking at her round butt with those red lace
panties and smirked before tearing them and she
gasped .

Jane: B..Breeze...

Breeze: shhhhh...

She tried getting up but he pushed her to the table
as her heart pounded.

Breeze: I hate being disturbed.

He used his leg to separate her legs looking at her pink cookie and he slowly rubbed it taking out his weapon,damn she was soaked . Her mouns filled the room and she bit her finger trying to reduce her volume. He was really good at this , with only a touch down there she was already high.He stroked his dragon and """"

He gave her his last shots while he pinned her against the wall and pulled her face for a kiss before stepping back . He took a tissue wiping himself as she slowly landed on the ground with shaky legs unable to stand while his milk slowly went down her thighs. He packed himself and picked her up putting her on the bed . That was knew to her . She looked at him and he leaned in for a kiss . He broke it and she dozed off .

He stood there looking at her , guilt struck in and he

bit his lip before stepping back and put everything in place . Sure he couldn't leave her panties here. He put them in his pocket and opened the door . He turned looking at her and left closing the door. He passed by the table .

Breeze: Mrs Lyon says you should clear her schedule,and no one must disturb her . She's not feeling good .

Lady: Ohk ...I saw that she was not ohk ,she wasn't saying much nor smiling and that's not really her . Pray she feels better soon .

Breeze: (clear throat) yeah ..hope so . Remember no one should disturb her .

Lady: I'll personally make sure .

Breeze: That includes you ..Bye

Lady: bye .

Breeze lightly hit the table two time before walking out with his hands in the pockets. The lady looked

at him suspiciously. He never spent more than an hour here before but today he spent 2 hours .

Lady: Family matters maybe .

She shook her head and got back to work .

At Breezes house .

Breeze parked his car and hit the wheel few times in regret. This has nothing to do with her . Did he just make her pay for her husband's sin . Hell yeah she was good but really? Taking advantage of her situation and making her pay on behalf of her husband? .

He closed his eyes and smelled his clothes. His clothes smelled her perfume and smelled sex at the same time . He put his head on the wheel before sighing and stepped out .

He got into the house and heard Sagi and Gail talking in the kitchen and walked fast to the stairs when Sagi saw him .

Sagi: hey baby ..

He stopped on the stairs and turned looking at her as she stood against the wall in shorts and a biggy tshirt barefoot. He took steps back forcing a smile looking at her.

Breeze: smucles ..

Sagi: where have you been? Odirile and Eli came looking for you . He said you guys parted and had to meet up again but didn't show up .

Breeze: I was with Jack . Trying to figure a way to help Rose . She's getting worse .

Sagi:(sadly) Oh..i should go see her tomorrow .
Why are you uneasy? Is everything ohk .

Breeze: hmm?

Sagi: is everything alright?

Breeze: Sagi whose the man here ?

Sagi: what's that supposed to mean ?

He looked at her as she suspiciously looked at him . This one never begged out and if he continued she'll come closer to him and that's not gonna end good . He turned walking to their room and locked before taking off his clothes putting them in his closet and went to take a shower .

Meanwhile Sagi looked at the door fighting the urge to go bang it tapping her foot on the floor. She turned and joined Gail in the kitchen .

Gail: what?

Sagi: something is not right . He did something .

Gail: He did nothing, cant he go out without you

questioning him . He'll be mad saying wara wara
you know him .

Sagi: whatever..

Gail: Relax..here's your food .

.

.

.

.

. Comment

.

.

[08/02, 13:27] Lynne : #Chapter13

At the Hospital

Early around 4am in the morning ,J ane slowly

opened her eyes to a poster of a body . She sighed tossing and got off the bed . Her punani was sour and hot . She put her hand between her legs and flinched and looked at her hand covered in Breezes rain. Did he just cum in her ? . But hell she hasn't orgasmed in a long time and it felt good . He did miracles on her . Ever since it was her she was never positioned in those positions during sex . Touched down there or got her breast sucked like that . She smiled licking her lips thinking of how their bodies clapped against one another . How he tossed her like she was some sort of a doll . How he pinned her on the table smashing her from behind and tossed her again putting her legs on his shoulder fucking the shit out of her while cubing her breasts. How her pulled her hair, spanked her ,kisses , helped her stand and put one of her legs on the chair made her hold on to the table . How he picked her and pinned her against the wall . Damn hes a God in this . No wonder he married two wives . He is able to make you cum 2 to three times in a row without his releasing. But he did once and after he was done cleaning his pipe he went again.

She giggled and pulled her dress down and went to her table she looked on the floor and frowned looking at their mess and went to get a mop . She came back and cleaned everything .

Her eyes caught the clock by the wall and her heart skipped. She dropped the mop and took her bag phone and bag fixing her hair on her way out .

She looked at the nurse on the table and walked over .

Jane: hey ...

Lady: Doc ..how are you feeling? Your brother in law told me that you said you were sick and do not want any disturbance. So I asked Doctor Zwene to cover up for you .

Jane: oh thank very much. Uhm ...were you working double shifts?

Lady: yeah ...cover ups

Jane: ohk ..thank you .

She walked out fishing for her keys in her bag and got them unlocking her car . She sighed and looked at her self on the mirror and took out her hair brush and brushed it . His cologne was still on her clothes so she took out her perfume and sprayed herself before driving off.

''''''

She got there and parked her car in the garage before stepping out with a pounding heart . She took a step towards the house but it felt heavy. She leaned against the car as tears burned her eyes. She looked at the ring on her finger and tears rolled down her cheeks. She just cheated on her husband. With his brother on top of that . She was never the kind to cheat and not once has she cheated on her husband. What has she turned into ? .

She looked down as more tears rolled down and she gathered herself together wiping her tears and went in .

She passed by Rose's room and slightly opened the door and saw Dineo sleeping by her side . This girl

was so sweet and well mannered. She couldn't understand why she ended up by the streets selling her body . But thank God she saw the light and quit before it's too late . She closed the door and walked to the main bedroom and slowly walked in .

She looked at him under the sheets snoring . This was her husband. The man that loved her throughout everything. The one that put a ring on her finger but she decided to give his food to his brother . Tears burned her eyes and she walked towards the bathroom and leaned on the basin crying. Did she just give herself like that. She poured water in the bathtub and took off her dress and remembered how he tore her panties. She rubbed her tears and got into the tub and layed in there closing her eyes listening to her boiling cookie.

At Breezes house.

Around 7am ,Odirile parked his car and walked towards the house and put the pin by the door and it

unlocked and he walked in . They were not yet awake or Breeze became Breeze on them .

He walked to the kitchen and opened the fridge, took out a bowl of food before warming them and poured himself juice ,sat on the high chair eating .

Meanwhile Sagi walked down the stairs in a biggy tshirt that looked more like a dress on her with messy hair rubbing her eyes . She walked to the kitchen and sighed looking at Odirile.

Odirile: Hey baby.

Sagi: hey ... and what are you doing?

Odirile: I'm eating. You guys know how to cook unlike that stupid fool I accommodated in my house

.

Sagi: your sister?

Odirile: yeah ..she doesn't know how to cook ,what she knows is talking shit only . We always order takeaways because she chased my cook away .

Sagi: the you should get a girl, the one who'll cook

for you then .

Odirile: why do I need to get one when I have you and Gail ?

Voice: They are mine and they cook for me not us . I married them we didn't marry them .

Breeze walked in and went to stand by Sagi pulling her for a kiss and sat next to Odirile while Sagi made two cups of coffee and gave one to Breeze.

Odirile : what about me ?

Both: What about you?

Odirile: yame yona e kae ?

Sagi: Odirile your drinking juice.

Odirile: you should have asked me if I'm done with the juice or what course I'm done . Now I want coffee.

Breeze: you know this is ain't a Restaurant right .

Sagi: and you're finishing food .

Odirile: ao Sagi .. just a cup of coffee wouldn't hurt you know.

Sagi: no Odirile.

Odirile: one ..

Sagi: no

Odirile: Are you gonna let her -

Breeze: it's her house not myn .

Odirile: mxm .

Sagi laughed and went upstairs leaving them alone. Odirile chuckled before standing up and made his . He looked at Breeze who was not drinking his coffee but rather running his finger on the hold .

Odirile: What is it ?

Breeze: nothing.

Odirile: it's not nothing. Come on spit it .

Breeze: spit what ?

Odirile: stop with this question. You know man I came here to tell you shit but I'm on hold because I want you to relax so that the shit I'm gonna say stuck in your head . When your like this I know I'll be talking on my own . Now tell me what's wrong?

Breeze: nothing.

Odirile: nothing huh? So where were you last knight

.

Breeze: are you my wife now? Why do I have to tell you about my whereabouts ?

Odirile: so you were somewhere doing something you shouldn't be doing right?

Breeze: I don't know what you're talking about.

Odirile: Breeze I know you more than you know yourself. When you did something you became distant and quiet? You drift off and you answer a question with a question. You dont eat you do nothing . What is it ?

Breeze: is that knowing me ?

Odirile: you just did what I said right now . Answer a question with a question.

Breeze: are you gonna let it go ?

Odirile: I dont think so .

Breeze sighed looking at him and drank his coffee while he waited . He shook his head and yeah he was right . Odirile never let's shit go . He'd rather provoke you all day until you say what's up .

Breeze: I fuc-

Gail walked downstairs in her suit and distracted him . She walked over to him and kissed his cheek before walking greeting Odirile.

Gail: Baby today I'm taking your car .

Breeze: what's wrong with your car ?

Gail I dont want it today . I want yours .

Breeze: why ?

Gail : course I want your car .

He chuckled and she smiled hugging him from behind ,kissed his neck before walking out leaving them . Odirile looked at Gail walking out and tuned his attention to him. Breeze looked at him and got off the chair shaking his head . Odirile looked at him when his eyes fell on a love bite on his neck .

Odirile: did she just leave a love bite on you with a baby kiss ?

Breeze stopped on his tracks and looked at him . Yesterday non of them kissed his neck and they definitely did not have sex . Only one person left it there . He jogged up the stairs and went into the bathroom looking at his neck . Sagi stepped out of the shower naked and looked at him rubbing his

neck.

Sagi: Are you ok ?

He turned looking at her nude and swallowed before walking over to avoid the long conversation after his answer. He pulled her into the shower kissing her wetting his clothes.

.

.

.

Will post another one later

[08/02, 13:33] Lynne : #Chapter14

At Breezes house

Meanwhile downstairs Odirle looked at his wrist and sighed before standing and went to wash the

dishes they were using. He wiped them and packed them back before grabbing a bottle of water in the fridge going upstairs.

He stood by their door and heard the sound of their bodies clapping against one another and their mouns. He chuckled before going back downstairs when Jack walked in .

Jack: Odirile

Odirile: Jack , what's up ?

Jack: nothing man . Where's Breeze?

Odirile: hes busy upstairs with Sagi .

Jack: I better get going . Thanks bye.

Odirile: Eban! Why are you always leaving when she's around? Do you have some sort of history together that's fueling the beef every now and then?

Jack: no . Me and Sagi do not have any history. I just knew her when she started dating Breeze. I don't know why she hates me . She wants nothing to do with me and she's always angry to see me .

Her hate for me is always questionable.

Odirile: Sagi is a good girl . She forgave a lot of people who had beef with her . What's so difficult for her to forgive you for doing?

Jack : nothing. I have nothing against this girl but the way she hates me is distend . I always question myself what I did to her but I can't seem to find the answers. Gail thinks its about that incident that happened years back. Even so i asked for forgiveness. Breeze forgave me why can't she do the same and besides this has nothing to do with her . Its between me and my brothers . Shes just a daughter in law ,she should behave like one and stop playing Breezes parent.

Odirile: But I also understand her if that's the case . You almost killed her husband. The only person she loved and you almost took him away from her . Imagine if it was her that almost killed your wife by setting a time bomb on her car . Would you say it was a mistake and you forgive her just like that? After taking your lover away from you?

Jack: I wouldn't and this us different man . This is between brothers, why does she have to stick her nose into our brotherhood? .

Odirile: yeah neh ..

Breeze walked down the stairs in sweat pants with no shirt on and frowned looking at his brother. His heart pounded but played cool looking at his annoyed face . He walked over and sat down opposite him balancing his head with his arms on his thighs .

Jack: how are you doing young man ?

Breeze: good .(clear throat) you ?

Jack: I'm good .. I've been trying to call you but it didn't go through. I tried you for like 3 to 4 time in the last couple of days. Where's your phone?

Breeze: in my pocket . And how is that possible-

He took out his phone and checked only to find that his calls were blocked . Only one person did this ? He smiled buting his lip and unblocked him before putting the phone back.

Jack: so ..?

Breeze: you were blocked .

Jack: why did you block me?

Breeze: I dont block any calls my girls do . And they block you if you're doing something they do not like .

Jack: (sighed) is it Sagi?

Breeze: Why does everything to you has to do with Sagi ? It could be any of us .

Jack: kana your wife hates me . She says it all the time and makes sure that I do not forget that she hates me . She likes saying " Jack ..wait i your upsetting my stomach " . Like wtf . She says it without even thinking.

Odirile: (laughs) now that sounds more like her . She doesn't run around the bush she tells you

straight in the eye . That's what I like about her .
She's not even scared of calling out someone's
packages in public. She stand her ground that one .
Talk about piece of shit.

Breeze: Y'all leave my wife alone ohk . And wena
Rile stop calling my wife a piece of shit . I'll punch
you in the middle of your face right now .

Odirile:(laughs) I'd like to see it coming.

Breeze: Mxm ...So you say you've been trying to call
me right ? What is it that you wanted?

Jack rubbed his face and looked at him biting his lip
. Breezes heart pounded looking at him . Could she
have told him about their secret? As much as he
wanted him to pay this was his brother and she was
his and not him . He looked at him and swallowed
meanwhile Odirile looked at him rubbing his hands
together. Breeze never behaved like this toward
Jack's presence. He always remained himself but
today he was not , rather uneasy tapping his foot on
the floor .

Jack: its Rose .

Breeze released a heavy sigh leaning back and relaxed looking at him . On the other hand Odirile looked at him with suspicion.

Breeze: i know.

Jack :what do you know?

Breeze: uhm what were you gonna tell me? About her nightmares?

Jack: how do you know that ?

Breeze: (cleared throat) I have a sister in law remember. She told one of my wives and she told me .

Jack: oh ..

Breeze: She's gonna be ohk. Take her to for therapy and she'll get back up .

Jack: but we tried that remember? Even took her to a mental hospital. Now I'm only left with one choice.

Breeze: which is ?

Jack: I'm thinking if the Psychotherapy isn't helping..we should consult a seer .

Breezes eyes popped at the same time as Odirile looking at him . He looked at them and no he's decision was final . If there's anything he is concerned about right now it's his daughter.

Jack: yeah..maybe he can block the evil spirit away from my daughter. Its the only way .

- .
- .
- .
- .

-
-
-
-

Comment

[08/02, 13:33] Lynne : #Chapter15

At Breezes house .

They both looked at him as he rubbed his hands together . He was serious. Jack stood up and picked his car keys when Sagi walked down stairs in her spaghetti dress that revealed her hourglass figure . Today she let her hair lose bouncing on her shoulder. Odirile traced her body and smiled looking at Breeze on the other hand Jack swallowed thinking why such an angelic creature hates him so bad . She was beautiful even in simple clothes.

Odirile: Wow ..you look beautiful. Where you going?

Sagi: I'm going to check on Rose and I have something to talk about with Jane .

Breeze: (heart skipped) what is that?

Sagi: something something.

Odirile: today I'm your boy baby . Let's ride .

Breeze: Ride my foot ! Sagi your not going anywhere.

Sagi: Excuse me ?

Breeze: Your not going anywhere today .

Odirile: And then wena . She's not going anywhere ?

Breeze: Odirile I'm talking to my wife stay out of this .

Sagi: But why ?

Breeze: Nothing . Go upstairs .

Sagi bit her lip fighting her inner self to bust out in front of his brother and Odirile. She turned back

to their room and banged the door .

Odirile: really? She's a stay in now ? Kana she was going to see Jane . She was going to your brother's house .

Breeze: I'll meet you at the club.

Jack: You know her and i dont get along but dont do this to her . I dont know if it's for the first time or what but dont be that husband. Anyway bye .

He picked his keys on the table and walked out .
Odirile also stood up and looked at him before chuckling.

Odirile: you my guy smell guilt. And I wont leave it laying until you tell me what you did ? Anyway bye .

He left leaving Breeze all alone . He stood up and went upstairs . He slowly opened the door and

walked in on her sitting by the mirror brushing her hair . He sat on the edge of the bed and she looked at him through the mirror.

Breeze: hey .

Sagi: what was that about?

Breeze: nothing ...am I wrong to want to spend a day with my wife ? I didn't know it was crime .

Sagi: Breeze what was that about ? Dont give me that course it seemed a lot more than that . You just ordered me like I'm your child bashfuling me infront of your friend and brother .

Breeze: I just told you I want to spend time with you . Babe ever since I returned we never had our time alone. I miss you.

Sagi: so does that give you the right to be all ..I dont know. Breeze what's wrong with you?

Breeze: Sagi i just told you why I did that and I'm sorry. It wont happen again.

Sagi:hell yeah it wont happen again, you scared me

on top of that .

Breeze: you scared ? Please. So what were you going to do there ?

Sagi: to see J ane and Rose . Baby please let me go see her . Right now Rose needs us more than ever and you know it .

Breeze: So your going there to see J ane? About what?

Sagi: something something. Why do you want to know so badly what I'm going to see her for ?

Breeze: just asking .

Sagi stood and picked her phone before kissing him .

Sagi: I'll be right back .

She walked out and closed the door behind her .
Breeze quickly took out his phone dialing J ane .

Jane: hey ..

Breeze: Have you said anything?

Jane: No ..why ?

Breeze: ohk keep it that way we both have so much to lose. Bye .

He hang up and sighed before getting dressed and left .

At Kagiso's house.

Kagiso sat under a marula tree in their yard . The dream played in his mind while he stared at their house . A heavy wind blew his cap that was on his knee to the gate when he snapped and went to get it .

He picked it and dusted the soil of and put it on . His eyes looked at the side of the road and there she

was . She was just standing there in her white dress with long hair and an unclear face . He stood there looking at her and she also looked at him without moving.

He opened the gate and when he tried to cross the road a coca cola truck hooked and he stepped back letting it pass . After it has passed she was nowhere to be seen . He looked around and there was nowhere she could have hidden unseen.

He held his waist and walked back into their yard when Bonolos mother stepped out of the house in her formal wear talking over the phone .

Her: wait ..Hello boy

Kagiso: Hey ..

She got in the car and drove off when Bonolo stepped out in her shorts covered in paint and went to stand by the fence .

Bonolo: hey you .

Kagiso: hey .

He couldn't help but look at her smooth legs and up to her chest. Her crop top was covered in paint .She had an amazing body and today she tied a bun on her head .

Kagiso: what's up ?

Bonolo: nothing ..i should be asking you that .

Kagiso: nothing. What are you doing covered in paint ?

Bonolo: oh ..I'm just painting something that I dont even know what it is ?

Kagiso: oh ..

Bonolo: Come see it . Maybe you could help since you love art .

Kagiso: I dont think that's a great idea.

Bonolo: come on, you scared I'll fuck you ?

Kagiso: (laughs) what? No ..jeez dude .

Bonolo : then come .

He looked at her as she smiled revealing her one dimple and walked out of the gate to hers . She opened the door widely for him and he stepped in before closing.

He looked around and it didn't look like they just moved in . The house was really beautiful and fully furnished. She pulled him by his hand and let him to their storeroom that she had turned it into her work place .

Bonolo: here it is ,what do you think?

It was a painting of a ballerina dancing in the rain at night with street lights . He picked a brush and dipped it in a paint and painted the lights to make them a bit dim .

Kagiso: its raining right ? So the lights can't be that bright. But otherwise its perfect. I love the oil paint used and the life you gave in it . The scapes and-

Bonolo: (softly)Kagiso..

Kagiso: hmm?

He turned with one hand in the pocket and another one holding the brush. Her heart pounded looking at him . She couldn't believe she has fallen inlove with him already . She bit her lip looking at him and came closer to him trying to talk but words stuck on her tongue.

Bonolo: why dont you make one ? I'm sure I can learn from yours and next time I..wont make a mistake.

Kagiso: (smiling) sure . Do you have extra boards? Or A4s ?

Bonolo:(clear throat) yeah ..there .

He took a white painting board and set it up before taking the paints and two chairs and sat down.

Kagiso: come sit .

She walked over and sat next to him and he smiled at her before starting to paint. She put her hands between her laps and looked at him painting.

Bonolo: so what are you painting?

Kagiso: I don't know.

Bonolo: so your just painting? In dark colors only ?

Kagiso: (smiling) something that's in my head . It has been there since last night.

Bonolo: A dream. Must be a bad one for you to paint with dark colors only.

Kagiso: (smiling) yeah ..

Bonolo: can I tell you something?

Kagiso: sure ,what is it?

Bonolo: promise me you won't freak out .

Kagiso put the brush down and turned his attention to her . She bit her upper lip and he pulled her hands in his gently squeezing them .

His touch gave her goosebumps and she looked right in his eyes . He was so relaxed. Could telling him about her feelings ruin the relationship they have ? She looked down on they hands and back at him.

Kagiso: you can tell me anything, I promise I wont react in an abject manner. What is it ?(smiled)

At the Lyons Mansion.

Sagi parked her car before stepping out and went

towards the house. She pressed the door bell and a maid rushed over opening for her .

Maid: good day Mrs Lyon

Sagi:(smile)Sagi please .. Calk me Sagi .

Maid: (smiling) I'm used to calling you Mrs Lyon so its gonna take long for me to get hold of Sagi only .

Sagi: As long as you call me Sagi on the end its ohk .

Maid: Yes mam .

Sagi: is Rose around?

Maid: she's in her room mam.

Sagi:ohk thanks

She walked upstairs greeting everyone she comes across and went to Rose's room . She lightly knocked and Rose answered her before she could get in smiling.

Sagi: (smiling) where's my favourite person in the whole wide world?

Rose: hey aunty. How are you ?

Sagi: I'm sad right now . Common smile for me please ,just once in a while please.

Rose:(forced smile)

Sagi: that one its forced but thank you . What are you up too?

Rose: I was watching this movie. Horror.

Sagi: you still watch that ,aren't you getting scared?

Rose: I saw the worst. (Sigh)

Sagi: like what ?

Rose: I dont wanna talk about it .

Sagi: fair enough.

Rose : are you here with aunt Gail and uncle?

Sagi: no..they are busy but I'm sure they'll come check on you .

Rose: check on me for what ?

Sagi: just to say hi . They haven't seen you in a while .

Rose: they told you didn't they ?

Sagi: told us what ?

Rose: Auntie your a bad liar you know that ?. My parents told you that I'm having nightmares right ? Why are you guys so obsessed with me ,why cant you just leave me and my friend alone! . That's my friend not ours! . Nakedi is my friend leave us alone! J ust say it Auntie. They told didn't they ?!about my nightmares right?

Sagi: I don't know what your talking about. Are you having nightmares?

She sighed and stood up with her laptop and sat next to Sagi on the bed .

Rose: Sorry for yelling at you . I didn't mean to. Let's watch your favorite movie. I'm glad your here . I

love you .

Sagi: its ohk I love you too .

They hugged and Rose switched on her laptop and Nakedi's picture flashed. Sagi looked at her then back at the laptop and they leaned on the headboard watching the movie.

At Gail's Gallery.

Gail walked around with a buyer showing her beautiful pieces that could fit in very well in a dining room. They stood by a huge one of bright flowers and looked at it and smiled at each other .

Gail: this one is also my favorite. I put it here so that whomever gets in here should see how amazing our artists are . It was painted by some guy named Phapano . He's good . Found him by the streets painting on the streets. You know those

silly boys that paint people's walls right ?(they loughed) yeah . I asked him to make a painting or draw something for me and ill put it in the eyes for him and there it is . He took out his all . He is so talented. Right now he is busy with another one in our painting room .

Woman: your such a generous inspiring woman Gail . I wish everyone else was just like you . You help pick up those who are in need and help them find their selves in art . Your a good woman keep it up .

Gail: thank you .

Woman: I'll have it . Where are the papers if there are papers course my house needs something to cheer it up ? Where do I pay?

Gail: (laughing) alright alright go there they'll help you . Thank you for visiting Gail's Gallery.

Woman: I should thank you for opening such a living place . It'll help our children a lot . They'll stop with drugs and find themselves a better place to be here .

Gail: thank you .

They shook hands and she went to make payments and Gail sighed with a smile and looked at the painting . She is really upgrading non stop . Her Gallery is growing bit by bit and day by day .

Voice: Wow ..this is a surprise.

She recognized the voice and couldn't help but smile and turned looking at him . He was in a suit that held on to his body and he had unbuttoned the shirt on his chest with a cross necklace on. He looked like he just had a haircut and man did it look good . He walked over to her smiling looking at her figure in her suit . This was a woman right there .

Mxo: sgebengu ndin'. How are you ?

Gail: I'm good and how are you ?

Mxo: I'm also good . You look good .

Gail: thanks and so do you .

Mxo:(playfully) I know

Gail: you're so fooling yourself dont you ?

Mxo: but you just said I look good nawe angisho ?

Gail: I was just being civil. Now that I look at you ..mmh mmh your bad .

Mxo: is this how you welcome customers around here ? You should get fired ,let me talk to your boss . Course this is highly unacceptable. I should report you to the CPA. Call the boss .

Gail: Here she is ?

Mxo: where? I'm serious.

Gail: your looking at her .

Mxolisi looked at her and smiled before the smiled turned into a laughter. His laughter was similar to Breezes. They laugh like they own the laughter moments. He stopped and looked at her before

turning back to the receptionist.

Mxo: hey ..whose the owner of this place ?

Man: its Mrs Abigail Lyon. That one right there .

Mxo:(frowned) Lyon ? As in from the Lyon family?

Man: yes sir ..Lyon . She's married to Breeze Lyon.

Mxo swallowed looking at Gail and Theres a no possible way she was married to a gangster. He smiled walking over and stood by her looking at a free hand sketch.

Gail: so..?

Mxo: Gail right? I wanna take you out on a lunch.

Gail: (looked at him) unfortunately I'm married.

Mxo: I know that's why it's a friend lunch ,not a romantic date . You still have my number right ,call me if you change your mind . Have a great day Mrs

Lyon it was nice seeing you.

He walked to the payment site and Gail turned looking at him before going to her office.

At Bonolos House

Bonolo looked at him and took off his cap . He had a beautiful face and his eyelids were brown. His lips were to crave for . She looked in his eyes and couldn't help but lean over slowly . Kagiso saw her and thought of stopping her but knowing how embarrassed she'll feel he also leaned over and their foreheads met . They shared breaths when their lips slightly touched and they French kissed .

- .
- .
- .
- .

[08/02, 13:33] Lynne : #Chapter16

At the Lyons Mansion

Rose and Sagi hugged by her door and Sagi smiled before leaving. Rose sighed and went back into her room when loneliness struck her. A tear rolled down and she went to her closet.

She took out her friend's shirt and a track pants that Nakedi used to love and hugged them tight smiling walking back to her room. She took off her clothes and wore them before walking to the mirror smiling on her own.

This felt like she was with her around. Wearing her clothes felt like she was closer to her even if she was not around. She felt her in those clothes.

She smiled before picking her picture and landed on the bed laughing alone.

Meanwhile downstairs.

Sagi walked to the parking lot when Jane pulled by her side and they smiled at each other. Jane's heart pounded as she stepped out of the car and stood in front of her.

What if Breeze told her? What if she found out?

She beated herself standing in front of her course Sagi's hands have no breaks when coming to her man.

Sagi opened her arms and they hugged patting each others backs before stepping back.

Jane: I haven't seen you in a while. How have you been?

Sagi: I've been good. The universe has been smiling at me. What about you?

Jane: I've been good too. And others?

Sagi: them too. Uhm I heard about what happened.

Jane: (heart skipped) Sagi it's not what you think . It all happened so fast . See this is how it happened . I was-

Sagi: I know you dont sleep with with Rose in the same room .

Jane: what ?

Sagi: Jane you dont have to act strong in front of me . I dont know the pain of seeing your daughter slowly drifting away but know that you can share it with me ,us . We're a family and Rose needs us together . She needs all the support she can get especially from her loved ones . She need us more than ever right now .

Jane:(relieved) thank you ..Your so caring and I really appreciate the love you give Rosella. (Sigh) You know I tried Sagi - I did but ... I just don't know what to do anymore. Nakedi doesn't want to let my daughter be and it hurts seeing her like that . Sometimes I feel like I didn't do enough as a mother . I should have told her to stay away from that girl when I had the chance too . I sh-

Sagi: Jane dont beat yourself to hard about this .
Your a good mother and we all know that. Your
doing what a mother does to help their child.
(Phone rang)oh I have to go . J ust know that your a
good mother and your doing good .

Jane: thank you .

Sagi: bye

Jane: bye .

Sagi got into her car and put the phone on speaker
putting it down and drove out .

Odirile: My babe

Sagi: hey you ..what's up?

Odirile: I'm looking for that bloody husband of
yours . Where is he ?did he come back to his senses
?

Sagi: (chuckles) he did . I left him home when I left
I'm not sure if hes there or he left. I'll check him for

you .

Odirile: Asseblief .

He hang up and she drove off .

At Gail's Gallery

Gail walked out to the reception and gave her her office keys when a delivery man walked in holding flowers. He smiled looking at the receptionist as he smiled back .

Gail: anyone in my house who has a secret admirer?

Receptionist: i guess there is . I wonder who they are from . Or maybe it from your husband.

Gail: please not Breeze.

Delivery man: Good evening. Is miss Gail Lyon working here ?

Gail:(frown) that's me . Who are they from ?

Delivery: sign here please .

Gail signed and the man gave her a bunch of flowers and a small gift bag before walking out .

Receptionists: Now who has an admirer?

Gail: (smiling) mxm .

She walked out to her car and got in before reaching for the note .

" Beautiful flowers for a beautiful woman "

It was just that and no name of who they came from . She smiled and put them at the back before opening the gift.

She smiled looking at her favorite chocolates and a

small box . She took it out and gasped looking at the diamond necklace.

She screamed before dialing Breeze.

Breeze: babe

Gail: (screaming) I love it I love it I loooove it .

Breeze: You love what ?

Gail:(smiling) your such a charmer hubby . I love you so so much . Cant wait to rock it .

Breeze: Gail what are you talking about ? Love what ? Rock what ?

Gail: Ncoow I love you babe see you at home .

She hang up and put everything back before driving off with a huge smile .

At Air Club

Breeze looked at the phone and walked in and the stuff was preparing for the night .

He stood in the middle of the room and looked around. So he made it even after everything hes been through.

A call came through and he picked.

Sagi: Hey babe , where are you ?

Breeze: I'm at the club . Is everything ohk ?

Sagi: yeah everything is alright I was just checking up on you. Odirile was looking for you .

Breeze: ohk I'll call him .

Sagi: ohk love you .

Breeze: love you too .

She hang up and went to the bar and poured a glass of whiskey drinking it at a go before leaving.

At Bonolos house

Kagiso looked at her and traced her jawline with his thumb before planting a baby kiss on her lips .

Kagiso: so ..what's up ? We've been kissing a thousand times and you haven't told me what you were about to say .

Bonolo: I..uhm ..I.

Kagiso: Bonolo talk to me .

Bonolo: (sighed) straight to the point?

Kagiso: straight to the point.

Bonolo: ohk ..I.. I love you .

She looked down and he looked at her not knowing what to say. She raised her head and looked at him as he held her hands in his . Ohk this was embarrassing what was she thinking. She closed her eyes and breathed out heavily.

Bonolo: I'm so sorry. I didn't mean to-

Kagiso: its ohk . There's nothing wrong about someone expressing how they feel . Being a girl doesn't mean you should be held back and be scared to crack the ice . You should feel free to talk yourself out .

Bonolo: so your not disappointed?

Kagiso: what ! No!

Bonolo: (smiling) smiling ..so ? What about you ?

He looked at her before leaning in a kiss and picked her from her sit putting her on his laps . His package expanded under her and she slid her hand in and gasped. She pulled away and looked at him then her hand in his pants. She bit her lip and looked I his eyes .

Kagiso: So your scared I'm gonna fuck you ?

Bonolo: I.. I want to know if you love me or not first .
You cant just slide into my legs knowing you dont
love me . I'm not cheap . J ust because I said myself
out doesn't mean I'm a lose girl . I want it to be love .
I want you to make love to me . Not fuck me hela .
So ..? Do you love me or not ?

Kagiso: I do .

Bonolo: you do what ?

Kagiso: I love you .

She smiled and kissed him before standing and
took his hand leading to her room .

At Breezes

Breeze walked into the house and his eyes landed
on the beautiful flowers . He walked over and saw a
note and read it . His heart beat faster when Gail
walked down the stairs in a beautiful dress looking
good . His eyes landed on her neck looking at the

diamond necklace. He cant remember buying this type of a necklace. Ofcourse he bought her diamond necklaces but not this pattern. This one looked heavy. She even had a beautiful happy smile on her face and that angered him even more . She walked over and stood infront of him and turned around.

Gail: (smiling) do you like it ?

Breeze: Abigail where did you get this ?

Gail: (smiling) what do you mean ? You bought it for me .

Breeze: Abigail where did you get the necklace?

Gail: babe come on. Stop playing with me like that. You bought it for me . I didn't know yo-

Breeze: Abigail don't fuck with me ! Who the fuck gave this to you ?

Gail: babe I-

A hot slap landed on her cheek and she landed on the ground hitting hard . Her heart pounded hard on her chest and for a second she lost her site. She opened her eyes and everything was spinning to her as she held her cheek.

He gave her his hand and helped her stand as she held on to her cheek in tears . He wrapped his hands around her waist and looked at her calmly.

Breeze: babe ..?

Gail: (shaky) mmh..?

Breeze: babe ?

Gail: Babe .?

Breeze: Who got you this necklace?

Gail: yo-

Before her sentence could end another slap landed her on the table with a ringing ear . She burst crying and tried running away when he pulled her by her

hand and pulled her into a hug rubbing her back .

Breeze: shhhhh.. Ready to talk ? who is the fourth party?

Gail: (crying)

Breeze: Babe please talk to me . Who bought this ? Are you cheating on me ?

Gail: No ..

Breeze: Gail your making me angry now . Who got you dis necklace?

Gail:(crying) Babe I swear I don't know what your talking about. I thought yo-

He gave her another one of the back of his palm and she fell on the table smashing the vase of flower on the floor as her head rang with blood coming out of her nose and mouth.

Meanwhile Sagi parked the car and heard a glass breaking and rushed out without even switching of

the engine.

She walked in and saw Gail sorrowfully crying on the table with Breeze brewing with every second. She ran over and stood in between them and hugged Gail.

Sagi: What the hell are you doing Breeze? Are you crazy ?!

Breeze: When I come back I need that name .

He walked out and took Sagis car . Meanwhile Sagis eyes welled up from seeing her like this and they hugged walking up the stairs.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

[08/02, 13:34] Lynne : #Chapter17

At Odirile's house .

With a fine girl sitting on his lap kissing , his sister Ditebogo walked downstairs and rolled her eyes before heading to the kitchen and made herself a cup of coffee.

She walked back to the dining room and stood in front of them folding her arms and they broke the kiss .

Ditebogo: What the hell is this Odirile? Bringing girls around while I'm around? What sort of disrespect is that ?

Odirile: excuse me ?

Girl: babe whose this?

Odirile: never mind her . Shes my sister.

Ditebogo: no sweetie he's lying . I'm his wife . Now why dont you get your sexy ass of my man and get the hell out of my house before I blow your head off .

Girl: you know girl. Until I see a ring on that finger or his I'll stay away but until then hes our man . Hes still on the market.

Ditebogo: oh so you respect the ring huh? Ohk I'll show you the ring .

Odirile sighed scratching his eyebrow and Ditebogo walked upstairs jogging mumbling something. The girl smiled and leaned in kissing Odirile when she heard a gun cocking and she jumped off his lap looking at Ditebogo pointing a gun at her . Odirile quickly stood up with dropped jaws .

His sister was always crazy but it seemed like she got dangerous day by day .

Odirile: Wtf are you doing?

Ditebogo: (to her) you wanted the ring right ? Here's the ring bitch. Stay the fuck away from people's houses ohk .

Her:(shaky) ohk ..

She said that grabbing her purse and ran out while her dress pulled up . Meanwhile outside Breeze parked and saw the girl running out in fear and got out heading in . He stood by the door and watched them shouting at each other . This was their daily routine. He walked to the kitchen and took out a beer and opened before going to stand by looking at them drinking.

Odirile: Seriously Ditebogo? My wife ? My gun ? And where the fuck did you even get it ?!

Ditebogo: it was just the beginning brother . I wont let you bring any woman in this house anymore. Not when I'm still around. !

Odirile : kana this is my house. Gaona maitseo

keng ka wena ?

Ditebogo: Maitseo? Really? Wena o bolella nna ka maitseo ?

Odirile: Ditebogo your really starting to piss me . I took you in because you needed accommodating not for you to come and control everything I do . Stop invading in my f***n privacy. Be thankful you got a roof above your dump head stupid! . This is-

Ditebogo: Ng ng ra . I wont stop until you settle for one and stop bringing them in shapes like your changing underwears . HIV and STI's are real . You'll get sick from climbing every horse you see on the streets. I really appreciate your help but I wont stop unless you decide to kick me out but know that the last thing I need is being the older sibling to my older sibling. Brother !

She said that and walked to the kitchen taking her cup of tea and went upstairs .

Meanwhile Odirile clenched his jaws and pinched his nose before taking the gun and checked if it was

loaded. Fortunately it wasn't he put it down and Breeze walked over and sat on the opposite couch .

Odirile: you look like a mess .

Breeze: so do you . Let me guess she chased your dinner away again?

Odirile: mxm . You know she thinks she can control my life just because she stays with me . I'm her big brother for christ sake and I'm single . Shouldn't she be happy that I spent half of my shit on her ?

Breeze: that should be less of your worries right now . Where is that girl headed right now ?

Odirile looked at him as he thought about it . Could she have ? . He rushed to the door and peeked outside and sighs shutting the door and held his waist looking at the stairs .

Odirile: Ditebogo!

Ditebogo: (in her room) What!!!?

Odirile: Fuck You ohk!!! Your going to spend a night in jail take a shower!!

He said that walking back and sat down looking at Breeze who chuckled and took a sip from the beer.

Breeze :(chuckles) seriously? You gonna let that happen?

Odirile: yeah ...she needs to be taught a lesson. She needs to know that I'm her big brother not her age mate . She needs to know her place .

Breeze: you do know she might have a record right ? And dont forget that you cant be a lawyer with a record. Shes on her 6th year .

Odirile: Whatever. This one needs to be put to her place .

Breeze: so your gonna let a bitch ruin your sisters life just like that ? You dont even know that girl and your willing to sacrifice your sisters dream for her .

Odirile: Man .. so what's up with you ? And dont even think about lying to me course I can see you did something. What is it ?

Breeze: I ..I hit her .

Odirile: you gonna have to be a little bit more specific.

Breeze: Gail . I put my hands on her .

Odirile: Excuse me what?!

Breeze: yeah . I know I was wrong and i-

Odirile: fuck you man !

He stood up and went to the kitchen and Breeze followed him gulping the remaining drink and sat on the counter. Odirile took out two bottles and gave him one shaking his head in disbelief and took a sip .

Odirile: Why ?

Breeze: I think she's seeing someone. Can you

imagine that she even turns the tables thinking I'm that dumb saying I'm the one that bought her that heavy diamond necklace. She even wore my favorite dress and looked beautiful for this dude . I bought her necklaces but they aren't huge. I'm sure she already has a neck pains from that shit .

Odirile: so you saying she's chest on you ? But Gail would never do that . That girl came a way back with you into a marriage , she cant just throw all that away now . She loves you . She'll never leave you and you know it .

Breeze: Did you hear the part of wearing a huge diamond necklace?

Odirile: so your mad becouse she had a " huge diamond necklace " on ? . Breeze maybe that shit was bought by someone close to her .

Breeze: Odirile are you saying I'm stupid course I'm telling you that she tried to pin it on me saying " you bought it for me " . Why would I buy her such an expensive gift and shut Sagi out ? What kind of a husband would that make me ? Gail sees someone

behind my back and I'm going to find out who and I'm gonna give him a slow one . Clearly this guy is rich for him to buy that and it wont be hard to find out who it is ?

Odirile: What if your wrong? What if there's no one ?

Breeze: then who the hell bought her that ?

Odirile: nah man your just insecure that's all . And yeah its normal..but Gail would never do that to you and Sagi . She loves you guys more than anything in this world and the last thing she needs is bringing you guys diseases. Go apolo- What the fuck where you thinking man ? Raising your hand on a woman ?
Breeze! Fuck you man !

He took out a his phone and called that girl but her phone didn't go through. He sighed and looked at Breeze as he stood up and he went to his side biting his lip and punched him on the stomach. Breeze grouned holding his stomach and leaned on the counter and sat down taking his beer and drank it .

Breeze : Really?

Odirile: We down hit woman this side ohk? Go apologize. Man do you know how much your hand hurts? I did nothing to you . Yours hits ten times harder imagine a how she felt when you hit her . Man your slap made man cry , what made you think she can handle it ? I pray Sagi take your balls out for hitting her . I know she won't let it slide .

Breeze looked at him and sighed finishing his drink.

At Bonolos

Kagiso looked at her as she layed on her chest and smiled kissing her forehead. He carefully laid her down and got off the bed and wore his clothes.

The sound of the door opening startled him and he looked at Bonolo who peacefully slept .

The sound of steps approached and he quickly squeezed himself behind the door as it slid open .

He held his breath with a pounding heart as her mother looked at her .

Bonolo never slept this time so what's so different about it ? She sighed and closed the door going to hers .

Kagiso breathed out and heard her door closing and waited for a few mins when the water ran and he stepped out of he room and carefully closed the door .

He sneaked his way out to the door and tripped on the mat falling . He held his breath and took short prayers hearing the water stop running.

Mother: Bonolo? ! Is that you hunny? Bonolo!

She figured it was her head and continued showering.

Meanwhile Kagiso stood up holding his breath and slowly and carefully opened the door walking out . He carefully closed it and breathed out .

Voice: Sgebengu! Vimba !

Kagiso: What ? !

.

.

.

.

.

Comedy for a longer one

[08/02, 13:34] Lynne : #Chapter 18

At Bonolo's house

Kagiso's heart beat hard on his chest. He knew this was not gonna end well from the look on his face . This wouldn't be the first time being beaten by an angry community. But this time surely it will lend him in a casket than on a hospital bed .

Coming to think of it , fear paralyzed him as his heart hammered in his chest .

His body shook with fear and his hands became sweaty ,he was in a complete state of fear .

He swallowed looking at the man as he kept on and on calling the community and they were slowly gathering a lot in every second.

Man: Tswa monna ! Tla kwano !

Woman :le nkwenkwe ! Phuma apho !

Kagiso: (trembling) No no ! It's not what it looks like ! Y'all are misreading me ! Please !

Man: Re utloile ho lekana ka uena ! Tloo mona pele re u hulela ka ntle ! Tloo !

The whole community roared as more came with sjamboks and wood ready to beat him . Tears welled up and as he fear clawed up his throat, he was frantic with fear as his face was ashen . He took a deep breath and and took steps with his jelly

legs and terror . Every step became heavy . He reached the gate and man charged at him pulling him with his clothes out to the ground.

Kagiso: (screaming) Please ! I'm so sorry ! Forgive me ! Ke kopa tshwarelo bagolo ! Kea le kgopela ! Ntate Mokwana you know I would never d-

Mokwana : No ! You always repeat the same sentences! We as the community have heard enough of you !

Kagiso: But I wa-

Still on his knees begging a foot landed on his back and he fell on his tummy in pain screaming. More and more man started stepping on him and he rolled into a ball hiding his head with his hands . A woman came with a 20 liter of water and splashed him . He gasped when another one splashed him again . He raised his head when they kicked him and his head hit a rock and blood sprang when he put his hand with his tears running down his cheek.

He bend as the pain became unbearable and his site slowly got blurry.

A whip landed on his back and he let go as more followed. He tried fighting his way out but they were too strong for him .

A whip on the legs and took him to the ground and this time every whip splashed blood out cutting him .

Meanwhile Bonolo fought with the door and ran out seeing a group of people beating someone.

Kagiso's mother also ran out of the shack in tears with the little energy she had left screaming and crying but two man cought her keeping her away . The pain shot her on the heart . More tears rolled . It exploded making her dizzy and reel . The pain was like needles that had been dipped in alcohol had jammed on her heart .

Never in her life has she ever felt less of a mother

like at this moment. Her sons screams brought so much pain in her that she choked trying to break free from the hold .

Kagiso's mom : (screaming) let my son go ! Have me instead ! Please! Stop ! Mokwana stop them ! Please I beg you dont kill my son ! He's all that i have ! Mokwana please! I swear to God I'll kill you if he dies ! I'm going to hunt you down !

Mokwana charged at her as she fought trying to break free .

Mokwana: Not today Veronica! Not today! Your son is a thief , dork , bonehead ,stupid , vagrant, filthy and a jackass like his dead father !

His words angered and boiled her , she raised her leg without thinking twice hitting him between the legs and he groaned falling down on his knees and

they pulled her away as she kicked in the air .

Veronica: Say another word with my son and I'll show you what I'm capable of even in this sick body ! Say it again and raise the monster in me you stupid wretch !

(To the two men holding her) Ntlogele lena !
Ntlogele !

The both let go and she ran to the crowd and fought her way in to Kagiso's in tears . She pushed everyone aside crying and finally landed on her son's bloody body . She pulled him in as everyone stepped back .

She pulled his head to her chest as tears blurred her site and landed on his head .

Veronica: (crying) baby wake up mommy is here !
Kagiso dont leave me ! Tsoga ngwana'ka tsoga !
Please I love you so so much please ! Please wake

up !

She held on to him as blood covered her crying.

Veronica: Do you what you've done ! Do you see what you did to my son ! Mme Sessa look at my son and tell me how you'd feel if it was your son ! Tell me all of you ! Tell me ! (Crying) What has my son done to you what has he done this time ? ..

Ofcourse no human being doesn't have feelings. Especially woman , regret and embarrassment along with shame covered them all . They all stepped back and she looked at them with her son hardly able to breathe .

Bonolo ran over and stood on her steps looking at him . Tears burned her eyes and she slowly walked over and went down touching his face with shaky hands .

Bonolo:(shaky) baby please wake up ! Dont leave me ! Kagiso ? Babe ! (To them) What have you done ?!

Man: he was sneaking out of your place ,so I-

Bonolo: So you thought he was a thief!? He was with me ! He was helping me with my drawings!

Man: (shame) I'm so sorry I..I

Bonolo: You know he told me about you guys ! About this you people calling yourself a community ! He told me that you once did this to him ! How could you even call everyone without being aware of what happened. You people are so half-witted !

Bonolo's mother: Bonolo now your being disrespectful to your elders !

Bonolo : No mom this stupid community have always been treating him like this ! They dont care about him yet they call themselves caring.

Bonolo's mom: Hunny you don't know that ! You dont even know this guy , he could be lying for all we know.

Veronica: my son can be a lot of things but a liar
hes not ! Watch your tongue if you want us to be
good neighbors. Not when coming to my son please.

Bonolo's mom: Mxm ...Bonolo let's go !

Bonolo: I'm not going anywhere until an ambulance
arrives ! Did anyone call an ambulance? How far
are they ?

.....

Bonolo: Are you kidding me right now ? A man is
dying and not even one of you had the courage and
sympathy to call an ambulance ? I cant believe this ?
Are you people human or devil's around here ?

Woman: Bhekis is a wena ntombazanyana yolimi,
asibona abalingani bakho . Simdala kunawe lapha!

Bonolo's mother pulled her by her hand away from
everyone to their gate .

Mother: What's wrong with you ?

Bonolo: what do you mean what's wrong with me ?
Mom Kagiso is dying?

Mother: I can see that . And there's nothing you can do about it ! Get in the house now !

Bonolo: At least I would have tried to save him !
Why are you even like this ? Aren't you supposed to be merciful than me ?

Mother: get in the house now ?

Bonolo: mom what's wrong with you ? Why are you like this?

Mother: Bonolo I said in the house now ! You just got here for a few days and already you act like a detective. You don't know that guy and yet you fight for him like he's some sort of a God to you . Stop with your madness and get inside !

A tear ran down her cheek and she tried running back but her mother caught her and a slap landed on her cheek . Bonolo's mouth dropped as she held on to her cheek looking at her furious mother .

Mother: in the house now !

She bit her lip and slowly went inside . She took her phone and dialed an ambulance.

Meanwhile Kagiso's unconsciously looked at her mother and she pulled him even closer kissing his forehead. A group of men gathered on the side with guilt and fear . They had never beaten a young person to a point were he would become so unconscious, no lose so much blood .

Man: I think maybe we should call the police and an ambulance.

Man2: No ! That will spend half of us in jail . I have a better idea . We cant let this reach to the police what will happen to our young kids . Let this boy be a lesson to those who would try to do unlawful act in pur community .

Man3: so what are you suggesting?

Mokwana : One thing for sure . We end what we started.

Like someone just whispered to him what they were planning. His heart skipped and out of nowhere he quickly stood up kissing his mothers cheek and ran as fast as his legs can carry him .

His mother looked at him as drops of blood left a trail and man started running after him . Tears burned her eyes as she sat there on the ground covered with her sons blood . Never in her life has she thought she'll see this day . It hurt so bad she could feel her heart breaking to pieces and finally became dust . She put her hands on her face and burst out crying. A woman came over and hugged her .

Woman: I'm so so sorry Mma Kagiso . I cant imagine what you must be feeling right now .

Veronica: (crying) What im feeling? Useless Selina !
Purposeless ! Most of all Pain .. That's what I feel !
PAIN !

She stood up and followed the trail rubbing her
tears leaving the poor woman feeling guilty on the
ground.

At Bonolo's.

Bonolo laid on her bed with tears rolling on the side
on her eyes . She turned and checked the clock it
was 17h36 . So they've been all over his body till
then .

At this point her mother was at the bottom of her
worry list .

She stood up wiping her tears and went to her
closet and wore warm clothes before taking her
phone . She went out and went to her mothers
bedroom but there was no one ,so she took her car

keys before opening the gate and ran to the garage , got in the car and reversed.

Meanwhile her mother saw the gate open and the garage door slid open . She ran over but Bonolo was already reversing .

Mother: Bonolo stop the car !

Bonolo: (inside) no !

She increased the radio volume and went out as her mother kept hitting the car . She hooked before driving off leaving her mother ,Sofia there holding her waist .

She never regretted taking her to a driving school like today . She sighed and went to sit on the veranda waiting for her to return.

At Odirile's house .

Breeze and Odirile stepped out of the house and went to Breeze's car and he got in .

Odirile: you head me right . Dont use your hand for her to tell you the truth . Silence is the key , she'll feel guilty if she's cheating and eventually burst . And whomever this guy is we will make sure that he hates the day he ever met Abigail.

Breeze: I heard you . I just hope it's not too late for me to apologize. I was just angry and yep , a little bit insecure and now I know that I had no right to raise my hand on her . That was so low and derision of me .(scoffs) funny thing is - I dont even know how I'll apologize for my irrational behavior. I'm so stupid.

Odirile: oh yes you are !

Breeze:

Odirile: Yeah.. Common man apologizing doesn't mean your stupid or make you any less of a man but acknowledging and owning up to your mistakes. Makes you tough and look more of a reasonable

and let one know that your not proud of what you did .

Breeze: I doubt she'll ever forgive me after what I just did . You should have seen the fear in her eyes . How shaky she was , man I just feel like a ne'er-do-well .

Odirile: Trust me you are !

Breeze:

Odirile: what I'm being an honest friend here ! Or would you rather preferred I lie and congratulate your badness behavior?

Breeze: Nop but at least not to rub it on my face .

Odirile: Well I'm sorry bro for being an honest friend course I ain't gonna stop nor lie to you . That was so foolish, dull , brainless , ignorant, idiotic ,dumb , naive , crazy, ridiculous and absurd of you . And to add a bombastic word egomaniacal of you .

Breeze: (loughs)yeah neh ..Sharp .

Odirile: Voetsek! I hope Sagi cuts off your balls when you get there .

Breeze: She'll not , she's my wife remember.

Odirile: You mean "Our" wife .

They loughed as he reversed and drove off . Odirile shook his head and went back inside.

Somewhere in the Bush.

Kagiso balanced himself with the tree and held on to his stomach and felt a warm wet watery substance . He brought his hand to his face and it was blood . He pulled his shirt to and looked at the huge open part on his stomach.

His whole body was hurting so bad . He sighed and kept on walking when he saw a cellphone touch lighting. He looked back and there they were .

He gatherd himself and started running again for a longer distance . He saw a road and seemed like a car was coming. He ran as fast as he can and when he was there he tripped and fell on the road .

The pain disappeared in a split as his eyes turned to the car that was racing and the lights blinded him and ...

.

.

.

.

..

.

. COMMENT

.

.

[08/02, 13:34] Lynne : Chapter #19

At the Lyons Mansion

Jack walked in and closed the door behind him before loosening his tie heading upstairs.

He passed by Rose's room and went to the main bedroom .

He put the brief on the bed before taking off his clothes and went to take a shower .

After a while he stepped out and wrapped himself with a towel and went to sit at the edge of the bed when his phone rang.

Jack: Jacob my old friend.

Jacob: Jack ..how are you monna ?

Jack: I'm good ..and you?

Jacob: Ke alright my bro . Hey I was thinking. How about we meet up tomorrow there's something I'd like to discuss with you. It's very sensitive . I'd like us to look each other in the eye like men , as parents .

Jack: Is everything ohk tsala yame?

Jacob: Everything is just fine . J ust that I have a huge request and I know your not gonna like it but I just have to ..you know talk to someone I trust and

know that they are respectful and honorable.

Jack: How huge is this request tsala mo eleng gore your not able to ask over the phone ?

Jacob: very huge my friend. Very huge . I just want you to come emotionally prepared course it's huge . But I promise you that it will benefit both sites . Our families.

Jack: "Benefit both families " how?

Jacob: Let's meet up for you to find out .

Jack: ohk . Where ?

Jacob: You tell me .

Jack: Lena kana ale prepared ka sepe Jacob . Ore obata meeting but you dont know where we will meet ? O sa lelets a eng o sa itse fa re ka kopanang ? We will meet here at my house .I'll send you the address.

Jacob: (laughs) Ohk ..J ust know that it wont be great news .

Jack : (sigh) let's hope I wont regret meeting with you .

Jacob: so do I.

He cut the call and shook his head before dialing Jane but she didn't pick up. He tried her 3 times but still. He threw the phone on the bed and wore his clothes before going downstairs.

In Rose's room.

Rose stood by the balcony looking outside in the dark. She's been standing here for more than 30 mins and still nothing came to mind to what was the dream was about. She sighed and folded her arms going back into her room.

She sat on the bed looking at her phone by her side. She wanted to call someone but "who". Who will listen to her? . Tge reached for it and called Gail but it didn't go through. He tried Sagi but still.

Loneliness struck in. She knew everytime when she feels like this there's only one person that come in

mind .

NAKEDI .

Tears blurred her sight and eventually rolled down. She gathered herself and wiped her tears standing up and went to her closet taking out her sweater wearing it going downstairs .

She heard her father's voice and went to the dinner table and found him drinking juice. Jack smiled looking at her and she forced a smile back before sitting down .

Jack: hey ..how are you ?how you feeling?

Rose: I'm good dad . You?

Jack: I'm also good .

Rose: how was your day ?

Jack: it was good . And last time I got to meet my old friend Jacob . Life is full of surprises . Nna I thought that guy long left South Africa.

Rose: your old friend? The one that's with you almost every picture of you when you were young ? The one that loved a black leather jacket?

Jack: (laughs) yeah that one . I wonder where that jacket ended course he never took it off . Even when it was dirty he'll just wipe it with a wet cloth and wear it again. His parents always complained about it .

Rose: you seemed close .

Jack: yeah we were but we separated and I never got to see him till a day ago .

Rose: Where's mom ? Is she home ?

Jack : no .. I'm sure she'll be home late .

Rose: Can we go get her ? Please...

Jack: ohk ..go get my keys .

Rose stood up and jogged up stairs. Jack smiled all by himself and shook his head . Does this mean they have to stop looking for a psychologist? . His daughter has been through a lot and this time he'll

do whatever it takes to make sure that shes ohk .
Rose came back with the keys and they went out .

On the Road.

Breeze hit the brick pulling the hand brick and the wheels scratched on the road as smoke came out .
He shut his eyes and the car stopped as his heart hit hard on his chest.

He opened his eyes and quickly took out his gun under the seat before stepping out .

He slowly walked over aiming and saw a man laying just an inch away from the car wheel .

He looked bad . He shook him using his leg .

Breeze: hey buddy ..are you ohk? (Snapped) Oh right! Your not ohk ..what a stupid question to ask .
Hellllloooooowww .. you do realize it's in the middle of the bush ,forest right ? Hey ..

He threw his hands and shook his head before going into the car and started the engine . He reversed a bit and drove off .

He stopped a meter away as guilt struck in .

Breeze: I'm so gonna regret this.

He reversed with speed and again stopped an inch away from his head and stepped out .

Breeze: ohk .. get up ..

He help him stand up and put him in the passengers seat buckling him and went to the driver's site .

He looked at him and shook his head before driving heading t the hospital.

Breeze: You look like a mess by the way .

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

[08/02, 13:34] Lynne : Chapter #20

At the hospital.

Breeze sat on the branches pressing his phone . He went to Gail's number and dialed her before hanging up before she could answer. His heart beat raced and he breathed out before calling Sagi . Calling Sagi while you knew what you have done to upset her was never an option, but he had to . He sighed

putting the phone on his ear .

Breeze: he-

Sagi: you better get your ass back home before I go all wild and decide to slit your throat . Get home and explain yourself and sort out this shit that you too are fighting about . And one last thing " fuck you Breeze"

She hang up and he shook his head before standing up . He noticed his brothers family approaching and walked out before they can even call him . He still couldn't bring himself to the fact that he slept with his brothers wife all because of something that's been done a long time ago .

Why does it always have to be the good one who are always caught in the middle of every misunderstanding?

He got in his car and drove off just as Jack and his family approached their car .

Rose: Was that uncle Breeze?

Jack: yeah ...I wonder what he was here for?

Jane: he brought some young man here . He was brutally injured. Breeze says he found him by the road on his way home . That boy has lost a lot of blood, hes in a bad state .

Jack: I doubt that . He could be the one that beat him for all we know . I dont know why Breeze has to abuse other people taking out the anger of his childhood on others . He has to calm down we heard enough of his tantrums for the past couple of years .

Rose: Uncle isn't really like that. He's just mad at you and uncle James . You guys are the ones that turned him into who he is dad . Dont be surprised by his behavior course you had a hand in it .

Jack turned looking at Rose while Jane's eyebrows lifted.

Rose: And... I ...say ...that..out.. of ...respect and understanding.....

Jack scoffed before driving off with the silence in the car .

At Breezes.

Breeze walked into the house and closed the door behind him before throwing the keys on the table . He took off his jacket going upstairs to the main bedroom. A hot slap landed on his cheek as soon as he shut the door .

Breeze: And then ?

Sagi: this is for hitting her and running away from your problems returning home at 2am in the morning.

She opened the door and walked out and Breeze sighed and took off his shirt . He turned to the bed but Gail wasn't there . He walked to the bathroom and found her sleeping in a bathtub full of water . He walked over and sat on the toilet looking at her as she layed in there . Her cheek was red with a bit and her eye had purple welts underneath. Pain blocked his throat as tears burned her eyes. The thought of another man coming in to break his home apart just like that and with her willing to throw away everything they had was like a needle poking his heart . And seeing her with a blue eye too played a role on his heart . Her cries and terror when he slapped her filled his head and tears started rolling down his cheek . He swallowed and wiped his tears before walking over . He looked at her and slowly softly traced his finger on her cheek when she cutely smiled before getting back to sleep again . He smiled and softly touched her .

Breeze: (softly) Babe ..? Let's get you out of there

before you catch cold ..babe ?

Gail: (sleepy) mmmhhh..

Breeze: common..you'll get sick .

He slid his hands in and picked her up from the tub as water dripped . She held on to his neck and he walked to their closet and put her on the sofa wiping her with the towel. Now she was fully awake. She looked at him as he wiped her and went to her shelves taking out her pjs. He came back and knelt in front of her and helped her wear her panties. Tears filled her eyes as the fear and heartbreak covered her . He helped her wear her pjs and took her hands in his. Tears rolled down her cheeks looking at him when he cupped her face kissing her .

Breeze: I know what I did is unforgettable and unforgivable babe but I'm sorry. It was so wrong of me to allow my emotions take over instead of us sitting down and talk it through. I know its going to take long to forgive me and I'm willing to wait .

Please forgive me .

Gail: (teary) You dont trust me Breeze that's the problem. You dont trust ! Do you ? How could you think so low of me . Breeze I know I'm married to you that's why every gift I receive I think it's from you. I dont know who sent that if it wasn't you . I even called you the minutes I received the flowers and the necklace becouse I thought it was you . Sorry wont justify your reaction towards me . I love you Breeze and I'll never cheat on you not to even think about it . I love Sagi . Why would I throw all the good that I have ? You need to trust me and stop with the insecurities course not only are you hurting me your breaking me . I dont understand why after so many years stuck with you would you think so little of me . It hurts more that you don't believe in me , you dont trust me . Which brings us to this - what is marriage without trust?

Breeze: your right and I'm sorry . Yes I was insecure course I dont wanna lose you. Babe I love you so much and that's why I'm here standing infront of you to say the only two words that hardly

come out of my mouth . I'm sorry. The thought of another man snatching you away from me scared me ,a lot . A lot that I end up doing things I end up regretting. I'm so sorry Mrs Breeze and I promise to never raise my hand on you ,ever . I love you and I dont want to lose you . I dont see myself going through all that pain of losing you . I love you .

Gail: But what if you re-

Breeze: I swear to God it would never happen ever again. Ke bakile.

She wiped her tear and hugged him as they stood in the middle of the closet . He picked her up and they walked to the bedroom where Sagi was sitting on the sitting on the bed leaning on the headboard under the sheets folding her arms . Breeze stood by her side still carrying Gail lookong at her . He looked at her serious face and couldn't help but laugh at her . The girls both tried to maintain a serious face but busted up laughing. Breeze and Gail tried to stop laughing but Sagis ridiculous laughter kept

them laughing while on the other hand Sagi laughed at how they couldn't stop laughing. Breeze fell with Gail on the fluffy mat still laughing and now Sagi laughed even harder with tears rolling down her cheeks . So basically it became a laughter night course they all couldn't stop laughing.

At Kagiso's house

Kagiso's mother Veronica wiped her tears laying on the old bed . All sorts of imaginations filled her mind as more tears rolled. She never thought a day would come where her sons life would end so tragic and short lived . Her only son . The pain came with force and she popped from the bed unable to breathe. She hit her chest and mass aged it before grabbing the cup of water on the table and drank it at a go . She sighed with tears still mass aging her chest and slowly melted form the bed to the floor.

Veronica: (crying)Dear lord . Oh God. Please guide

my son throughout this tough time. I refuse to believe that something bad had occurred to him but with you I keep hoping that he's still breathing air out of his lungs . Please keep him in your shadow and lead him and

A painful lump struck on her throat and she broke down crying laying on the ground. Her cries filled the room with every second. Veronica cried so hard from the bottom of her lungs but with no one to help.

At Bonolo's house.

Bonolo drove through the open gate and checked the time before parking in front of the house . Tears filled her eyes when she leaned on the wheel and broke down .

Bonolo: (crying) Time ..we needed time .. Not a day
Only God please ..

She frustratingly hit the steering wheel before leaning back listening to the pain in her heart . The pain of losing someone you love . Them being snatched away from you by a group of people stings . They haven't had much time . Just when you think things are going smoothly for you then boom again . She wasn't married but it felt like she was or she had known him for like forever.

She took her phone and stepped out locking the car and went inside . She passed by the dining room and saw her mother sleeping on the couch with a fleece and walked to her room .

She landed on the bed and pulled a pillow to her face screaming the pain out ,but nothing .

At The Hospital.

The nurse pushed the bed into a ward and parked it before locking the wheels. She checked everything

and couldn't help but feel sorry . This boy looked so young for him to be in this critical condition. Thank God he was found on time . Some people are God sent , who even drives in the bush in the middle of the night. She sighed and looked at him wrapped with bandages and all the drips , thinking of all those stitches brought a tear to her eye .

Nurse: your so strong . God said not now my boy ,its not your time . God bless you.

Being a nurse sometimes is emotionally draining. She checked the drips for the last time before walking out .

.

Two months later

.

COMMENT

[08/02, 13:35] Lynne : Chapter 21

Jane slowly opened her eyes to the golden sun peeking through the curtains and tossed to Jack who was snoring on the other side . She looked at him before getting off the bed and went to the bathroom.

She leaned on the bathroom sink and looked at herself.

She was gaining weight and complexion. Her breasts were tender, sore and sensitive. She's always exhausted. Though she knew what was going on with her body she still refused to believe what she thinks. She slid down her pj pants and panties looking at the white clean pad and swallowed. This was the second time she hasn't seen her periods. She shook her head as tears burned her eyes and slid down sitting on the toilet looking at the pad .

At this moment she felt unworthy and stupid. She started to count days and weeks before but still it all came to one person . She tried remembering

when she had sex with her husband before Breeze but still , the calculations came up to him .

She slowly stoop up and took off her clothes before standing under the shower .

Minutes later she stepped out and went to apply a lotion and got dressed taking her car keys .

Meanwhile J ack stretched his hand to her side but it was cold . He opened his eyes and raised his upper body to J ane fiddling her handbag . She was getting prettier and prettier. Her butts looked sexy in those tights .

J ack: good morning.

J ane: hey .

J ack: how are you ?

J ane: I'm fine . I'm fine .

J ack : ohk ..

She kept fiddling with her bag and with every

second she got irritated. Jack looked at her and raised his eyebrows.

Jack: That bag did nothing to you . What are you looking for ?

Jane: My phone .

Jack: Dont you think you would have found it by then ? You left it downstairs last night.

She looked at him and sighed before hanging the bag on her shoulder and went out . He shook his head before getting off and went to take a shower too.

AT Breezes.

Sagi connected her phone to her ipods and put them on before putting the phone in the back pocket listening to the music. She sang along with it

as she went into the laundry room and put the clothes inside.

Breeze passed by the door when she heard her sing and went inside and looked at her as she belly danced. Man she was good at dis more than any other dance . He watched her as she moved her figure left and right ,back and forward and center before she started grinding. He smiled biting his lip and stood behind her making her grind on him .

She laughed and kept grinding as his package expanded and when the song was over she took the iPods out looking at him smiling.

Sagi: you're naughty.

Breeze: and you are a really good dancer.

Sagi: thank you baby. Going to the club ?

Breeze : nop to the hospital.

Sagi: are you sick ? Is anyone injured? Oh yeah that guy . What's his name ?

Breeze: I dont know. He hasn't been for the past

two months. The doctors switched off the machine but luckily he was able to breathe on his own .

Sagi: poor guy . What happened?

Breeze: I don't know babe . I haven't talked to him . All I know is I got him by the road in the middle of the night and he was badly injured. Luckily there was nothing on his back when he was running away . The doctors said he'll be awake by this week so hopefully I'll get to know what happened course the last thing I need is another bag on my shoulder.

Sagi: yeah. He's should be fine by now. But he must've been running away from something or he messed up with the wrong ones and they caught up with him . I just hope he doesn't bring anything with him to you course I'll murder him . Your right you have enough already.

Breeze: (kissed her cheek) ohk I'll see you later . Oh and there are some shirts in my closet , first drawer on the right . I forgot to take out .

Sagi: I'll go get them . Have a great day .

He went out and she put on her iPods and went to his closet . She opened the drawer and pulled them out when a pink lace panties fell on the floor. Her heart skipped looking at them and she slowly took off the iPods putting them in the pocket before picking them . They looked bigger and she didn't even have this colour. This one's were bright and torn. She checked the size and Gail also wouldn't fit and here .

She took out her phone and took a picture of them before sending them to Gail.

At Gail's Gallery.

Gail read through the documents and finally signed when a message notified on her phone . She reached for it when the door opened and her assistant walked in .

Assistant: Morning Mrs Lyon. Here's your coffee.

Gail: Your the best . The usually?

Assistant: (smiling) the usual

Gail: thank you babe .

Assistant: Your welcome.

She walked out and Gail sipped her coffee unlocking her phone when a picture of pink panties appeared on her screen with Sagis hand holding it with finger tips .

She read the message " Tell miie dis is not urs "

She put the coffee down and dialed her .

Sagi: please .

Gail: Aren't they yours ?

Sagi : I wear 30-31,5 .

Gail: And I wear 28-29.5 on my waist and that's like 32-35 if I'm not mistaken. Your the one with big ass they must be yours .

Sagi: no they are not . I go shopping every now and then but not once do I remember wearing this colour. This sh*t is bright. I don't wear this kind of colors. And the size , I always check the size .

Gail: Are you serious? Think again maybe you once bought them and didn't check the size .

Sagi: No ... this are definitely not mine .

Gail: so you think he's cheating?

Sagi: He better not course I'll kill that bitch with my bare hands . Anyway let me not stress you we'll talk when you get home .

Gail: Don't do anything stupid .

Sagi: I wont .

Gail hung up and zoomed the picture thoroughly and she also have never seen this kind of panties in the house . She sighed and got back to work though the fact that Breeze was cheating played tennis in her mind .

At the Hospital.

Breeze walked down the passage before getting in the room . He walked over to the bed and looked at the young man looking outside the window. He seemed to have been lost in thoughts that he didn't even hear him walk in . Breeze cleared his throat and a tear ran down the corner of the eye of the young man when he quickly wiped it .

His heart pounded looking at the person he heard stories about . Him himself Breeze Lyon , the Air himself. He swallowed looking at his bold serious face and slowly sat up straight leaning back putting his hands on his tummy with drips .

Breeze turned his head to the side and narrowed his eyebrows.

Breeze: what's your name ?

Him: Kagiso. Kagiso Mokwena .

Breeze: How old are you ?

Kagiso: 21 .

Breeze: Where are you from ?

Kagiso: Mahlareng .

Breeze: Mahlareng? That fucked up place?

Kagiso:...

Breeze: What happened?

Kagiso: I don't remember half of everything . All I remember is that I have a mother who is sick back there and I'm her only hope . I'm the one that buys her medication and feeds her since her body is weak .

Breeze: how do you remember where your from but do not remember what happened? You lying to me right ?

Kagiso: I swear to God, I'm not lying. That's all i remember. I dont even know how i got here and why my body has scars and other injuries. My body is in pain but I don't know what happened to me . I'm a lot of things but I dont likely lie .

Breeze: so you do know how to lie and your lieing

to me ?

Kagiso: everyone is capable of lying Mr Lyon just that we know and are able to separate the timing and the position we will be in . And now I'm not in the position to lie .

Breeze looked at him as he looked at him back and the the door opened and a doctor walked in .

Doctor: oh finally. Hey I'm Doctor Smith and I'll be your doctor for now on since Doctor Lyon is up sent . I'll be taking over half of her patients and you happen to be myn . So .. Mr uhm ..

Kagiso: Kagiso Mokwena .

Doctor: (wrote his name down) Mr Mokwena . You had a brain injury coursed by a blow to the head that lead to concussion. Not to worry yet we are still going to do scans to see how your going . How are you feeling? Headache? Ringing in the ears ? Feel like vomiting? Dizziness? Anything ?

Kagiso: Headache and yeah I feel like vomiting. My ears rang when I woke up but now they are fine . I can hear clearly. A little bit dizzy .

Doctor: I think your suffering from Concussion but I'll have to run those tests first before I could go further. Breeze: So he has no memory?

Doctor: yeah ..that's one of the symptoms. From look of an eyes I think he didn't lose every detail. Loss of memory and confusion are one of the symptoms of Concussion

Kagiso: so how long will I be in this state?

Doctor: for about three months . Sometimes go on for a year or more . Dont stress . Most concussions resolve on their own without any lasting effects.

Kagiso:So I'll be fine .

Doctor: yeah . We'll have to take you and have MRI scan and see if you dont have any bleeding in the brain but first you'll have to answer a few questions for me ohk .

Kagiso: sure .

Doctor: What's your mother's name?

Kagiso: Veronica.

Doctor: what happened?

Kagiso: I don't know

Doctor: Not even a hint ?

Kagiso: nop

Doctor: any friends or girlfriend?

Kagiso: ahhhhh nop .

The doctor wrote down after a few questions before stepping out leaving them both.

Breeze: should I give you a hint maybe?

Kagiso: sure , who knows? Maybe it might help restore my memory course all I remember is old.

Breeze: ohk so I was driving with a full speed and you fell on the road . I stopped inches away from your head . Do you remember any lights blinding

your site ?

Kagiso: nop .

Breeze: mmhh ohk .

He put his hands in the pockets and walked out leaving Kagiso still trying to remember .

At the Other Hospital.

Jane laid on the bed as the doctor applied the gel on her belly . She flinched from the cold and sat back when the doctor put the ultrasound . The sound of a heartbeat made her heart skip as she looked at the screen with teary eyes . From the screen she could tell she was correct with the calculations and was maybe two months pregnant.

A while later the doctor gave her a tissue and she wiped herself before pulling her shirt down .

Doc: You don't look too excited.

Jane: that's because this was a mistake, I can't be pregnant.

The doctor looked at her and Jane looked at him back. She knew how his mind was like now and she bit her lip before taking her prescription and walked out.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:35] Lynne : Chapter 22

At the Hospital

Kagiso leaned back with his mind repeating the same things that happened a long time ago. He

kept remembering things that happened like 2 -3 years back and couldn't remember anything further from those years except that his mother was sick .

He sighed looking at the drip on his hand . He doesn't remember the last time hes been in a hospital before . He put his hand on his forehead and melted down looking up the ceiling.

Kagiso: what happened?

At the Lyons house .

Rose walked down the stairs with her phone in her hands playing games . Jane walked in with puffy eyes and as soon as she saw Rose she breathed in and wiped her tears and put on a smile .

Rose: Are you ohk ?

Jane: yeah . I'm fine . What about you ?

Rose: I'm fine .

Jane: good .

Jane avoided her eyes and walked up the stairs .

Rose: mom ? What's going on ?

Jane: nothing Rose !? Its nothing. I lost a patient.

Rose : I thought you took few days off from work .

Rose: yeah whatever.

She walked up the stairs before stopping on her tracks and turned back to Rose who was still looking at her , she sighed .

Jane: I'm sorry . I lost a patient to breast cancer . She was my favorite patient and we had bonded . And now she's gone .

Rose :(folded her arms) but mom you never got too

emotional for losing a patient . Well not if I can think of it. What up ?

Jane: Well hunny I'm human . We doctors are human and we have feelings. We bond with our patients. We bond to a point that we even make mistakes of bonding too much and end up hurting others . We make mistakes and some of those mistakes cant be fixed not when they are TWO FUCKEN MONTHS !!!!

Rose narrowed her eyebrows to her sudden snap out of blue . Jane threw her hands up and went upstairs to their room and locked herself before throwing herself on the bed and cried .

Rose scoffed before going into the kitchen and took out fruit salad . She took out a fork and sat on the high chair going through Facebook videos . She ate while scrolling and a video caught her attention. She pressed it and watched as a community beat a guy as he screamed his lungs out .

Dineo sneaked behind her and peaked looking at what she was watching and sighed and Rose dropped .

Rose: J esus Christ!

Dineo: sorry. Didn't mean to scare you .

Rose : Dont do that again please! You almost gave me a heart attack.

Dineo: now you're overreacting. Why are you even watching such a hurting video ? I mean out of all videos on Facebook you just chose to watch that .

Rose: Curiosity I guess. (Taking her phone)

Dineo: poor guy . I wonder how that woman is coping right now course its said that that guy is not yet found and hes been on the run since that day . Which is like 2 months now .

Rose: Some people are strong . How was he even able to get up course he lost so much blood ? This people dont have mercy. I mean this is a human . A living person .

Dineo: Apparently he is some sort of a criminal and this is not the first time being beaten so brutally.

Rose: so what happened this time ? What did he do ?

Dineo: (put vegies on the counter) They say he was sneaking out of his neighbors house in broad day light ! The nerve ! But ..he was cought by a man passing by and he called out the whole community.

Rose: oh God..

Dineo: yep . I'm mean I think they did good course they tought him a losson to never ever , ever think about breaking in other people's property. They made sure that when he even thinks of crime he cries .

Rose: (rolled eyes) Maybe he had his reasons.

Dineo: Nothing justifies Crime Rosella. (Peeling a potato) We should get rid of this criminal activities and build a better place to live .

Rose:(scoffed)

Rose stood up and took out another peeler and helo

her as they chatted . This helped her a lot lately to forget about her life .

At Kagiso's house.

The police looked at Veronica as tears rolled down her cheeks before they stood up and headed out .

She stood up and went inside as tears blurred her sight and she tripped falling down her knees and cried on the floor.

At Bonolo's

Bonolo moved away from the window with tears in her eyes and sat on the couch feeling like she could just scream the pain away. The pain was so much that when she thought about she thought about how everyone usually got taken away from her . She increased the volume on her speaker and busted .

First it was her family been torn apart and her dad taken away . Then her mother separating her from him and his family. Now it was Kagiso, someone who made her feel like herself and more that she never had in a long time , was taken away from her . Aaliyah-miss you played from her speaker as she cried .

At Gail's Gallery.

Gail tapped her foot under the desk as she held the pen in her hand with the thought of Breeze grinding another woman played in her mind .

She pressed her eyes and finally stood up and grabbed her bag and phone heading out . She fished her keys all the way to the car and unlocked it before getting in throwing the bag behind and started the engine when someone knocked on her window.

She looked at Mxolisi smiling in his formal wear and she smiled rolling down the window .

Mxo: there she is !

Gail: yeah here she is ! What's up?

Mxo: Nothing except that I haven't seen you in a while. I miss you

Gail: you don't even know me . How can you miss me?

Mxo: then let me get to know you . Please Gail. And please dont throw the "I'm married " card on me course today I woke up on a wrong side of the bed and I'm not taking it . J ust one dinner and you can take it from there and decide .

Gail: (scoff) Decide what?

Mxo: if I'm the right person to be in your life or not . Going out with me wouldn't hurt you know. Even if its once .

Gail: oh hell it will . So bad that one of us will end up I a body bag .

Mxo: what do you mean?

Gail: I got a crazy sister wife and a c-

Mxo: I told you that I'm not taking it today. Meet me on Friday at 17h00 at Blos Cafe .

Gail: that wouldn't be a lunch.

Mxo: whatever it will be just be there . I got something to show you .

He said that getting back in his car and drove off leaving her still thinking about it and finally left .

At Breezes

Breeze walked in the house and threw the keys on the table besides the door and went into the dining room drawn by the smell of food . His mouth watered with every step closer .

Sagi smiled standing up with a wine and walked over to him and hugged him as usual before kissing him .

Sagi: how are you ?

Breeze: hungry..

Sagi: of course you are .

She let go and they sat around the dinner table with their food covered with a cloche.

Gail walked in and smiled before kissing both of them and went to wash her hands and came back sitting down.

Breeze: how was work?

Gail: work was great babe . Today we sold almost like 8 to 10 pieces.

Sagi: that's good .

Breeze: your really good at this . Keep it up .

Gail: thank you baby .

Gail opened her food and so did Sagi. Breeze opened his plate and frowned looking at the pink lace panties. He clenched his jaws before putting the cloche back and bit her lip looking at Sagi .

Meanwhile Gail looked at Sagi and sighed at her smirk looking at Breeze. She shook her head and drank her wine with Breeze still looking at Sagi .

Sagi: is everything alright baby ?

Sagi smirked looking at him back as he looked at her . They made an intense eye contact like boxer ready to hear the bell when Gail stood up .

Gail: I'll go dish up for you .

Breeze: forget it babe . I lost my appetite.

Gail sat down and he slowly stood up with his eyes on Sagi .

Sagi: where the fuck do you think your going? Dont you think you have some explanation to do ?

Breeze: I don't have anything to say to you .

Sagi: oh baby don't give me that . Sit the fuck down and tell us who is the third wife so that I could go buy her a diamond casket.

Breeze: I dont know what game your playing bu-

Sagi: this isn't a game Breeze. You went out and fucked another woman and I'm pretty

pretty sure you dont even know her status and then came back to fuvk us because that's what you do . You left two pxxxis is the house and went to chase another one who you dont even know whose been riding it and came back with the same diick you used and used it on us .

Breeze : Sagi your getting-

Sagi: no no no Breeze you are in a marriage. Whatever shit that you do out there comes to all of us . Your problem is you love pussy a lot Breeze

and you seem to be losing it when your around it
course the knowledge of diseases cross the
window . Whose panties are those course they
aren't ours? Are you cheating?

Breeze: Sa-

Sagi : Dont Sagi me and give me that bitches name !

Breeze looked at her fighting to just grab her by her
neck and block the air from passing. He bit his lip
and kissed Gail's cheek before heading out as Sagi
followed him out . She grabbed him by the sweater
and hit him on the back until they were outside by
the car .

Breeze turned and let her hit his chest .

Sagi: who is she ?

Breeze: who is who ?

Sagi : the woman your sleeping with and makes you
lose your touch on cheating skills . You just brought
her panties into our house ! And I'm not giving up

until you say that name .

Breeze : Sagi I'm not cheating.

Sagi: aggg Wrong answer !

She landed a hot slap on his cheek and he held her by the shoulders roughly pinning her against the car kissing her as she tried pushing him back but slowly and slowly got weak . He slit his hand under her dress and touched her flesh as she gasped . He rubbed her for a few seconds while she weakly pushed him back but her body disappointed her .

After a min she pulled herself and crossed her legs pushing him back landing another slap .

Sagi: you are not getting it until I find put who she is .

She hit him as he made his way into the car and got in . She tried opening the door but he locked it starting the engine. She looked around and picked

a brick by the flowers .

Breeze frowned looking at her as she threw the brick on the screen when he leaned hiding and it broke . Glasses splashed and the brick fell on the passengers seat . He raised his head to her still lifting another brick in her hand .

Breeze: Are you crazy !

Sagi : Oh maybe I am baby . Kare ke mang yena a njelang monna ? Ke mang ?

Breeze : Put the fucken brick down !

Sagi: Wrong answer !

She threw the brick but Breeze had stepped on the accelerator and it reversed with speed and the brick landed on the light. Gail rushed outside to Breeze reversing with a broken car and Sagi burning with anger and a brick in her hand .

Gail: what have you done?

Sagis : I want to know that bitch. Breeze is full of shit .

Gail: But throwing bricks at him , was it even necessary?

Sagi: yeah it was .

Gail : You could have just let me talk to him if you couldn't control your emotions Sagi .

Sagi: Hell no !

Gail : Why not ?

Sagi: Course your fucken soft !

She threw the rock and rushed inside leaving Gail there still holding her waist.

At Odirile's house

Odirile looked at the screen and frowned looking at

Breeze . He pressed the button and the gate unlocked. He went towards the door and walked out looking at him as he parked and stepped out and the glasses fell off him .

He couldn't hold it and ended up laughing and Breeze looked at him passing him going inside as he followed.

Odirile: (laughing) And then ? What happened?

Breeze:(drinking beer) Sagi happened!

Odirile: Definitely Sagi .

He tried to hold it but as soon as he saw the print on his cheek he busted laughing even leaning against the counter .

Breeze: Gatta hate a friend that finds your bad situation very amusing.

He took out another beer and passed him going to the living room .

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:35] Lynne : Chapter 23

At The Lyons Mansion

Jack walked in with his Jacob and Jack led him to his bar . They took two glasses and poured themselves a strong brown liquor and sat down on the high chairs .

Jacob: Have you thought about what I said ?

Jack: Jacob .. your my best of friends and trust me I

really understand why your doing this to your boy .
But what your asking is too big . This could tear my
family apart without even a consideration .

Jacob: I know its huge. That's why I told you that
I'll give you more time to think this through until you
come up with an answer and a way to approach this
to your family.

Jack: I dont know man . I don't know.

Jacob : Jack this could benefit both sides of the
family. This could save both our family honours . I
know it's a lot to take in but I need to know the
answer as in today so that I can carry on with other
arrangements. The choice is yours .

He gulped his drink and looked at Jack waiting for
his answer .

Meanwhile. The door bell rang and Rose rushed and
opened for a postman .

Postman: Is this the house of Mr Jack Lyon ?

Rose: Yes sir . It is .

Postman: please sign here for me miss.

Rose signed and took the envelope before the man left and she closed the door . Dineo walked over ready to knock off and stopped in front of her .

Dineo: What's that ?

Rose: it's for my dad . I dont know . It doesn't even have a name on it or anything.

Dineo : ohk bye girl . See you .

Rose: be safe .

They hugged and Dineo left . Rose turned the envelope side to side heading to the bar and walked in to an awkward moment.

Rose: Sorry to disturb. Dad this is for you ?

Jack: thank you hunny. Who is it from ?

Rose: I dont know . The postman just dropped it and left .

Jack: ohk . Thank you.

Rose turned heading out when Jacob scanned her hourglass body . She was a fine young lady . He bit his lip and looked at Jack who was opening the envelope and sighed .

Meanwhile Dineo coached her pockets and she realized she had forgotten her cell phone and went back . She walked in and searched when Rose appeared.

Rose: you back .

Dineo :yeah I forgot my phone .

Rose: I'll go check it upstairs .

Dineo: your my armer.

Rose smiled and went upstairs and she kept searching before deciding to go check the laundry room . Curiosity fought her when passing by the bar and she clenched her fist before eavesdropping.

Jacob: what ?

Jack: nothing serious.

Jacob: You know you cant keep on like this . One way or one day you'll have to let her go . Shes no longer a child Jack. She legal . If you let this past you dont know the kind of a life is ahead of her and the kind of man is waiting out there for her . Shes a Lyon . So every one will jump at the opportunity of being with the famous Jack and Jane Lyon just so they can rob you the millions you have in your account . My suggestion is clear and clean .

Jack: I cant make the fucken decisions for her Jacob . I'd rather have her learn from her mistakes than protecting her from those decisions and never learn. She not mentally fit -

Jacob: Yess ! She is not ! That's why I'm offering you this deal on a silver platter my friend. This could help her ease and think less of her worries and worry more about her future. Trust me when I say this is one of the best decisions you would have ever taken your entire life . She'll thank you for that .

Jack looked at him before pouring another glass and they sat there . Dineo closed her eyes and took a deep breath sneaking away . Rose spotted her with her phone in her hand and ran over scaring her .

Dineo: Shiiit!

Rose: Sorry !(smiling)

Dineo: its ohk . J ust dont sneak up on people like that .

Rose: First of all you were the one who was sneaking. Why ?

Dineo: I..I just didn't want your dad to notice that I was still here . I mean I should have knocked off 2

hours ago .

Rose: Dad doesn't have a problem with workers who love and do their job well . Who are also well mannered. He wouldn't say anything.

Dineo: you'll never know.

Rose: Are you ohk ?

Dineo: mhhmm yeah .. I mean yeah ..I'm fine .
Who's that man with your dad ?

Rose: oh yeah .. that is uncle J acob . An old friend of dad's. Why ? What's up ?

Dineo: uhm nothing . Nothing. He just ..I dont like him already.

Rose: (smiling)oh please he's sweat .

Dineo: I don't know.

Rose: Dineo are you sure your ohk ?

Dineo: (smiling) yeah ..take care . Good night .

Rose: Good night .

They hugged one last time and she went out . Rose turned on her toes and sighed as loneliness struck in and she went upstairs .

In the main bedroom.

Jane tossed to another side and back and again before kicking the sheets off and faced up the ceiling. She still couldn't get to terms with the fact that she was pregnant. She was about to be a mother to a baby who its father had no children or never even planned to have children anytime by with his two wives . Newlyweds . She just broke an already broken brotherhood.

As much as she didn't want to have this child she couldn't kill an innocent soul . Her parents didn't raise her like this and neither did they condone abortion . But raising the kid on her husband would also cost especially if Jack finds out that its Breezes. Late or early . Sagi and Gail would hate her if they find out that she is the first woman to

carry their husbands seed in her womb before them . She can already imagine the embarrassment , hatred and all those following bad emotions that follow.

But right now this was not about her . She was a good doctor herself and she knew that stressing was not good for the baby and as a mother she had to clear the space for her baby's arrival. It would be better if she gets this over and done with than wait for the truth to reveal its self in the most cruel way .

She wiped her tears and breathed before grabbing her phone and scrolling searching for Breeze. She looked at his number for a few seconds with hesitation and finally dialed him with a pounding heart .

At Odirile's house.

Odirile sighed leaning back and pulled the snacks looking at Breeze who was laying on the couch talking non stop . He could sense the regret, fear,

guilt , shame , confusion and anxiety in her friends voice . He kept raising his hands and shaking his head plus with the alcohol in his system made him no justice.

Breeze: I mean . It was a moment of weakness .
Wait I shouldn't call it a moment of weakness what should I call it ? What should I call it Odirile?

Odirile: Advantage.

Breeze: yeah I took advantage. Wait what? No not advantage. I'll just go with a moment of weakness.

Odirile: and that one moment of weakness is going to cost you .

Breeze: And that moment of weakness is going to cost me my marriage. (Scoffed) i mean common. It was just once . I mean one like one with One finger . Oh sorry 1 .

Odirile: You should sleep . Your drunk .

Breeze: I'm not drunk I had 12 bottles only .

Odirile: and that's a lot . You even took a whole bottle of whiskey alone man .

Breeze: no you helped me . I saw you .

Odirile: I didn't.

Breeze: whatever. So as I was saying before I was rudely interrupted...it was only once. In her office. On the table . On the wall . On the chair . On the door . On the floor. And on the bed .

Odirile: you were busy now weren't you my friend?

Breeze: (drunk voice) Veryyyyyyy.

Odirile: Was she good ?

Breeze:

Odirile: what ? I'm asking was she good ?

Breeze: today I'm being honest with you course I see my ancestors have turned their backs on me and took my cheating skills away as Sagi said soooooo.. I'mma say Yess ..she was delicious. Very .

Odirile: much better than them ?

Breeze: pussy is pussy man .

Odirile: no it's not. We are talking about you cheating on your two woman . Whom are committed and love you with your sex addiction.

Breeze: I'm not addicted.

Odirile: so answer.

Breeze: (sigh) I've been around pussy for a long time so it's hard to differentiate between good or bad .

Odirile: yes you've been around it for a long time that's why you're able to differentiate between good or bad . So what's it going to be ?

Breeze: I don't know. What I know is I enjoyed it but now I'm regretting it .

Odirile: you've been talking but you haven't told me the name . Who is she ?

Breeze: you don't wanna know that ?

Odirile: I do

Breezes phone rang and he raised his finger taking out the phone in his pocket. He put it to his face and smiled .

Breeze: talk about the devil and the devil shall call .

Odirile: actually its "come "

Breeze: whatever..(to the phone) hey you . What up ?

Jane: I dont want much of your time so I'll just have to get right on to it and then the decision will be up to you . Ohk .? Ohk?

Breeze: can't just say ohk . Ohk what ?

Jane: that you'll give me an accurate answer. No hide and seek . Ohk ?

Breeze: what's up with the "Ohk's" ?

Jane: course I need you to be specific and think 6 times harder than you usually do course what im about to tell you might change your life forever. Or ruin you .

Breeze: mmmhh .

Jane: Mmmhh what ?

Breeze: just say it already.

Jane: this is serious Breeze.

Breeze: Should I hang up ?

Jane sighed as her heart pounded hard on her chest and she swallowed thinking shes about to break a marriage into three parts .

Meanwhile Breeze yawned listening to her breath slowly increasing .

Breeze: ohk good night.

Jane: (fast) I'm pregnant !

His heart skipped and the phone slid from his 2 second paralyzed hand and hit the tile cracking the screen. All the alcohol in his system rushed out out of nowhere and he was fine as if he never drank .

He looked at Odirile with dropped jaws and picked the phone putting it on his ear .

Breeze: you what ?

Jane: (stumbling) I'm..I'm.. pregnant.

Breeze: I'm being God damned !

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:36] Lynne : Chapter 24

At Odirile's house

It was like for a few mins the clock stopped ticking. Breeze rubbed his eyebrows looking at Odirile who was waiting for an explanation.

Breeze: Where are you right now ?

Jane: I'm home .

Breeze: Meet me at the Cafe .

Jane: Breeze I'm still a married woman. I cant just leave my house in the middle of the night just to be with the man who my husband calls a brother . I got a house and a family .

Breeze: Enough with all that course we all know your married and living a folklore marriage with your so called husband. But if your carrying my child and your sure you'll meet me in the next 20 mins .

Jane: Hes your brother !

Breeze: I dont care . Just be there ohk !

He hung up and Odirile put the bottle on the table and leaned back waiting. Breeze looked at him with narrowed eyebrows and stood up with half a bottle and headed out. Odirile lifted his hands and

dropped them before sighing.

At The Lyons Mansion.

Jane hit the phone lightly on her palm countless times before standing up in her pjs and took the car keys wearing her sleepers .

She walked downstairs and heard Male voices speaking but as she got closer they stopped talking .

She went to Jack's bar and looked at Jacob before smiling at them .

Jane: Hey .

Jacob: Hey Jane . How are you ?

Jane: I'm good . You?

Jacob : I'm also fine . You look amazing. Your glowing more than the last time I saw you . Jack takes a good care of you I see.

Jane: (smiling) He does, he's a darling.

Jack: I love you.

Jane: I love you too.

Jack: Where are you going?

Jane: I'm going out . To Sagis. She asked me to come help her with something and Breeze will accompany me back .

Jack: Breeze has a bodyguards . Couldn't he send someone to come pick you up ?

Jane: he did ..uhm just that I prefer my own car than riding with a stranger. I mean you'll never know wht might happen this days .

Jack: right . Let me see this guy he sent before he fol-

Jane: (cut in) no no ! I mean no . Its ohk . I can handle him . Hes the one that drives them all the time . J ust be here with your friend, besides you haven't seen each other in a while . I'm sure you got a lot to catch up on. Right J acob?

Jacob: Yeah . And some unfinished business to

discuss.

Jack turned looking at him and sighed before stepping over to Jane and kissed her forehead before hugging her. The feeling of his arms around her made her feel safe and loved the way Breeze makes her feel. Though she wasn't sure but everytime she hears Breeze she could just melt and cry. Wasn't sure if it was love or the pregnancy.

They let go and she walked out leaving them. Jack sat on the chair and looked at Jacob.

Jacob: What?

Jack: What If I say ohk? What's there in for my daughter?

Jacob: We would do anything for your daughter. She'll have a royal life. She'll be safe, rich, educated and everything else that you always wished for her. Power. She'll live like a goddess. No enemy will make it to her in under our protection.

Jack: Breeze already makes sure that nothing harmful rich is my daughter. I know that this might be in a rush but ,I can just sell my daughter just like that .

Jacob: Jack how long have we known each other? have I ever betrayed your trust? have I ever promised you a lie? have I ever ever lied to you? I don't know where you get this ideas all of a sudden about me but I can promise you that your daughter will be safe in my arms, under my family's protection. I mean , Breeze is a gangster, a ruthless gangster and he is associated with the most dangerous people you can ever imagine. Jack we're talking real gangsters I mean the real people who been in this year for a long long time Russians I mean Who the f*** deals the motherfucking Russians and expect good out of that. Most of those people's family end up in a box in a casket. Six feet under my friend. I know it's not my place to say, but I care about your daughter and trust me when I say I want what's best for her. Not so long ago you were crying about her having nightmares I

mean does night nurse who knows they might be a sign. A sign that she should move on and get away from all your family members .Not in an offensive way but I just think , I can do better ,not better than you because you are her parents but I think I can do something. J ust think about it.

J acob gulped his drink and pet his shoulder before heading out . J acob rubbed his nose bridge before pouring a drink and gulped it . He picked his phone and dialed Breeze.

Breeze: yep?

J ack: Halo bro.. I just wanted to check if J ane has arrived safely there??

Breeze: arrived safely where?

J acob: I thought she said ..she said she was coming to your house course Sagi called her .

Breeze: oh yeah ..there she is . They are downstairs . You know ladies. She didn't say hi ,they just got to

whatever they're doing. She seems to be forgetting that I'm her brother in law here .

Jack: (smiling) ohk ..please take care of her . And make sure you bring her back yourself. I dont trust your guards.

Breeze: ohk cxxl .

Jack: good night little brother .

Breeze: bye .

Breeze cut the call and he sighed before standing up and went upstairs. He passed by Rose's room and slightly opened looking at her sitting on the study table with her headphones on watching movies . He sighed and stepped back closing the door and went to the main bedroom.

At the Cafe garage.

Jane parked her car and switched off the engine

looking around. She spotted Breezes car and stepped out closing the door and went into his .

She got in and sat down biting her lip . Her heard beat hard on her chest it could just jump out .

Breeze looked at her and sighed before looking outside the window and scoffed.

Breeze: tell me J ane . Your what ?

J ane: I'm pregnant.

Breeze: Are you even sure that that baby is mine?

J ane: what do you mean the baby is yours ? Of course it's yours.

Breeze: you know there are chances that it could be Jack's course you and I only had a moment of weakness. It happened once .

J ane: well that moment of weakness created a human . That moment of weakness planted a seed inside of me that is developing every single day Breeze. That moment of weakness put a reminder inside of me .

Breeze: so why couldn't you just get rid of it ? I'm married, your married . That child is gonna course a huge flame between both our families. Look at my face . I married a psychopath. Shes looking for your and trust me she wont stop until she finds you . And the last thing I need is having a child out of wedlock.

Jane: What do you mean she's looking for me Breeze? How did she know that you had a one night stand?

Breeze: Remember when things got heated ? I ripped those sexy panties of yours and I couldn't just leave them laying there incase someone entered your office while your sleeping . So I took them with me and forgot to burn them . I put it in my drawer and whn Sagi found it she went all Sagi .
(Smiling)

Jane: What could be possibly funny about that Breeze?

Breeze: Dont you find it funny? I just got cought ! By Sagi . Trust me what she did to me is just the beginning of hell . Hell its gonna break loose.

(Smirk)

Jane: Kana Sagi o ne le criminal record ! Attempted murder! Oh my God Breeze! How could you be so careless? You should have just left my panties.

Breeze: Well dont you think it's a little too late to be pointing fingers ? We should be thinking about how we will deal with you .

Jane: What do you mean ?

Breeze: Jane I'm a gangster. But that doesn't make me any less of a human . I have my humanity and I know that it's not going to be easy for you walking down the route with Jack while carrying another mans child. I know how it is to grow up alone . And I know that some of my decisions are not going to sit well with you but know that it is out of care . And after you called, on my way here I realized that you think less of me when coming to being a father .

Jane: what do mean ?

Breeze: you wanted me to choose between my flash and blood and happiness.

Jane: Breeze i-

Breeze: And I totally understand why you did that .
Because I'm an unlawful person and everyone
around me is always a target. So I guess it's a
motherly instinct or sh*t but I cant walk away
. (pulling her hands) Please dont force me to leave
what's mine behind and live like nothing happened.

Jane: What are you saying?

Breeze: What I'm saying is ..We made this child
together. We are gonna raise it together . I want my
child to grow up knowing that I love him or her . I
want to be there for my child . I want to be there for
you and our child. And I promise you this . No harm
shall reach our child. Not if I still have my blood
running through my veins and air in my lungs . One
thing is ..I cant promise to be perfect but I promise
to try . Let me be there for you and our child.

Jane:(teary) But what about Jack , Gail , Sagi and
Rose ?

Breeze: We can cross that bridge when we get
there . For now let's let the air cool down . That child

is my first priority right now .

Jane's tears rolled down when she quickly wiped them but they couldn't stop flowing. Breeze pulled her in for a hug and she broke down on his shoulder.

Jane: (crying) thank you .

Breeze: Shhh ..your not alone on this . We're in this together.

He leaned back and looked at her in the teary eyes . He slowly wiped her tears with her thumb and smiled before kissing her forehead. She smiled leaning back when Breeze phone rang and he picked.

Breeze: hey baby .

Gail: Hunny where are you ? I'm worried about you , its almost 12 .

Breeze: Clearing my head . I'm at the hotel, I'm fine .

Gail: should I come be there with you ?

Breeze: no baby it's not safe . J ust stay at home and I'll be there first thing in the morning. How's Sagi?

Gail: She'll get there . She's still furious but hiding her emotions as usual.

Breeze: (softly) ohk ..I'm sorry about all this .

Gail: its ohk . Sleep on it. We'll talk tomorrow. Bye ,love you .

Breeze: I love you too .

They hang up and he sighed looking at the time . He turned looking at J ane who was looking at him and they smiled.

Breeze: call J ack and tell him change of plans .
Your sleeping over .

J ane: What ? I can't do that.

Breeze: oh yess you will . Call him . Now !

She took her phone and dialed J ack.

J ane: Hey hunny .

J ack: (sleepy) Hey babe . Are you ohk ?

J ane:yeah I'm fine . J ust that the girls changed plans and your brother says I cant drive at night , course hes scared something might happen to me and you'll kill him .

J ack: (smiling) He's right, I'm going to kill him.
Yeah you cant drive at this hour by yourself . Guess I'll see you tomorrow. I love you .

J ane: love you too.

She hang up and Breeze started the engine before driving off .

Breeze: love in paradise. You sure got him under your spell .

Jane:(smiling) just drive . Where are we going?

Breeze: Hotel .

Jane: o .h .k .

.

.

.

Typing

[08/02, 13:36] Lynne : Chapter 25

At the Lyons Mansion

The next morning Breeze drove through and parked on the parking spot . They turned looking at each other and smiled before stepping out . This was slowly getting out of control. Them smiling at each

other every change they get . The walked sideways to the house and walked in to a house smelling divine.

They headed to the dinning room and found Dineo preparing the table for breakfast. She was a hard worker and everything she did she did it with passion.

Dineo: good morning Mrs Lyon . Good morning Mr Lyon.

Both: Morning .

Dineo: how are you ?

Both: good / fine . And you ?

Dineo: I'm good. Let me go call Rose ,breakfast is ready .

Dineo rushed up the stairs when Jack walked down in a suit and smiled looking at them . He walked over and kissed Jane when Breeze cleared his throat and looked aside .

Jack: not like its the first time seeing this.

Breeze: I don't know what your talking about. My eyes are still virgin.

Jane and Jack laughed and he smiled when Rose from the stairs spotted Breeze. She jogged down and ran towards him jumping in his arms smiling. Breeze picked her bridal swinging her like a little kid .

Breeze: there's my favourite niece. How have you been?

Rose: Good . How about you uncle?

Breeze: I've been fine baby girl . You have grown a lot since the last time I saw you . Great thing your still in your age shape or else you'll be looking like your 53 year old mother since all you do is eat and chill .

Rose : I work out . Dad bought me some few thing and made me a gym room to keep my self occupied

.

Breeze: is it working?

Rose: there and there yeah .

Breeze: that's good . You making progress I'm proud of you .

Rose: thank you.

Breeze: I gatta bounce . I have two eggs waiting for me to come home so they could start cracking and I have to go check on a patient.

Rose: I'm coming along. Right dad ?

Jack: hunny your uncle is a very busy guy you know. I'm sure he-

Breeze: No I have nothing to do today . Dont worry she'll be fine . Its ohk .

Rose: yes.

Jane: just be careful ohk ?

Breeze wrapped his hand around Rose shoulder

with a sarcastic face and they laughed before they walked out. Jack looked at Jane and they sat down smiling and dished up .

Jack: she's getting better and better .

Jane: yeah . Our baby is slowly getting herself back .

Jack: yeah . Your beautiful you know.

Jane:(blushing) oh please.

Jack: No I'm serious. And your gaining weight.

Jane : I should start exercising then .

Jack: I mean your gaining weight. Your different.
Hot !

Jane: ohkthank you darling.

She raised her glass and they smiled before she drank and they ate .

At Breezes house.

Breeze and Rose walked into the house and as soon as Sagi heard the door open and foot steps , she jumped off the bed and rushed downstairs.

Sagi: (shouting) Where the fuck have you been?!
(Saw Rose) I missed you baby..

Breeze: (smiling) I miss you too .

Sagi: hey baby ..

Rose: hey aunty.. how are you ?

Sagi: I'm angry. Course I miss him .

Rose: I can imagine. Y'all miss each other even if you saw each other a few hours ago .

Sagi: Love darling. Love .

Rose : I sit ever want to fall in love .

Sagi: And dont . Love hurts .

Rose laughed and went into the kitchen and took

out an ice cream while Sagi and Breeze looked at each other with furious eyes . Breeze passed by her and walked to the main bedroom where Gail stepped out of the shower naked .

Gail: hey .

Breeze: hey babe . How are you ?

Gail: I'm good. You ?

Breeze: I'm fine . Going to work ?

Gail: not like I have anything to do around here do I?

Breeze: you could just use the store room. Turn it into your painting room you know . That way you won't have to overwork yourself. You can hire someone to manage the Gallery in your absence.

Gail: like the way you do with the club ? No thank you . I love being around art and helping those kids reach their dreams in art . And I cant do that if I'm sitting here and home painting in my own space while I should be there showing them not to hide their selves and try to share what they have with the

world. I love what I do babe .

Breeze: Fair enough.

Gail: So are you going to talk about last night ?

Breeze: I rather not .

Gail: Hiding away from this wont help you . You wont be on ease because it'll weigh you Breeze. I know somehow somewhere in there you feel bad but you're scared your going to lose something if you talk it out . I want answers. Sagi want answers. And you know that she wont let this flow until she finds out who you were with . Why did you cheat?

Breeze: Babe u didn't cheat.

Gail: if you didn't. Why are those panties in your drawer? Who do they belong to ?

Breeze: no one .

Gail: I don't know why your doing this but your hurting us Breeze. Sagi is hurting behind that bold mask . Do you know the thought of your partner riding another pers on. Do you know how much it hurts? Why did you do that ?

Breeze: (sighed) it was a moment of weakness. It happened once . I promise.

Gail: With who ?

Breeze: not the name now .

Gail: why not ? I want to know who it is ?

Breeze: so that you could tell her ? and you know Sagi has only an accelerator .

Gail: she deserves to know! Shes your wife !

Breeze: I know. And I cant hurt her . Neither you . Or that once off .

Gail put on her rag and sat on the mirror untying her hair as it bounced on her shoulders. She sighed looking at him through the mirror.

Gail:(softly) Was it good ?

Breeze: Gail dont .

Gail: tell me .. Was it good ? Please don't lie . After

everything you did , I deserve the truth . Was the pussy good ?

Breeze: (swallowed) Yes .

Like a needle through her heart . Gail swallowed the lamp and sighed fighting the tears and opened her make up bag doing her no make up make up .

Breeze sat on the bed guilt stricken and sighed looking at her.

Breeze: Say something please.

Gail: like ..

Breeze: anything. Shout , scream or anything but not the silence treatment.

Gail : ohk .

Breeze: ohk?

Gail: (sighed) I love you Breeze.

As if the guilt wasn't enough. That "I love you " hurt even much . He bit his lip and looked at her as she stood up and got dressed grabbing her bag and keys .

Gail : I'll see you later .bye .

Breeze: bye .

She kissed him and smiled before leaving and he stood up going to take a shower .

Outside a tear ran down her cheek as she got in the car and she wiped it . The card was still there. She took out her phone and wrote him a message before putting it back and drove off .

After a while he stepped out , lotioned and wore his black clothes as usual before going downstairs .

Sagi and Rose smiled while chatting and Breeze took an apple looking at them .

Breeze: I'll see you guys later .

Rose: No uncle. I'm coming along.

Breeze: I'm just going to check on a patient and I'll be right back . I wont take long .

Rose: still ..I'm coming.

Sagi: still stubborn.

Rose : Uncle used to say I'm stubborn like you . And I am .

Sagi: (loughed) whatever. You guys be safe .

Breeze kissed her cheek before she and Rose hugged and left . Sagi took out her phone and went to YouTube looking at the cooking video.

At the Hospital.

Breeze walked to the reception and did what he did

and the nurse allowed him in . A cold chill ran down Rose's spine and her stomach turned. She took breaths and followed Breeze stepping into a ward . The bed was empty. Breeze sighed with his hands in the pockets sat down looking at Rose who was somehow not good .

Breeze: are you ohk ?

Rose: I'm fine .

She said that with assuring him and he sat back relaxing and she sat in the other one . Kagiso took baby steps towards the bed from the bathroom and frowned looking at Breeze. He didn't know why but this guys had a felt presence , so intimidating. He walked to the bed and gathered himself getting back and sighed once he got on leaning back .

Meanwhile Rose felt like her eyes where betraying her and she blinked looking at the guy from the video . He was even handsome that she could have possibly imagined. She never saw a guy with such

long plated her in her entire life . It was like looking at a reality star who was in hospital.

Meanwhile Kagiso's body suddenly got chills and and the pain his stomach became painful. He shut his eyes as the machines started beeping and Breeze quickly stood up and went to call a nurse.

Meanwhile Rose's heart pounded looking at Kagiso's as he mumbled in pain . A tear ran down the side of his eye to the pillow holding tightly to his stomach. She but her lip before standing up seeing that he was also increasing by holding on tight . She pulled his hands away when both of them their bodies blood ran fast in their veins . The touch of her smooth hand calmed him a bit though the pain was still there . He slowly opened his eyes to an a beautiful girl looking at him with worry. Their eyes locked and they looked at each other . The door flew and a doctor walked in with a nurse . Rose stepped back looking at him not wanting to break the eye contact. The nurse pulled her out and when it broke it was like they just cut something from her .

The nurse closed the door and she rushed to it

looking at it listening to him as he mumbled in pain .
Meanwhile Breeze looked at her as she slowly
touched the door .

Breeze: Rose ..? Are you ohk?

Rose: He's in a lot of pain . He's hurt .

Breeze narrowed his eyebrows confused

-
-
-
-
-

Comment and Like

[08/02, 13:36] Lynne : Chapter 26

In the Hospital.

Breeze narrowed his eyes and walked over to her pulling her slowly by her hand sitting with her on the bench. He held her hand in his hands and looked at her as her eyes teared up . He never thought that this disorder or whatever is going on with her will kick in so fast , in a blink . He hated the thought to have kicked in all those nightmares back just by coming with her here at the hospital. This child has been through a lot and the last thing she needs is a restless night .

Breeze: Are you ohk baby?

Rose: (teary) I saw it . I saw the video . They ganged up on him as a community and cared less if he was hurting .

Breeze : Wait what video?

Rose: the video where the whole of his community beat him . His mother tried to stop them but she couldn't. She looked like she was also in pain . The way they beat him uncle, even an animal is never

beaten like that .

Breeze: Why the fuvk were you even looking at that video Rose ? Anyway- where is this video?

Rose : I dont know why I watched it but I felt drawn to watch it . I saw it on Facebook. People were even talking about it . It was trending .

Breeze sighed looking at her and for some reason. Looking at her was like looking at her mothers round face with those above heavy lips . Her brown eyes and how heart she was . Light skinned with long black hair . Almost looked like a coloured.

He shook his head and sat back taking out his phone . He went to Facebook and searched the video when it appeared and he watched . Rose tried looking and he paused looking at her with his eyebrows up .

Rose: (smiling) fine .

She sat back and listened only . Breeze rubbed his eyebrow and looked at Rose before logging out and switched off his phone standing up just as the doctor stepped out .

Doctor: (smiling) Great news .

Breeze and Rose stood up .

Doctor: He's back .

Breeze: What do you mean he's back ?

Doctor: it seems like when the pain stung in it triggered all the memories. He remembers everything .

At Gail's Gallery.

Gail walked out from her office holding a file and

went to the reception where she gave it to the receptionist before turning around heading back . Mxolisi entered before she could disappear and whistled a bit and she smiled looking at him. He walked over to her and smiled before taking her hand kissing it .

Mxo: (smiling)Hey Abi .

Gail: (smiling) Hey you .

Mxo: How are you ?

Gail: I'm good ..and you?

Mxo: I'm more than good . Actually I'm excited! After receiving your massage I could hardly focus at work so I just decided to call it a day to come spend the day with you .

Gail: You shouldn't have done that . You could get fired and I dont want to be the reason behind that .

Mxo:(smiling) if I do then I'll get fired happy . Besides I'm my own boss as well like you .

Gail: oh ..really. What kind of business are you

running?

Mxo : Let's save that for the table . Lets get going if you dont mind .

Gail: Not at all . My mood was ruined anyway. It was my day off but I decided to come . Let me go get my stuff .

Mxo: Perfect! I'll be outside.

He watched her as she ran missy in her formal wear in heels. He smiled before throwing the kiss up in the air and caught them before walking out greeting the receptionist.

The receptionist looked at him suspiciously and shook his head when Gail walked over with her bag .

Gail: Uhm something came up . Can you clear my schedule for the rest of the day .

Receptions: yes mam .

Gail: perfect. I'll see you .

Receptionist: Bye .

She went out and spotted him leaning against a different car . This time it was a Porsche. Black kind . This guy must be loaded . He smiled meeting her halfway and took her bag holding it for her and held her hand escorting her to the passengers side and opened the door for her .

Gail: (hesitantly) maybe I should follow you with my car .

Mxo: Common Abi. It's just a friendly date not a romantic one .

Gail: still .

Mxolisi smiled when his dimple appeared and he looked aside rubbing his mustache. Gail tried not to blush but this guy was amazingly cute, handsome . He pulled her hand in his and put it on his chest looking in her eyes .

Mxo: I'm a very lawful person on my love . I could never hurt you . And I promise not to touch you without your permission or do anything inappropriate. If you feel uncomfortable or anything just tell me . I'm an open person. I promise to keep you safe and protect you not the other way around. Please trust me .

Gail:(softly) ohk .

He smiled before opening the door wide for her and she got in before he closed it and went to his side, got in and drove off .

At Breezes house.

Sagi finished eating and washed her dish ,dried it and put it back . She drank water before going upstairs jogging and went to change her clothes into a nice classy floral dress. She sat stood on the

mirror and looked at her curly hair before letting it loose. She needed a new hairstyle. She smiled all by herself and went out to Breeze's closet and took out his card before she went out to wear her matching heels . She wore her favorite necklace and sprayed her perfume, took her bag and headed out .

At Odirile's house.

Odirile finished working on some documents and forwarded some emails to Breeze before shutting the laptop when his sister walked in from school . She went straight to the kitchen where he was and leaned on the counter taking the contract looking at it .

Ditebogo: (sarcastic) Wow well well well brother . You and Breeze come a long way and finally made it . But I dont understand why a strip club . Please tell me why leave club 808 that was operating so

well and decide to expand it with a strip club?

Odirile: Club 808 also has strippers inside . Now we just want to explore another cloud.

Ditebogo: mmmh?

Odirile: We have been running a club with only female strippers and hell yeah it was going fine . But this time I want us to spice it up with Male strippers .

Ditebogo: (jaws dropped) What ?

Odirile: yep .

Ditebogo: And Breeze agreed to all this shit ?

Odirile: not yet . He is still occupied with woman up his bed and besides i thought about this for months now .

Ditebogo went to the fridge and took out a fruit salad and put it on the counter and took out two forks .

Ditebogo: you know bother I always support you with everything-

Odirile: (cut in) but crime .

Ditebogo: Yes anything but crime but this is insane. Those things only happen in America. This - this is Africa. South Africa. Who in the God damn African continent would agree to be a stripper? Who ? Course no Sotho , Nguni , Tsonga, Venda not even Nama men group would agree to that .

Odirile: you'll never know sister. ..

He ate a little before kissing her forehead and went upstairs. Few mins later he came back wearing his casual wear.

Ditebogo: Black . Black . Black . Dont you get tired of black ? You and your friend?

Odirile: No no no ! We dont !

He took his phone and car keys and went out leaving her smiling by herself and continued eating.

At Kagiso's house.

Veronica walked out of the house balancing herself with the door and went to sit on the stoep under the hot sun . She hasn't taken her medication since her son went missing. A part of her gave her an unpleasant sense while another one gave her hope .

She tried to keep herself believing that he is fine wherever he is but just the thought it gave her the worst . Maybe he died .

The police couldn't find his body . But there was just something off about this whole investigation course it didn't go further. They just dropped her like that without further investigation.

She shook her head and could feel her swollen eyes paining since there were no tears left to cry. She sighed and balanced her head with her hand resting

her head and sat under the hot sun .

Meanwhile.

Bonolo moved the curtain and watched as Kagiso's mother sat under the hot sun . She had lost so much weight you could even see her bones from a distance. She even looked pale .

She wore her shoes and tied her afro before taking her card and phone walking out. She took her mothers car keys and went into the garage , got in and reversed before driving off.

At The Lyons Mansion.

Jack's phone rang and he answered walking downstairs in his coma wear and a brief in his hand .

Caller: Good day sir . This is Jasmine Maite from S***** Sanatorium . Am I talking to Mr Jack Lyon?

Jack: Yes this is him .

Caller: We are calling to let you know that your daughter has a new psychologist . We apologize for our delay . Rose's session would be starting on Monday and has to be here for about 4 -5 months so that she can get all the help she needs . Or more . Meaning even a year or years. If you have time please pass by so that we can talk more details.

Jack: Ohk thank you very much.

Caller: Have a good day sir .

Jack: you too .

Jack hang up before sighing and turned back and went to the main bedroom where he found Jane sitting on the bed reading a book . He sat next to her and used his finger lowering the book looking at her and she looked at him smiling.

Jane: Changed your mind ?

Jack: not really. I have something to tell you . I just

received a call from the Sanatorium.

Jane: Perfect what did they say ?

Jack: they said Rose will be under a different Psychologist and that her sessions will be starting on Monday. That leaves us with only 5 days to be with her and tell her about this.

Jane: How long will she be there ?

Jack: 4-5 months or more .

Jane: What do you mean more ?

Jack: She might be there for over a year or years . It'll depend on what we're dealing with .

Jane's eyes burned with tears and she put her hands to her face crying in them when Jack pulled her in and hugged her tightly.

Jack: I know baby . I know it's a lot to take in but there isn't another way around this. This is the only opportunity and shot we have to save our daughter

from this misery. We tried almost like everything in our power but didn't help . At least the Sanatorium once helped so I guess if we give it more time this time it'll work .

Jane: But Jack ..my baby will-

Jack : you will see Rose my love . It wont be like the last time where you saw her once in 2 months .

Though you wont be seeing her every now and then it's better than nothing at all . We ourselves have to be strong for her . I dont know the full details but I'm going there after my meeting to find out about the whole process .

Jane: ohk ..so are you going to tell her ?

Jack : I dont know how I'm going to tell her this course the last time I sent her there she didn't even want anything to do with me . So ..I guess this time we should allow them to come take her instead other than giving her red flags .

Jane: Ohk ...

Jack: I'm sorry babe . Well get through this. I promise.

He hugged her one last time before kissing her and stood up picking his brief case .

Jack: see you later . I love you .

Jane: I love you too .

He kissed her forehead and left . Tears burned Jane's eyes until she broke and cried . This was too much. Sure she wanted her to get help but parting almost 4 or more months even years was a little hush . She reached for her phone without thinking twice and dialed Breeze.

At the Hospital.

The doctor finished examining Kagiso as he layed there with his hand on his forehead closing his eyes . The nurse fixed the drip on his other hand and

pulled the sheet covering to his lover body and they walked out leaving them .

Everything came rushing into Kagiso's head like he was watching a reality show . How his mother begged and begged for them to stop . How her voice cracked and she choked on the tears . How he fought his way towards him and finally made it . Her warm tears falling on his head when he was unconscious. How she stood up for him . Her warm hug and how he felt like a human again in her arm full of warmth and love .

A tear rolled out off his closed eyes and fell on the pillow as more and more followed. He sniffed as the tears choked him but still he didn't cough nor opened his eyes . He slid his hand to his eyes as more tears rolled in silence .

Breeze's phone rang and he took it out looking at Jane's call . He excused himself and went out . Rose stood there looking at him silently crying as her heart shuttered. She never thought men can cry . To her it was like they don't have tears and now it hurt looking at him trying to hold back the pain in

his heart . She swallowed and slowly walked over and set on the side of the bed looking at him .

Rose: (softly) I'm so sorry .

He sniffed and sighed before biting his lip . Rose hesitantly reached for his hand that was laying on his stomach and held it softly squeezing it .

Rose: it'll be alright. Everything its going to be alright.

Her words slowed down his heart rate and he calmed down and the tears stoped flowing as his heart came to ease feeling her hand and her encouragement .

Outside.

Breeze listened to J ane as she sobbed while talking

. He didn't know if it was the pregnancy, her, or the northerly thing to cry out of blue but somehow he could feel her pain .

Jane : (crying) I'm scared Breeze. I dont want to lose her .shes been through so much already for a girl her age and she is still going to - to oh my God.

Breeze: Its ohk ..I get you . You dont want to part ways with you daughter, fine . But remember this it isn't about you and you feelings on this . It's about Rose . Her wellbeing should be the first thing to put in mind in all of this babe . She is going to the Sanatorium for help not to stay . I know you wont be able to communicate with her more often but being there for her emotionally would push her even further to improve so that you can have her back in your arms. I know it hurt love but this is not about you it's about her .

Jane: I know . And trust me I do want her to get help but i -

Breeze: baby listen. This is Rose . Right now she

needs you more than ever . She's not stable and you being like that would literally break her back to square one . Be strong for her . You only have 5 days so make the best of out of them and make sure that she never forgets how much you love her even if 50 years . It's been more than 7 years or so in pain . Can you even imagine how ragged she is inside compared to you .

Jane: I just don't want to lose her .

Breeze: your not going to lose Rose babe . But you will if you keep on crying anytime when she has to go get help .

Jane:(sniffing) Ohk ..

Breeze: It'll be fine . I promise.

Jane: Ohk .

Breeze: Yeah ...I gatta get back so I'll call you later. Hold on . How are we doing?

Jane:(smiling) We are doing just fine. J ust sad that our sister is leaving us in a couple of days .

Breeze: (smiling) Your a cry baby but ohk . I'm glad .

Take care .

Jane : you too .

He hang up and smiled before heading back inside.

At the Mall .

In a Saloon.

Sagi swang around with the chair smiling when her hair swang and covered her face . She laughed sitting back and the hair dresser finished off by cutting the ends and comb her straightened long hair .

Hairdresser: (smiling) You my friend , you got beautiful black hair . I wish I was you right now .

Sagi: oh please. Yours is even longer than mine .

Hairdresser: No it's not . Anyway do you want me

to style you or let it be as it is ?

Sagi: its ohk as it is . I like it . I should do this more often.

She stood up and went to pay before looking herself one more time on the mirror and checking her nails and smiled happy about their service. She bit her goodbye and went out heading to Food Lovers Market.

Bonolo picked the basket and went around the shelves picking some spices and all . Her mind drifted listen to a song by Larissa Lambert-Weak and she sang along listening to it with headphones.

I get so weak in the knees

I can hardly speak

I lose all control and something takes over me

In daze ,your loves so amazing

It's not a phase I want you to stay with me

By my side, I'll swallow all my pride

Your love is so sweet

It knocks me right off my knees

Yeah yeah

Cant explain why your love makes me weak

On the other raw Odirile held the basket listening to her elegant voice as she sang and funny enough , this happened to be his favorite song . He smiled and went to the side looking at her as she sang along every lyric . She looked young and short. With a smooth brown skin and natural hair . Short girls are always hard headed and that right there seemed like a hell whole. But then charm .

He slowly walked over to her and stood in front of her and she slowly stopped singing and smiled back to Odirile who was smiling.

Bonolo: I'm so sorry . Was I loud ?

Odirile:(smiling) Very loud .

Bonolo: oh my God. Was I bad ?

Odirile: Very bad . You were messing up the lyrics.

Bonolo: Are you serious? Oh my God.. but how .

Odirile: I'm kidding you were good . But loud.

Bonolo: (smiling)almost gave me a fright .

Odirile: I'm Odirile by the way .

Bonolo: I'm Bonolo.

Odirile: So are you buying food for a special occasion or something? No offense but they are a lot .

Bonolo: Oh no ..uhm . This aren't myn only . I'm buying them for someone whose struggling to get on their feet and I just couldn't stand by watching her suffer when I could help .

Odirile: Your kind . Mind if I join in . I dont even know what some of this things my sister sent me are . Care to help a friend also .(blinked like a kid)

Bonolo:(smiling) ohk no problem

They continued shopping over a small there and there chat until they were done and went to pay . Odirile looked at a familiar second lady in front of them and scanned her clothes. There was only one person he knew with this kind of clothes. But the hair was different.

Odirile: Please excuse me for a sec .

Bonolo: cxxl .

Odirile passed by and tapped her when Sagi turned around. Damned was she crazily georgios. Odirile chuckled before moving her from the line and hugged her tightly before stepping back . He gently put the hair behind her ear looking at her as she smiled at him .

Odirile: You look amazing smucles.

Sagi: Thank you baby .

Odirile: where is the party ?

Sagi:(chuckled) there's no party dude. I see you got yourself a lady .hey girl .

Bonolo: (smiling) Hi .

Odirile: (smiling) yeah right there is where I intend to lend it . A kere lena you refuse to cook ,clean and do everything for me just like that stupid in my house .

Sagi: We are not your wife's Odirile.

Odirile : Yeah right . That's why I'm thinking of getting myself someone.

Sagi: About damn time .

Odirile: (chuckled) where's Breeze? I sent him some email and he hasn't replied me yet .

Sagi: email about ?

Odirile: We were thinking of expanding but we had not idea . So I did something something stupid and sent it to him . J ust business.

Sagi: He's at the hospital . Went to check up on his patient but I'm sure he's on his way course he went with Rose .

Odirile: How is she doing by the way ?

Sagi : She's getting there . But you could see that she's still struggling. Rose has been through a lot and I cant imagine what Jane is going through.

Odirile: You should check up on her . She needs your support not only as a family member but as a sister.

Sagi: yeah I will . Wait I have been meaning to ask you this . I know its weird but your the only one I could trust and believe on this .

Odirile: ohk ...

Sagi : (putting everything on the till) Is Breeze seeing someone?

Odirile: uhhh ..I don't know. You think he's seeing someone?

Sagi: That's the reason why I'm asking course I'm not sure . I think he is but at the same time I wish to

believe that he had a one night stand . But with who ?

Odirile: Uhm he didn't tell em anything. I'll try talk to him and see if I can get something out of him .

Sagi: please do course I'm worried. Not only his health but I love him . And I dont think I'll be able to stand it seeing Gail break .

Odirile: I understand.

Sagi:(to Bonolo smiling) Sorry bbe for taking your man away from you .

Bonolo: (smiling) uhhh.. no problem.

Sagi: Ohk see you .

She kissed his cheek before taking her bags and left . Odirile and Bonolo paid and went out pushing out their trolleys and stopped at the entrance.

Bonolo: ohk see you .

Odirile: can I get your number?

Bonolo: I have a boyfriend.

Odirile: but you're not married right ?

Bonolo: I'm not .

Odirile: then your still on the market babe .

Bonolo sighed smiling and took his phone and punched her numbers and gave it back .

Odirile: ohk see you .

Bonolo: bye .

They hugged before they parted and each went to their cars driving off.

At a Resort.

Mxolisi slowly drove on a driveway and finally parked and turned looking at her. Gail smiled

blushing and looked outside the window . Mxolisi bite his lower lip and took out a blindfold when Gail turned looking at him .

Gail: I thought this was a friend lunch.

Mxo: And that has n't changed love . Face around.

Gail smiled facing away and Mxolisi blindfolded her before gently hold her shoulder and went out closing the door . He went to his side and opened the door and held her hand helping her out leaving her stuff . He closed the door and led her in but she was walking slowly. He scooped her up and she laughed making him laugh and lifted her inside the building.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment and like

.

.

[08/02, 13:37] Lynne : Chapter 27

At Kagiso's house

Later that afternoon. Bonolo parked the car at the gate and went out to take few plastic of food in the boot before closing it and headed inside. She put the plastics on the door and knocked when a faint voice answered come in .

She slowly went in with the plastic and it was all dark inside and messed up . Her heart shuttered to looking at her laying on the bed all weak . Kagiso wouldn't be happy to see her like this. He always made sure that she ate and took her medication .

His absence sure took its toll on her .

Bonolo: Dumelang ma .

Veronica: Dumela ngwana'ka . Go byang ?

Bonolo: Nothing much just bought you something to eat .

Veronica: You're so kind my baby but you didn't have too .

Bonolo: Yes I should have . Kagiso was my- he is - was my friend and he wouldn't forgive me if I let you die out of hunger while I'm around and could have done something to help . Just please let me help you . I know losing your son is one of the-

Veronica: (teary)No baby you don't understand how it is . It hurts . I don't even think I'll be able to stomach anything. No until my son is found .

Bonolo : mama not only did you lose him . I also lost . I also lost someone I loved and adored a lot more than I thought I could love a person.

Veronica: What do you mean ?

Bonolo : it doesn't matter. What matters right now is your health and well being. I don't know him very much but you did so tell me .. will he be pleased to see you like this ?

Veronica looked at her and slowly got up sitting on the crate. Tears rolled down and she leaned crying facing down . A green plastic caught her attention and she pulled it looking at that piece he made for her . Her heart sank as she wiped the tears but kept on coming. His smile and how he used to say " Mom drink your medication " "We're making progress " and those countless I love you's from him . How he always made sure that she ate , had a roof above her head and hustled for food and medication just to see her back to being herself. She smiled yo the fact of hating to see his hard work and sweat go to drain . She wiped her tears and looked at bonolo with the necklace in her hands and smiled looking at her .

Veronica: he made this for me before - you know- (scoff) everything happened. He had just found his passion and talent .

Bonolo: (smiling) Wow ..its so beautiful. Look at the colors.

Veronica: he told me that the colours he used had a meaning. Love and harmony. I don't even remember the rest of the meanings behind this (laughs)

Bonolo : Its so beautiful.

Veronica: he was working on the other once . (Pointing) There they are .

Bonolo grabbed the plastic and gave it to her and sat on the floor looking at her . Veronica gave her a bracelet and she fit it and it looked perfect on her . She smiled looking up at her .

Bonolo: wow . This are amazing mama . He didn't mention he had such a gift to me . This are beautiful.

Veronica: Kagiso is very secretive my girl . He'd rather bottle up his pain just so he could listen to you and help . He doesn't like it when people feel sorry for him .

Bonolo: yeah ... he doesn't really talk much about his childhood. Actually about himself. He used to listen to me everytime and never ever looked down or thought of me anyhow . He would help me with my drawings and guide me there and there but not once will he mention anything about himself thought out .

Veronica: that's my boy . He care's a lot about others than himself. He is full of love. But he is also in pain and only needs a hand to reach out to him . I think your that person course I once cought him spelling out your name .

Bonolo: (blushing) Really ma ?

Veronica: (smiling)yeah .. he was just outside right there in the stoep. He was laying shirtless looking up the moon smiling all by himself calling out your name . And then all of a sudden he fell off sweating

all scared.

Bonolo : oh ..

Veronica: I think maybe he was afraid you'd also break his heart like the rest did .

Bonolo : I wouldn't do that to him . I love him . And me being here ma doesn't mean that I'm here to earn your love and welcome as his girlfriend but because I want to help you . This here is not about him but you . He's the only man that I'll always love . Not even in the next couple of years. He's irreplaceable in my heart.

Veronica : your so kind my dear . Thank you .

Bonolo stood up and gave her the bracelet before opening the windows and curtains and started cleaning az they had small conversations there and there .

At the Hospital.

Rose held Kagiso's hand with one hand and finally held it with both hands . They were broad and had veins, real man . Breeze slowly walked in and closed the door . He caught this site and stood at the door looking at them .

Rose bit her lip before pulling his hand from his eyes and held it looking at him . Kagiso slowly opened his eyes and looked at her . Her heart pounded as butterflies flew around in her stomach. His brown eyes even light under those long lashes and he had a cute narrow nose with heart shaped lips . As if that was not enough, he had baby hairs you'd swear he had a gay in him . He was so fuvken light skinned handsome.

Meanwhile Kagiso looked at her scanning her baby face down to her lips . She had brown eyes like his and a little bit of Chinese eyes pus hairy too . She had a very cute forehead too .

Rose:(softly) I'm Rosella. Rosella Lyons.

Kagiso: (cracking) Kagiso Mokwena.

Rose:(smiling) you can talk .

Kagiso narrowed his eyebrows trying not to laugh but eventually laughed looking aside as they held hands . Rose smiled looking at him and Breeze smiled from a corner looking at them before leaning against the wall.

Kagiso looked at her again but couldn't help but blush and so did she .

Rose: (smiling)I'm so sorry . J ust that you've been quite ever since I got here .

Kagiso: (laughs) so you thought I was mute .

Rose: You didn't give me a doubt.

Kagiso: Well Rosella ..I cant talk . I can do whatever you are capable of doing as a human . I also use a bathroom .

Rose:(laughs) I wasn't going to ask that .

Breeze frowned looking at them . Rose hasn't laughed with anyone in a decade but smile only or chuckle. He stood straight looking at them and couldn't help but smile even more .

He shook his head and checked the time . He hated to ruin this but it was time for them to leave . He walked over and they kept quiet looking at him .

Kagiso: Mr Lyon.

Breeze : Call me Dad .

Kagiso: What ?

Breeze : you making me sound old and you cant call me by my name . I'm not your age mate .

Kagiso: (smiling) so I'm supposed to call you dad ?

Breeze: yeah until we find a way for you to call me . Actually it's good course you'll be preparing me in a way .

Rose: Wooww ...is Aunty Gail or Sagi pregnant?

Breeze : What ? No ..Anyway it's time to go . Will see

you tomorrow man .

Kagiso: ohk ..thank you by the way . I don't know what I could have done if you hadn't showed up . I really appreciate your help . I owe you big time .

Breeze : yeah you do .

Rose: No he doesn't.

Breeze: Wena shut up . This is men business .

Rose: you shouldn't have said that. You just digged yourself a hell whole .

Breeze: You just met this guy and already your defending him . Hei wena you owe me . Wena let's go . Keep well dude .

Kagiso: Bye .

Rose : (smiling) Bye what ?

Kagiso: (smiling) Bye Rose .

Rose:(smiling) Uncle he didn't say dad .

Kagiso: (smiling) ohk bye Rose and (hesitantly) Dad

.

They all laughed as they both headed out . Kagiso shook his head before sinking down carefully and laid down smiling. She's so amazingly perfect.

IN THE CAR

Breeze opened the door for Rose and she got in before he closed and went to his side . He got in and closed the door and started the engine and looked at her smiling.

Breeze: are you ok ?

Rose:(smiling) mmhh . Why not ?

Breeze: nothing. Just that you've been smiling since we got out .

Rose: I not uncle . But did you really have to tell him to call you dad .

Breeze: couldn't think of anything for him to call me

with .

Rose: Uncle or Brother would have done it .

Breeze: Nah..I already have people calling me that so I need a new name . Daddy Breeze for him .

Rose: but that's torture uncle. Kidnapping.

Breeze: no it's not.

Rose: it is .

Breeze drove as they kept arguing keeping it up and went to buy food before heading to the Lyons Mansion.

At The Resort.

Gail drank champagne from the glass and put it down looking at Mxolisi who has been looking at her for quite a while now . She narrowed her eyes smiling and looked aside avoiding his eyes and picked a fry .

Gail: (blushing) What ?

Mxo: is it wrong to admire. I'm mean if it is I could stop .

Gail: your not admiring. Your staring , its rude .

Mxo: (chuckles) said who ?

Gail: Me .

Mxo : Well I'm not staring I'm admiring love . So tell me more about yourself.

Gail: there's really nothing much to know about me .

Mxo: There's no such a thing . We all have a lot to say about ourselves we're just not used to talk about ourselves.

Gail: mmh .. I'm Abigail Sele . Married to Breeze Lyon. I'm 28 . I was born in Capetown but raised in Soweto. I have a crazy sister wife, Sagi Morgan Lyon. I own Gail Gallery.

Mxo:(chuckles)That's it?

Gail : Yeah ..

Mxo: Tell me more . About your family, your childhood, your likes and dislikes you could even tell me about your husband if you want to .

Gail: My husband?

Mxo: yeah ..why not .

Gail: ohk.. I was born to Shelley and Samuel Sele . I have 3 siblings and I'm the last one . My childhood was just like any regular kids childhood. I was no different from any other children. My parents were strict. I met my husband in primary when I was in the 6th grade and he was in grade 7 . Our relationship kicked off when i was in grade 8 and he was in grade 9 . He was a very very bad boy in high school. He used to disrespect teachers and was a bully. He was always cought in a fight . He fought over small things and that was triggered all the way from home . His parents died in the hands of his loved ones. He met Sagi when I were in the same class , grade 12 and their relationship kicked off there without my knowledge. I got to know about it when we were in college. I hated this girl with every bit of me .,but when I got to know her ,i realized i

was too quick to judge her. Kana we once fought in
compass me and her become of him, and all he
said was "Now that is a best way to start a
relationship" (chuckles)

Mxo: He sounds crazy. But it worked. But how?

Gail: he is. It did work. He took us both on a date
and locked us in a room for like a 2 month forcing
us to get to know each other. He would come
check up on us and be like "babe what's Sagi's
favorite meal" "Sagi did Gail tell you what he likes
and dislikes when having sex" "Gail what's Sagi's
favorite sex position" "What's her deepest secret"
all those questions. Until finally we got too close to
each other and knew each other. He helped me a lot
with my career and everything. Then two years ago
we all got married the same day till today.

Mxo: What's he doing for a living?

Gail: he owns a club. Club 808.

Mxo: that all? He doesn't have another hustle aside
just in case the club shuts down?

Gail: no that's it. The club is his baby with his

friend. He grew up with it . It started as a small place to just have fun as teenagers until it grew into what it is .

Mxo: So all the riches he has come from one club that he runs with his friend?

Gail: yeah .

Mxo: That cant be . That guy has over 10 million in his account and all that comes from one single club

.

Gail: (swallowed) why are you asking so much about this ?

Mxo: No I'm just asking babe . J ust that it's hard to believe that one can get rich from one club .

Gail: Well that club makes pretty much than you could possibly imagine. In a night it can make more thousands and thousands.

Mxo: oh ..so there aren't any- you know what let's enjoy our meal babe .

Gail smiled and took the fork and knife eating while

Mxo looked at her with his head balanced on his hands smiling .

.

.

.

.

I dont feel well today . I'll type a longer one tomorrow I'm really sorry .

.

.

.

COMMENT

[08/02, 13:37] Lynne : Chapter 28

At The Lyons Mansion.

Breeze parked the car and they both stepped out .
The smile hasn't shook from her face and it was
pleasing to see this site of her . They walked in the
house and Dineo appeared from the stairs and
smiled walking towards them .

Dineo: you look like you had fun .

Rose: I did . Even though I was at the hospital the
whole day .

Dineo : hospital doing what ?

Rose: (looked at Breeze) We went to see uncle's son
.

Breeze coughed before looking around then back at
them .

Breeze: is anyone home ?

Dineo: yes sir. Mrs Lyon. She's in their room . I'll go

call him .

Breeze: Uhm no its ohk . I will go check her , I'm sure you guys have a lot to catch up on .

He winked at Rose and she smiled pulling Dineo to the kitchen. Breeze looked at her and sighed before jogging up the stairs.

He reached the door and didn't bother knocking and went in . He found J ane laying on the bed in her night dress that had pulled up revealing her butt cheeks . He turned his face looking at the view before locking the door as his pants expanded.

J ane heard the door lock and woke up looking at the door when she came face to face with Breeze and they kissed. Breeze put her back to bed getting on her as she helped pull out his sweater . His hands scanned his body and pulled out the panties before playing with her cookie. His touch sent pleasure up her body . Without wasting time she help him pull down his pants and boxers when his mamba sprang out to her entrance. She could never get

used to this .

Jane : Rose .

Breeze: She's occupied.

Jane: Breeze wait.

Breeze: I won't be long .

Jane: but ..

Breeze: I told you I hate being disturbed.

He shut her with a kiss pushing himself in when she stretched and flinched pulling out front the kiss with a frown. She raised her lower body when he stopped letting her adjust and kissed her and she relaxed and he started grinding in and out off her slowly before increasing the kiss . She bit her lip and remembered that the room was sound proofed and let out enjoying the dick . He was the best in this and men ...

Breeze's speed increased his speed as their bodies clapped against one another on the corner of the bed hitting it from behind. Mourns and groans filled the room when Jane put her hand on his hand on his waist.

Jane:(mourning) I'm ..im ..oh my God..

Breeze gave her the last strokes before realizing inside of her holding on tight on her waist shooting. Jane landed on the bed with her ass up as he was still plugged inside of her . He pulled out with a trail and let her sink down the bed and walked to the insuit washing his dick and packed it before wetting a cloth and went back . He wiped her and went to her closet and came back with her panties and made her wear it while she was asleep. Her picked her and put her on the couch and and took the bedding and went to put it in the bath and filled the tab . He went out and put her on the bed and put a fleece on her before kissing her forehead as she

laid asleep. She was so cute and the pregnancy treated her very well . He ran his finger on her jawline and sighed .

Breeze: Don't let another man fuck you while your carrying my child. Not even him .

He but his lip and stood up checking his wrist watch . Hes been in there for about 30 mins . He shook his head and unlocked the door leaving it wide open and went downstairs. Rose and Dineo chatted in the kitchen and he breathed out before walking out and went to his car ,got in and drove off .

Meanwhile in the kitchen.

Rose cut the carrots and put them in the pot and stir when Dineo added a little bit of salt before peeling the potatoes.

Dineo: I hear you girl . But whose this mysterious

goddess that makes you be all smiley? Did you even catch his name or you guys were just smiling and admiring each other?

Rose: Well (smiling) his name is Kagiso . Hes just so amazing. I dont know a lot about him yet but there's this feeling that keeps pushing me to want to know him even better . But I'm not sure if uncle will allow me to come with him everytime he goes to see him .

Dineo: do you like him ?

Rose: (blushing)Dineo..I just met this guy for christ sake .

Dineo: from my look of eye , you seem like you like him . We call that love at first sight if you forgot. And no you dont need permission to love darling or go see him. You know where he is right . You know where to find him and your yard is full of guards and cars so lets a senotlelo mma .

Rose: Dineo I just can't leave and go jump up to a stranger . He is amazing and when I touched him ..it was like ..I dont know. Like we had some sort of a

connection or something . I don't know how he felt but to me it was something else .

Dineo: you see . You love him . Your meant to be .

Rose: No we are not . I dont know this guy . And besides I once heard dad saying he wouldn't allow me to date until I'm 35 so im waiting.

Dineo: Shut my back door ! Ware eng wena ? 35 ? Kana nmana rrago a katswa a na le di plan for your future and that means tying your knotted since you couldn't. Give this a shot at heart . Hold on to this and see if last .

Rose: (sadly) yeah that's the thing .. Nothing lasts.

She turned around and continued staring when Dineo let go of the knife and looked at her sadly before continuing.

On the way back.

Mxo stole glances at Gail and smiled holding tight to the wheel . Meanwhile Gail tried hard not to smile and finally did . Mxo pulled her hand and kissed it before putting it on the gear and changed the gear with her before holding on . With their hands on the gear , Gail looked at their hands and looked at him when guilt struck and she looked outside. Mxo looked at her and kissed her hand again driving with one hand .

Mxo: Are you ohk ?

Gail: (smiling) Yeah ..I'm fine .

A black Mercedes appeared in front of them . Gail noticed the number plate and the colour when she quickly sank down with a pounding heart and it sped past them . Mxolisi looked at her looking like a little girl and couldn't help but laugh. Gail hid her face and sat back covering her face laughing as he laughed so hard.

Mxo: (laughing) Wtf ..

Gail: that's my husband dumb head and your laughing. He is dangerous.

Mxo: So am I. But did you really have to hide under the seat ?

Gail: dont exaggerate ..I just sank .

Mxo: Didn't look like that to me . You were doing more than just hiding . It's like you get terrified when you see him . Why ?

Gail: Nothing serious.

Mxo : so there's more to that hiding. What's he doing to you Abigail? Is he abusing you ?

Gail: what ?no . Breeze would never do that to me . He loves me . He always makes sure that I remember and know that . That's all he ever gives me

Mxo: oh you mean tough love .

Gail: No ..

Mxolisi clenched his jaws and pulled by the side of the road and checked his phone before putting it down looking at Gail .

Mxolisi: Gail talk to me . Course now your not making sense. Is Breeze abusing you ?

Gail: I said he's not .

Mxo: Gail I promised to protect you and I'm not going to break my word just because your holding back . If he is just be open with me . This will stay between us . Is Breeze hitting you or did he ever hit you ?

Gail: (looked outside) No he never did . And he wouldn't.

Mxo: You know you look stupid when you lie . Your lying and your avoiding my eyes Abi . Why is it so hard for you to open up to me . Why are you lying course I can see that your holding back ? Why wont you let me in.

Gail:(shout)Course I'm protecting you!

Mxo : From what ?

Gail: He'll kill you.

Mxo: Why would he do that ? For being your friend or trying to get close to you .

Gail: No ..but he's not what you paint him as . Hes not a woman abuser . He might be a lit of things but not (low) that .

Mxo: (sigh)Fine . You dont wanna talk fine . You don't want me to reach out , fine . Then we are not going anywhere until you tell me what he does to you that your so afraid of him . Your going to tell me like it or not .

Gail: Now your -

Mxo: oh hell yeah babe call me whatever you like as long as it pleases you but we are not going anywhere until you tell me .

Gail: its getting late . I should be home . Start the engine and drive .

Mxo: no .

Gail: I can drive .

Mxo: Are you ready to talk ?

Gail: I'm gonna call t-

Mxo: Who ? Sagi ? The crazy sisterwife who wants you nowhere near men . How are you going to explain this . Breeze? The same person you hid when he passed by ,hiding in another guys car on top of that . Jack? The same brother to your husband who is pushing to hard to earn Breezes trust , surely he'll tell him just to get close . Jane ? The brothers wife ? Surely she'll tell her husband and her husband will tell Breeze. The same person who makes your legs ice cold .

Gail: (teary) What's wrong with you?

Mxo: I just want what's best for you .

Gail: (teary)No you dont .

Mxo: Then let's wait If you dont want to talk and I'll take you home at 9 PM. How that ?

Gail: No !

Mxo: Why not ?

Gail: (burst) He'll beat me !

It was like everything around didn't exist ..Mxolisi clenched his jaws and looked at her . Tears streamed down her cheek and she leaned back looking outside the window crying.

Gail: (teary) your right I'm scared . But he only did that once . He never laid his hands on me other than then . He's my husband and I love him . He made a mistake and I forgive him . It was only once and he apologized.

Mxo:So ..he hit you . Why wouldn't you tell me ?

Gail : Course I don't know you Mxolisi. You just came into my life just like that dont expect to get every detail about my marriage. We've been through a lot more worse than this .

Mxo: what could possibly be worse than him raising his hand on you . Why did he even do that ?

Gail: I.. I recieved a diamond necklace and thanked him . But to my surprise it wasn't. I kept on saying it

was him until he lost it and hit me . He buys us diamonds necklaces but not that kind course I once told him I dont like huge necklaces. I guess I pushed too hard . But he realized his mistake and came back to apologize and I forgave him .

Mxo: Whya are you so fucking soft ! Its guys like him that keep playing with your emotions and eventually you'll lose your self esteem. He's gonna do it again and again course once you let him get away with it you give him the power over you . Anyway..let's get going.

He started the engine and drove off while she stared outside.

At Gail's Gallery.

Mxolisi parked the car and they sat in silence looking outside. He reached for her hand and kissed it before pulling her chin looking at her . Her

lips were so drawing and but his lip . He looked in her eyes as they slowly leaned in . He held her cheek and pulled her and their lips touched and finally they French kissed .

With blood rushing through their veins, the whole car heated and Gail sank her hand down his abs and into his expanded pants .

She rubbed him when he leaned the seat and picked her up without breaking the kiss . He ran his hand around her body and helped her out of her jacket and shirt and came face to face with her boobs . Baby wasn't wearing any bra . He smiled and kissed her boobs running his hand inside her pants and into her panties and she was madly soaked . She gasped as her moans became loud and she held on to his head as he sucked her breasts while she played with his dick .

They took a breath and kissed when he helped her out of her trouser and tore the panties when she frowned.

Mxo: I'll buy you a pack of pink diamond panties.

She giggled when she unzipped his pants and lowered them to his knees along with his boxers . She looked at his dick and held it biting her lips. He looked at her and pulled her chin kissing her .

Mxo:(softly)you don't have to if you dont want to .

Gail:(low) I..I want it . I want this .

She kissed him and he held her butt slowly lowering her as it pushed it's way through and she frowned before realizing a moun when it finally fit all in . She sat a bit adjusting to it . Her wap holding on tight to his shitt was like been thrown to another land of living . He kissed her as she slowly went up and down on him with his help . Damn does every guy she meets have to have a big dick ? But shit was goood.

She rid the shit out of him with the car shaking like fuck and when she was close he helped her keep going when they both released and she collapsed on his chest sweating . He smiled kissing her head and put back his dick when she frowned tired .

Gail: No ...

Mxo : don't worry babe . J ust letting it sleep in its rightful place. Rest .

She went down a bit taking it all in and bit her lip as she slowly dozed off while they hugged .

.

.

.

.

. Comment . I tried today

[08/02, 13:37] Lynne : Chapter 29

At Breezes house.

Around 23h00

Breeze sat on the couch in the bedroom calling Gail but she didn't pick up . He sighed thinking the worst . What if what his confession to cheat and pleasure drove her away . He shook his head and stood up going downstairs and took out his phone texting his IT and sent the message .

Sagi sat on the high chair with a bottle of wine next to her and her phone in her hand . She picked the bottle and drank from the mouth and put it down . She tapped the phone in the back countless times and dialed Gail for the 30th time but still it didn't answer.

Breeze walked down the stairs shirtless with only his track pants revealing every piece of him . Sagis eye landed on his built body with their names tatted on

his chest. She remembered this day like it was yesterday, the day they forced him to tattoo their names on him . But those days have passed , the good days had come to the past .

She swallowed before pouring in the glass as he leaned on the counter coming face to face with her . This dark baby face of hers was even more cute when she was worried. She drank her wine but eventually picked the bottle when he grabbed it from her holding it in his hand .

Sagi: Bring it back .

Breeze: no .

Sagi: Breeze bring my shit back .

Breeze: why are you drinking like this ? I know your worried and so am I but now your over drinking.

Sagi: you were drinking as well who stopped you ? Gail isn't answering my calls and I tried her for the 30th time now . What if something happened to her ?

Breeze: Dont think like that babe please. I know

your worried but drinking is not an option. I thought you off all people will know that .

He pinched her cheek and went to spill the whole bottle in the sink . He took a glass and pour water before giving it to her and sat next her . He smiled looking at her new hair do and did it look great on her ! . He smiled before tucking the hair behind her ear and held her hand .

She looked at their hands and looked at him. She knew that something was up but couldn't put a finger on in . He was different this days . She pulled her hand and drank the water as he sadly looked at her.

Breeze: Let's talk .

Sagi: Your .. (swallowed) Different.

Breeze : What do you mean ?

Sagi: you changed. It's like my husband is replaced by someone so ..I don't know.

Breeze : Nothing has changed with me baby. In still the same guy you fell in love with , the one you married. My love for you grows deeper and deeper everyday .

Sagi: (teary) Why do I have a feeling that that's not true?

His heart shuttered to the sound of her painful voice . Looking at her like this now made everything clear . He cheated on his wife's and backstabbed his brother . He slowly pulled his hands and leaned on the counter as it all sank . Something he never felt ever before. Mixed up feelings. It was now that he realized that he has feelings for Jane and at the same time he loved his wife's.

Meanwhile Sagi's heart shuttered into pieces not receiving a reply from him and that right there was a red flag . She blinked several times trying to hold the tears back when they betrayed her and in rolled down her cheek then the other one followed followed by the rest .

Meanwhile Breeze saw her tear drop on the counter and he raised his head looking at her when she turned her face away silently crying with her chin in her shoulder.

Breeze: Babe?

Sagi : (breaking) Who is she ?

Breeze: No one .

Sagi: (faced him in tears) your lying !

He bit his lip before trying to hold her but she moved in tears looking at him. She shook her head before sitting back playing with her fingers on the counter when her eyes fell on her diamond ring . She touched in playing with it around her finger while he looked at her with a pounding heart . He never thought that the thought of her leaving would terrify him so bad .

Sagi: (sniffed) Today you were the last person to be

with her . What did you say to her ?

Breeze: Nothing..I swear .

Sagi: (softly) again .. your lying.

Breeze: (sighed) ohk ..I..I confessed.

Sagi: confessed what ? That you cheated and those panties weren't ours? That I was right all along . That you left us and jumped into another womans legs ? That you tapped another woman while we were here in your house waiting for you to come home ?

Breeze: Yes .

Her heart sank straight into her stomach and crushed when she smiled with tears rolling down her cheek. She looked at him smiling and finally laughed out the pain but that didn't help ,instead it hurt more . She frowned and finally busted crying.

Breeze looked at her and now it was clear he didn't know what to do. Her cries cut deeper than a knife. He clenched his jaws when his phone rang . He

looked at her and sighed walking to the living room and answering.

Breeze: Yeah .

Caller: We found her . She's still at her gallery. Her car is still there .

Breeze: her car is still there ? Are you kidding me ? . I said look for her not her fucken car ! I want her !

Caller: This is where her phone and car lead us . Plus her necklace sir .

Breeze: Fine . I'll be there .

He clenched his jaws before jogging up the stairs and came back wearing a sweater and Nike kicks . He passed by the kitchen and stood by her . He hesitantly lifted his hand and touched her back as she silently cried . He rubbed her back before pulling her close hugging her . She wrapped her hands around his neck when he lifted her and put her on the counter and sat like that for 3 mins .

Breeze: I'm sorry.

She didn't reply when she got down and pushed him back. She went to the drawers and pulled it looking inside for a whole minute. Breeze smiled taking a few steps back when all of a sudden a knife flew past him followed by that glass of water and it broke on the wall.

Breeze: WtF !

Sagi:(crying) it hurts !

She came running towards him holding a knife when he ran out the door and locked when she banged the door shouting from the inside. He sighed breathing out and jogged towards the car and drove out before she uses another door.

Meanwhile Sagi stabbed the door releasing the pain in her heart when she mistakenly cut her inner hand

course her hand slid and blood flowed out . She screamed running to the kitchen leaving a trail of blood and put her hand in the sink opening the tap crying.

At Gail's Gallery.

With Gail laying on his chest he head footsteps and lifted his head . Three men went towards Gail's car holding torches looking inside . Another one held a tablet and did what he did before stepping closer to the Gallery door and went to crack the door pin and it unlocked. They all went inside while another one stood outside.

Mxolisi slowly shook Gail who had dozed off on his chest naked with him inside of her .

Gail: (sleepy) mmmhh..

Mxo: Get to the other side babe .

Gail: (sleepy)Wait ..let's sleep a little bit longer.

Please.

Mxo : Please jump to the seat and I promise you'll have all the sleep you want with me inside of you .

She smiled still sleepy and he kissed her before helping her to the passengers seat . She layed asleep and he pulled his jacket and put it on her . She was so beautiful that for a second he got lost in her beauty forgetting that their looking for her . He snapped out of it and took off every jewellery she was wearing including the ring and put them in the bag before starting the engine . He slowly drove past a bin and threw her bag inside and stepped on it driving off with full speed .

On the way he noticed a familiar car and smiled driving past it .

Meanwhile Breeze looked at the car on the side mirror when it clicked that this was for the second time he sees it. He narrowed his eyes and drove into the parking lot right where Mxolisi had parked before and stepped out walking towards the

building . The two men stepped out lifting their shoulders.

Men1: Shes not here.

Breeze: Are you kidding me right now !

Men 2 : I got something.

The men trailed the tracker when it led him to a bin . He sighed and opened the bin taking out her bag and walked back to Breeze.

Men 2: I found this.

Breeze took her bag and sighed looking at it . Worry and fear occupied him . What if something bad happened to her. The third men looked around when he noticed that the car that was parked there had left and Breeze had parked there .

Men 3: The car . I think she was In the car that just left .

Breeze: What car ? Whose car ? Which kind ?

Men: A red Porsche . If I'm not mistaken .

Breeze: Sh*t ! Didn't you check all the cars like I instructed you to ? Kana ke le patela a lot of money . What if that guy or woman is a frickin serial killer ? Damn !

He walked to the car and slammed the door leaving them and hit the wheel . He looked at her bag and turned the lights on before opening it pouring out her stuff on the seat hoping for a note but non . In fact her wedding ring was the last one to fall out . His heart skipped and he slowly took it in his hand looking at it . So she left with another guy to start a whole kne life . A sharp pain struck In his heart when he touched his chest leaning on the wheel . A minute later he got up and started the engine driving off .

At the Hospital.

The door scratched on the tile opening as he layed there thinking about going home . A very chilly air filled the room making his blood rush down his body .Something scratched him underneath his foot and he jumped terrified only to see something he never thought he'd see . There she was . The girl in a white dress and unclear face .

Kagiso: Who are you ?

To his surprise he was not scared ,not at all . He held his chest when the thought of he swallowed his fear crossed him . But no ..

Kagiso: Why are you following me ? What do you want? Who are you ?

Her: You ..are the Chosen one.

Kagiso: chosen What ? Why me ? By who ?

Her: you were chosen by a friend.

Her voice started fading and slowly and slowly so did she . *** Kagiso popped from his sleep scanning around with a pounding heart and sweat dripping off his face . He held his chest leaning back and tried taking breath exercises until he was calm .

Back at Breezes house

Breeze unlocked the door and got in and when he hit it he frowned looking at the cuts and blood. He turned around as his heartbeat increased. He put Gail's bag on the table and followed the trail of blood into the kitchen. He found Sagi sitting on the floor with a bloody dishcloth around her hand holding a bottle of whiskey in her hand all messed up . She looked behind him and chuckled drunk

drinking her liquor as he stood there looking at her .

Sagi : let me guess.. She's cheating also (giggle)

She laughed when the pain increased and she frowned standing up with her locked legs . She threw her head back moving the hair off her face and walked towards him drunk holding the bottle in her hand . She leaned on his face .

Sagi: If you guys are cheating on me . I'm gonna kill them . Ohk?

She lifted her bloody hand .

Sagi: One by one by one by one by one ..

She smiled and walked passed him singing the "One by one " balancing herself with the wall walking upstairs. Meanwhile Breeze bit his lip

looking at all her blood in the kitchen and knew that that was not a threat but a PROMISE.

.

.

.

Comment.

.

.

.Comment

[08/02, 13:40] Lynne : Chapter 30

The next morning.

Rose got up from her bed with a smile up her face . She moved her hair from her face and got up opening the curtains. It has been a while since she did this for herself.

The door opened and Jane walked in. Rose looked at her and smiled before running into her arms and they hugged before sitting on the bed .

Rose: mom your glowing. Give me whatever your using .

Jane: what do you mean I'm glowing ? I've always been like this just that you didn't pay too much attention to me . What's with all the enthusiasm? What did you and your uncle get up to yesterday?

Rose: (smiling) Nothing ...

She stood up taking off her night dress throwing it on the bed as Jane looked at her waiting for an answer to this new her .

Jane: Rose...

Rose: fine , we went to his house and I said hello to aunt Sagi and Gail then we went to see his son .

Jane: (heart skipped) wait what ?

Rose: Yes that .. his son . Crazy right ?

She chuckled and took off her panties walking into the shower and turned the water on .

Meanwhile Jane scoffed as anger occupied her and she stood up rushing out . She went to their room and changed into a dress when Jack stepped out of the shower with a towel wrapped around his waist.

Jack: Hey ..where are you rushing off to?

Jane: Would you at least once try to stay out of my business. Being married to you doesn't mean you actually have to know every little bit of me or my whereabouts.

Jack: (frown) Excuse me .

She tied her hair and picked her car keys and when she was about to exit the room Jack shut it before

standing before her .

Jack: We need to talk !

Jane: Well ... Cant whatever you want to say to me wait until I come back ?

Jack: No it cant , we need to talk about it right now !

Jane: oh well unfortunately dear husband, I'm on my way out so whatever it is it better wait .

She pushed him aside and opened the door going out . Jack turned looking at the door confused to what she just said . It was like the woman he married changed in a single night . He sighed and picked his phone on the bed dialing Jacob .

Jacob: Old friend.

Jack: Lest cut the chase now shall we ?

Jacob: fine by me .

Jack: I want you to give me your word that if my daughter is married to your son , you'll do whatever in your power, with every cell in your body to protect her . That no matter what matter you and I are gonna have in the futer my daughter will always be on your number priority list . That w-

Jacob: Jack . I told you that your daughter is also a daughter to me . We both want our children back to themselves. You want your daughter to be herself again and I want my son to come back home . This is the only way . And yes I promise you from the bottom of my heart , come high or low , your daughter shall live in peace and protected . Her wish will be our command.

Jack: fine .

Jane: You made a right choice my friend. I promise you that you will not live yo regret this . Does Jane know about this ?

Jack : prepare everything. Leave my family to me . I want this over as in like yesterday.

Jacob: Ohk . I'll gather my family and we shall be

there in the next 3 days for the negotiations. I hope this goes well .

Jack: so do I.

He hang up and released a heavy sigh and sat down counting the hate in his families eyes , especially Rosella. But it's for the best . He got up and went to get dressed before leaving.

At Breezes house.

Breeze scabed the blood off the floor shaking his head and finally threw the brush in the water standing up . He went to his bar and took out a bottle of whiskey and poured in a glass . He heard a car driving through and sighed as his heart pounded. He stood up holding the glass and went to the door stepping out . To his surprise it wasn't who he thought it was .

Jane stepped out of the car and rushed towards him . A slap landed on his cheek and her turned looking at her with narrowed eyebrow as she stood there brewing.

Breeze: good morning to you too . I see my guy woke up violent in there .

Jane: Stop with that crap . When were you planning on telling me ?

Breeze: Tell you what ?

Jane: That you have a bloody son !

Breeze: (laughing) So that's it ? You just drove all the way from your house just to confront me about me having a son . What If I did ?

Jane: The least you could have done is tell me you had a son instead of hearing this from Rose .

Breeze: Ohk ..hold on mama dearest . If I remember clearly... you and I have only one thing binding us together here . That baby your carrying. If it wasn't for that we have no business at all except that your

my sister in law. So whatever I do or have or have done is non of your God damn business. Including whether I have a son or not. And if I'm correct stressing is not good for the baby. So leave my business alone before you hurt my child.

Jane: your so pathetic. You know for a second i thought maybe your different or should i say hoped that you'd be different now that you have a child on the way and you'll-

Breeze: confess ? Tell all my secrets to you ? Open up to you ?

Jane: yes ...Breeze I thought you and I had a connection. Something was -

Breeze : Well you thought wrong . Clearly.

Jane looked at him when tears blurred her site and she stepped back. Breeze looked in her teary eyes as his heart ached to hold her in is arms and tell her she was wrong. But he couldn't. He had to protect her from Sagi and not once show a hint or she'll hurt his child without a blink.

Jane stood on there for a while waiting for at least an explanation or an I'm sorry but nothing came out of his mouth to clear the air . He just looked at her without showing any emotions .

She bit her lip and rushed to him smashing the glass in his hand and pulled him into a kiss . She held on tight on his as she kissed him but he wasn't replying nor did he at least hold her . But whatever it was she was not willing to stop until he react .

Inside Sagi heard a glass break and she slowly raised her lower body sleepy . She rubbed her eyes and got off the bed . All of a sudden she felt nauseous and rushed to the bathroom and opened the sit throwing up . It was like everything was being drained out of her system as she threw up for about 3 mins . After a while she collapsed on the floor rubbing her mouth as uncontrollable tears ran down her cheek .

She raised her hand and slowly removed the dishcloth and frowned looking at the injury. She

balanced herself standing and flashed the toilet before standing in front of the mirror. Blood caught her attention on her white shirt and she quickly took it off throwing it on the floor. She took out the first aid and cleaned her wound before putting a bandage and brushed her hair walking out . Everything came playing into her mind as she walked into her closet and took off her tights and wore a floral dress . She walked out and took the bottle of half whiskey and a knife ,unlocked the door and went downstairs.

She stood on the stairs looking at the bucket with a scrubber and sighd walking to the kitchen. She mistakenly stepped where it was wet and slipped falling hurting her hand . Tears flowed down her cheeks as the pain became unbearable and she screamed.

Sagi : (crying) oh my God...ah

Outside Breeze heard Sagi cry and broke the kiss

looking at Jane before swallowing and baby kissed her .

Breeze: you should go .

Jane: I'm not going anywhere until you tell me that you don't really mean it when you said you feel nothing about us .

Breeze: I said I dont !

He clenched his jaws as Sagi's cries got to him and he rushed in when Jane followed.

Breeze went down and picked her up putting her on the counter and Jane pulled her hand before removing the bandage and frowned looking at her deep wound.

Jane: What happened? What's with the blood ? Sagi what happened?

Sagi : (crying) I wanted to stab him but I mistakenly

cut my hand

Jane: (looking at Breeze) Why would you hurt your husband?

Sagi: He cheated. Do you know how much that hurts ?

Jane: No ..I don't . But stabbing him ? What would you benefit from that ? What outcome do you think you'll have out of it ? Funeral? Become a widow?

Sagi: That would be much better than getting hurt like this . At least -

Jane: You sound crazy right now . What kind of a wish is that . Why would you say that ? Didn't he apologize? Stop with your lunatic act and face your problems like a woman . Violence is not an option. Look what you did to yourself because of-

Sagi: Well if you must know Jane . Violence is the only thing that Breeze understands and guess what it also makes me happy and it help me heal .

Jane: Even if you end up hurting yourself?

Sagi: that's the point. One has to get hurt for him to

understand all of this . He doesn't understand that I love him and my love for him is not the one to just be cut short just because he decides to cheat or move on if he want to move on with that b**h he cheated us with .

Breeze: I never said I'm moving on with her . Babe I love you . I thought by now you would know that . Why would you question my love for you .

Sagi: (teary) yesterday I asked you a simple question and you couldn't answer me Breeze. Do you know how much it hurts ?

Breeze: Babe . I never answered that question because you know the answer to that . I love you Sagi . I could do everything just to be with you . If it was possible I'd buy the whole universe just to show how much I love you . I cheated because it was a moment of weakness. Whatever that happened between me and that woman (swallowed) meant nothing. Nothing at all .

Meanwhile Jane's eyes burned up looking at him

and he looked at her once before holding Sagis hand . Sagi looked at him in the eyes and right there she knew there was nothing to that explanation but to calm her and paint her . She smiled as tears rolled down .

Sagi: I know what your trying to do. And baby I'm sorry but it's not working. I gave you my word and unlike you ..I keep myn .

She got off the table pulling her hand and went to take her car keys and left .

Meanwhile Breeze bit his lip and hit the table before turning to J ane whose tear rolled down .

Breeze: not you too please .

J ane: so your serious. You feel nothing for me ?

Breeze: Yes I feel nothing.

She shook her head and went out leaving him leaning against the counter. His feeling mixed up when he rushed out and stopped at the door. He didn't know who to follow. Sagi or Jane ? .

At Mxolisi house .

Gail tossed on the bed and stretched her hand to Sagis side but it was cold . She slowly opened her eyes and her heart skipped looking at the unfamiliar room . She got up and leaned on the headboard when she realized that she was not wearing anything.

She swa her clothes on the couch and quickly rushed out of bed and put them on . She stood by the mirror fixing her hair and looked around for her bag but it wasn't there . Her heart pounded so hard on her chest replaying yesterday's memory.

Gail: Oh my God..what have I done ?

She wore her heel when Mxolisi walked in holding a tray of English breakfast. His smile dropped looking at her as she let go before she could finish wearing another shoe .

Gail: What happened?

Mxo: What do you mean what happened?

He put the tray on the bed and walked towards her when she raised her shoe ready to stab him with it as she slowly stepped away from him .

Mxo:(surrendered) oh ohk ..hold on . Put the shoe down . I'm not gonna hurt you Gail .

Gail: I said what happened?

Mxo : Exactly what was meant to happen. We had sex ! In the car and here .

Gail: you must be kidding. Oh God.

She put her hand on her forehead rubbing it when she felt that something was missing. She looked at her hand and her ring wasn't there . She looked at as her anger stared.

Gail: Where's my ring ? What have you done with it ? Bring it back .

Mxo: I'm sure its lost . Someone must have taken it and sold it . I threw it with the rest of your stuff in the bin at your gallery last night .

Gail: you what ?! That was my wedding ring dumb head !

Mxo: I know.

Gail: no you dont . I love my husband and just because I was all smiley on you it doesn't mean I want out . I told you all my problems because I wanted someone to talk to . A friend . But I guess I took it too far . I'm a married woman. And I love my husband, you get that ? I love Breeze. No matter

what I'm his and he's mine . WTF ! You thr- (sigh)
I'm gonna kill you .

Mxo: if you wanted someone to talk to then why
didn't you go for a therapy.? If you love him that
much then why were you with me and hiding from
him ? Why when I woke you to jump to the other
side didn't you get out and run to him ? Why ?

Gail: Because I needed a break to process
everything!

Mxo: process what ! ?

Gail: Dont you yell at me stupid ! Give me your keys .

She spread out her hand while another one held the
shoe . He shook his head and took them out of his
pocket and gave them to her .

Gail: you'll get your car at the Gallery.

Mxo: ohk ..Will I see you again?

Gail: I don't think so . Consider this as my good bye .

Oh and as a matter of fact. I'm not afraid of Breeze. He's done the worst to scare me but still he didn't manage to scare me off . Hitting me was low comparing to what he's capable off .

She went out wearing one shoe with another one in her hand leaving Mxolisi broken .

- .
- .
- .

Comment

[08/02, 13:40] Lynne : Chapter 31

At Gail's Gallery

Gail drove through the parking lot and switched off the engine . She exhaled as her heart beat so hard

on her chest . Tears blurred her site when she leaned back covering her face . She couldn't believe that she just cheated . The very same thing that she doesn't want her partners to do . This was weighing in the heart than she had imagined . But then now what ? There was nothing she could do, ITS DONE .

She wiped her tears opening the dashboard and found wipes . She used the wipes wiping off her ruined makeup and threw them on the sit . She fixed her hair and wore her shoe before stepping out shutting the door with the keys inside .

She pulled herself together and went to the bin searching for her bag but there was nothing. She went to another one but still ,there was nothing .

Fear along with all emotions consumed her as tears burned her eyes as she kept fishing for her bag taking put the rubbish. A guard noticed her and walked over surprised to see her taking out the rubbish out of the bin .

Guard: miss Gail?

She quickly let go blinking away her tears and put on a smile looking at him .

Gail: Hey ..

Guard: what are you looking for ?

Gail: uhm ..yesterday I kinda threw away some very important documents in my trash bin . And today when I checked I found it disposed so I...uhm.. thought maybe I could find it if it's not yet uhm ..you know.

Guard: oh .. It must be a very important document.

Gail: Very ..

Guard: but I'm sure wherever it came from they have copies , surely they wouldn't mind giving them to you again would they ? I mean ..searching a bin . It's kinda..weird seeing you do that .

Gail: oh yeah ..your a life saver . Why didn't I think of that. Thank you very much.

Guard: no problem .

She smiled awkwardly leaning against the bin looking at the guard who raised his eyebrows confused. He raised his hand bidding good bye and left. She sighed and it hit again, she didn't have money for transport, her license, her ring , her ID ,her phone and when she turned her head, her car was not there. Tears rolled down her cheeks when she lazily walked back to Mxolisi's car and got in . This was definitely not worth it.

She raised her head and sighed starting the engine and drove off.

At Breezes house

Breeze sat on the end of the bed playing with Gail's ring when a tear escaped his eye . He quickly rubbed it and bit his lip . Maybe this is all on him . He was the reason why his own family is tearing

apart. But for her to do the exact same thing that he did was so unlike her. Clearly she wanted an out . And on the other hand, Sagi . She was slowly losing herself bit by bit and it's all because of him. She is now a ticking time bomb that already threatened his own child because of pain he put her through.

Outside, It felt weird driving into another man's property with a side niggas car . She slowly drove through with a heavy guilt and parked on the parking space. She pressed her eyes together and stepped out . Her car caught her attention when her heart beat raised to a point she could feel like it was right on her throat. She slowly walked in the house and it was so silent. A bucket with bloody water caught her attention when she took off her heels and followed the trail of blood to the kitchen where it was all over, even the sink . She slowly put the shoes down as her knees slowly got weak and weak. She swallowed and slowly pulled herself to the bedroom and slowly opened the door to Breeze leaning down.

He slowly raised his head looking at her and back at her ring in her hand .

Gail closed the door behind her as her whole body shook out of fear . Her eyes landed on her ring in his hands as he slowly played with it and her bag by his side. Now she had nothing to say except tell the truth .

Breeze looked at her and stood up .

Breeze: For how long has this been going on ?

Cat got her tongue as she stood there biting her finger nails . He was so calm .

Breeze: Gail ?

Gail: mmmh?

Breeze: How long have you been seeing this guy?

Gail: I'm not seeing him baby . He is uhm a friend.

Breeze: A friend huh ? Gail I wasn't born yesterday.
Did you sleep with him?

Gail: No ! I mean no ..I didn't.

Breeze: your lying. Did you sleep with him?

Gail: I swear I didn't !(bowing) believe me baby . I'd never do that to you baby . You know i won't. I love you.

Breeze: i love you too.

He pulled her up hugging her and all he could smell was a man . He slowly helped take off her clothes when his eyes landed on a love bite on her neck . Not one but a lot of love bites . He swallowed and unbuttoned her trouser letting it fall down to her feet and she stepped out of them . He went back a bit looking at her and his eyes landed on her lace panties that were stained of the mans rain . He rubbed his face leaning against the table as a tear escaped again and he rubbed it .

Meanwhile Gail looked at her reflection on the

mirror and noticed the stain when she quickly pulled her robe embarrassed and shameful as tears rolled down her cheeks.

Gail: (crying) I'm sorry. I didn't mean for it to happen. I.. had no idea what i was doing. I'm sorry.

Breeze: Are you kidding me? You had no idea of what you were doing ? that lame baby ? Dont lie to me course we both know that when you open those legs you knew what was about to happen. The moment you stretched your legs apart, you knew there was a divk going to penetrate you . Dont shit on me .

Gail: (crying) I'm sorry.. forgive me.

Breeze: how many rounds did you give him?

Gail: (crying) baby please..

Breeze: Gail please.

Gail: I think it was 5 or six

Breezes jaws dropped looking at her through the mirror and turned looking at her as she hid her face crying in her hands . Breeze chuckled before putting the ring back in the bed and looked at her one more time and walked out of the door laughing in disbelief.

.

.

.

Sorry guys I'm in class . I'll type a longer one when I get home .

.

. Comment

[08/02, 13:40] Lynne : Con 32

Breeze's jaws dropped looking at her through the mirror and turned looking at her as she hid her face with her hands crying in them . Breeze chuckled putting the ring on the bed and looked at her one more time and laughed in disbelief walking out the door .

He rubbed his head laughing and headed out of the house when he saw an unfamiliar car . The same car that passed by him two times yesterday. He clenched his jaws fighting the anger in him to just smash it and got in his car driving off .

A few mins later ,Sagi drove into the yard using one hand and parked next to an unfamiliar car . She stepped out of the car and grabbed her medication before closing the door and headed inside . She walked into the main bedroom and found Sagi on her knees on the floor crying. As much as it hurt her seeing her like this a part of her wanted to grab her by the hair and land just one on her pretty face .

She spotted the ring on the bed and walked over taking it in his hand . She remembered the day they said their vows . The day they were all happy . She sighed putting it back looking at her .

Sagi: I'm gonna make you the same promise I made to your husband. If I find him I'm gonna kill him . And neither you ,cops or anybody are gonna do anything about it .

The way her voice was so cold , Gail raised her head in tears looking straight in her stone cold eyes . She was different.

Sagi : oh yes darling. No one fucks up my happiness and gets to live . No one . I'm gonna kill them . One by one . Let it sink in . I'm done taking your crap . Both of you . Im tired !

She walked to the door and sighed when she turned

looking at her .

Sagi: you should probably take a shower , you smell like whoever fuvk that is . And if your gonna carry on baby tell him to take it easy on your skin , just to cover his tracks .

She winked at her before walking away leaving her sitting on the floor with a pounding heart . After a few mins she stood up and walked to the bathroom.

Meanwhile Sagi walked into the kitchen looking at her blood and sighed leaning against the fridge. Tears burned her eyes and eventually started flowing. J ust like that , her partner let in other people into their marriage where their happiness lays. She walked to the leaving room and took the telephone by the wall calling the cleaning service before walking to Breeze's office. She sat on his chair and went through the drawer and when she found new sim cards and a new Nokia phone . She

smiled all to herself before taking them and walked out . They sure are gonna pay .

At the hospital

Rose walked to the receptionist holding a basket of fruits and requested to see Kagiso when a the nurse let her through. She slowly pushed the door open and came eye to eye with him when her heart skipped and she shyly walked over .

Rose: (smiling)sorry about that . I thought you were asleep.

Kagiso: (smiling) Good thing I'm awake . You seem like you enjoy sneaking up on people.

Rose: Not really. I sneak when I'm scared.

Kagiso: you scared of me ? Why .

Rose: I uhm ..yes .. I dont know why . Maybe its because I'm not used to you . Here I brought you

this .

Kagiso smiled looking at her when she smiled uncontrollably putting the basket on the table . She picked an apple for him and handed it and she picked a banana before sitting down.

Kagiso: (smiling)you are sweet . Thank you .

Rose: No problem.

Kagiso: I dont mean to sound rude but I gatta ask or else your uncle will hang my head on a stick .

Rose: He wont . You can ask .

Kagiso: You barely know me , I mean you just met me a day ago and already you brought me fruits . Doe's anyone know that your here ? No offense.

Rose: uhm ..no . No one knows that I'm here .

Kagiso: you ran away ?

Rose: What no !

Kagiso:

Rose: ohk fine . I sneaked out .

Kagiso: Why ?

Rose: (smiling) you sound like you dont want me here . If you dont I c-

Kagiso: No . It's nothing like that . I just want to know why .

Rose: Why do you want to know why ?

Kagiso: I don't know . J ust that I feel like your running away from something . More like a burden . And your bottled up .

Rose: Well . I.. I'm gonna be honest with you course one way or another I'll just have to talk out . I'm kinda lonely and confused . I just cant seem to be able to heal and move on after my friends passing . I'm unable to move past the fact that shes no more . I dont know what's wrong with me. Everytime when I'm home I'm not feeling like I'm home . I dont like it there in other words . But it kinda feels different when I'm not there and moving from here to there

and somehow I...i didn't feel like that yesterday when i was around you . When the nurses pulled me out the time you were in pain I felt like their taking something from me .

Kagiso looked at her as she told him playing with the banana peels . She raised her head looking at him and bit her lip when he smiled at her and she smiled back .

Kagiso:(smiling)mmhh..

Rose: yeah ..I know. You think I'm weird.

Kagiso: No . Not at all .

Rose: Then why are you looking at me like that ?

Kagiso: J ust that .. I never met someone courageous as you are . Most people would have already killed themselves if they cant seen to find a way forward. Your tough .

She smiled looking at him as he but the apple and smiled at her .

- .
- .
- .
- .

Comment.

[08/02, 13:41] Lynne : Chapter 33

At the hospital

Kagiso looked up the ceiling with his hand under his head as a balance . Rose looked at him and smiled looking at her hands . He was really eye catch. Too attractive. She looked at him smiling when she got lost in thoughts. Kagiso felt her eyes on him when he smiled and turned looking at her when she quickly looked down at her fingers smiling.

Kagiso: What's up Palesa ?

Rose: Palesa ? (Laughed) Really?

Kagiso: Yeah .. what's wrong with it ? Isn't Rose a flower?

Rose: It is but actually my name is Rosella .

Kagiso: What's it mean ?

She looked at him trying to find a meaning when Kagiso laughed at her and she hid her face laughing with her hands laughing. She had a sweet melodic laughter. He looked at her and balanced himself with his elbow and pulled her hand away from her face looking in her eyes. She shyly looked in him and looked down as he sat back .

Kagiso: you got beautiful brown eyes . Are you sure your not a colored?

Rose:(blushes) I'm sure . 100% . You also have got

brown eyes with long lashes . You'd swear your gay .
Are you ?

Kagiso: (laughs)What ? Fvck no ! J eez baby girl .

He tried holding it and eventually laughed laying on
the bed .

Rose: (smiling) I dont understand why laughing
course I'm just asking a simple question. Are you
gay or not ? Or maybe your attracted to both ?

Kagiso: (laughing) No .. I'm straight darling.

Rose: Right . See that wasn't so hard was it ?

Kagiso: just that I cant believe you asked me that .

Rose: I just had to know .

Kagiso: So all along when you were staring at me
that's what has been eating you up ?

Rose : uhm ...

Kagiso: I know that "uhm "dont you dare lie to me

Palesa . I mean Rose . Spit it out ?

Rose: it was nothing .

Kagiso: you know I got all the time as long as I'm still trapped on this bed to take out whatever your bottling up in that heart right?

Rose: Well .. Do you ever feel like running away? I mean have you ever had a moment where by you want to find a way to exit your daily life routine and just head where tomorrow lies ? Get away from everything..?

Kagiso: Every second of my life . And I have the tendency of feeling like I dont belong there or around anyone. I tend to feel less or unwanted . Shameful and all those things . Like I'm holding people back from their lives .

Rose: yeah that's the thing . I also feel like I've been trapping my parent for quite a long time with my friends passing . Every second of their lives was waisted on me , trying to find me solution forward this . I held them back and when I think of it now - it's like I'm a piece of work . A huge burden to them ,

actually the rest of my family and sometimes I feel like I shouldn't be there around them . I wasted so much time of their lives .

Kagiso: Dont think like that .

Rose: but I just cant help it . It's like all along I've been wrapping them around my little finger and now I dont know how to-

Kagiso: Their your family. They were there for you because they saw that you needed them the most . Losing s loved one had never been easy . You might have lost a person ten to 15 years ago but the gap they left could be hard to fill . And I guess that's what hurt you . Losing your best friend.

Rose: She was more than just a friend (teary) she was like a sister. Her and I grew up together and had plans for our future. I shared so much with her than with any other person. She was so much more . She meant so much to me .

Kagiso : tell you what ? I never had someone to call a friend. Everyone I met looked down on me for the past 21 years since i was born(raised eyebrow).

Ever since i lost my dad ..things took their toll on me and my mom . Everyone always see's me as a mistake that should have been aborted and unwanted person here on earth , placed by mistake. The only person I can say I'm close to is my mom . And I dont know what would happen if I lose her . The emptiness that I would feel . After I lost my dad , it was like the world was closing up on me . Like I was standing in a room in the dark calling out with no one to help . I felt alone . But one way or another I had to move on past that ,course I had a mother who also eventually lost her job from sickness a month later due to sickness. So from there I had to hustle just to make sure we had roof above our heads and something in our stomach. All I'm saying is I know the feeling of losing someone. It wont just go away in a blink . But one way or another, you gatta move on . Life goes on but memories. Memories are the the ones that would keep them close to our hearts .

She wiped her tears and sniffed before looking at

him . Kagiso looked at her and pulled her hand kissing it .

Kagiso: you know what my mom used to say ? I mean always says .

Rose: (smiling) What ?

Kagiso: she likes this quote of .. Never let the past get in the way of your living. Let the past remain past and let let the futer unfold but remember to always keep memories to keep you going.

Rose:(smiled) She sounds sweet

Kagiso: The sweetest lady on earth . I understand when you say you want to run away . Hell yeah we all wish to run away when we face challenges, but just dont let it be a habit. You can go , but do not leave home , just go get yourself .You cant runaway forever. They are your family and your home . And trust me there is no place you can find love and the piece you lack of in your heart other than home .

She smiled looking at him and bit her lip looking at their hands locked like that . He kissed her hand and picked a strawberry and fed her when she blushed like a baby receiving lolly pop .

Kagiso: fvck your so beautiful .

Rose: (thank you)

At Odirile's house

Odirile sipped his beer looking at Breeze as he narrated the whole story . He rubbed his head and threw the bottle in the bin and picked a drumstick and opened another beer . He sighed sitting back and looked at him .

Breeze: Are you even listening to me ?

Odirile: oh yeah . I am .

Breeze: you dont look like it .

Odirile: How old is Rose ?

Breeze: What do you mean how old is Rose ? Shes 18 . What do you want with her ?

Odirile: After 12 its lunch. I wanna marry her . It seems like your family is fucked up fun . I wanna join the party.

Breeze : Odirile I just put my plate on your table and this is what your saying. You already are part of the family. And no your not marrying my niece she's way too young to you .

Odirile: After twelve its lunch.

Breeze: in your mothers house .

Odirile: Everywhere in the world, after 12 it's time.

Breeze looked at Odirile as he played with his eyebrows eating the drumstick.

Breeze: Odirile i-

Odirile: What the point Breeze? Huh ? Tell me .

What will I say that would make a difference to your situation.

Breeze: I dont know. J ust say something dont just sit back and watch me drawn .

Odirile: you put yourself in this , now man up and sort your shit course no one is gonna sort it out for you .

Breeze: Is that a-

Odirile: What do you want me to say ? I dont even know who you fvcked that made you so week down there . Your a married man , to two women. Shouldn't you have learnt how to keep your pants on by the time you entered this relationship.

Breeze: Odirile-

Odirile: I know she cheated . But who forced her into it . Oh yeah you might have not but who pushed her emotions into it ? . She had no right to and so did you . You both thought about your satisfaction and forgot that your not in this alone . You killed Sagi . She's a walking corpse.

Breeze: Man ..I know that I fvcked up when coming to her . I do . And I love her . I j-

Odirile: Who is this chick anyway?

Breeze: I don't want -

Odirile: then you see my friend..your holding back yet you want me to advise you. So all I can say is you see the way you protect her name , protect her just just like that . Shield her like that with all in you .

Breeze: What do you mean?

Odirile: think about it. If Sagi can break your car with rocks with you inside , throw you with a knife and a glass , chase you with a knife and even look you right in the eye and make such threats imagine what the pain you both have put her through did on her . Mentally course according to me it damaged her . BADLY my friend.

Breeze looked at him as he played with the bottle.

Odirile picked another drums tick and bite it looking at him .

Odirile: J ust saying buckle up my boy . Course this is just the beginning. Prepare for the worst .

Breeze swallowed looking at him when he thought about it . Meanwhile Odirile leaned back relaxing sighed .

At Breezes.

Gail walked down the stairs wearing a biggy tshirt and a tight barefoot holding the money in her hand . The service cleaners packed everything back nicely and received the money before heading out . Gail closed the door and leaned against it . She sighed and walked to the kitchen where she took out everything she'll need for the meal and started cooking with her mind running around.

Meanwhile Sagi put the sim card in the new phone

and used her phone transferring airtime with a smile up her face . She walked into the main bedroom and sat on the bed dialing a number. A very scary voice answered.

Voice: Yes

Sagi: Hy Stone .

Stone: Sagi ? Boss lady .

Sagi: I need a favor.

Stone: No no boss lady . Your husband asked me not to do you any favors. He said he wants -

Sagi: Well he's not on the phone with us now is he ?

Stone: Still I'm not suppo-

Sagi: I wonder how he'd feel if I tell him that you once went behind his back and stole a miter . Shhh.. I cant image.

Stone: What do you want ?

She smiled when Gail's phone rang . She walked over to her bag and took it out looking at "Mxolisi" she answered it and kept quiet putting it on her ear .

Mxolisi : Before you say anything. I just want to let you know that I'm sorry if this whole thing feels wrong and can possibly ruin your life . But to me it felt right baby . You dont love that man . You know you dont . J ust that your too scared to move on. But I wont force you to do want you dont want to do . That's why I'm setting you free. But I want you to know one last thing before we part . I.. I love you . I haven't felt like this ever in my life with any other woman . The moment I met you I knew th-

Sagi : Wa tsenwa o marete . Mxm .

She hang up with annoyance and answered hers .

Stone: Poor guy . Who is it?

Sagi : Non of your damn business . I want you to

track someone for me . And I need a gun .

Stone : What ?

She sat back in the bed and folded her legs before looking at her nails .

Sagi: And acid . A lot of acid baby .(evil laughter) I love science . I have given myself a science project .
(Smiked)

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

[08/02, 13:41] Lynne : Chapter 34

Somewhere on the road .

Jane has been driving around the whole town for quite a while now . She still couldn't bring herself together to the fact that he doesn't have even as little as a tiny bit of a spark in him for her . She stopped by the robot and leaned back holding the wheel with both hands . She chuckled smiling thinking of their memory together . How this baby came about .

She held her stomach rubbing it and when the green light flashed. She took a turn to the clinic. It was about damn time she focuses on her marriage.

At Breezes house.

Sagi stepped out of the shower and wrapped a towel around her body stepping in her fluffy shoes . She stood by the mirror and smiled looking at her elegant skin. She traced her finger on her arm the way Breeze always used to. A weigh of sadness covered her as she hugged herself closing her eyes

picturing him . Tears burned her eyes as they flowed down her cheek still closing her eyes . His smell and his smile . His bold arms wrapping around her body making her feel more like a little girl again . Safety, love and comfort.

But then that is all in the past . She opened her eyes and looked at herself on the mirror. She hated seeing her tears and how she looked feeling like this .

She smiled and wiped her tears .

Sagi: Big girls don't cry Sagi . Big girls dont cry .

She smiled looking at herself and let the towel loose looking at herself. She looked at herself and touched her hourglass finger to her ass . She smiled . She needed some sort of a break from all of this . She walked out and went into their room and picked her phone dialing Odirile.

Odirile: Oh heloow you . Was sup ?

Sagi : Nothing just that , I'm feeling a little bit mixed up . I need a makeover.

Odirile: ohk .. What do you want do ?

Sagi: Do you still have numbers of that guy who does ink art ?

Odirile: Tattoos?

Sagi: Exactly. So do you have his numbers?
Location?

Odirile: baby I don't think that's a great idea . Thus things can course a huge mess to your health . I suggest you go see a doctor first and check if you dont have any complications. This shit can course you health issues like skin allergies and shit.

Sagi: Odirile. The carrying mother fvcker . The responsible baby . Right now I wished I had married you instead of your friend. But today I wasn't asking if this can cost me . I wanted to simple things . Location or numbers.

Odirile: Your not in the right state of mind Sagi .

That shit hurts and I dont think you'll be able to go through with it . Let me tell B-

Sagi : No no smart pants .Don't. If you dont think you can help me then fine I wont force you . You don't have to add Breeze in everything.

Odirile: ohk fine . It's not on me though. It's you , you wanted this . I'll text you his details.

Sagi :(smiling) your the best.

She hang up and smiled heading to the closet and wore her simple club black outfit. When she was done the message got in and she went out .

In the kitchen.

Gail heard footsteps from the stairs and she rushed out of the kitchen with a spoon and looked at Sagi smiling.

Gail : Where are you going ? I just finished cooking

and I'm only left with preparing the table.

Sagi: Well darling as you can see I'm on my way
.But it smells great ?please put mine in the warmer .

Gail : Where are you going dressed like that ? You
know he's not gonna like that dress code . Your
married you should at least dress like it .

Sagi : At least I'm not climbing into beds .

Gail: (cleared throat) ohk .. The reason why I cooked
today is because I want us to sit down as a family
and talk this out . We cant carry on like this . I
thought sitting down all together we can find a
solution to this over dinner .

Sagi: Maybe you should have thought about that
yesterday.

Gail swallowed putting her hands in the pocket of
the apron and looked at her . Sagi put on her shades
and kissed her lips before heading out breaking it
side to side in her leather miniskirt.

Gail stood at the door looking at her and but her lip

closing the door as tears rolled down her cheeks .
She walked back to the kitchen and poured herself
more wine crying .

At Odirile's house .

After sending the message. He walked back to the
living room and found Breeze holding the remote
passing every channel not knowing what to watch .
He eventually threw it on the couch and rubbed his
face before looking at Odirile.

Breeze: Its J ane .

Odirile : uhhh...?

Breeze: the woman I slept with . Its J ane .

Odirile: J ane as in J ane ? Your brothers wife ?

Breeze: yep .

Odirile: WtF ! Are you out of your damn mind . I
mean are you crazy ? With your brothers "WIFE" .

Are you that desperate for revenge?

Breeze : That's not the worst .

Odirile: tell me the worst .

He looked at him and leaned back playing with his ring around his finger .

Breeze: She's pregnant.

Odirile's jaws dropped looking at him .

Breeze: With me . With my child . And now things are getting out of hand. She is falling for me . Gail also used her emotions to hurt me while on the other side we both turned our backs on one person who's always been there the whole time . Sagi is no longer herself. I damaged her . Things don't look good man .

Odirile: She is carrying your first watermelon !

That's fuvcked up !

Breeze: tell me about it .

Odirile: Damn . So what are you gonna do about it? I mean you can't hide this forever. Truth has a way of coming out. And the longer you hide the bigger it gets .

Breeze: Right now I was thinking of confessing the pregnancy. But after seeing how cheating has torn them ...I don't think right now is the right time . On the other hand , as much as I hate my brother I also would hate to see the pain in his eyes after finding out about this . Its gonna kill him . Like the was it does to Sagi .

Odirile : Man .. I.. I dont know what to say . All I can say is , better tell before it's too late .

Breeze : Sagi seemed determined to not stop even if I go jump from the tallest building . She's what she is today all becouse of me . She threatened my child. My own child's blood will be on her hands all becouse of me . She's..things are so bad I wanna take them all back .

Odirile: You do know that some woman when they are pregnant they tend to fall inlove with the father right ? Do you have feelings for her ?

Breeze: I don't know. I don't know if I'm scared to hurt her or I'm really inlove with her . I dont know if whether this is just a little crush ,lust or it is real love . But what I'm sure of is my feelings for my girls haven't changed a bit . I'm still madly inlove with them .

Odirile: Man ...I dont know what to say . This is a mess .

Breeze: Dont say anything my guy . You were right . I put myself in this so I'll have to get myself out . Come high or low . I'm wil8to do whatever it is so that my child shall not come into a family like this .

He stood up picking his keys and looked at his wrist watch.

Breeze: I gatta go to the clinic. I wanna buy

something.

Odirile: alright man . Be cxxl ohk .

They bro hugged before he went out .

At the tattoo shop.

Sagi took off her shade looking at the building and sighed stepping out of the car . She grabbed her bag pack and stepped put looking around. There was music coming from the inside , more like it was a club . She walked over and rang the bell when a big bouncer opened the door and she got it . The whole room was filled with weed smoke and disco lights lighting up the room

She followed the music passing my girls naked and all those things . She went to the tattoo corner where she stood on the drawings by the wall looking for a tattoo.

Guy: Sagi ? !

She turned around looking at him and smiled looking at the shop owner .

Sagi: How have you been? It's been so long Eli.

Eli: Indeed . I last saw you when you forced your husband to tattoo your names on him . That night was a blust . How may I help ?

Sagi: I want a tattoo. This one .

Eli smiled before looking at the machine and pulled her by the hand going to the VIP. Only if she knew how much this hurts ,she wouldn't choose such a huge tattoo.

At the Clinic.

Breeze stepped out of the Clinic holding a small bag and sighed going to his car. Who would have thought that he, himself his love life will get to this high bridge? . He got in his car and leaned back relaxing when he spotted a familiar car.

Jane also stepped out of the building with a smile up her face holding a small plastic. He looked at her and thought. Right there that was a woman. Her body was just so perfect and she had brains. Though sometimes it twists facing away. His baby mama. Thinking of that brought quilt when he closed his eyes and leaned on the wheel for a few seconds and started the car driving off.

Meanwhile Jane saw a familiar car passing by her car and swallowed. He didn't even pay attention to him anymore and somehow this hurts. She held her tummy and sighed starting the car and drove off.

At Breezes house.

Gail heard the door unlock when she got up from

the kitchen floor holding a bottle of wine and went to see who it was . She walked over and saw Breeze standing by the dinner table and set down .

She rubbed her hand on her tights walking over and set down . The awkwardness filled the room when she looked at him .

Gail: Hey ..

Breeze: Hi .

Those were the only words that managed to come out of their mouths . Breeze sighed and put the small bag on her plate looking at her . She looked at him and took the bag looking inside . Morning After pills .

Him putting this made even the embarrassment and shame consume her as she looked inside and put the aside looking at her hands.

Gail: Thank you.

He forced a smile and began serving himself as she sat there not knowing what to say or do next .

At the Lyons Mansion.

Jane got into the house and took breath exercises before walking to the bedroom. She found Jack sitting on the bed unbuttoning his shirt and she smiled walking over . Jack looked at her and shook his head .

Jane: Baby I'm sorry . I didn't mean all those things I said in the morning.

Jack: You are different this days Jane . Your tongue slips out. You address me in a very disrespectful manner.

Jane: Baby that's why I'm sorry . I realised my mistakes and I'm willing to cheer you up . Here .

Her heart pounded as she took out three pregnancy tests giving them to him . His face lightened up looking at the two lines on each of the sticks . He stood up and made her stand before embracing her in a tight hug . He was going to be a father again.

Jane: in sorry u didn't tell you in time . I wasn't sure but after I threw up from the smell of eggs and realized that I was aggressive to you I went to check up .

Jack: (smiling) no need to explain. Dont apologize. I forgive you . Oh my God. This calls for a family celebration. I'm going to be a father to two .

Jane looked at his ear to ear smile on her face and couldn't help but laugh . This was her husband and she had taken the happiness from him but now she is willing to earn it back. She smiled looking at him as he fiddled for his phone and finally found it .

Jane: Who are you calling?

Jack: my brother. (Smiling) He should know. He deserves to.

Jane: (swallowed) Cant we wait a little longer and enjoy the news and joy of this pregnancy before we tell everyone else?

Jack: Breeze is family . He's not like just anyone my love .

He held her hand kissing it as her heart pounded so hard on his chest .

Breeze: Yes

Jack: Little brother. Guess what ?

Breeze:...

Jack: I have great news . Jane is pregnant. I'm going to be a father to two !

Breeze: uhm.. what ?

Jack: She is carrying another flower of mine . Isn't that amazing?

Breeze: (scoffs) hmm ..

Jack: Can we please celebrate this together as a family . I want us to come together and raise glasses to a new member of our family. Come have dinner with us tomorrow.

Breeze: Nah I wont be there . But im sure Gail and Sagi would . Congrats by the way .

Jack: Tha-

He hang up before he can finish talking and Jack sighed looking at the phone. Meanwhile Jane's feet got cold as she stood there looking at him .

Jack: He wont make it . Your know I thought we had passed the past and at least my brother will be happy for me . But instead he hangs up on me .

Jane: Its ohk baby . I'm sure we can celebrate without him . Dont let Breeze get in the way of your happiness . Your going to be a father soon. We really don't need negativity now do we ?

Jack smiled and kissed her before holding her hands .

Jack: I love you Jane.

Jane: I love you too .

.
. .
. .
. .

Comment

[08/02, 13:41] Lynne : Chapter35

At the Hospital.

Rose stood up still holding Kagiso's hand and smiled looking at him not wanting to let go. She pulled her hand but couldn't free herself from his grip and finally sat down looking at him .

Rose: you do realize it's late and I gotta get home or my uncle will hang that head of yours on a stick .

Kagiso: (smiling) So now your agreeing that he'll hang my head on a stick ?

Rose: No I dont . But I'm sure he'll do much more than that . He believes that punishment is better than death course in death you wont feel the pain but if he punishes you , he'll make it painful so you can suffer .

Kagiso: You Lyons are creep's.

Rose: (laughs) that we are . If you let me go I promise to come back tomorrow.

Kagiso: Promise is a promise.

Rose: I promise.

Kagiso slowly let go and she stood up looking at him . She winked at him and he smiled then she walked out .

At Breezes house.

Breeze played with his food as anger and jealousy filled him up in the stomach. He clenched his jaws and drank his wine . He kept on playing with his food as Gail stole glimpses at him and ate . He saw her looking at him and turned looking at her when she quickly looked in her plate .

Breeze: You wanna say something?

Gail: Uhm no . Not at all .

The door bell rang and he stood up going to open .
He rubbed his head and pulled the door open to a
man . He was his size and height but a little but
darker than him .

Breeze: Hey man . How can I help you ?

Guy: Hey, my name is Mxolisi. Is Gail around?

Breeze: What do you want with my wife ?

Mxolisi: I came to get my car . That one over there .

Breeze: So your the one that was with my wife
yesterday all night and ate what belongs to me .
You the guy that ate on my table without protection.

Mxolisi: You know man this is not the right time to
do this . Yes I was with her but -

Without thinking twice Breeze raised his foot and
kicked him between the legs and he fell down
holding between his legs groaning in pain . Breeze
punched him in the face side to side before kicking
his chest and fell down when he got on his stomach

punching him a couple of times . Mxolisi tried to push him off but Breeze grabbed his hands pinning them down with his knees and continued punching him while he groaned in pain .

Mxolisi: Get off me .

Gail heard the noise and rushed out of the house when she stopped on the tracks looking at Breeze on top of Mxolisi who was bleeding but he continued punching. She quickly ran over and tried stopping Breeze but he pushed her and she fell on her butt crying and landed a strong punch that broke Mxolisi's jaw .

Breeze: You got the balls to come to my house and look me in the eye after what you did ? ! Wantwaela kana monna . I'm going to kill you .

Gail stood up and pulled him by his shirt but he

grabbed her hand and pushed her back on the ground. She stood up again and this time fell on them and Mxolisi got free . He used his last energy and pushed Gail aside and punched Breeze on the mouth before he speared him and they fell on the flowers .

Car lights bounced on the them and Sagi stopped the car and stepped out running over . She looked at them fighting and used all her force pushing them apart . With anger in them they pushed her away and she trembled and gain balance.

Sagi: Stop it ! I said stop it ! Breeze stop !

She looked at them and frustration along with anger filled her up and she rushed to the car taking out her bag . She looked for her makeup mirror and broke it on the ground. She picked two bigger glasses and walked over . She stood there looking at them but they didn't stop so she stabbed Breeze on the thigh when he fell on the ground groaning with the glass

still there and blood coming out . Mxolisi saw the opportunity and jumped at him with a punch but Sagi stabbed him with another one of the arm and he landed on the floor. They both groaned of the ground and she turned looking at Gail who was sitting on the ground crying.

Sagi: (shouting) So this is him ? Answer me or I'll also stab you or worse slit your throat.

Gail:(crying) Yess! Its him . He just wanted his car back . He wasn't here for me .

Sagi: Mxm .

Sagi walked into the house to the main bedroom as the pain of the tatto cover her waist side to her leg . She took off her clothes and wore her rag before going downstairs to fetch ices . Tears burned her eyes as it got worse and worse . She quickly went to the bathroom and threw the ices inside and opened the cold water . She took off her rag and she was all swollen. She stepped inside the cold water and

layed back relaxing listening to the pain . Though it was painful it wasn't as painful compared to the one she felt in her heart .

Meanwhile outside. Gail rushed to Breeze as she grounded on the ground and hesitantly tried pulling the glass out .

Breeze: Gail ..pull the damn thing out . It hurts .

Gail looked at his face and bite her lip closing her eyes and pulled out the glass and blood flowed.

Mxolisi looked at them and stood up holding his arm . Seeing her like this with him hurt him so much. He thought maybe when he came by she'll break free and come with him but no , she did the opposite. He looked at the house and shook his head remembering the voice that called out his package and it was that girl that stabbed him . The one Gail said she was crazy and he belittled her

word .

Mxolisi: Gail ? I need the car keys.

Gail: There inside the car. (Teary) And don't you ever come back here. I dont love you . I love my husband. Leave me alone and not once show your face on my account. I hate you .

He swallowed the pain looking her . Breeze turned looking at her and looked at Mxolisi. Though he also hated him he knew that seeing the woman you love turn to another man hurt so much more than any injury. He looked aside and back at Gail who's tears rolled down her cheeks. As much as he also loved her another man loved her too and if she also loved him the way he did , she wouldn't cheat . She would hold on to the pain and deal with it in a reasonable manner the way they always do . But instead, without hesitation he went to him the same day of his confession showing him that with every second the love they shared was slowly fading

away .

Breeze :Do you love him ? J ust be honest with me
Abigail .

She looked at him and back at Mxolisi who held his hand with a swollen face . She tried searching for the love but at this moment she could find the answer to his question. She turned looking at Breeze who had a emotionless face looking at her .

Gail: It was lust . A moment of weakness .

Breeze: Did you enjoy yourself yesterday? I mean the (cleared throat) the sex ? Was it good .

Gail: (teary) baby please dont ask me that .

Breeze: J ust answer the damn question so we can sort this out once and for all . Did you enjoy the sex ?

Gail looked in his eyes and even if he was calm she can sense the pain coming out of his voice and his eyes said it all .

Gail : No ..I didn't. It was full of emotions and sorrow. I didn't enjoy it .

Mxolisi swallowed and turned around heading to his car . He could take the pain anymore. Hearing those words come out of her mouth was like cutting your heart with a razor even though it hurts .

He got in his car when a tear ran down his cheek and his phone rang . It was his father. He answered as he drove out.

Him: Donald !

Mxolisi: (sighed) J acob?

J acob: O bitsa nna rrago with my name ? When are you returning from overseas?

Mxolisi: in a couple of months why ?

Jacob: course you need to get here by two days .
We have a lot to talk about and not over the phone .
We have a ceremony coming you should be here as
a family member.

Mxolisi: (sighed) fine .. first I need to sort out some
things.

Jacob: Something's like what ?

Mxolisi: they're personal dad . I'll see you then. Bye

.

Jacob: bye .

He sighed and started the car . Non of his family
members know that he in town course to them he
was a lawyer overseas not knowing he owns a Law
Firm here in South Africa. But then they were the
least of his problems right now. He had to save the
woman he loved from that culprit. He smiled and
took a turn heading to the police station to open a
case of assault.

Meanwhile. Gail put Breezes hand around her shoulder and helped him stand . The pain struck him as he pulled his leg and frowned. What kind of a wife does this to her husband. He knew that she was violent but this was getting out of hand and it seems like she does this without hesitation which is not good . Gail stopped and let him adjust the pain .

Gail: The glass was sharp and long . The wound must be deep too . Let me go get the car I'll take you to the hospital.

Breeze: Its just a little wound Gail .

Gail: and that little wound hurt . And a lot . Your losing more blood look at you. I know I'm not your favourite person at the moment but still that wont stop me from pushing your ass into that car and drive you to the hospital.

Breeze smiled looking aside and stood on one leg

as she ran into the house and came back with the car keys. She helped him into the car and started the engine driving off .

At the Lyons Mansion.

Rose entered the house to a mouth watering aroma . Her mouth watered instantly and she walked to the kitchen where her parents were kissing sitting around the table . She smiled looking at them and sat down.

Jack:(smiling) hey hunny. Where have you been ?

Rose: I was at ..uhm.. uncle's place.

Jane: how are they ?is everyone ohk ?

Rose: yeah they are all cheered up and bubb6as usual.

Jane swallowed to that statement. So it means he

doesn't care . She wore it off with a smile and looked at her .

Rose: So what's the occasion? Did I missed something?

Jack :(smiling) take a guess .

Rose: Dad I'm bad at guessing, you know that.

Jack: trying never hurt .

Rose: Ohk ..you bought mom a car .You got promotions...? You bought me a house maybe ?

Jane: (laughing) not in 3 years baby .

Rose: oh then what is it?

Jack : We're expecting a new family member . Your gonna be a sister!

Rose:(frown) What ?

Jane:(smiling) Yeass ..

She looked at them and the smile on their faces

brought tears to her eyes . She stood up and went to hug them . She had always wanted a sibling .

.

.

.

.

Comment

[08/02, 13:41] Lynne : Chapter 36 .

At the hospital.

Gail and Breeze walked out hand in hand with her holding a small plastic bag of his prescription. She pressed the key and the car unlocked helping him into the car and closed the door . She went to the driver side and got in before closing the door and started the engine driving off .

Breeze looked at her and looked out of the window as the car drove off .

Breeze: You know I love you right ?

Gail looked at him and smiled before looking back at the road.

Gail: I know. And I love you too .

Breeze: And as much as I love you I dont want you to think that your stuck with me for the rest of your life .

Gail: What do you mean ?

Breeze: I saw how you looked at that guy . How you defended him . You might say you dont love him but you're body language says a different thing .

Gail: Baby I was just scared that you'll kill him and I'll end up losing you . I dont want you to go to prison because of my selfishness .

Breeze: I wouldn't have killed him even though I very wanted too . Look ..it happens to have equal

feelings for two people at the same time . And from the look of the eye you have fallen for this guy . Gail I've done a lot worse than cheat , and hurt you . So I'm the last person to stand between you and your happiness . If whoever the fuvk that was makes you happy then I wont stop you to be with him but I'll stop you too if you keep holding hands with him behind my back .

Gail: Baby-

Breeze: Let me say first please. (Swallowed) Gail I love you and I dont wanna lose you . Your my first love . My first wife . The first person that I ever let close to me after what I've been through with my family. The only person I relayed on with my heart . Your the best thing that has ever happened to me and I fuvked that up . But if he can treat you better then that shall be. I love you . God.. I love you so bad Abigail. But if I love you (teary) if I love you then I guess I should let you be .

Gail's heart skipped and she hit the break right in

the middle of the road and a tear ran down her cheek . She turned looking at him as he stared out of the window. From the reflection on the window she saw his tear rolling and for her thus was the first time seeing his tear .

Gail: (teary) Breeze I love you . You must have read me wrong but I love you . I know what I did was wrong but im certainly sure about my feelings. If I wanted to leave you I would have done that a long time ago but I stayed . And I'm not going anywhere. There is no any other man that I'm going to let him in if it's not you . Your the only man that has a key to my heart . Yes I have feelings for Mxolisi but their not as strong as the ones I have for you . The feeling i have for him aren't able to pull me to him but for you they are unexplainable. I love you and I'm not leaving you . I'm sorry that cheated and I'm sorry that I let him into our marriage. I truly am .

Breeze: you have feelings for this guy Gail and he also has feeling for you . An-

Gail: It happened once . I was hurt by the fact that you left and went to fuvk another women. I was hurt by your confession. I wasn't in the right state of mind.

Breeze: but now you are .

Gail: Still . I don't know how to say this to you but I love you more .

Breeze: Are you sure ? Course whatever you say I have a feeling that you hiding back . Your not being honest with me .

Gail: (crying) baby I'm not lying. I love you . Please believe me . I really love you.

Breeze turned looking at her and touched her face rubbing her te6with his thumb. He pulled her in for a tight hug as she cried on his shoulder.

Breeze : I love you too .

After a while they broke the hug and she wiped her tears and drove off .

At Breezes.

A police car parked outside followed by Mxolisi . Two police officers stepped out of the car and so did he heading to the house where they pressed the door bell .

Sagi heard the door bell as they pressed it countless times . She sighed opening her eyes looking at the ceiling . She finally got out of the water and wore her slippers with her wet feet and her gown heading downstairs. She looked in the kitchen and the dining room but they both weren't there . The door bell rang again and she clenched her jaws and opened the door in frustration coming face to face with two police man and Mxolisi behind them . Her skin crawled looking at his face and almost felt like throwing up .

Sagi: You know officer I have very bad manners and temper . Couldn't you press the button once instead of playing music with it ?

Officer: I'm officer Mashego and this is my colleague officer Sele . Is your husband around?

Sagi: (folded hands) Do I look like his keeper ?

Officer: man were here t-

Sagi: if he was here he would be the one to open the door for you dont you think ? I mean its almost 11 o'clock, no man allows his wife to open the door this time . Unless you guys do . Anyway why are you looking for him ?

Car lights bounced on them before they could answer and Gail drove in parking besides the police van . Gail's heart pounded looking at the police by the door and Mxolisi. Breeze sighed and opened the door stepping out as Gail looked at him limp over to them . She quickly followed him .

Breeze: Shall we ?

He put his hands together behind him without hesitation as Sagi and Gail's heart pounded. The police officer took out the cuff and cuffed him before pushing him towards the car as they watched .

Breeze: You know there's no need to be rough with me .

Officer: You know we've been on your tail for quite a long time . I hope they link your assault case to every crime you ever committed . Tsena!

They pushed him inside and closed the door and went to their sides and drove off. Meanwhile Sagi looked at the car driving out and the lights disappeared into the darkness. This felt like they were taking him away from her without a goodbye.

It hurts her everytime he gets away from her but when he's here all she ever wants is to inflict pain on him . A tear ran down her cheek when she looked at Mxolisi who turned heading to his car. Sagis blood boiled when she kicked her shoes off and ran towards him jumping on his back hitting him countless times screaming. Gail's heart skipped looking at her and ran over and tried pulling her away but instead she bit Mxolisi on the neck not letting go and blood flowed . Mxolisi screamed in pain and tried shaking her off but she buried her teeth even more on his neck . He ran to his car with her still glued on him and hit her agaisnt the car breaking the window and that's when she let go . He held his neck that was in pain as blood flowed out looking at her covered with his blood on her mouth . She coughed standing up and looked at him with rage . Gail ran over and stood before her looking at her range growing with every second looking at Mxolisi, plus the blood that scattered on her mouth flowing.

Mxolisi: Are you crazy?

Sagi: oh hunny , Did she forget to mention she had a crazy sister wife ?

She pushed Gail aside and ran towards him .

Mxolisi held her hand and twisted it around her back and she screamed in pain when he pushed her and she fell down hitting her head on the pavement and blanked out . Gail's heart raced looking at Sagi not moving and rushed to her picking her head to her lap checki5her pulse as tears rolled out.

Gail : No no ..Sagi wake up . Sagi please wake up .

Mxolisi's heart beated so hard across his chest it could literally jump out looking at her motionless.

His mouth went dry and his head went blank .

Gail: (crying) What have you done to her ? I told you

to stay away from me look what you did ? Call an ambulance dont just stand there .

He quickly went inside his car and picked his phone calling the ambulance and they told him they'll be there in 1n30 mins . His heart skipped and hang up looking at her as she cried holding Sagi in her arms . Whe the ambulance arrives they'll call the police and he might get arrested if she's dead. He cant afford to be arrested, that could end his career. Especially with a murder record . He closed the door and started the car driving off with full speed. Meanwhile Gail scoffed looking at him driving off and back at Sagi . He didn't even tell her if he called the ambulance or what .

She gatherd herself and stood up opening the car door in the back . She went back to Sagi and picked her though she was a bit heavy for her and put her in the car buckling her and closed the door . She rushed to the drivers side and looked at Sagi making sure she was fine for speed and drove off stepping on the accelerator the way Breeze tought

her .

.

.

.

.

. A day later

Comment

[08/02, 13:42] Lynne : Chapter 37

At the hospital.

It's been a day since she was out . Gail pressed her phone sending the email and sighed switching it off and sat back looking at Sagi . She was so beautiful and innocent when she is asleep. Her clear skin painted her as the most heart gifted person . The fact that Mxolisi left her to die was so surprising

and nothing she had possibly imagined him to be like . He didn't even make contact to check how she was going . She could have died. And the fact that the police yesterday refused to let her in to see Breeze itched her .

The door slid open and the Doctor stepped in with Sagis file and a stethoscope around her neck .

Doctor: Mrs Lyon .

Gail : Hey doc . How is she doing? Is she going to be fine , she's been out for a day now and I'm worried. Please give me something to keep my hope up .

Doctor :(sighed) I have good news and bad news Mrs Gail . Which ones would you like to hear first ?

Gail : The bad news . The good ones will ease me after .

Doctor: According to the results we are dealing with more than a Long term stress that had increased the risk of her mental health . This is

more than anxiety or depression. Some sort of mental illness.

Gail: What do you mean ? What could that possibly be ?

Doctor: You won't like what I'm thinking. I have to ask you a few questions before I can explain exactly what we are having on our table .

Gail: Ohk ..I'm open .

Doctor: has Mrs Lyon ever showed any socially irresponsible behavior?

Gail: Not really. Sagi has always been too kind to others and not once has she ever reacted irresponsible.

Doctor: ohk . Has she ever disregarded or violated other people's rights ?

Gail: Yeah .. when she is mad or under a lot of pain .

Doctor: mmh.. has is she able to distinguish between right and wrong ?

Gail: Sometimes.

Doctor: Does she find it difficult in showing remorse or empathy?

Gail: yeah .. she enjoys inflicting pain on herself and others . She doesn't feel sorry . Well most of the time .

Doctor: (sighed) lies , manipulate or hurt others ?

Gail : she is not really the type to lie but about her feelings. Manipulative sometimes . And yes she hurts people. She literally just stabbed our husband with a glass and jumped on someone's neck biting him . Days before she chased him with a knife like a mad woman .

Doctor: recurring problems with the law ?

Gail: that's her game . All the time . Why are you asking me this weird question anyway?

Doctor: According to what you said I think its bigger than we thought .

Gail: What do you mean ?

Doctor: I think were dealing with Psychopathy. The questions I asked you were to find out and

apparently she has been showing you guys red flags without your knowledge. Symptoms or Psychopathy.

Gail's jaws dropped looking at her and looked back at Sagi who was innocently laying there with a bandage around her head . She scanned her face and looked back at the doc and when she thought about it ,it all made sense and at the same time it didn't.

Gail: What ?

Doctor: yeah . But I'll have to verify that when she wakes up ? J ust that for now I'm giving you heads up . She's dangerous. And the good new . (Smiling) she's pregnant. Congratulation!

Gail: : (smiling)

Doctor: I'll come back and warn her on her consumption of alcohol course I found a lot of alcohol in her system which is too dangerous for

the baby . You guys are lucky the baby is also a fighter ,justs like her mom .

Gail swallowed looking at her as she checked her and wrote down before walking put . Gail looked at Sagi again and sat down on the chair going through everything with a pounding heart .

At Mxolisi's house.

Mxolisi tossed and turned on his bed unable to rest and this has being going on since that incident. The picture of Sagis body laying motionless on the ground kept flashing back and he couldn't even pick up his phone and find out if the ambulance arrived or what . The look of hatred in Gail's eyes was so breaking when she sat there with Sagi in her hands . And the most coward thing he ever did was let fear take control over him .

His phone rang on the charger and he looked at

Officer Mashegos call until it hang up . He knew what he was going to say to him and probably he might be wanted on the streets. The phone rang again and he swallowed before picking the phone .

Officer: Ng ng monna ..this is not how it work . O ko kae morena ? You have to come to the police station and -

Mxolisi: I'm dropping the charges.

Officer: What ?

Mxolisi: Yeah .. sorry for wasting your time . Let him go .

Officer: Wiat did he buy you or threaten you anyhow ? Course if he did we can charge him with -

Mxolisi: no he did nothing . J ust .. I'm dropping the charges ohk . It's on me not him .

He hang up as his heart pounded and put the phone down . After what he did it's the list he can do . Let the family have peace.

He sighed standing up and went to take out his clothes out of the closet and his case throwing them on the bed . Maybe going to his father wouldn't be such a bad idea after all .

At the Police station.

Breeze layed on the old mattress facing up listening to the pain on his leg . He hasn't changed the bandage and cleaned the wound in hours while at the same time he couldn't take it off course it might catch infections. At this point he wondered how his wifes where coping . He left without saying goodbye and the thought of Mxolisi taking away Gsil from him break him even more . On the other hand Sagi . The only female he's ever met who was too strong and powerful in her own way was slowly but surely turning into a monster he never saw coming. The love of his life turned out to be so violent to an extent that he cannot protect her away from herself. She was slowly drowning into pain

and sorrow of darkness all because of him and he doesn't even know how to help her out . And on the other hand a burden of truth is also getting too heavy for him though he wasn't sure if it's his or not , if it is it'll be the end of him . Better way is to tell while it's too early .

The officer unlocked the gate and walked in looking at him as he layed there .

Officer: Areye monna . O lokollotswe .

Breeze turned looking at him and stood up walking out and the officer locked the cell before leading him out .

Officer: What kind of mutiny are you using?

Breeze: Excuse me ?

Officer: Yeah . I mean what kind are you using that makes so many man fear you . Even when your inside . Haayyii marn . Whatever kind you use I

want it . It's too strong and its working for you.

Breeze: mxm . I dont know what your talking about .

They arrived at the table and he signed before asking for a phone and called Odirile.

Odirile: Better be good .

Breeze: Come get me at the police station.

Odirile: Hello to you too slacker. I've been good and yeah I wasn't missing your cheating ass but because your my friend ..give me 5 mins and I'll be there course you have some explanation to do on how the fuvk you landed there .

Breeze bare his eyebrows before hanging up shaking his head . He took his belongings ,(watch and his ring) and went out. He sat under a shade and after a while Odirile parked infront of him and he hopped in then they drove off .

Odirile: Talk..

He sighed before he started narrating everything heading to his house .

.

.

.

.

Comment

[08/02, 13:42] Lynne : Chapter 38 .

At Breezes house.

Odirile parked the car and sighed looking at Breeze.
He switched off the engine and relaxed the seat .

Odirile: So are you going to tell them about the pregnancy?

Breeze: Yeah that's the thing . I dont know if the baby is mine or not . Yesterday J ack called asking us over for dinner to celebrate the pregnancy. So I cant just break my marriage with something I'm not sure off.

Odirile: Why dont you ask for DNA test ? That woman is so attracted to you and traditionally as they say , if a woman is attracted to you while pregnant it means it could possibly be yours . But do those DNA's just to be sure .

Breeze : What's the point man ? Even if I do them there's no guarantee that she'll let me near that baby even its mine .

Odirile: Then ga dira jalo re mo tsena ka law . Re molata semolao . She has no right to keep you away from your child .

Breeze: Yeah neh .

Odirile: J ust tell them before Sagi finds out about it herself course if she does you'll lose that kid in her hands and it'll be your fault. On the other hand how are you going to deal with Gail ?

Breeze: I was thinking of sending her away for a vacation just her only to dig dipper into her feelings . For her to be at ease and think. And I'll get away with Sagi to fix my mess .

Odirile: So your sending her away. Dude wh-

Breeze: Its the only thing that comes up to my mind at this point . Her being away from me will give her the power to overcome her fears to leave me . She is hiding her true feelings trying to lock them away for us to see . She thinks if she leaves me I'll burn the whole city down hunting that guy that took her away from me .

Odirile: Would you ?

Breeze: (breathing in) no .. I wont . It'll have been her choice and I'll support her decision.

Odirile looked at him and smiled looking at him before scoffing and Breeze turned looking at him .

Breeze: What ?

Odirile: That would be a first. But anyway do what's right . You did wrong so it's about damn time you fix your shit. Go take care of that wound and sit them down and talk like a married couple not teenagers.

They bro hugged before he stepped out and Odirile drove off dialing Bonolo. He smiled using one hand and connected to the car putting the phone down.

Bonolo: Hey .

Odirile: Hi Bee. What's up ?

Bonolo: Nothing much . What about you ?

Odirile: J ust missing you .

Bonolo: (smiling) Odirile you dont even know me . I

could be a serial killer.

Odirile: I dealt with a lot more worse than that baby girl .

Bonolo: I doubt that. What career did you choose ?

Odirile: career? Dont you want to find out ?

Bonolo: I do that's why I'm asking .

Odirile: Then let's meet up for lunch. Its friendly. I promise I won't do anything to make you feel uncomfortable.

Bonolo:(smiling) I'll think about it .

Odirile: Sweet . Bye .

Bonolo: bye .

He hang up and breathed out before smiling and stepped on the accelerator.

Back at Breezes. Breeze walked into a house that was too quiet to be owned by two woman . He

sighed and limped on the stairs up to their bedroom taking off his clothe. He walked into the shower still with the bandage wrapped around his thigh and balanced the water stepping under it . After a while he stepped out took off the bandage and took out the first aid kit . He sat on the toilet seat and opened the kit cleaning his wound . After a while he bandaged it and closed the kit putting it back and went out to his closet .

He wore his black clothes and stepped out going downstairs and picked his phone on the table and went to make himself food. He put it on the charger and dialed Sagi but her phone went straight to voicemail. He dialed Gail and it rang before she picked up.

Breeze: Hey ..

Gail: Hey . How are you ? Are you out ? Are you ohk?
Are you hurt ?

Breeze : (smiling) Calm down ..I'm fine . Where are you guys ?

Gail: We're at the hospital. Sagi went crazy yesterday I think the doctors are up to something here . They think she has a mental illness. She's a psychopath Breeze. She is very dangerous not only to people around her but to herself also . They think the stress that we both caused her might have been too much that it triggered it . Did you know she was a psychopath?

Breezes food lost taste as his mouth went dry and his brain twisted. His ears went paralyzed for a second when he slowly chewed the food that was already in his mouth .

Gail: Breeze did you know about this ?

So his wife was a psychopath? He asked himself that as the guilt of ignorant washed him. He couldn't even read through the lines that she herself was burying something that she never wished them to see and he just triggered that . A part of her that

was really evil and they kept on poking it . Or she didn't know also .

Breeze: Give me twenty mins and I'll be there .

Gail: there are good news though..

Breeze: just keep the news till I get there ohk .

He hang up and limped going out and went to the garage and looked for his car keys . He took an Audi R8 keys and got in before reversing and drove off .

At The Lyons Mansion.

Jack watched Jane taking out his clothes and nicely folding them putting them on the bed . The pregnancy was treating her so good that the fact that he arranged a marriage for their daughter without her knowledge broke him . But either way there was no turning back and one way or another

he'll have to tell her . He hated to ruin their happy moments but then it is what it is .

He walked over and took the shirt from her hand and threw it on the bed looking at her . J ane smiled confused when he held her hands in his and kissed them .

J ane: ohk ..what is it ?

J ack: please promise me you wont be mad at me after i tell you this . Well not mad enough to leave me .

J ane: (smiling) Come on tell me . What is it ?

J ack: (swallowed) I made a deal with J acob . This deal involves our daughter and I promise you it's for her well being .

J ane: Ohk .. what kind of a deal is that that you and your friend made involving my Rose ?

J ack: A very huge deal.

J ane: ...ohk

Jack: For her well being. I as the father made the decision that I saw fit for our daughter . Jacob promised to take care of our daughter and make sure she has everything she needs . Medical attention and all they shall ever wish for . Her life will be of an A list . They'll pay all her medical bills and are even willing to send her overseas to get the help she needs past this .

Jane: Jacob cant offer you such huge thing on a silver plater free . What's the catch?

Jack swallowed looking deep in her eyes . This was like kissing good bye to his marriage and daughter on top . But then it was now or never .

Jack : she'll be getting married to Donald on Friday this week traditionally. His family will be here in a day for the Lobola negotiat-

A slap landed on his cheek before he could finish

his sentence. He turned looking at her evil eyes and she stood up looking at him .

Jane: I knew it would come to this . Didn't I say and you said I'm filling your mouth with words ? You arranged my daughter in a marriage Jack . My daughter in a marriage. You went behind our back and arranged a marriage while we should be looking for a way further from this . At the Sanatorium they are coming on Friday and that should be our problem solving for our daughter and we have to spend the little time we have with her but you crossed the lines arranging her in a marriage! How can you even mix the two and besides cant you see that ever since she went out with her uncle she's been lightnin up and you want to -

Jack: Its done Jane . It's set and the wedding will take place on Friday. I canceled with the Sanatorium. And at least for once Jane side with me and stand by my word . I'm the man here and I say .

Jane: You are not a man Jack. What kind of a man does this to his own child? What of a man are you to let another man make a deal of your own child? Wh-

Jack: (shouting) I will not tolerate this. Rose is my daughter as much as she's yours. You always make decisions but they always fail and now it's about time you let me handle this.

Jane:(teary) your right she's yours as much as she's mine. But didn't I have to have a say in this? Jack?

Jack: you had too but you were too angry to listen or even look at me. You ignored me and spend the rest of the week angry with me for no reason. You didn't even want me near you nor hear what I wanted to tell you so that we can sit and come up with a byerr idea yet you expect to know.

Jane: (crying) Jack I'm pregnant.

Jack: that's before I knew and now I'm pretty sure it was the hormones but the decision is made. Deal is done and sealed.

He stood up and looked at her as tears escaped her eyes . He bit his lip and turned walking out as she looked at him .

At the hospital.

Breeze slowly opened the door and stepped in to Sagi and Gail looking at each other holding hands. They both turned looking at him and smiled as he walked over and kissed the both of them and sat with Sagi on the bed .

Breeze: How are you feeling ?

Sagi : Better. Thank God I didn't lose my memory course its stored for better use .

Gail and Breeze swallowed looking at her and she smiled innocently looking at them . Breeze held her hand while the other wrapped around her and she layed on his chest .

Sagi: You both seem tense . What's wrong ?

Gail : Nothing . We're just asking ourselves what if worse could've happened to you ? We wouldn't forgive ourselves.

Sagi: (smiling) nothing is going to happen to me .
Not in a long time .

Sagi closed her eyes inhaling his scent and smiled. It's been so long since she held her like this and it felt so damn good . She opened her eyes to Gail staring at her and finally smiled . She heard Breezes heart pump faster and faster when she frowned and raised her head looking at him .

Sagi: ohk Breeze get away from me and let's all cut the play .

Breeze stood up from the bed and went to stand by Gail and put his hands in the pockets looking at her

as she folded her hands looking at them . The room got so tense when Gail's hands got sweaty and she rubbed them on her shirt.

Sagi: I can do this all day .

Gail: ohk .. I guess its confession time . I'll start .

They both looked at her as she swallowed and looked back at them .

Gail : Yes I slept with Mxolisi . And I dont know how many times I'm gonna say this but I'm not really into him . Yes I fell for him but not so strong to leave you guys and for that I'm sorry . I'm truly sorry . I love you both so much and I dont have a wish to leave . Your mire than what I have ever wished for and I wouldn't ask for more . I'm sorry .

They both quickly turned looking at Sagi who's face had no emotions but neutral. She looked at them

confused in the head and turned looking at Breeze .
Gail said thanked God in her heart and also turned
looking at Breeze. He raised his eyebrows and
rubbed his head looking at them .

Breeze: my confession will be the end of us so I'll
just stand back .

Gail : no Breeze. We are in this together, whatever
you did this is the moment to say your peace .

Breeze looked at them and went pulled the chair to
the door leaving a huge space and sat down as they
both narrowed their eyebrows looking at him . He
took out his hands and rubbed his face . Now or
never . He balanced his hands under his hands and
looked at them .

Breeze: As you know I cheated too . And it you
guys demanded her name . (sighed) its J ane .

They both turned looking at each other before looking back at him as he also looked at them .

Breeze: yeah ..the J ane you know. J ack's wife .

Gail: and how long has this been going on ?

Breeze: It was a once off thing at her office . I tore her panties and put them in my pocket and forgot to get rid of them .

Gail: huh ?

Breeze: And that's not the worst .

Gail: Tell us the worst .

Breeze: She's pregnant.

Gail's jaws dropped as her heart sank right into her stomach. Breeze looked at her and then at Sagi who's been looking at him without any reaction or say though her anger was slowly raising .

Breeze: Sagi . Babe . Its ohk to be angry with me but dont use violence. I know I fucked up big time to the both of you but please don't leave me. I promise to fix my mess and everything will be out of our heads . I love you both so much and-

Sagi: You guys have been pretty busy now weren't you ?

Gail: Sagi ...

Sagi looked at her and she took few steps backwards to the door hiding behind Breeze. Sagi looked at them and sighed leaning back and relaxed watching them standing far away from her

.
. .
. .
. .
. .

Comment

[08/02, 13:42] Lynne : Chapter 39

At the hospital.

In Sagis ward

Sagi looked at them as they stood there staring at her . She could see that there was more to their confession but couldn't put a finger at it . She sighed and leaned back relaxing and looked outside the window.

Sagi: what ?

They looked at each other before looking at her . Breezes heart ached and he sighed walking over to her sitting on the other chair. He looked at her before pulling her hand and kissed it .

Breeze: I won't lie . I'm mad at you . You tend to use violence too much for my liking. Yes you have every right to be angry but brutality is not the right choice course not only are you hurting us but yourself. I know things have been off the ring and hell yeah we fuvked up and for that we're sorry. I didn't know you had this side of you and I'm really sorry that I triggered it .

Sagi: What side are you talking about ? Breeze the only side of me that exists is the one with the love I have for you two and you hurt me .

Breeze: I'm so sorry baby . I'm really sorry and I'm willing to make this right . Right by the both of you .

Gail walked over and stood next to him and he pulled her hand kissing it still holding Sagis then looked at them .

Breeze: Gail . I'mma start with you . I know you said

you dont have feelings for that guy but I have a feeling that that's not true . You cant keep denying yourself to love someone because your scared of me . Dont deny yourself a shot of happiness because of me . Now not that I'm getting rid of you or anything but I think it's best if you go gather up yourself. Dig deeper into your feeling and find out who you want to be with course I cant share you . I promise that whatever decision you make I'll stand by it course I love you . You'll spend a month surrounded by the ocean where you'll have a peace of mind and think straight. I'll talk to Gary to fix the boat for you . I'm not sending you away, I just want us to part in good terms if we are and if we're not then we shall start a new page . I love you .

Gail's eyes welled up looking at him when he stood up and hugged her before kissing her cubing her face .

Breeze: If there's another way please let me know

course right now this is what I can think off . I hate to do this but it's for your own happiness. I love you .

Gail tears rolled when she turned looking at Sagi and walked over hugging her and surprisingly she hugged her back . Breeze rubbed his face facing away .

Gail:(teary) I was gonna hold on to this until we're done talking so that this can bring a little bit of cheer up in the rest of us .

They broke the hug and held hands . She smiled and wiped away her tears looking at Sagi .

Gail: The doctors said your pregnant.

Breeze quickly turned letting go of his face and looked at them .

Sagi: What?

Gail: (smiling) you're pregnant!

Breeze looked at her neutral face as his heart pounded so hard he could barely breathe. A smile slowly started at the corner of her lips and finally widened and Breeze breathed out relaxing smiling. He walked over and stood next to them as they hugged each other and finally kissed . Gail stood up and Breeze pulled Sagi into a tight hug almost blocking the air to pass out of happiness.

Sagi: I-cant-breath..

He quickly let go and they all laughed looking at him and he smiled .

Breeze: I'm sorry..

In Kagiso's ward

Kagiso laid on the bed recalling every memory he spent with his mother. He missed the sound of her voice, her scent, her presence and her eternal love. Everything about her. He kicked the sheets before getting off the bed. It's been a while since he walked around with his own two feet. He closed his eyes and finally opened them walking out to the reception. He got there and leaned on the counter looking at the receptionist.

Receptionist: Hey.. you shouldn't be out of there in fact walking around. You're not fully healed.

Kagiso: I know. But can I make a phone call?

Receptionist: your dad is here, I'm sure he'll see you soon. He's still with his wife.

Kagiso: My dad?

Receptionist: yes. Mr Lyon.

Kagiso :oh. He's .. thank you but I don't want to call him . U want to call my mom and tell her I'm fine . Its been so long and I'm sure she's not doing any good and taking her medication.

Receptionist :I understand but you can't be here . I'm sure we'll find a way to connect with her as for now go back to your ward , your hurting yourself.

Kagiso: common ..just one call just to tell her that I'm fine .

Receptionist : you'll have that moment but for now please go to your ward .

Kagiso looked at her and sighed as his heart sank and he turned walking back. He felt like a prisoner at this moment even though prisoners are allowed to make calls .

At the Lyons Mansion

Jane layed on the bed crying. She knew this was

not right for the baby but she couldn't help it . She finally gathered herself and got off the bed wiping her tears and walked out .

There was no time for crying. If this was the only chance she had with her daughter then she's gatta make the best out of it. She kept the hope that maybe Jack would come back and tell her a different story that she needs to hear to ease her but time kept ticking .

She walked to the kitchen where she usually finds her with Dineo but she wasn't there . She walked back upstairs to her room and gently knocked before getting in but it was empty with no signs of her.

She swallowed walking out to their room and took out her phone dialing her standing by the window.

She put the phone to her ear when she spotted her in the garden playing with their dogs and hang up smiling looking at her running around laughing.

Her laughter was so pleasing and the type to just make you smile on your own. How she missed

seeing this side of her . She had waited for so long and finally she's laughing .

Jane: God please don't let them marry her away please .

At Mxolisi's home .

As he drove closer and closer . He could see his parents yard full of cars and people running around. He hadn't been home in a long time but this is not what he expected to come home too . A celebration. His brother spotted the fancy car and smiled .

Lefa: (shouting) he's here ! Donald has arrived !

The guys started whistling in happiness to see him after so long as they girls started screaming looking at the beautiful , handsome man stepping out of the

car . Mxolisi pulled a cap in the car and wore it hiding his eye as his heart pounded to all the celebrations of his arrival. But to his surprise even eleders walked out ullulating holding anything they could carry dancing in front of him as others slightly swiped dancing.

His brother walked over and they smiled at each other before hugging for almost a minute.

Lefa: Welcome home little one .

Mxolisi: Thank you brother .

They broke the hug looking at each other and finally laughed when their mother stepped out of the house looking classy in her traditional attire. She smiled looking at her son and ran over falling in his arms crying. It's been a while .

Mxolisi's mother(Betty): Oh my baby !

Mxolisi : Hello mother .

Betty: I thought you had abandoned me . Why didn't you visit us ? Did your bosses back at the states refuse you with a -

Mxolisi: no mother . They didn't. J ust that I had a lot of cases the past two years . Even now I do but I had to ask someone to take care of them for me though it took a lot of convincing.

Betty: I miss you so much . Look at you . Your even glowing and all grown hela o slim . Go reng wena le Lefa le o tile ka tsela yee ?(Why are you and Lefa so skinny) weren't you eating ? Are the cases a lot for you to handle?

Mxolisi: Mom I'm fine . And no I'm not skinny I work out . I'm in shape .

Betty : you call this being in shape ? Mxm . I knew that you going there was a bad Idea now look what they did to you there . They put wrong ideas in your head just so you-

Mxolisi: mom ..

Betty: fine but I'm going to make you some food . Go meet your dad he's inside . Welcome back.

Mxolisi: Thank you .

She tried pulling out the cap but he stretched his neck aside so she couldn't reach since she was short and laughed. She smiled before hitting him on the chest and walked away leaving him with his brother. Lefa looked at his fit brother and bit his lip punching him on the stomach when he took few steps back groaning holding his stomach. The girls giggled looking at them as the boys laughed.

Mxolisi : What was that for ?

Lefa :for not coming home for over 2 years and making me the center of everything around here .
Welcome home little one .

Mxolisi: Wow . . . so what's this about ?

Lefa : you should ask dad .

He looked around the yard and it was too full . He spotted a group of girls looking at them and he

waved his fingers for them with a smile and they giggled waving back. He but his lip flirty when his brother unknowingly touched him on the bandage and he flinched.

Mxolisi: Aaw..

Lefa: they're young. What happened to your hand?

Mxolisi : I got a cut . Nothing serious.

Lefa looked at him not buying it and pat his back as they both laughed and walked inside the house .

They walked to the diding and found his uncles and father sitting around with two bottles of strong liquor on the floor. This elders just moved the table just to put their drink on the maths .

They all smiled looking at him and his father stood up stretching his hands apart for a hug . He walked over and they hugged smiling before he greeted everyone else and they sat down .

Jacob: Welcome home son.

Mxolisi: thanks dad .

Uncle 1 : Yeah .. bjale ke monna tia . (Now he's a grown man) I thought we are going to meet that newly fresh blood who was afraid of girls but... no marn . He's looks like he knows where it's hidden. The only thing that has no definition of its goodness. Isn't boy ?

They all laughed and he shyly looked down .

Mxolisi: (smiling) Sorry malome but I dont know what your talking about .

Uncle 2: Hes lying. He knows very well what your talking about . You can't go away this far too long and tell us that you haven't seen a naked woman. Especially in America.

Uncle 1: I know he is lying. Look at his smile . Kana kuku e monate morwa. Right there you wont lie . And I'm sure you also did what you youngster's do

this days during sexual intercourse. What do you call this ? Uhm .. the one where you lick each other ? Lefa lere ke go dira eng ?

Lefa looked at him and finally laughed looking at Mxolisi who bit his lip trying not to laugh . He had forgotten how his uncles love talking about sex more especially when there's a gathering .

Lefa: When a girl uhm .. does you the uhm you know..-

Uncle 3: Bolela morena . Bolela. Bitsa, ere marete. We're all men here .

Lefa: ohk .. when a girl puts puts your penis in her mouth down her throat and you eat her mouth it's called a blowjob and when you lick her vagina it's called muffing.

Uncle: yeah that one . Muffling ..

Mxolisi: Its muffing not muffling.

Uncle: See you even know it . This means you've

licked someone's daughters privates .

They all laughed as Mxolisi's jaws dropped and finally he laughed embarrassed.

Uncle: so tell me son . How does it taste ? Kana I cant do that with Mmago Tshiamo . She was old . How is it ?

Jacob: Steve no . Your damaging my sons even further.

Uncle 2: nah they are already damaged. As long as he knows that woman carry the most special thing in the world between their legs and able to make them cum then that's it . They even know this things Steven is talking about .You did them right son ?your old now your dad wont hit you.

Mxolisi: (shyly) Yes .. and it's good.

Uncle: I told you gore ga a tshabe kuku . Kuku e monate banna .

They all laughed as he kept on praising at how a pussy is like . After a while they all settled down .

Uncle 2: Anke o mpotše mo wena šimane. Are you ready ?

Mxolisi: Ready for what malome ?

Uncle1: (looked at J acob)You haven't told him ?

Mxolisi: Told me what .

Uncle 3 : The reason we're gathered here .

Mxolisi shook his head and turned looking at his father . J acob looked at him and back at the elders .

.

.

.

Comment

[08/02, 13:42] Lynne : Chapter 40

At Mxolisi home .

Mxolisi looked at his father as he explained the reason behind all of this . Everything that has to do with him coming back home . He never thought this things of arranged marriages exist but now that he was in it , he just came to his worst nightmare. The worst thing that has ever happened to him in the last 28 years since he was born . His brain poused for a few mins making a new connection , one that brought anger and disappointment.

He clenched his jaws looking at him and stood up rubbing his head still with the cap on and angrily looked at his father then at his brother.

Mxolisi: You knew about this whole thing Lefa ?

Lefa: if I had known I would have warned you . But either way I think it's for your own good . It's for the

best . Course that's the only way to get into your thick skull Donald . I'm pretty sure the injury on your hand is not because you scratched yourself or whatever. It only came only from an angry man because you like messing people's marriages .

Mxolisi: I told you it's nothing serious. And no actually it's from an angry woman . (To J acob) And dad no . I'm not doing this . Whoever's child you arranged for me to marry tell her the wedding is off .

J acob: I'm not asking you I'm telling you . Your getting married and that's that . My word is final .

Mxolisi: oh maybe your word needs a little bit of correction course I'm not going down that route you planned for me . For christ sake ! I'm old enough to get a woman for myself. The one I love .

Steve: Well tell us then son . Is there anyone you love?

Mxolisi: Yess !

J acob: Where is she ? America ? Let's go meet her course all this preperation isn't going to waste.

Mxolisi: no .. she's here . And you cant meet her dad .

Uncle 2: Why not ? You love her dont you ?

Mxolisi: I do . J ust that .. its complicated.

Lefa: (scoffs) there's nothing complicated brother . I know you . I grew up with you and we've been like a nale and a finger . I know you high and low . Your sideways and center. She's married isn't she ?

Mxolisi: She's not ! You dont understand . (Sat down) I love her (teary) just that ..she doesn't love me to a point where she can leave her man to be with me . I don't know what to do to get her . And it hurts me seeing her with him .

Steve: (shook head) I know the feeling my boy . Painful love .

Uncle 3: But love isn't painful unless it's the pain of parting. That's it right son ?

Mxolisi: I dont know. All I know is I love her so bad uncle .

J acob: if it hurts then it's not real love son . True

love has to be comforting, passionate its like a complex . If that girl doesn't want to be with you then let her be .

Mxolisi: But dad i-

Jacob: if you love her like you say ..then you'll let her be .

Mxolisi's tear escaped his eye when he pulled his shirt wiping his tear and sighed looking at the elders rubbing his palms together .

Jacob: I promise you'll love this girl . She's still young and very smart . I'm not doing this because I hate you son . I'm doing this out of love . You always find it hard to find love and once it landed you in a hospital.

Mxolisi: but dad I dont know the girl you picked for me . She could be crazy and a lot of other bad things .

Jacob: this one is not any of those bad things . She

is beautiful and respectful. Everything you'd ever wish in a woman and everything you ever longed to have in your life.

Uncle2: And you dont have to know precious relationship to with her to know the type of a person she is before the marriage. There is no one kind of love story boy .

Mxolisi: Are you forcing me into this ?

Jacob: An arranged marriage is not the same thing as a forced marriage son . Being forced into marriage is when both parties do not give in full consent into the whole situation but in our case its different. I'm asking you to give in and if your not we get the one you love .

Mxolisi: Shes married dad .

Jacob: then that leaves us with one . I promise you wont regret this .

Mxolisi pulled the cap further covering his eyes and looked down still rubbing his palms together . The

love he has for Gail was so painful to appoint that he himself couldn't explain it . The thought of her being with him now instead of him shattered him as he sat there surrounded by the elders.

He sighed when he stood up putting his hands in the pockets. Maybe moving past this wasn't such a bad idea . And if he declined this he would be putting his family into a big shame on his first day especially when it's all known and popular.

Mxolisi: Let's do it .

The uncle's smiled and stood up hugging him and his father stood up shaking his hand .

Father: I'm proud son .

Shaking hands to this felt wrong and some the feeling of not being fully committed to this washed on him . He wasn't. He looked at them as they

started talking about the negotiations and he swallowed walking out to his room with a heavy heart .

At The Lyons Mansion.

Rose sat on the garden chair with a wide smile looking at the dogs playing . It's been so long since she had this feeling running through all the cells on her body and it felt so good . Dineo walked over with a tray with her lunch and put them on the table looking at her and smiled .

Dineo: you my friend look really happy. What's behind all that smile on your face .

Rose: Its nothing . Just that it's been so long and after I met Kagiso everything just flipped. He is so amazing and...I know .

Dineo: (smiling) Do you like him ?

Rose: Dineo ...

Dineo: You know you cant keep running away from my question right ? One way or another you'll have to put on big girl panties and swallow your fear and confess before they take him .

Rose: A guy is the one that has to make the first move .

Dineo: Who said so ? Who set that rule ?

Rose: it is what it is .

Dineo: Wa ts enwa wena . There's no such a thing that a guy had to make the first move . If you like the guy you have every right to tell him , he could be shy to tell you for all you know.

Rose: No I wont .

Dineo: then consider it your loss if you dont .

She kissed her forehead before getting back to work leaving Rose with a scared heart . She wouldn't want to lose him . He's the only person that has managed to pull her out of the darkness she been held up in slowly and she could feel herself getting

there . She picked her drink and drank when J ane walked over sitting next to her and picked a sandwich from her plate.

J ane: (chewing) this is good .

Rose: mom... that's myn .

J ane: I'm sorry hunny but the little one wanted a taste .

Rose : (smiling) how is the baby ? I cant wait for its arrival.

J ane: the baby is fine . And you ?

Rose: I'm also good.

J ane: this days your glowing and your always smiling. Whose behind this new baby of mine ?

Rose:(blushing) no one mom .

J ane: I know that smile . Who is he or she ? Dineo ?

Rose: No .. it's no one .

J ane: please tell me . You know baby you and i

never had the mother and daughter sort of bond . We never had the chance too course it should have started at your early age . For you to know the indescribable mother love I have for you . Have a mother daughter strong bond .Go shopping, spars and all those girly things we should be doing . Sit with you down and you get to tell me about your dreams and all your plans for the futer . And ofcourse boys . (Rose smiled) Being your role model baby . But the time has passed and now your old . And it hurts me that I don't have much time left to be with you .

She pulled Rose into a hug as tears burned her eyes .

Jane: to get to hold you like this everytime, anytime and anywhere I like. And get to tell you countless time how much I love you . (closed eyes) I love you my Rose .

Rose: (teary) I love you too mom .

They hugged for a while and finally let go holding hands smiling .

Rose: his name is Kagiso .

Jane: (smiling) hhhmmm ..

Rose: He's a good guy. He's always smiling. He's handsome with long hair and brown eyes . He even has a dimple like uncle Breeze. He's crazily handsome mom . When I'm with him ..I tend to feel this connection that I cant explain. And when I part with him ..i feel like I'm leaving a part of me behind. Like something is-

Jane: Missing?

Rose: Yeah .. missing . He makes me laugh and when he touches my hand like he always does, I feel butterflies in my stomach. He knows what to say when I tell him my problems and help me ease. He's just so amazing mom. I don't really know him that much course we just met but mom ..?

Jane: yess baby ?

Tears started rolling down her cheeks as her heart started pounding so hard on her chest. Jane smiled looking at her and yep this is love and she herself could feel it . It's a short of her daughters happiness .

Rose: (crying) mom ..I'm scared . I dont know why . The feeling I have just scares me course j never felt like this before. It's new to me and so strong and I'm afraid its gonna hurt me . It's just so strong it keeps pulling me to him . I think I'm g-

Jane: (smiling) it's called LOVE . Your inlove baby . The strong feeling you feel right now its love my baby. And its ohk to be scared at first but when you hold on to his hand and allow him to walk the journey with you its gonna grow strong and stronger that you will not want to let go scared to lose him . So scared you will be willing to do anything and everything just to be with him .

Sacrifice everything just so you can hold on to that hand and the key to his heart . You never had the chance to date . To be with a guy before and I too as your mother have a feeling that he's the one you've been waiting for . He's yours . And if you find him , dont let go . He's your happiness .

Rose narrowed her eyebrows hearing her say that . It was not for the first time she heard that . Her heart started beating so hard on her chest as she looked at her mother squeezing her hands .

Rose: Nakedi..

Jane: What ?

Rose: its him! The animal in my dreams . The big kind . Its him !

The dream replayed in her head as she looked deep in her mothers eyes .

"Find him ..and when you do , dont let go .. he's your happiness. Find him "

Rose: mom its him ..!

Tears rolled out uncontrollably as she kept replaying it . Jane looked at her turning red crying and this hurt her so much that she pulled her letting her cry on her chest and shushed her .

Rose: (crying) its him ...

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

Comment

[08/02, 13:43] Lynne : Chapter41 .

At The Lyons Mansion.

Jack walked into the house talking over the phone and walked to his office facing out of the window. He saw Rose laying on Jane's chest crying and sighed sitting on his chair and pinned his elbow on the table.

Jack: Are you sure your son is not going to abuse my daughter Jacob ?

Jacob: my son is not the type to hurt woman Jack. He'd rather let her hurt him than him hurting her. And not once have I ever received a call or parental coming her to complain about his behavior except for married man .

Jack: Then if he likes married woman how are you

so sure he's not going to bring married woman into the house and start abusing my daughter?

Jacob: I'll personally make sure that that doesn't happen Jack. I'll make sure that when we gather around as men to advise him we make sure it stays in the mind. I'll put an eye on her like a daughter I never had.

Jack: Fine. So you talked to your son?

Jacob: yeah and he agreed. I was thinking since we are done here, family has gathered already and everything is ready, how about we speed this up? We should come tomorrow for the negotiations.

Jack: Come on Jacob. What's the rush? I still want to spend this few hours with her.

Jacob: your the one who said you want this over and done with. So tomorrow we're coming.

Prepare her. We'll send an attire for her that she'll be wearing tomorrow course it'll also be a traditional wedding.

Jack: they still have to go to -

Jacob: that can be arranged. I told you to leave the rest to me .bye

He hang up and he rubbed his nose before standing up looking outside the window seeing them coming into the house . He swallowed and walked to the living room where they were entering and he stood there looking at him . They both stopped and Jane sighed looking at him . He knew this look and he didn't like it at all .

Jack: Can we sit down . We need to talk .

Jane: not now Jack .

Jack: no we need to get on with this . Sit .

Jane and Rose sat down looking at him when he rubbed his hands together and looked at Rose . He was not prepared to lose his only child but if it meant getting married for her to be on her right state of mind then that's it .

Jack: Rose baby . You know I love you right?

Rose: Yes .

Jack: and everything that I do , i do it for your own good .

Rose: i know.

Jack: What I'm about to tell you is the center of hate towards a parent but know that I did this because I love you .

Jane: Jack please dont do this. She's our daughter.

Jack: that's right . Our daughter. And we have to do anything in our power to make sure she's safe and fine and this is the only way .

Rose: What is is dad ? Please dont tell me your sending me to the Sanatorium, I hate it there .

Jack swallowed and looked at her as she looked back at him. His only priority. His only child . His first Rose .

Jack: Tomorrow your getting married.

Every body part of Rosella poused looking at her father with a straight face . The room went quiet and only the sound of workers ,birds and dogs was heard . Thus was another level of hatred, last level in the book of living . Rose scoffed looking away unbelievably shocked by what he just said .

Rose: What ?

Jack: I'm sorry hunny but its final . Your getting married .

Rose's eyes flooded with tears looking at her father and she stood up looking at her parents. Right now she could just split on them the way she was so disgusted by the whole thing they sat up for her .

Rose: You know I thought maybe you were starting to walk in my shoes with me dad. But all you do is put more pressure and more weight above my heart and shoulders. You enjoy seeing me in pain and always crying in sorrow. You claim to love me yet you not . You enjoy this side of me and you don't want to see me happy .

Jack: I do . That's why I arranged this for you just so you can get the help you need .

Rose: (shouting) the help I need ? Really dad ? The help I need ? Dad I need my family ! Right now I need my family more than ever but you are selling me out ! I need you !

Jack: I'm not selling you out . I'm just doing what's best for you as a father . And when your all grown with your own family you'll understand that as a parent you'll have to do everything and take sacrifices for your children.

Rose : Even when it hurts them ? Hell no . Yess I'll take sacrifices but not the ones that'll affect them so bad like this . I will be a better parent than you'll

ever be !

Jane: Rose !

Rose: Oh wait ..is this you plan to get rid of me because you have a baby on the way ?

Jack: You know we'll never do that to you ? Why would we do that.

Rose: I don't know dad ! You tell me . Is it because I can't move on past my best friend? Have I wasted your time enough and now I've got to leave ? You getting pregnant was a way to get rid of me wasn't?

Jack: (shouting) I will not take this from you Rosella. Your old enough to get married so stop acting like a brat , a child . And no . This baby came to us as a blessing not a push away. Your getting married tomorrow and my word is final ! Go to your room and get a rest tomorrow your in laws will be here .

Rose: (crying) Dad I'm 18 .

Jack: That's why your getting married. Your no longer a child and this is for your own good .

Rose silently cried listening to her heart break while beating so hard on her chest walking to her bedroom.

Jane: How could you do this to our daughter? I thought you said in 2 days . Look what you've done. Aargh ..

Jane walked up the stairs going to Rose's room and knocked on her door leaving Jack pressing his phone.

Jane : hunny open the door . Talk to me. Let's talk.

Rose: (crying inside) leave me alone . Too late for talking.

At the Hospital.

Breeze walked out of Sagis ward and went to Kagiso's ward and gently knocked before going in . Kagiso smiled and they fist bumped and he sat down.

Breezes: You look better . When are they discharging you ? You've been here for a while now . Son .

Kagiso: (chuckles) you already told everyone that I'm your son Mr Lyon. And dont know ,maybe next week .

Breeze: ohk .. yess your my son . And as my son you need a new name that I'll only use on you . How about Amory?

Kagiso: (laughs)That's a girl name Mr Lyon.

Breeze: Dad for you and no it's not a girl name , kinda. (narrowed eyebrow)

Kagiso: no ...its too girly...dad .

Breeze: Ohk how about Barin ?

Kagiso: that's a Teutonic name.

Breeze: that's the point. I want you to have a unique name just like myn .

Kagiso: Breeze? Is it unique? (Chuckles)

Breeze : Kinda and kinda not . And since you dont want any name I give you . I'm going to give you a crazy one . Bear .

Kagiso: As in like "Bear" ? Wow that the most weirdest name one has ever given me . Bear? That an animal.

Breeze: yess . It's an English name meaning brave , courageous and daring. Goes well with you . You managed to escape death knocking on your door by an angry community and had courage to go further running for your life and when you got here you fought. And I see now your daring to go back there isn't?

Kagiso: I can't just abandon my mom like that . She's the only one I have left and I dont know anyone from my family. I tried talking to the receptionist to let me talk to her just to say I'm fine ,I've been in the hospital to put her in ease . And

when this whole thing happened she was sick and I hadn't bought her medication. I'm sure its finished .

Breeze: where do you work ? Do they pay you enough to cover ever bill ?

Kagiso: I wasn't really working like a real job but i was hustling. I am making traditional jewelry and I can also paint . I sell fruits with this old lady who is very kind and understanding and at the same time we make the pieces at the rank . I get at least R50 a day just to have something in our stomachs but if we sold more pieces we both leave with maybe 300R each . I was also thinking of painting something and take it to Gail's Gallery to advertise my work like other people and get more money to buy my mom her medication. Plus the rent . Gatta pay the rent.

Breeze: R50 a day ? What if it's not enough by the end of the month and your moms medication is finished?

Kagiso: Gamble .

Breeze: What ?

Kagiso: yep .

Breeze: Then if you are . The last time you gambled it was your last time Bear. Kiss gambling illegally good bye . Are you done with school ?

Kagiso: Yeah ...matric and never had money to study further.

Breeze: ohk . How about we make a deal .

Kagiso: What sort of deal ?

Breeze: I will give you 2.5 per month to cover everything you'll need and I'll also pay for your studies and in return you study hard and make sure that you stay out of trouble.

Kagiso: that's it ? Study and stay out of trouble? Come on . What's the catch?

Breeze: I see myself in you boy. Though my story is different but it's a but similar. We both had to do whatever we gotta do whether lawful or unlawful just to keep living. We are willing to take risks even though they can turn out so bad from what we had imagined. We can even break the law just to hustle

for our own living and not get scared of the outcome course we know it'll come down to that . Put others before ourselves. And I don't know why but I don't want you to go through that anymore course I can see your about to ruin your future like I did . I wont let you do the same mistakes I did . J ust promise to stand by me and let me be your friend. A friend you never had .

He stretched his hand to him and Kagiso stretched his and they shook hands. Kagiso swallowed looking at him . He never had someone do that for him and somehow he felt what he was saying . He was serious.

Breeze took out his phone and unlocked giving it to him .

Breeze: You can call your mom . I'll be back . My wife is not so good she's here .

Kagiso : I'm sorry. Is she responding well?

Breeze: yes ... let me go buy their food before they eat me alive .

He walked out and Kagiso dialed his mother as he got anxious to hear her voice .

At Kagiso's house.

Veronica stepped out of the house holding a bucket full of dirty water walking towards back of the house and disposed it . She rubbed her hand on her skirt and walked back and put the bucket besides the house and got into the house .

That girl has been helpful so much she herself didn't know how to thank her . She took out two slices of bread and applied peanut butter on and put everything back before taking her tea and sat on one of the chairs Bonolo bought her and ate .

Her Nokia phone rang and she put her cup down picking the phone and looked at the unfamiliar

number before answering.

Her: Hello...

Kagiso: Mama ...

The bread slipped out of her hand and fell on the floor as her heart danced in joy as her eyes flooded. She put her hand on her mouth trying so hard not to let him hear that she was crying but failed when she busted into tears .

Veronica: (crying) Kagiso..? Is that you ngwana wa ka ? (Is that you my child)

Kagiso: it's me mom . How are you ?

Veronica: but ..but how .. they said your dead and ..I couldn't find you . Oh my son I thought you left me forever. Where are you ? What happened? Are you ohk ? Did they hurt you really bad? Is-

Kagiso: (smiling) mom I'm fine . After I managed to

escape Mr Lyon found me and took me to the hospital. Right now as we speak I'm still at the hospital and I'm better . How are you ?

Veronica: I'm holding on . Do you know how much I prayed for you . Thank God he heard my prayers . I miss you.

Kagiso: I miss you too mom . How are you feeling? Have you been taking your medication? Do you still have enough food?

Veronica: (smiling) Oh my boy. I'm fine . Yes I've been taking the medication and eating a kere you girlfriend is forcing me too ? She's an amazing girl and very stubborn. She doesn't take no for an answer.

Kagiso: Bonolo?..

Veronica: Yeah .. Haayii this girl fight for what she wants shem . She is so generous. She bought my medication, food and also helped with the rent . You chose well son .

Kagiso: Thanks mom .

Bonolo knocked on the door and walked in to Veronica smiling with tears of joy running down her cheeks. She smiled walking over and sat on the other chair looking at her.

Veronica: I'm serious. She's a lovely girl full of patience. Efela o nale hlogo e thata gore !

Kagiso: (smiling) She's cxxl. Was she the one knocking? Please let me talk to her.

Veronica: ohk son .

Bonolo narrowed her eyebrows to that "son" and took the phone putting it on her ears listening attentively.

Kagiso: Nolo ?

Bonolo: Oh my God!

Her heart skipped filling her with happiness and tears rolled out. She put her hand on her face crying in joy when Veronica stretched her hand rubbing her back smiling at her.

Kagiso: (smiling) come on babe . Dont cry .

Bonolo: (crying) I thought I lost you .

Kagiso: you could never lose me . Stop crying your breaking my heart .

Bonolo: But how .. ? Where are you ?

Kagiso: I was found and brought to the hospital in time . I'm still here . *****hospital.

Bonolo: I'm coming !

She put the phone in Veronica's hand without wanting to hear further and kissed her cheek rushing out. Veronica smiled and put the phone on her ear .

Kagiso: Bonolo?

Veronica: She's already gone. Which hospital are you at ?

Kagiso: no mom . You sit home and recover . I dont want you on a taxi across the city trying to get here, I want you healthy and back on your feet .

Veronica: (sarcastically) fine ...

The both basted laughing and continued talking over the phone .

Back at the hospital.

After having a long chat with his mother catching up they finally hang up and he sighed smiling. She had an angelic voice she could listen to her all day . He looked at the phone and tapped it and it wasn't locked . He went to his galley and looked at the beautiful clear picture of Gail and Sagi . They were the ones whose picture are a lot in here . Talk about

beautiful black woman . All hail to Black Woman .

He watched videos and they seemed so happy together but how the hell does he manage with two woman . I mean he has one dick .

He shook his head when the door opened and Breeze walked in holding a small plastic bag and put it on the table looking at the phone and now it had his picture shirtless stepping out of the pool all wet . He narrowed his eyes and looked at Kagiso .

Breeze: Are you gay ?

Kagiso: (laughing) What ? No .. here thanks . I was just looking at your pictures .

Breeze: Did you see anything?

Kagiso: Anything like ? Nudes ?

Breeze: You saw my woman naked Bear?

Kagiso: No ! No ! No! I didn't. I just looked at the once on top .

Breeze: Whatever..here's your food . Catch you

later . I gatta go son .

Kagiso: Bye Mr dad .

The both laughed and he walked out . He picked the plastic and the smell of fries hit his nostrils watering his mouth . He took out the food and opened them the started eating . The thought of getting to see Bonolo got him smiling and he couldn't wait to see her too.

In Sagis ward .

The girls ate their food while Breeze sat on the chair shooting a video of them unknowingly drinking his energy drink . They said something to each other and laughed and he smiled cutting the video and edited it with a song before posting it on his status .

"Cant get enough of them "

A while later he picked the rubbish and went to throw them in the trash bin and walked back sitting next to Sagi on the bed .

Sagi: you guys should go . Your going to work tomorrow. I'll be fine.

Gail: Actually I'm going away for a month . So I guess I'll remain here and spend my last hours with you .

Sagi: Dont remind me. Babe ?

Breeze: mmnhh..?

Sagi: I love you . I love you both .

Both: love you too .

Sagi: You should go get some rest . You look drained . Go sleep . I'll be fine .

Breeze: no ..I'm not going anywhere. I want to be here with you . All of you.

They all got on the bed even though they weren't fitting as they snuggled. They all laughed looking at how they were .

Sagi: guys this is a single bed .

Gail: as long as we're sleeping together, it can break for all we care .

Breeze: Come one of you . Let one of you sleep on me

Sagi quickly tossed and got on top of him and they all laughed as she layed her head on his chest like a baby . They started chatting one last time together before tomorrow arrives and finally fell asleep on the poor bed all three .

Around 21h00 .

Bonolo rushed out of the car slamming the door

and pressed the lock button as she ran into the building. She stopped at the door and ran back unlocking it and opened the door taking out a plastic bag and a basket of fruits and kicked the door pressing the lock key . She walked into the building and headed to the receptionist.

Bonolo : Hey .. I'm here to see Kagiso Mokwena.

Receptions: ohk ..but ausi you know visiting our have-

Bonolo : please mma . Kana he's my boyfriend and I haven't seen him in a while since he got attacked by the community. I know it's no excuse but please leka go thaloganya the mma wena .

Receptionists: ohk fine . Sign here . And I'll go show you where he is . Le lena la tena banana . Ke tirong le tlo mpakela mathata .

Bonolo: kopa o intshwarele ne mma .

Receptionist : go siame .

She put the pen down and they walked to Kagiso's ward . Her heart got heavy and excited with every step closer until they were at the door . The receptionist walked away to the bathroom as Bonolo breathed in and out before walking in .

She smiled looking at him peacefully laying on the bed facing up and she put everything on the table .

She looked at him and by just doing that her panties soaked as her whole body longed to feel his hands all over her . She had missed him so bad .

She went to lock the door and came back leaning in for a kiss waking him up and French kissed. From the scent Kagiso put his hand around her neck pulling her even further and used another one helping her on the bed sitting on his stomach. He help take off her sweater and top when he came face to face with her teenage babies and smiled looking at her with his monster stretching now and then .He cubed her breast into his hands and lifted his upper body sucking on them as she moaned out loud holding on to his head . Damn they both have longed for this *****

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

.comment

[08/02, 13:43] Lynne : Chapter 42 .

Around at Night .

At the Lyons Mansion

Jack sent several messages to their family members and sighed looking at Breezes number. He was certainly not coming even though he was invited. First of all about their feud and secondly because he is marrying Rose to another family . This whole thing of them always fighting was

starting to get on his last nerve and sometimes he just thinks on giving up because it seems like he's the only one trying to reach out . But then this was about his daughter and as the only uncle around he should be available.

He sent the message and leaned back rubbing his face . This was it .

At Mxolisi's home .

The whole crowd sang different wedding songs outside around the fire rejoicing. Other men gathered around their own fire having drinks over some chats laughing out loud. A white van drove in and the cousin's ran over helping to lift off the huge pots and plastic chairs . It was really happening and the vibe that was flying around the place was of joy .

Meanwhile Mxolisi sat on the relaxing couch with his hands under his head as a pillow looking up the ceiling listening to the crowd singing . So his father was serious about rushing the whole thing . Its

happening. He never believed in this whole thing of parents choosing partners for their children but now that it is happening to him he now knows how it is . Frustrating, pissing and all those bad emotions. He thought this whole thing was left in the elderly days but nah ...not in his family.

So now he has no choice but to leave the woman he loves and learn to live with another one that he barely even know .

He shook his head when someone knocked on his door and he closed his eyes pretending to sleep . He was not in the mood for company at this moment. Right now he wished Sagi could just go to the police and open a case against him so he could go to jail .

His mother stood on the door and smiled looking at him . It's been a while since she's seen her baby and it felt so good to finally see him again . Well and alive .

She walked in and went to his closet taking out a fleece and covered him . Even at the age of 29 , he

still doesn't know what the bed is for nor how to sleep properly.

Betty: somethings very change ,huh? Get a rest my boy . Few hours left .

She smiled touching his beard and chuckled at how he's grown and sighed before walking put closing the door behind her . Mxolisi opened his eyes looking at the ceiling and sighed , and yeah this also refers to his inconsiderate father .

Mxolisi: Yeah ... something's never change .

At the Hospital

Around 4 am .

This was something their bodies and souls have been longing for. The feeling of each been around each other and the warmth. Being in each others arms .

Kagiso pulled Bonolo's even closer with him still plugged in her while asleep and she smiled in her sleep and so did he . A very stingy wind covered Kagiso when he frowned holding her even tight and pulled the blanket on them . This was so odd . Ain't no way such wind can get through such walls and besides the window was closed .

He slowly opened his eyes when he caught site of a girl standing by the bed looking at them. The girl in a white dress and lose her on her shoulders, dark skinned beauty. This time her face so clear and God was she beautiful with those heart shaped lips .

She looked deep in his eyes like she didn't notice that he was with someone on the bed , in his arms on top of that . His heart pounded at her look and he slowly let go of Bonolo and got up leaning back .

He but his lip before pulling the blanket over Bonolo

and looked back at this girl .

Kagiso : Ohk ... are you just gonna stand there staring? How long have you been standing there ?

Nakedi: Long enough . I'm always around just that sometimes you block me away .

Kagiso: block you away ? Who are you ?

Nakedi : I'm Nakedi .

Kagiso: Im-

Nakedi: I know who you are otherwise I wouldn't be here .

Kagiso: your voice sounds familiar. Have I seen you before?

Nakedi: Yep .

Kagiso: Ohk .. what do you want ? I mean you show up out of blue everytime and, how the hell are you even in here course I'm pretty sure that that door was locked course a nurse tried to open it ?

Nakedi: J ust know I got in

Kagiso: What do you want from me ? Why do you keep following me ? And oh yeah .. I remember seeing you in my dreams . Why do I dream about instead of dreaming about my girlfriend? What do you want course clearly you want something from me ?

Nakedi: Your the chosen one .

Kagiso: Can you at least be more specific and stop with the commas ? Last time I saw you you said the same thing . Chosen wara wara .

Nakedi:(smiling) Ohk .. your the chosen one .
Chosen by a friend.

Kagiso: And who's and which friend is that ?

Nakedi: Me . I'm the fiend and I chose you because your the only person that can make my friend happy. She's happy when shes with you . Kagiso when she's with you nothing else matters . You can even go far to sayinh that you and her were somehow or somehow are meant to be .

Kagiso raised his eyebrows looking at her as she smiled looking at him and he rubbed his eyes .

Kagiso: am I dreaming?

Nakedi: Yep .

Kagiso: What ? !

Nakedi: And now I need your help. Today something is going to happen that shouldn't. A huge mistake .

Kagiso: I wanna wake up .

Nakedi: you are dreaming not dead Kagiso . Go stop it . Your the only one who can help her . Your her happiness and she's yours .

Kagiso: Wait.. "she " ?

Kagiso popped from the bed with a pounding heart and sweat all over him . The air in the room covered him making him shiver a bit as he looked around .

Bonolo rubbed her eyes waking up and looked at him before putting her hand on his chest.

Kagiso: It was just a dream . Calm down. It's just a dream. Let's sleep.

The screen of her phone lightened when the bith looked at it on the floor . She had put it on silence . She sighed looking at him and slowly helped him back as he tried to figure out what that was about stating at the ceiling.

Kagiso: I'm not a ghost right? I'm not dead ? When shes around it's cold? Is that how death is like ? Cold not in peace and cool is?

Bonolo: What ?

Kagiso: Is it ?

Kagiso: Well .. I dont know. I've never died before and never seen a ghost or anything after life . What's all the creepy questions about? Are you

alright?

Kagiso: Uhm ..nothing .. I'm fine. I'm sorry , let's sleep.

He pulled her to lay on his chest before kissing her head and they both settled and in a while they drifted.

At the Lyons Mansion.

The time never stops ticking and the world never stops revolving just because you have problems. Rose layed on the bed with her stomach and puffy eyes with no tears left to cry in the dark room . She never had her sleep since yesterday and even now she didn't feel like sleeping. At this moment she missed the only person who was able to comfort her through hard times .

Rose : Where are you ? I need you Nakedi . My life is

a mess .

The sound of cars driving into the yard made her heart skip listening and she could tell it wasn't one car , but more cars . She closed her eyes listening to the pain in her heart as it all sank in . She was being sold out to a man she doesn't know nor have seen before. So much for loving parents.

In the living room. The Lyon elders walked in looking around the beautiful mansion and smiled at one another. Jane and Jack walked down the stairs wearing respectfully and greet the elders before they sat down and Jane went to make them tea .

Lyon uncle: Wena monna . Are you crazy ? A man your age Jack doesn't know that you have to inform the family earlier that there's a man asking for our daughters hand in marriage?

Jack : in really sorry that I didn't informed you

earlier. I know I was wrong . J ust that when they came they came a few weeks back and this will also help us with her health too . We decided to speed things up so she could be under their care and -

Aunt: Wena wa hlola J ack. You have a lot of zeros in your account yet you fail to find the best solution to your child's problem with it . If you cant make use of it then what's it for you to have it ? Why do you have to bow down to another man when he comes with a deal especially the one that involves your only child ?

J ack: Like I said . We tried and I'm really sorry that you had to drop all your problems and come to support us . And trust me when I say I'm doing this for her .

Lyon ucle 2: This child needs non of that J ack . She needs you two . Breeze. Her family. Emotional support from you is the one that can help her through this .

Aunt: Exactly.

J ack: I understand your angry and dont support my

decision but it's done. Rose is getting married today and I'm going to need you through all this.

Jane brought the tea and poured into the cups as they threw Jack with insults and and all . She gave them each their cups and passed around them giving them cupcakes . She too took hers and say down looking at them as they chatted .

Aunt: So where are they ? Dont they know that its rude to be late ? Besides if today it's to be the traditional wedding Rose has to leave the house before sun rise .

Jane: (teary) Does she really have to leave ...today?

Uncle: after the negotiations she has to go with her in laws makoti . We should try to fit everything together in this short period of time . After she leaves here I think they'll be introducing her to the ancestors and then tomorrow they'll be going to the home affairs and make this official. I dont know about the white wedding.

Uncle 2: That one can always follow after . Even if it's two years from now or 10 (shrugged)

A car bell disturbed them when Jane's heart skipped and she closed her eyes as tears burned her eyes . The aunt looked at her and sighed . No woman deserves to go through this , even she wouldn't be happy about this whole thing if it was her own child .

Two uncles and one aunt stood up heading out to the gate where Mxolisi's family was waiting, and him in the car .

Mxolisi's uncle took out a 500R of notes and put them on the ground and a whiskey and stepped back greeting them but they didn't answer . He took out another 500R and that's when they welcomed them into the Lyon property .

They parked the car and stepped out leaving Mxolisi

in the car . He sighed looking around and saw that he recognized this house from somewhere . From media platforms . He raised his eyebrows and took out his phone and went to the contacts looking at Gail's numbers when his father knocked on the window and he rolled it down .

Jacob: Remember your not allowed to step out of the car right ? Not until we come to get you .

Mxolisi: What if I want to use the bathroom?

Jacob: you've had sex countless times so I'm pretty sure you can hold on to the pee .

Mxolisi: (smiling) Dad its different.

Jacob: then you'll suck it up . Use that water bottle.

Mxolisi: no ..I'd rather hold on . Thanks .

Jacob smiled before walking away and he rolled up the window looking at Gail's numbers. He clenched his jaws and called her .

Meanwhile inside .

The aunt took Jane and they walked upstairs holding a garment bag leaving the men to negotiate.

They got to Rose's room and tried opening the door but it was locked . Jane gently knocked on the door waiting for her response.

Jane: Rose baby .. please open the door . Hunny ?

Rose: (crying) I dont want this mom . I dont want to get married.

Jane: I'm so sorry hunny but it's the only way .

Rose: is that what you think ? You gave up on me also .

Jane: hunnu I'd never give up on you , you know that .

Rose: then please understand when I say I dont want to get married. I'm still young to get married. Im not ready to settle down and start a family yet ,

especially with someone I hardly know .

Jane: open the door and lets talk . Please...

Rose rubbed her tears and got off the bed standing by the window looking at the cars outside . For a second , suicide crossed her mind when she warned herself and sniffed walking towards the door .

If this is what they want to have peace of mind then the least she can do is give in , besides she wasted much of their time trying to help her while she didn't and threw their help right at their faces .

She took a deep breath and opened the door when Jane hugged her so tight that they both even cried . They broke the hug and she hugged the aunt and they switch on the light before closing the door and she stood amongst it looking at them .

Aunt: How are you feeling my girl ?

Rose: I'll be fine . Actually I'm fine . If this is what

mom and dad want so they could have peace in their house by getting rid of me , then fine . I'll do it .

Jane: Hunny ..

Rose: Why dont you save the whole speech for the little one coming . I hope you do better by her than with me .

Aunt: Rose ..

Rose: No aunt. I've had it with the pretense to care about me . Look at me . I'm not stable . At this point I need my parent to be with me every step of the way . To support me emotionally so I could find myself again . But instead they sell me out . I'm really sorry mom for being a busted daughter probably one of the regretful things on your list . Sorry for the disappointment. For loving my friend so much .

Jane: (crying) Rose i-

Rose: Let's cut the pep talk mom .(sarcastic)I'm getting married. It's my wedding day . Dont make me sad though I'm sad ...oh God ..I hate you both . I hate you all .

Aunt: Rose that's n-

Rose: I'm going to take a shower . I wont be long .

She walked away leaving them standing there .

Jane's eyes welled up and finally dropped when the aunt hugged her and sat her on the bed hugging her

.

Aunt: She's still angry . She doesn't mean any of the thing she said .

Jane: (crying): she hates me .

Aunt: Right now it's not the time Jane . You are gonna have to be strong for her . She's having a tough time so the least you can do is stay positive for her . Its ohk for her to lash out like that , because she's in pain other than going to lash put on her Inlaws . Stop crying .

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .

I'm really sorry if I messed up fam . I dont know what is what on traditional weddings.

- .
- .

Comment

[08/02, 13:44] Lynne : Chapter 43

At the Lyons Mansion.

In finding out how much she was worth, Mxolis'i's uncles had some few differences that they had to put into consideration. Some of the questions included her level of education and as well as her virginity status . Her property, if whether she had a

child and also Mxolisi's status .

Once everything was cleared about them the Lyon family named their price of each cow and multiplied it with the number of cows they demanded and it came to a price of 50 000R .

The Lyon uncle looked at Jack and shook his head looking at Mxolisi's family and they looked at him .

Jacob: Is everything alright?

Lyon uncle : This child is worth more than this . Remember she's still a virgin. No child and yes she might not have education but she's still growing and going to school ,clearly she'll be more than this . So we add up with another 20 000 .

Steve: Aowa bagolo . We don't have that amount on us . We have 65 000 in this case and no more than that . We also came baring gifts.

Lyon uncle 2: then what are you doing here with shortage of money . And yes it's a must to come with gifts.

Jacob: (raised hand) its ohk .. with all due respect my elders . We are sorry we have shortage of money , and I know what I'm about to say will sound disrespectful . Is it ohk if we transfer the rest of the money into your account?

Lyon uncle 1: Now that's total disrespect on another level son . But since we are running out of time I think that's our only option.

Jacob: Thank you .

The other uncle shook his head and Jacob transferred the remaining money in Jack's account and showed it to them . This was not what they agreed on . 70 000 ? Who on earth marries with 70 000? . Especially in south Africa.

They gave the family the money case and put two bottles of expensive liquor on the table shaking hands . Jacob and the uncles stood up heading out and found Mxolisi sitting inside the car busy in social media looking at a females picture.

Jacob: it's done son . She's officially part of our family.

Mxolisi: Right .

Jacob :(looking at the picture) Is that her ?

Mxolisi :yeah. But it doesn't matter anymore right ?
My relationship with her .

He switched off his phone and put it in his pocket leaning back ribbing his face as he stood there looking at him while the uncles offloaded everything.

Mxolisi: She didn't even answer her phone . At least to hear me out dad .

Jacob : And what were you gonna say to her ?

Mxolisi: I wanted to hear her voice for one last time and ..maybe to say goodbye.

Jacob : I hate to see you like this and I'm so sorry that I'm not sorry to have arranged this for you . And hate to day that from the look of an eye , you might

not be her first choice if she can do this to you . You tried to save your relationship with her but it failed son . Despite the effort, course that one I'm sure you put it .

Mxolisi: what are you saying dad ?

Jacob: I'm just saying..sometimes there comes a life time where we fail in relationships despite all the energy and effort because some relationships are just not meant to be . And maybe yours it's also not meant to be .

Mxolisi: and you think this relationship with this girl I dont even know her name will last ?

Jacob: her name is Rosella. Rosella Lyon.

Mxolisi jaws dropped when he moved his hands from his face looking at his father .

Mxolisi : As in like Lyon, Lyon? Breeze Lyon?

Jacob: yeah .. Breeze Lyon is her uncle. You have a phone but you dont make use of it , why are you

still having it ?

Mxolisi: that's because I didn't know her name dad.
Oh fuck !

Jacob: mind your language. Come on in .
Everything is finalized they are waiting for you .

Mxolisi: for what ?

Jacob: your their son Inlaw so they are ready and
waiting to accept you as part of their family . Then
from here we are going home and have a little
celebration to introduce her to our ancestors and
then ..

Mxolisi : and then what ?

Jacob : and then she's yours for the night. We'll be
sitting outside while you guys do whatever you like
course you'll be husband and wife.

Mxolisi : oh my goodness..

Jacob: yeah ..now get out and be a man . Go
accept your wife .

Meanwhile upstairs.

Rose sat on the traditional mat wearing her elegant traditional attire that suited her perfectly revealing her hourglass body as the elders advised her.

Hearing them saying everything like this got her heart pounding so hard as tears ran down her cheeks.

She thought she had found her happiness and just then she's being swiped away from it. Her mind drifted to Kagiso as she thought the dream through. When she's around him, she is like a different person. She becomes happy and her souls spread its wings and fly enjoying the moment free without anything holding her back. Like everything else disappears and nothing matters. She smiled picturing his smile and his laughter. The way his eyes spark when he blushes and smile and how his dimple deeply appears when he laughs through his head backwards revealing his Adam's apple.

A knock on the door interrupted them when she

skipped and Jane looked at her as a tear ran down Rose's cheek looking at her father on the door .

Jack: its time ..

Jane and Rose swallowed looking at him and looked at each other . The aunt walked over to Rose and helped her stand fixing her . Even though she refused to wear makeup she still looked even beautiful and the head wrap even more .

Aunt: Remember what we told you my girl every step of the way . And remember this will always be your home though you no longer are a Lyon . You have no room ,plate or whats oever you used to have here . Put love and respect ahead as you always do .

Rose shook her head looking down at her fingers fiddling with them trying not to cry . Jane walked over and pulled her into a tight hug and she broke

down crying on her shoulder. She knew her mother couldn't do anything so she just hugged her for the last time . J ust one last time before she's handed out to another man .

Rose: I love you mom .

J ane: I love you too hunny. So so much .

They broke the hug and held hands looking at one another. J ane used her thumb and rubbed away her tears looking at her swollen eyes .

J ane: Remember I'll always be here for you and I'll never give up on you . I'll always be here when you need me . Know I'm just a phone call away . I will always love you . Always and forever.

They hugged one last time and they covered her with a huge blanket as J ack stood there holding in his tears . J ane and one of the aunt helped her out

as Jack followed them to the living room where Mxolisi was sitting with her elders and helped her sit on the floor and everyone settled down.

Mxolisi leaned on to his father's ear looking at Rose , she looked like a primary kid in that blanket.

Mxolisi: how old is she again ?

Jacob: I told you to use your phone , aren't you on social media?

Mxolisi: I didn't have time to search for her . Besides when you paid the bride price didn't you ask first her age ?

Jacob : I did .. just that I dont want to tell you . You'll have to ask her yourself. I wasn't even going to tell you her name .

Mxolisi: is she still in primary?

Jacob: I dont know.

Mxolisi sighed sitting back and somehow he just

couldn't wait to see her . He shook his head and listen as the elder spoke and gave advises.

Jack: Son .. I believe now I can trust you with my daughters life . Take care of her and l...love her . Be there for her as much as she'll be there for you . Take care of each other . She's now your priority and your part of the family . Your father assured me of you being a responsible man . Please dont let him down on this one.

Mxolisi: Yes sir ..I mean Mr Lyon ..and thank you .
(Low) jes us..

Jack: from a me as a father to you son ...I hand you my only daughter .

Mxolisi sat there not knowing what to do when Jacob pinched him and he flinched looking at him. He indicated with hid eyebrows when he sighed standing up and walked over to Rose and knelt before her .

His cologne passed through and hit Rose's nostrils and her heart pounded. It smelled really good and expensive. He tried to move the blanket off her but she held on tight to it and he smiled letting go holding her shoulders.

Mxolisi : (low)I'm not that old as you imagine me to be . I'm still young and I promise I'm not a woman abuser . No need to be afraid of me .

Rose but her lip closing her eyes and he sighed before taking the blanket off her and she looked down playing with her fingers .

He looked at her skin tone and turned looking at the elders when Jacob narrowed his eyebrows and he turned looking at Rose .

He lifted her face under her chin and came face to face with her beautiful brown swollen eyes . Her pink heart shaped lips where to crave for . He used his thumb tracing her jaw line before swallowing and gave out his hand .

She looked at his handsome face and swallowed before looking at his bold hand . Surely if he slaps her she'll immediately break her jaw. She hesitantly put her hand on his and he gave another one helping her stand . The dress fitted her perfectly holding in to her hourglass figure and when reaching the knees it was like an umbrella. She even had teenage boobs from looking at the dress since she wasn't wearing any bra that could have showed up . He bit his lip looking at her and let go of her one hand and stood besides her holding her waist with one hand as the eleders drank to that rejoicing..

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

Sorry ..I know its mixed up . Like I said ..I dont know anything about traditional weddings

[08/02, 13:44] Lynne : Chapter 44 .

At the Lyons Mansion.

Rose and Mxolisi walked out of the house and parted ways each going to the car they usually ride in when Steven, Mxolisi's uncle called them and they both turned looking at him .

Steve: What are you guys doing ?

Mxolisi: you said we should get to the cars it's time to leave so we are getting into the cars .

Steven: Yeah I said you should get to the cars but I meant one car , both of you . Why are you separating? You should ride in one car . Go on my daughter, your riding with him in the same car .

Wena open that door for my daughter !

The elders laughed when Rose shyly walked over

and Mxolisi opened the door bowing down a little and she smiled getting in .

Rose: Thank you .

Mxolisi: Your welcome kiddo .I mean...uhmm you .
Your welcome gi..your Mrs .. Miss ..uhm Your
welcome my lady . Damn ...!

Rose smiled rolling her eyes in the shadow of the fading moonlight and he closed the door with a pounding heart and went to get in the other side .

The elder parted and they also got into different cars and Steve got into the same car with Rose and Mxolisi driving the middle car as they drove out . After a kilometer Steve looked at them through the mirror as they both looked outside the window not even looking at each other lost in thoughts . He chuckled grabbing their attention and continued driving laughing.

Mxolisi: What uncle?

Steve: I wonder how your going to be like when you go to your house ? I can already imagine.

Mxolisi: Imagine what now ?

Steve: the air around the house . Silence . On bed you'll be facing different directions worst separate rooms instead of doing what a wife and husband are supposed to be doing. I mean behaving .

Mxolisi: Ummm ..

Steve: Yess I'm talking about sex motlogolo .

Mxolisi: Oh God..

Mxolisi leaned back putting one hand on his face rubbing his eyes .

On the other hand Rose cleared her throat as she felt uncomfortable and pulled the blanket and covered her self looking outside the window .

Steve: Why are you both trying to ignore me ? Isn't

true .

Mxolisi: Can we not talk about this now , I mean ever ?

Steve: Why ? It's not like your a virgin. Oh my God..boy your not a virgin right ?

Mxolisi: Malome!

Steve: What ? I'm just asking . Let me give you another advice that I'm sure that hard headed father if your didn't give you . Woman love men who have money in their pockets , men with clean hands , men who smell great , men with nice hair cuts , men who are clean , men who can do whatever shit to protect them or who can do whatever it takes to protect them but most of all the one that can use their waist in bed .

Mxolisi: Ohk ..thanks for the advice.. I'll take it from there

Steven: Take what from where? I wasn't even down giving you the advice yet your cutting me off .

Mxolisi: that's because I dont want yo listen and

..there's a woman in here .

Steve: great course she'll be the witness to the lesson I gave you . And you'll listen ka kgang (like it or not) As I was saying ..they love all but a man that can provide in bed . O seke wa namela ngwana wa batho two minutes then aba o mo tlatsa ka meetse a gago morwa (don't get on top of someone's child for two minutes then you fill her up with your semen)no my boy . You'll have to grind in and out of her and if your close hold on and wait for her -

Mxolisi: I think she's about to vomit uncle ..!

Rose turned looking at him and he was still rubbing his eyes and she shook her head covering her face with the blanket and lifted her legs rolling into a ball trying to get some sleep.

Mxolisi caught a site of her rolling herself on the end of the seat trying to make a space between them and couldn't help but find this funny . No girl has ever done this before. Maintain space between

them ? Clearly this was going to take a lot of time for them to get along .

He shook his head and took out his phone as his uncle continued speaking and put on his pods listening to a high volume music leaving Steven speaking all by himself..

After a while of not hearing a response he chocked them through the mirror and realized Rose had covered her self and not moving clearly she was asleep and looked at Mxolisi who leaned his head back with his eyes closed and pods humming a song . He sighed shaking his head and looked back at the road .

Steve: Whatever..you heard me .

In Jack and Jane's car .

Jane had leaned on the window looking outside as they drove along. She had been quite since they left

the house and never said a word to him and it hurt him . He sighed rubbing his beard and looked at her before looking back at the road .

Jack: Are you ok ?

Jane:

Jack: Baby at least shout, scream , hit me or something just not the silent treatment please.

Jane:...

Jack: Jane ? You know I dont know what was the use for me to send Breeze that message course I knew he wouldn't show up . I wasted all my time and SMS's sending him the invite. He's the uncle he was supposed to be there and on top of that Rose would have appreciated his support and him being there since they get along very well would have meant something to her . The least he could have done i-

Jane:(annoyed) Look at the road before you kill me to my last Jack .

Jack swallowed looking at her and sighed looking back at the road driving .

At the hospital.

Kagiso tossed and turned for some time now and finally faced up the ceiling. He couldn't understand why all of a sudden he was sleepless. He rubbed his forehead and pulled Bonolo over so she wouldn't fall and sighed.

His mind drifted off to Rose as her laughter filled the whole room and her smile appeared right before his eyes. The way she would laugh so hard and end up hiding her face with her little finger made him smile lunatically that he himself ended up putting his hand on his face smiling in it . She was so amazingly perfect and when she's here he is able to open up to her like he never did with anyone .

Bonolo tossed and put her hand on his chest when

his smile dropped and he looked at her baby face and smiled and kissed her head still with Rose in his head .

Kagiso: Dear Rose .

At Mxolisi's home.

Around 06h30 . The cars drove closer and closer when they started hitting they started hooting making noise and everyone who was awake and those who had just arrived started rejoicing for their safe arrival. Taking it as the sign that they went well and they had her .

Mxolisi took off his pods and looked at Rose who was still asleep even with the noise. He saw how her eyes where swollen and red even though they looked beautiful like that he coul tell she was crying all night and couldn't sleep . Clearly this marriage thing came between some sort of connection she

had with someone like he had and nothing hurts more than that.

The car parked and people started ullulating and singing.

Steve: We are here son . Wake the girl up dont be a snob . And be gentle. She looks more like an egg . Too fragile unlike dikobo tše di tletšeng moo .

Mxolisi: (smiling) I will .

Steve: keep her covered. Theres a reason why we took cars that had tinted windows.

Mxolisi: got it .

Steve stepped out of the car and joined in with the singing . Meanwhile Mxolisi looked at Rose and gently hit her on the shoulder trying to wake her but she didn't. He clenched his jaws and shook her a bit and she finally woke up stretching and rubbed her eyes like a baby with fits when he smiled looking outside the window. He just got married to

a kid.

He rubbed his lower lip and looked at her looking outside the window as people waited . Mxolisi mother walked over to her door and waited outside smiling and Rose looked at her before looking at Mxolisi. They looked so much alike and he was his mother in a Male form.

Mxolisi: They say you should cover yourself.

Rose: Why ?

Mxolisi: Thing about introducing you to the ancestors ..I dont know.

She sighed pulling the blanket to her head and wrapped herself so no one can see her and Mxolisi stepped out heading to her site. He opened the door for her and his mother helped her out when the crowd started rejoicing like theres wasn't another day coming. Betty covered her helping her find the way and led her to the kral where she bowed down

and Mxolisi bowed next to her .

At The Hospital.

Gail woke up first and got off the bed going to the bathroom. After using the toilet she stood by the sink and washed her face with water and used Sagis toothbrush brushing her teeth .

When she was done she she stepped out and found Breeze awake looking at Sagi as she slept peacefully on top of him . He looked at Gail and sighed when she walked over . She stood by their side and tucked Sagis hair behind her ear looking at her innocent face.

Gail : she deserves better .

Breeze: Yeah ..she does.

Gail: please tell her I love her when she wakes up .

She kissed her forehead and smiled looking at her and looked at Breeze not knowing what to do . She sighed letting go of Sagi and turned walking away . Breeze stopped her by the door and she turned looking at him.

Breeze: After everything that has went down the least we can do is part with a proper goodbye. Let me drop you off .

Gail: Thank you but Sagi needs you right now more than I do , more than ever . Be here for her . I promise to behave if you think I'll spread up too much .

Breeze: What ..

Gail: never mind . I love you .

Breeze: I love you two ...

She smiled at the door and walked walked out. It was so heavy leaving them behind . Especially when coming to think about the whole month

without them .

.

.

.

.

.

Comment .

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:44] Lynne : Chapter 45 .

At the hospital.

Breeze stared outside the window for quite a while now since Gail left. The fear of her making up her

mind about not coming back to him and go to that guy got his heart beating so hard on his chest . He closed his eyes thinking of how life without her will be like . Plus on the other hand he had to make sure that he doesn't trigger Sagi or she'll end up doing something very unlawful.

Sagi slowly opened her eyes on his chest and yawned looking at him . He looked at her and smiled cubing her face and kissed her .

Breeze: good morning.

Sagi : hey ..

Breeze : how are you feeling?

Sagi: I'm ohk ..just hungry. What's bothering you ?
Where's Gail?

Breeze: she has already left . Around 6 am .

Sagi : And you let her go by herself Breeze ?

Breeze : she said I should stay here with you. And that she loves you.

Sagi: Baby ..

She got up and sat on his stomach and put her hands on his chest as he put his hands on her butt slowly smoothing her .

Sagi: you should have gone with her . I know y'all are trying to make it up for me but if you really do ..you'll know that I want you guys on a clean slate . Get along and bring that joy we lost . And you can't do that when your here . You both broke me and I want you both to fix me by doing what's right, bring back my happiness .

Breeze: We agreed that she'll be away for a month only . That should be enough for her to make up her mind if she still wants to be in this marriage or decides to find her own happiness .

Sagi: What if she decides to leave ? What then ?

Breeze: then I'll support her decision.

Sagi : (sarcastic) Hhhmm .

Breeze : And I expect you to do the same babe .
Please. We let her be .

Sagi: I said nothing.

She played with his beard with a pout on her face
when he frowned spanking her and she flinched.

Sagi: Aoooww ..!

Breeze : What are you silently planning ?

Sagi : Nothing..(laughs)

Breeze: Sagi ..

Sagi: I'm serious..

He gave her that I don't believe you look when she
shyly looked at him and finally laughed trying to get
off him but he held her down with his waist.

Breeze: Sagi ..

Sagi: I swear to you babe . I'm not planning anything. Dont look at me like that.

Breeze:like what?

Sagi: that ..

Breeze looked at her when she slid down blushing laying on his chest . He kissed her head and tossed with her getting between her legs on top of her as she giggled. He pulled the patient gown up and tore her panties when she hid her face with both hands smiling.

Breeze : Talk ..

Sagi: Babe I'm not planning anything.

Breeze: Wrong answer .

He slowly started playing with her cookie when blood rushed through her body and pleasure kicked in as she released a soft moan .

Breeze: Are you ready to talk ?

Sagi: mmmhh .. I'm not ..planning anything..

Breeze: Are you sure ? Kana you have a different mind set . Are you planning anything stupid?

Sagi: mmmhh.. no ...

Breeze: Ohk .. better not .

He stopped and pulled down the patient gown when she gasped all wet and ready for action. He smiled and kissed her and quickly got off the bed when she looked at him astounded. She raised her upper body balancing with her elbows looking at him as he sat on the chair wearing his shoes.

Sagi: What are you doing?

Breeze : you said you were hungry..so I'm going to get you something to eat . I dont want my little one to stave in there .

Sagi : Well ..I need something else .

Breeze: What's that ?

Sagi : (teary) Breeze please dont do this to me .
Come back .

Breeze: What do you want Sagi ?

Sagi: Baby please ..you cant do this to me .

Breeze : If you wont say it then I don't what to .

He stood up and kissed her forehead as she looked at him . He winked at her and took his phone smiling and walked out leaving her horny.

Outside. Breeze walked towards his car when his phone rang and he answered unlocking the car and got in starting the engine.

Breeze: Odirile.

Odirile: I told you to stop calling my name like that .

WTF dude! I'm not your bitch .

Breeze: (chuckles) What do you want ?

Odirile: The question is " What happened?"

Breeze: ohk ..

Odirile: Remember the girl I told you about the other day at my place. Well I asked her on a date man .

Breeze: let me guess. Sweaty palms ?

Odirile : kinda yes and kinda no . The thing is she hasn't agreed. She said she'll think about it and somehow I feel like it'll be a no , so yeah .

Breeze: ohk..

Odirile : dont ohk me ..

Breeze : What do you want me say ?

Odirile: See I want you to tell me if what I'm about to do is ohk or not . Right now I'm in my way to Stone . I want him to track her so that I could find her location.

Breeze: that's stalking man . Are you crazy ?

Odirile: In love. And dont be playing Super man on me you did far more worse than this .

Breeze: You mean we ?

Odirile: Whatever .. oh and another thing . I told her it's a friendly date but u want it to be a romantic date .

Breeze: you planning on banging the poor girl on the first date ?

Odirile : Are you a sex addict?

Breeze : What ?

Odirile: Why are you always thinking about sex ? No I'm not planning on having sex with her not yet . Some of us aren't like you . Anyway bye course I'm wasting my time with you .

Breeze: Dont stalk that girl Odirile.

Odirile: Too late . I'm here .

He hang up and Breeze shook his head driving through on the Mc Donald following other cars . He

noticed a message and tapped on it reading the invitation to Rose's wedding. He frowned and shook his head and dialed Jack but it went straight to voicemail. He tried him again but still. He tried Jane but it also didn't go through. He bit his lip and put the phone down and increased the volume listening to music.

At Mxolisi's house.

After introducing her to the ancestors Mxolisi handed Rose his hand and helped her stand and she pulled her dress with the other hand so she wouldn't stain it walking out of the kral.

Everyone started rejoicing singing a wedding song looking at the beautiful young lady. Rose looked around as her heart pounded looking for at least someone from her family who she's close too but non where there except her parents. She swallowed as tears burned her eyes and she looked down as a tear dropped followed by the other.

Meanwhile Mxolisi prayed in his heart for the day to end already when he saw Rose looking down and a tear dropped. He squeezed her hand and pulled her hugging and hid her face in his chest and she wrapped her hands around him .

Without a clue of what was happening , the crowd started making noise even louder as she cried sorrowfully but they couldn't hear her .

Back at the Hospital.

Kagiso got off the bed and went to the bathroom and stood by the mirror looking at himself. The wounds were healing and others had healed and only scars left . He sighed leaning into the sink and washed his face and when he looked at the mirror he saw Nakedi standing there all furious. His heart skipped looking at her breathing anger out of her .

Nakedi: I told you to go stop it !

He quickly turned but she wasn't there . He rubbed his face with a racing heart and turned back to the mirror and she was not there. He sighed taking breath exercises and washed his face again before walking to the shower balancing the water and got in thinking through.

-
-
-
-

Comment

[08/02, 13:44] Lynne : Chapter46

At the hospital

Kagiso stepped out of the shower with a towel around his waist and went to the room . He found Bonolo eating still in bed and leaned over kissing

her .

Kagiso: you should go refresh up . And get yourself something to eat, dont starve yourself.

Bonolo: No ..I'm ohk .

Kagiso: Nolo your not. Last night I must've drained all the energy in you that's why your even too lazy to get up .

Bonolo: Well ..you didn't. I want another round.

Kagiso: (smiling) your crazy ..I'll ripp you apart . Last night you were crying saying I shouldn't put it all in .

Bonolo: I was hurting. Its been months. But now I'm good .

There was a knock on the door and they looked at each before Bonolo jumped off the bed and wore her biggy ts hirt only and Kagiso wore the patient gown and his boxers and got in bed . Bonolo tried fixing her rich afro but it didn't sit well and she

opened the door to a Doctor .

Doctor: hey ..

Bonolo: hi ..

The doctor looked at her and she shyly looked down and she walked in looking at Kagiso who innocently payed there. She looked at Bonolo's J ean and sweater on the chair and had a clue of what was happening and she shook her head smiling.

Doctor: you kids just couldn't hold yourself , is it ?

Kagiso: (smiling) sorry..

Doctor: its ohk...at least you locked the door . Some just leave it and give us shocks . It's not the first time with you guys having sex in a hospital. Even our stuff have sex here. Anyway..

She took the stethoscope off her kneck and

checked him before taking out ophthalmoscopy and checked his eyes . She sighed smiling and took his file writing down .

Doctor: I see no reason to keep you here . We did multiple test and still no sign of infection or any kinnd of being unhealthy. Your healing faster and everything is ohk with you. Only wounds left to heal.

Kagiso: so I can go home ?

Doctor: yeah ..I'm discharging you tomorrow .

Kagiso: thank you doc .

Doctor: your welcome. I see madam is already knows how to take care of you . Keeping you healthy. That's a good thing and also drink a lot of water and keep on exercising.

Kagiso: I will .

She put the file back and walked out and Bonolo closed the door with shaky hands smiling and walked towards him . She got on the bed and sat on

his stomach and leaned in kissing him .

The door flew open and she jumped off and almost fell on the floor but quickly got balance standing up by the other side of Kagiso with her hands behind her looking at the handsome guy on the door.

Kagiso looked at the door and cleared his throat as Breeze walked in with narrowed eyebrows and put the plastic on the table looking at them .

Kagiso: Hi ..

Breeze: Hey ...

Kagiso: This is Bonolo , my girlfriend and Nolo this is Mr Lyon.

Breeze: His dad .

He stretched his hand and shaking her hand and stepped back rubbing Kagiso's head and it was wet .

Breeze: Why dont you just undo this hair dude and

get a hair cut ?

Kagiso: no ..

Breeze: then undo it . You got a girlfriend surely she wouldn't mind helping. Looking at that messed up hair she had two buns on her head let her give you one band just in case .

Kagiso: No ..

Breeze: I wasn't asking. Your hair is messed up and you have to do something about it . Baby girl undo his hair please .

Bonolo: I will .

Breeze: Good . I brought you something to eat . I gatta check my wife and head out somewhere .

Kagiso: No offense but head out where ?

Breeze: Yesterday I received a very shocking message and I only saw it today . I'm going to Rose's wedding.

His heart skipped and felt like a stack of needles

was stabbed on his heart. He got up leaning back looking at him and swallowed.

Kagiso: Can I come with you? Besides I was going to be discharged tomorrow morning.

Breeze: really. You got a visitor-

Bonolo: no its ohk.. I was going to head back anyway and come back to get him tomorrow. But I guess there's a wedding you guys should go too , you can go as long as you promise to come back home to me and your mom . She misses you .

Kagiso looked at her before pulling her by her hand and kissed her before hugging her . Breeze looked at them as memories of good time flashed before his eyes . Before cheating got in the way and ruined everything.

Bonolo smiled taking her jeans and sweater and went to the bathroom wearing them and came back wearing her shoes. She took her car keys and

phone putting them in her pocket tying her afro into a bun .

Breeze: Is your hair longer than hers ?

Kagiso: Yep ..

Breeze looked at him and pulled his braided hair at the end of the raw and it was long . He shook his head and let go and Bonolo squeezed Kagiso's hand one last time .

Bonolo: I love you.

Kagiso: I love you too .

She smiled and picked an apple in the basket .

Breeze: Take the plastic..I'll buy him another one on the way . You need it after what you guys did last

night.

Bonolo: Thank you .

Kagiso and Bonolo shyly looked at each other smiling and she walked out leaving .

Breeze looked at Kagiso and shook his head and they both chuckled.

Breeze: apple doesn't fall far from the tree . You had sex on a hospital bed . Injured on top of that .

Kagiso: I was starving.

Breeze : Whatever get up .

Kagiso: I dont have clothes ...

Breeze : Where are the clothes you got here with ?

Kagiso: I dont Know.

Breeze: Your size ..

After giving him his sizes, Breeze sighed and turned

walking out and went to Sagi's ward and found her finishing up her food . He kissed her cheek and rubbed her belly when she giggled and picked the remaining drumstick and let him take a bite.

Breeze: Are you full ?

Sagi: nop ..I still want more . I'm eating for two now remember.

Breeze: right. What do you want ?

Sagi: Pizza and fish and chips . Oh and also a burger from burger king. And a steak pie please and a drink .

Breeze: Are you sure you'll finish all that ?

Sagi: Yep .

Breeze: ohk ..oh yesterday I received a message from Jack . Rose is getting married today .

Sagi: What ?

Breeze: that's exactly what I said when I saw the message.

Sagi: But Rose is still too young to be getting married. She doesn't even have a boyfriend nor did she have one before. Who is she getting married to while she's so unstable?

Breeze: I don't know. He didn't mention who she was getting married to. Sometimes he makes me wonder if really he cares for this girl or he's just pretending because he's the father. How will Rose even handle the pressure of being a daughter in law and someone's wife at her position.

Sagi: This is way out of line. Whatever train your brother is riding in sure is a one of mental health problem. He doesn't think through of the outcomes. Rose doesn't need to get married she needs medical attention and her family after what she's been through.

Breeze: You can say that again.

Sagi: Please go there and put some words in his thick skull so he can drop this whole nonsense course I'm sure this was one of his pathetic ideas.

Breeze: Yeah ..

He kissed her cheek and walked out . He got into his car and drove to the mall to buy Kagiso's clothes and Sagis food still trying to get hold of Jack and Jane but couldn't find any of them .

Hours later .

At The Lyons Mansion.

Breeze parked by the gate and a security guard stepped out and walked over .

Security: Mr Lyon.

Breeze : hey ..is anyone around ?

Security : no sir . They left today early in the morning after the negotiations if I'm not mistaken .

Breeze: Damnit! Ohk thank you .

The security guard went back inside and he sighed looking at Kagiso who was looking at the huge house . He shook his head looking at Breeze and drank his drink.

Kagiso: How many rooms ?

Breeze: 16.

Kagiso: Wow ...so if they didn't say where their going how are we going to get there .

Breeze: Track their cars . Jack loves his Audi Q5 . I'm pretty sure he used that one .

Kagiso: Do you know the registration?

Breeze: Yep ..

Breeze logged in to a car tracker app and entered the requirement and it appeared giving them even the kilometers away. He put the phone on the smartphone holder and reversed stepping on the

accelerator .

Kagiso: Is Rose ohk ?

Breeze: She wasn't but after you showed up in the picture she started changing.

Kagiso: meaning ?

Breeze: Rose lost her best friend years back to cancer and rape . She died in her arms and she was still too young by then . It was so hard for her to move past all that . She started having nightmares and stopped laughing, smiling, nor even talking. She was sent to mental hospital, to see therapist and even Sanatoriums but nothing . She couldn't let go of her friend. We would take her out and tried all we can to put a smile on her face but nothing happened. She finished school yep , but online. She put herself on lockdown since she was 13 and that made her father even a pain in the ass . She watched movies ,study online , play music , eat , shop online, and use the gym in the house to get her mind off and keep herself busy. That was her daily

routine over the years obsessed with the dead. No one was able to put a smile on her face , ever .

Would you believe if I said the day I came with her at the hospital for the first time that was the first time she released a laughter after the whole saga?

Kagiso: What ?

Breeze: Serious. I haven't heard her laugh like that until she met you .

Kagiso : that's something. Wait still there . What was her friends name?

Breeze: Something Naledi ..Nabedi

Kagiso face dropped looking at him when his heart pounded to the last this time . He opened the window for the air to get in without limit and swallowed looking forward. Now more reason to want to be there .

Kagiso: You mean Nakedi ?

Breeze: yeah that one . Did you know her?

Kagiso: I met her..

Breeze: Where?

Kagiso: In my dreams..

.

.

.

.

.

.comment

[08/02, 13:45] Lynne : Chapter 47

At Mxolisi's home.

Breeze drove closer following the tracker when he spotted a lot of cars on the way and other people outside sitting on camping chairs drinking and eating . Others were standing in groups eating and he parked his car on the side of the road , just a little

far from the exact location of the wedding since it was full and they both stepped out .

People around turned looking at the handsome men ,who looked like father and son though they looked like gangsters from looking at their dress code .

Black . They had those playboy bad boy air around them and those walks got you wondering what they could do in private . They had both put their hands in their pockets wearing hoodies hiding their eyes in sweatpants and Nike kicks .

Kagiso : I hate it when people stare at me .

Breeze: You and I.

They got to the gate and looked around when he spotted Jack in the middle of a conversation with other men and his uncles . He clenched his jaws looking around and spotted Jane and other woman sitting on the veranda eating but she was playing with her food and on her side there was Rose sitting on the traditional mat and a small white blanket on

her shoulders and a doek .

Breeze: We're late . It's done.

Kagiso : I need to talk to her . Like really need to .

Breeze :you cant . After this..its wife and husband moment .

Kagiso : What do you mean ?

Breeze :common son . Their going to have sex . And I think she's a virgin so they charged them more . After the sex they'll have to show the elders the stain of blood on the sheets to prove a point that she was still a flower . I wonder who she's married to course that guy needs a piece of my mind .

Kagiso: your not going to threaten him on the day of his wedding are you ?

Breeze : I'm an uncle . A gangster uncle ,so it's my job to do so.

Kagiso: You sure are a mood spoiler.

Breeze shrugged his shoulders and they headed to where the men were . Kagiso just couldn't take his eyes off Rose .The thought of another man sweating on top of her didn't sit well with him that he could just scream .

Breeze: Bagolo ..

Elders: Morwa / Brother..

Breeze : How are you all ?

Elders: Fine /good

Lyon uncle: I thought you weren't coming son .
Why are you late course you were supposed to be there at there negotiations as Rosella's uncle?

Breeze : My wife has been admitted so had to be there with her . She had hit her head so hard but now she's getting better . I'm so sorry I couldn't be there .

Steve: What matters is you here to support her during this time . And I think it's best if you go apologize to her now in front of the female elders .

Breeze: Oh thank you .

Lyon uncle 2: And whose this young man with you ?

Breeze: Oh he's my son .

All the Lyon family members turned looking at him then back at Kagiso who folded fists in his pockets as they got sweaty still hiding his face with the hoodie.

Jack : How come I don't know you have a son Breeze? The one his age even .

Breeze: That's because I don't have to report my life to you Jack . And what I have or not have is none of your business . Brother.

Jack swallowed and drank his beer and clenched his jaws swallowing looking at Kagiso .

Lyon uncle: How old is he ? Whose the mother and

why didn't you tell us you had a son so we can go pay for damages and marry him ?

Breeze : that's because his mother and I are on good terms and she didn't want me to pay all those . And the family agreed to not come in between us . He's 21 . 21 right boy ?

Kagiso: Yeah .

Lyon uncle 2: Who's your mother son ?

Kagiso looked at Breeze and cleared his throat.

Breeze:Do you really want to know her name uncle ?

Lyon: yes . We want to also meet the lady that gave us a heir .

Breeze: Then let's cut it's short course you'll never meet her nor find her course she's a tourist.

Lyon2: then we can set up a meeting with her and her parents .

Breeze: Th-

Jack: (sarcastic) I'm sure she wouldn't mind a single meeting now would she Breeze. Huh boy ?

Breeze bit his lip and turned looking at him and he raised his glass as a way to piss him off . Kagiso looked at them and looked at the elders waiting for an answer.

Kagiso: I'll try talking to her course for now she's overseas and she'll be back in 6 months time .

Lyon: Please son ...ask her to squeeze us in.

Jack: Wait ..if your mother is overseas and we'll come back in 6months time then who is in charge as your guardian?

Breeze: Hes 21 and he knows how to look after himself plus he has me . Excuse us .

They both turned walking away and the elders continued with their chat as Jack looked at them heading to the ladies having doubts.

Meanwhile the woman looked at the man in black walking towards them and knelt before them .
Rose's face lit up looking at his uncle and when Kagiso pulled the hat from his face and looked around and their eyes met it was like butterflies just flies straight into her stomach . He was so crazily hot in black. She smiled revealing her angelic smile and Kagiso smiled back biting his lip when Jane looked at him and he cleared his throat putting a straight face looking down and Rose giggled. Jane turned looking at Rose when Rose's smile dropped and she looked down .

Old woman : can we help you son ?

Breeze: yeah ..I'm the bride's uncle and this is my son . I'd like a word with the bride please its urgent, I wont be long I promise . I know its disrespectful but I'm desperate.

Woman : What emergency is that that couldn't wait until tomorrow? This girl cannot leave our side . She's not allowed to stand up from there .

Breeze : J ust few seconds please ..

Old lady : No young man .

J ane looked at Kagiso and her heart raced . So this is the son , the one that he so told her off for . Somehow it hurt that he had a son before the child she was bearing could be born and the fact that he didn't check her got her heart itching as tears burned her eyes.

Breeze sighed and stood up and so did Kagiso and they put their hands together leaving them in peace .

Kagiso : That went well .

Breeze : you can say that again.

J ane gatherd her fear and quickly stood up excusing herself and jogged towards them as they laughed holding her bumper.

Jane: Breeze wait ..! Breeze !

Breeze sighed and put a little smile and turned looking at her . She stood in front of them looking at Kagiso and back at Breeze before swallowing.

Jane: Can I talk to you ? In private please .

Breeze narrowed his eyebrows and Kagiso breathed out when Breeze threw him the keys and he walked away . Jane looked at him not knowing how to start this and pulled him by his hand to the other side of the house . Meanwhile Jack spotted them heading aside with her pulling his hand and curiosity kicked in as well as insecurity.

Breeze pulled his hand away from her and sighed stopping and put his hands in the pockets looking at her . She took a deep breath and turned looking at him . Him standing right here in front of her made everything around her make sense. He stole her

heart with few moments of weakness and stolen moments of fun . She walked even close to him and pulled his hand putting it on her bump as the baby kicked . Breeze swallowed listening to the baby kick and looked in her teary eyes . He pulled his hand away and put it in his pocket stepping back with Sagi in his head .

Jane: Please dont do this Breeze, I beg you .

Breeze: Do what ?

Jane: That . Your hurting me when you pull yourself away from me .

Breeze: Jane look . Your a very good woman and respectful one . Dont let pain -

Jane: Your the one coursing me pain by pulling away from me Breeze.Dont you see that ? I'm pregnant and your hurting me .

Breeze: Yeah your pregnant respect your soul and that baby your caring and dont let your feelings harm any of you and more especially your baby .

Your a doctor and I'm sure you know very well that a quarter of the percentage most woman lose their baby's over stress. Y-

Jane: I cant help it . Your the reason behind my stress Breeze dont you get it? . Why are you ignoring me ? Why are you not giving me your attention? Wh-

Breeze: becouse I'm married and I love my wife's. Me and you-was not gonna work and we both knew that and ignored the highlights. Sagi is crazy . Meaning crazy I mean she's a psychopath. And I'm not saying this because of talking but even the doctor confirmed it . She's not mentally stable and she has luck of sympathy and remorse. I-

Jane: Then why are you still with her if she's going nuts . Why cant you just be with me ?

Breeze: Becouse I love her ohk ! I love her so bad. And compared to what I feel for you - it's nothing. And she's pregnant.

Jane: But I love you Breeze.. and I hate feeling this way . I'm sorry to say this but I wont stop until I'm

with you . Please let me in .

Breeze: your pregnant with J ack's child . Wh-

J ane: it's not his . I was mad at the fact that you have a son and I thought maybe if i said it's his I'd get to you but that didn't happen. This child is yours and needs both its parents. Together .

Breeze: J ane why do you keep pushing ? Beside I'm bad for you .

J ane: Becouse I love you Breeze. I love you .

Breeze: Me and you are not gonna work woman ! Your my brothers wife for christ sake ! This has to stop .

J ane: why are you denying yourself-

Breeze: I'm not denying myself anything. I've got everything that I need and it's only a matter of time before my marriage gets back on track . Finger's crossed .

J ane: (crying) Breeze please...

Breeze: J ane your heart . Yeah I get that ,so am I. And thank you for telling me the truth about the

baby being mine , I really appreciate that . But you and I can never be an item . I'll support the baby and be there for him/her but not you. Well I will be there for you but not as a part of you. Thank you for the good times and I dont regret having this child with you ,actually I'm happy that your the one carrying it other than a stranger that I hardly know . But baby the good has come to pass . Reality has kicked in and we both are married and the shit that were doing is not right . Its total WRONG. I always do wrong but this one ..I cant . I'm sorry if I gave you wrong impressions and I hope you find it in your heart to forgive me .

Jane: But I dont think I'll be able too .

Breeze: then try hard babe . For me .

Jane: That's the thing Breeze. Feelings aren't switches . You cant just switch them off . I want you

.

Breeze looked at her before biting his lip and shook his head turning around to leave . This was

pointless trying fo talk her out of her love for him .
J ane's heart raised when she held her bumper and
ran towards him pulling him by the sweater turning
him around and pinned her lips on his kissing him .

Meanwhile J ack impatiently tapped his foot on the
ground and roughly stood up heading where he saw
them disappear. As he slowly approached his heart
got heavier and heavier and when stopped by the
corner listening carefully . He took a deep breath
and stepped over and his heart dropped into his
stomach and his mouth dropped .

-
-
-
-
-
-
-

Comment

.

.

[08/02, 13:45] Lynne : Chapter 48

At Mxolisi's home

Jack stopped on his tracks looking at them as they quickly broke the kiss stepping away from each other . He looked at Breeze when he cleared his throat looking back at him like nothing happened with a neutral look on his face . He knew that his little brother was out for him ,but with his wife ?

Breeze rubbed his beard looking at him then back at Jane who was standing still not knowing what to do , touch or let go . He scoffed and tried walking away when Jack pulled him by his wrist .

Jack : Are you daring me Breeze ? What the hell are you doing with my wife ?

Breeze: Let go of me .

Jack: Kare what are you doing with my wife ?

Breeze I'll beat the crap out of you , you know that ?

Breeze: And I said let go !

Jane: Jack please let's talk about this ,let him go .

Its our daughters wedding for christ sake !

Jack: Breeze.. For the last time . What are you doing with my wife ?

Breeze looked at his hand on his wrist before pulling his hand from his grip and came face to face with him

Breeze: A - dont touch me . B - Dont ever threaten me or address me that manner course I take them to the heart

Jack: Breeze what were you doing with my wife ?

Breeze: Are you blind ? We were kissing Jack . We kissed ! Are you satisfied now . We kissed !

Jack: She's my wife!

Breeze: So ..?

Jack clenched his jaws as anger occupied him and he blew a punch at Breeze who bit his tongue losing balance. Breeze trembled when he got balance and looked at him before scoffing and spit blood as Jane stood there with her hands on her mouth and tears streaming . Breeze looked at him and a smirk started from his side lip and he put his hands in the pockets looking at him .

Fighting him back wouldn't be painful compared to the cake cooking inside of Jane . This baby would be the one to settle the score between them .

Breeze: Feeling better ?

Jack: I never want to see you near my wife again , you hear me ! I mean ever !

Breeze: Whatever! (To Jane) Good Bye Love .

He looked at them once more before smiling walking away. Jack frustratedly looked back at Jane when she raised her hand blocking him from saying what he wanted to say.

Jane: Please ..not now .

She walked away leaving him standing there as tears burned his eyes . Out of all people, his own brother will be the one ending his marriage. His blood . He wiped his tears taking breath exercises gathering himself and walked back.

Meanwhile, Mxolisi's aunt walked out of a small room after she prepared it and called Rose . Rose looked at her before standing and walked in .

Aunt: I prepared you a bath inside . Go bath and then wait for your husband. He'll find in here. The elders are still advising him ,he'll be with you shortly.

Go inside.

Rose swallowed and looked back where her mother was sitting but she wasn't there . She looked back at the aunt and pulled her dress walking in .

She sat on the white sheets looking around and finally took off her heels . Someone knocked on the door and she stood opening for a young lady her age .

Her: Hi ..I'm Melinda. They said I should bring this to you .

Rose: Oh .. thanks. I'm Rosella.

Melinda: Your so beautiful. My causin has hit the jackpot here .

Rose: Thank you . So are you .

Melinda: Anyway.. let me live you to prepare for the deed .

Rose: Wait.. what do you mean the deed?

Melinda: Oh common girl ! You know the one, two three.. Men on top of a woman . In and out ? Tloff tloff ?

Rose : oh .. ohk ..uhm ..wow ..

Her heart pounded looking down there and wrapped her hands around her body. Melinda looked at her trying to read her . She saw how her breath suddenly changed and frowned looking at her cute round face .

Melinda: Oh .. uhmm .. its ohk . Dont be scared .

Rose: Is it gonna hurt ?

Melinda: Uhm ..at first but within a second you'd have adjusted and you'll be good . J ust relax . Be in the moment and dont focus on the pain .

Voice: Melindaa!!

Melinda: That's my mom. I gatta go . You'll be fine . Dont worry . Ohk ..

Rose shook her head as Melinda's mother called her countless times and she went away and she took her huge bag inside .

She layed it on the floor and kneeled down searching for her phone until she found it with its charger . She looked around for a plug and plugged her phone charging it before taking off her clothes ,taking off the doek and her hair bounced on her shoulders then she got in the bath . She tried to not think about what was about to happen but couldn't help as her heart shattered in pain .

After a while she stepped out and wrapped a towel around her body and went to check her phone finding it on 24% She switched it on pulling another towel drying her hair standing by the phone . One it was on , she unlocked it and went to the contacts dialing Breeze.

Breeze: My favorite niece .

Rose: Hy ..uncle. how are you ?

Breeze: How am I ? I'm mad baby girl ! I'm madly mad !

Rose : Same here . You said you wanted to talk to me about something urgent? Is everything ohk ?

Breeze: Nop ! My son here is angry that's what's urgent . Let me give it to him .

In the car .

Breeze gave Kagiso the phone when he pointed him out and Kagiso smiled stepping out of the car and closed the door leaning against it .

Kagiso: (softly) Hey you ..

Rose: (blushing) Hey you ..

Kagiso: How are you ?

Rose: I'm..I dont know. You ?

Kagiso: Same here . I dont know how I feel or how I

am .

They both stopped talking smiling over the phone as if they can see each other . After a whole minute, Kagiso chuckled biting his lip ..

Kagiso: You still there ?

Rose: Yeah .. uhm .. Uncle said you were angry?is everything ohk ?

Kagiso: I dont know . Maybe I just wanted to see you one last time before you get married. That's what dropped my spirit.

Rose: Oh .. uhmm ..hmm .

Kagiso chuckled listening to her adorable voice as she giggled making him wish for more than just a phone call .

Kagiso: Rose ?

Rose: Mmhh..

Words stuck in his mouth as his mouth opened with nothing that came out . He sighed not wanting to stress her on this day or open up old wounds. At least not now. He pressed his eyes together and took a deep breath .

Kagiso: Rose ?

Rose: Mmmhh ..

Kagiso: I love you .

Back in the room .

Rose's heart skipped as she stood there with the phone on her ear . She swallowed listening to her heart beat so fast on her throat not knowing what to say . She never told a boy that she loved him and even though she wanted to say it back she couldn't.

The door slowly opened when her heart pounded even more holding tight on the phone as her knees shook .

Mxolisi closed the door looking at her facing the other direction and couldn't help but scan her body looking at her curved body and smooth skin . He shook his head trying to shake his nasty thoughts away and sat on the bed .

Mxolisi: Hi .

Rose: (shakey) hi .

Meanwhile.. Kagiso heard Mxolisi's voice breaking his heart . He could hear her heavy breath over the phone and finally she hang up without saying anything to him . He sighed looking around when he spotted two girls walking over and he walked towards them .

Kagiso : Hey ..excuse me .

Them: Hy ..

Kagiso: could you please fill me in here . Who is the guy getting married here ?

Girl: Donald . But most people call him Mxolisi .

Kagiso: oh ..surname ?

Girl: We don't know . We just stopped by to support . We only know his social media name . D.MX .

Kagiso: As in like D M X ?

Girl: Yeah ..but with a full stop after the letter D . It's an abbreviation of his name .

Kagiso : Ohk ..thank you ladies .

The girls smiled and walked away mumbling something and turned getting in the car giving Breeze his phone.

Breeze: Nc nc nc . J ust the beginning my boy . J ust the beginning .

Kagiso: Do you have Facebook?

Breeze: Nop ..I have Instagram. Why ?

Kagiso: I wanna know who she got married too .

He gave him back the phone and he logged into Instagram searching him . Mxolisi's account appeared first and he clicked on it looking at his picture. He looked rich from his outfits and this different cars he took pictures with . Clearly he doesn't stand a chance .

Breeze looked at him and took the phone in his arms and looked at what he was looking at when his jaws dropped.

Breeze: WTF ! Hell no !

Back in the room .

Rose put the phone down and swallowed closing

her eyes and turned looking at him . He moved his eyes from her glowing smooth thighs to her face and stood up getting closer to her . He stood in front of her as they both shared the same breath. He used his finger raising her face and they looked in each others eyes as her heart pounded so hard this time , like mad . He swallowed looking at her lips and slowly leaned in kissing her but she didn't reply. He pulled back smiling and looked at her .

Mxolisi: First time kissing a guy ?

Rose: (shook head)

Mxolisi: ohk .. just flow with me . Relax .. ohk .
Relax ...

She swallowed when he leaned in again and kissed her and she joined in and suddenly it turned into a French kiss . His hand traced her arms sending chills as another one wrapped around her tiny waist . He broke the kiss and looked at her when she looked down shyly . He pulled her chin up facing

him .

Mxolisi: Look at me ..

She looked at him when they made an eyes contact and he slowly loosened the towel dropping it . She tried crossing her legs to hide her cookie when he used his leg parting her legs as her heart pounded. He bit his lip looking at her teenage breast and lower to her flat tummy and further to her little heaven .He pulled her hands putting them on his chest before pulling her closer cubing her breasts kissing her .

He let go and pulled out his shirt remaining with his pants looking at her as she stood there looking at him with a pou heart . He did have an awesome body ,like wow . He pulled her hands slowly and put them on his band looking at her .

Mxolisi: Unbuckle the band ...and the pants.

Rose swallowed a huge lump looking at him and slowly with shaky hands tried removing the band . He smiled looking at her and looked aside .

Mxolisi: Relax ...

She breathed in and unbuckled his band before unbuttoning his pants and slowly pushed them down coming face to face with his expanded boxer . She quickly stood straight and looked at him when he pulled her into a kiss and picked her laying her on the bed cursing every inch of her body making her blood rush through her veins and her body warm . He looked at her before kissing her going down leaving wet kisses to her cookie . He tried closing her legs again when he pushed her legs apart and her eyes widened . He looked at her shaking his head with a smile before diving in eating her cookie like never before . A weird sound escaped her mouth when she quickly used both

hands covering her mouth as the pleasure kicked off raising her lower back parting her legs even further closing her eyes . Every cell in her body shook when she felt a wave rushing through her twisting her toes on the bed trying to close her legs but Mxolisi parted them even further sucking her until she released.

Rose : Oh my God..I'm so so sorry..I didn't mean tooo ..oh my God..I..

Mxolisi lifted his head looking at her unbelievably that she just apologized. He smiled and leaned in when she moved her head facing aside . He scoffed before using one hand cubing her chin and forcefully kissed her making her taste her self . He let go of her face and cursed her one more time before lowering his boxers and his monster dropped on her cookie. She looked at him as her heart beat so hard this time .

Mxolisi: Relax .. look me in the eyes. Dont break the eye contact.

He stroked himself before gently rubbing on her cookie and stopped at her small entrance. She looked deep in his eyes when he slowly pushed in and she skipped trying to move closing her eyes pushing his chest . He pulled her hand and crossed them on above her head pinning them with one hand as another one held her waist looking at her as she closed her eyes tightly.

Mxolisi: Rose look at me ..

Rose: It hurts ..

Mxolisi: Look at me .. relax

She slowly opened her eyes with a poute and looked in his eyes when he leaned in kissing her and looked I'm each others eyes . He gently rubbed through her p*** lips and stoped at her entrance

slowly pushing in as her eyes widened feeling his dick stretched her open . Her one hand managed to escape from his grip and tried to push him off but he was too strong for her .She felt like her bones were cracking and her soul was leaving her body when she scratched his back closing her eyes screaming with tears rolling down the side of her eyes ****

.

.

.

.

.

.

.comment.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:45] Lynne : Chapter 49 .

At Mxolisi's home .

After cracking her juicy jar listening to her scream, Mxolisi waited for her to adjust to his size and take in the pain like a big girl before thrusting in and out slowly out of her with blood coming out from their privates . He looked at her as tears rolled down the side of her eyes and pulled out getting off her looking at the blood stain covering them and on the sheets .

He swallowed getting off the bed as she layed there unable to close her legs silently crying with her hands on her face . He rubbed his face and walked to the insuit and prepared a bubble bath with salt and went back to carry her laying her inside and he got under the shower listening to her soft cries cutting his heart .

After a while he stepped out and wore his clothes before pulling the stained sheets and put the new ones that were on the corner before taking the

bloody ones outside to the elders and they all stood up rejoicing.

Steve: Now she's ours . She's our daughter. A woman .

Mxolisi swallowed looking at them looking at the bloody sheets and sighed going back inside . He walked to her case and took out her nightdress and panties laying them on the bed before going back to her and sat on the toilet looking at her laying inside staring at the ceiling still in tears .

Mxolisi: I'm sorry. I had to do that so they could see you were still a virgin . Rose ? ..I kn.. Anyway I'm sorry . Let me help you out .

He moved her hair from her face tacking it behind her ear before taking off his shirt and dipped his hands inside and picked her up walking to the

bedroom with her . He helped her stand and pulled her towel drying her and applied lotioned her . He pulled her nightdress and helped her wear it and pulled her panties going down on his knees and helped her with it too . Girls !

After dressing her. He opened he sheets and looked at her as she stared at him terrified.

Rose: (crying) No ..I'm still hurt .

Mxolisi: (smiling) Dont worry .. I won't do anything you dont want me to do . I'll respect your body and not invade in anything concerning your body . I wont touch you inappropriate or do anything to you without your permission. What happened was supposed to happen course its tradition. Sick one if you ask me .

Rose looked at him as he stood there waiting for her to come get in .

Mxolisi: I promise not to hurt you . Come on ..

She swallowed and walked over with her legs apart and sat on the bed before she could lift the rest to the bed and he pulled the blankets on her . He stood by looking at her and smiled walking back to the bathroom and picked his shirt and went to take a fleece sitting on the chair and took out his phone.

Meanwhile outside..Breeze looked around for Jack when he spotted him around elders and walked over pulling him away from them .

Jack: (drunk) Yeeei marn ! Breeze ..Wa tsenwa kapa jang? Get your filthy hands off me you selfish prat !

Breeze: I dont got time for your stupid drunkard as s right now Jack . You need to stop this whole thing ! That guy-

Jack: Who are you to tell me what to do with my

daughter? Hmm? O akanya gore o selo mang
Breeze! Kissing my wife ! And now you want to
stop my daughters wedding!? Haai fots ek marn !
Tloga tseleng yame !

Breeze: That guy you just married your daughter
too is way older than her . He-

Jane: Isn't Jane older than you but yet you kissed
her ? Hhm?

Breeze: Jack this is different. And cant you for one
whole second just not make this whole thing about
me and Jane and think about your own daughter for
once . Put yourself in her shoe's !

Jack: Oh excuse me ! Is that a fatherly instinct in
your voice? Hold on is Rose your daughter?

Breeze: What ?

Jack : How long have you been seeing my wife
Breeze? How long ?

Breeze: I'm not seeing your wife Jack . Could you
shift that focus on Rose for a while . Let's stop this
madness so we could carry on with our lives to fight

one another the other time .

Jack: Well listen here you little devil brother of mine . I hate you . I hate every inch of your body with its every cell . If Rose is really my daughter and not yours , then my decision is final . Rose is someone's wife and she is already introduced to the ancestors ..oh and she's already de-flowered . She will live happy knowing that the Lyon evil creature's like you are no longer part of her life and my girl will move on just fine without someone like you to call an uncle. We should have burned you in that house to prevent this whole thing .Nx! You should have burned in that house marn ! Your a huge escape that isn't needed on this planet . I'm sure James wishes the same thing in jail .

Words stuck in Breezes mouth as the whole memory of his brothers trying to burn him in the house flashes before his eyes bringing tears burning his eyes. He swallowed a painful lump looking at Jack walking away drunk . He sounded like he really meant it and like he always wanted to

say this on his face but didn't know how to . He himself always wanted revenge but not even once has he wished death upon any of his brothers but they did without remorse. They so wanted him dead and totally out of their lives . He put his hands in the pockets and bit his lip walking back to the car .

Inside Kagiso looked at Breeze walking over with his head down and stopped looking back at the crowd celebrating and tuned back walking over rubbing his face and got in the car . The air around him was so different than when he walked out of this car .

Kagiso: Are you ohk ?

Breeze: I'm fine .. I am just fine .

Kagiso: What did they say ?

Breeze: I couldn't stop it . It's already done. Maybe we should let the whole Chosen by a Friend thing

unfold before their eyes , maybe that would open their eyes . (Sighed) Let's just hope it wouldn't be too late by then.

He started the engine and Kagiso layed back looking inside as the car drove off . He swallowed imagining of how long it would be before they could see the wrong of this whole thing .

Breeze: Let's take you home .

.

.

.

.

A month later

.

.

.

.

Comments.

.

.

[08/02, 13:46] Lynne : Chapter 50 .

At Rose's house .

Rose walked out of the laundry room with a basket and walked to the bedroom where she sat on the bed nicely folding the clothes . She stood up and when to pack each of their clothes in their closet before taking her laptop walking to the kitchen searching for cooking lessons . This was so embarrassing that she didn't know how to cook without a help from someone or a tutorial. Luckily Mxolisi understood her and even made sure that everything she'll need is in the house .Clearly she spent so much of her time doing nothing and crying over her friend.

She put the laptop on the counter and looked at Taste channel on YouTube and took out all the ingredients she'll need before she started preparing dinner .

Though they stayed in one house , they were starting to get along but hardly speak to one another and the only time they were intimate, that was on their wedding day. Her phone rang on the charger and she poused the video ,taking it and answered.

Rose: Hey auntie.

Sagi: My favorite. How are you doing my darling ?

Rose: I'm getting there . I'm just having a hard time coming to terms with the fact that I'm now someone's wife . And that my own father sold me .

Sagi: I'm sorry you feel that way babe . I'm also not getting along with what your dad did but this is reality. One way or another you'll have to get used to a man walking in that door expecting to see you in the kitchen preparing him something to eat . Or to

see you waiting for him in bed .

Rose: We dont have sex . I do everything like they said I should do on our wedding day for him ,laundry, cook and all . But I just cant have sex with him .

Sagi: Why ?

Rose: I dont know . Maybe I'm scared .

Sagi: Have you guys talked about it . Kana he's a man ,and he's starving .

Rose: last time we spoke about sex was the same day we last had it , on the day we got married. He said he wouldn't do anything to me without my permission and he's keeping his word .

Sagi : Baby he's a man . Worst your husband. He's bound to you and only you . But if you keep denying him every mans right he's going to find another woman and bring her to your house to have sex with her infront of you . And that'll make you feel less and its gonna hurt ,though your both not inlove with each other .Men are so unpredictable , you'll never know when it comes to them .

Rose: So are you saying I should have sex with him ?

Sagi: The choice is yours baby girl . Your body ,your choice and decision to make . J ust dont do what you dont feel like doing . I'm not talking on his behalf becouse I hate him , I'm just saying, hes a man .

Rose :I get you .. Why dont you and uncle like him anyway? I've been meaning to ask you guys .

Sagi: Uhm ..We just hate him because he's married to you . Nothing you should worry yourself about .

Rose: Is aunt Abigail back ?

Sagi: She will be back in a week . She said she needs more time to clear her head a bit .

Rose: Ohk ..

Sagi: Let me get back to cleaning babe. Well talk ohk .

Rose: Your cleaning while pregnant. And belly is growing so fast , your still on 3 months . Why doesn't uncle help you ?

Sagi: he's still sleeping . Yesterday him and her

friends had a mini party to celebrate one of their friends who just graduated. He sleeps as if he's the one pregnant.

Rose: (smiles) I can imagine. Bye .

They hang up and she continued cooking .

At the taxi rank .

The taxi drove into the taxi rank and parked before all the passengers stepped out . Kagiso stepped out and hang his school bag on his shoulder holding a PnP plastic in his other hand walking home . Breeze has been so helpful to him and even opened him another bank account where he sends him 1.5 every months plus paying his studies. First month wasn't bad at all at college. He spotted maSylvia and smiled walking towards her . Sylvia stood up smiling and opened her arms for him and they hugged before they sat down .

Sylvia : How are you my boy ?

Kagiso : I'm good ma . And you ?

Sylvia: I was traumatized after hearing what happened to you couple of months back . I hardly slept praying you come back . They even told me that you were no where to be found and your dead .

Kagiso: I'm a die hard . Thank you for always putting me in your prayers. I really appreciate you .

Sylvia: Your the only son I have my boy . How is your mother doing ? Is she ohk?

Kagiso: She's getting there . When I was not around my girlfriend helped take care of her . She had even gained weight and able to move around and do some chores . She had made progress. She's even looking for a job .

Sylvia: (smiling) that's great news my boy . I see you have a school bag , are you back in school ?

Kagiso: Yeah ..I'm in college. Mr Lyon is paying for my studies and I'm doing as much as I can to not

disappoint him . He is really a good man and helps me out a lot , I cant thank him enough.

Sylvia: Wow ..I'm really happy for you son .

Meanwhile Bonolo drove by the rank playing music drinking a milks hake when he spotted Kagiso sitting with an old woman and drove by stopping by the table . She rolled down the window and smiled stepping out and Kagiso stood up meeting her halfway and they hugged before pulling her to meet Sylvia.

Kagiso : Babe ..this is Ma Sylvia Kani . Ma this is Bonolo, my girlfriend.

Bonolo : Dumela ma .

Sylvia: Hello my girl. How are you ?

Bonolo: I'm good . And you ?

Sylvia: I'm also good . You didn't mention she was so beautiful son .

Bonolo: (smiling) oh ..thank you .

Kagiso: I ..wanted you to meet her in pers on .

Sylvia: Well she's really beautiful son.

Kagiso: Thank you . Ma ..let me go home and I'll come check up on you tomorrow.

Sylvia: no problem son . Go get some rest .

He kissed her cheek before taking his bag and plastic getting in the car and they drove off .

Bonolo: Your a person of people . Your too kind .

Kagiso : To those who have been there for me during my worst time . That woman gave me an opportunity while no one else couldn't. The little she gave me helped me a lot and was able to feed me and my mom .

Bonolo: I cant imagine what you've been through. I never had to ask anyone for a piece job or money because whatever I wanted I always got it . I'm

proud of you that you didn't give up hope babe . I love you .

Kagiso: I love you too .

He pulled her hand and kissed it as they drove along . Her phone vibrated on phone holder and Odirile's name and pic flashed on the screen. Her heart skipped when Kagiso let go of her hand so she could answer but she didn't, instead she ignored it . He called again when Kagiso looked at her and back at the phone.

Kagiso: Aren't you going to answer that ?

Bonolo: no .. this people call a lot and they call everytime I'm with you . They got no perfect timing .

Kagiso: he calls you for the second time . It could be important babe . Answer it .

Bonolo: no ..

Kagiso : Why not ? Is there something going on between you and him ?

Bonolo : What ? No !

Kagiso : then why won't you answer his calls ?

Answer it Bonolo.

Bonolo looked at him and swallowed before sliding answering the call and put it on loud speaker.

Bonolo: Odirile?

Odirile: Oh hey .. how are are you ?

Bonolo : I'm good . You ?

Odirile: I'm good . Look I wanted to ask you something.

Bonolo: cant it wait . I'm driving and I'm with my boyfriend.

Odirile: (hurt) oh ..uhm .. ohk .. I'll call you later then .
Bye .

Bonolo : Bye .

She hang up and breathed out looking at him and looked back at the road. After a while she parked at his gate and he picked his belongings without a word and got out closing the door. She sighed looking at his coming to her side and she slid the window down and they kissed .

Kagiso : next time dont hesitate to answer calls infront of me . I get jealous and think the worst if you dont .

Bonolo :ohk ..I love you .

Kagiso: I love you too .

They kissed again when Veronica stepped out of the house and held her hips looking at them and smiled .

Veronica: Yeei fotssek lena ! Not on my gate .

They broke the kiss and laughed looking at her smiling by the door way holding her hips . Bonolo raised her hand waving at her and she waved back before Kagiso stepped back and she drove home .

Kagiso sighed biting his lip and walked in the yard and hugged his mother and they walked inside .

At Breezes

Sagi tied the plastic and pulled it out of the house and put it in the dustbin. She sighed rubbing the sweat off her forehead and walked back rubbing her bump . She walked to the kitchen and checked her pots smiling and took a cooking spoon tasting before smiling impressed . She put the spoon down and took out the table bowls pouring every different dish in each before taking them to the dinner table packing them nicely. She went back to get the other ones and a bottle of wine for Breeze and her juice putting them nicely on the table . She went back to the kitchen and washed the pots she was using and

put them back then went upstairs.

She walked into the main bedroom finding Breeze still sleeping shirtless and shook her head taking off her dress walking to the bathroom.

Meanwhile Breeze stretched his hand to her side and found it empty. He raised his head looking around but she wasn't in there . He heard her humming from the insuit and yawned grabbing his phone looking at the time , it was 17h00 . Hes been out for more than 9 hours . He frowned putting the phone down and got off the bed walking to the bathroom. He leaned by the door rubbing his eyes and looked at her sitting in the bubble bath smiling at him and he smiled back .

Sagi: (smiling) hellow sleepy head .

Breeze: Hey you.. How are you two ?

Sagi : We are doing just fine . You ? Headache?
Anything? Hangover?

Breeze: nop .. I didn't drink that much . I just didn't

have much sleep a couple of few day . That's why I slept so long .

Sagi: I prepared food downstairs but first you have to take a bath . Ain't no way your touching my food before bathing .

Breeze : let me go clean up first. I'm sure we made a mess .

Sagi: you did . I cleaned dont worry come here .

Breeze : you what ? Baby you need to take it easy ohk . Your pregnant . Don't weigh yourself this much . I could have done that . And that baby is growing a lot more fast than we had possibly imagined so be careful . Do overwork yourself. Ever !

Sagi: Well it's done. Come here.

Breeze: Sagi I'm serious.

Sagi : ohk ..I won't overwork myself. I promise.

He sighed taking off his clothes and got in the bathtub with her and she layed on his chest . He put

his hands on her bump and she put hers on top of his when the baby kicked. They both scoffed smiling uncontrollably as the baby continued kicking and finally stopped.

Breeze : I cant wait for its arrival. I hope it's a boy .

Sagi: A girl .

Breeze: Boy .

Sagi: A girl . It's a girl.

Breeze: Fine ..a girl .

They both laughed and sighed sitting back . After a while they got out and went to brush their teeth then went to get dressed before going downstairs.

At The Lyons Mansion.

Jane sat on the couch rubbing her bump watching

TV with a sandwich in the other hand . She laughed looking at the comedy when Jack walked downstairs and sat opposite her . She didn't pay much attention to him and continued eating while watching the comedy laughing. Jack sighed picking the remote and switched the TV off . Jane's smile slowly dropped and she rolled her eyes sighing looking at him .

Jane: What ?

Jack : When are we going to talk about what happened at the wedding ?

Jane: Sometime not now .. I was watching something really entertaining switch the TV back on . You took someone that entertains me away so please dont get on my worst side before I spit something that could hurt more than you could possibly imagine. Turn the TV on .

Jack: Jane I found you and my brother kissing . Your hands wrapped around his neck while his were scanning your body , how do you expect me to keep

quiet and pretend like nothing happened?

Jane: Stop worrying yourself with something you'll never get the answers too. Life has moved on and your still holding tight to something that happened a month ago. Grow up Jack! Grow up marn !

She put the sandwich back in the plate and stood up sliding her feet into her slippers and went upstairs holding her bump . Jack swallowed looking at her walk away and sighed taking out his phone calling Rose . She too hasn't spoke to him since the day of her wedding. She's been ignoring his call and doesn't even want anything to do with him . He cut the call and leaned back putting his hands on his face letting it all in .

In the Boat .

Gail walked out of the room tying the rope and went to stand on the balcony looking over the ocean.

Being here has been really relaxing with nothing to bother her. Though she missed being around her crazy sister wife and Breeze. Actually she missed all the drama. She smiled picturing Sagi pregnant in her mind and how her hormones are combining with her natural behavior. Surely this time her mental issue is on its top level. She had missed being in her mans arms, feeling his arms wrap around her and his warmth. Hearing those 'I love you's' at the end of every conversation making her feel loved and valued to the last. His kisses.

A chef brought her food and put them on the table and she sighed walking over pouring herself some wine and sat down enjoying her meal. Her mind was made, she wanted her joy back. Her family. Sagi and Breeze.

At Rose's house.

Mxolisi drove through the gate and parked in the garage and sighed. He looked at his wrist watch

and picked his brief and his phone then stepped out of the car locking it . He used the garage door and walked in the house when an amazing smell hit his nostrils. He walked to the living room and put everything on the couch including his jacket before walking to the dining room and found food on the table. Rose walked down the stairs in her floral dress and smiled at him when he smiled back and they sat down .

Rose: Hi .

Mxolisi: Hi ..

Rose: How was your day at work ?

Mxolisi: it was tiring as always . Dealing with arrogant clients is not something one can say they enjoy doing . Yours ?

Rose: Mine was just mine in my own world. Fine .

He looked at her and couldn't help but smile . They both started dishing for themselves and dug in . The

way they were so delicious you'd swear it wasn't her first time . He was also always excited to come home to discover new dishes he never had before. They were really good. After a while ..they finished eating and stood up clearing the table . Mxolisi pulled his shirt and started washing the dishes as she stood by with another dishcloth and dried them .

She picked a plate from the sink drying it when all of a sudden cold wrapped around her body as she got chilly and trembled and the plate slid from her hands breaking on the floor . Mxolisi quickly turned looking at her as she shivered and slowly closed her eyes when he caught her before she could hit the ground . Her whole body was so warm but she was shivering with her teeth clicking against each other . His heart pounded so hard holding her in his arms looking at her .

Mxolisi: Rose ..Rose ? Hey.. Come on ..Rose ? !

He swallowed before picking her up and went to the

living room . He balanced her with his thigh picking the car keys and held her rushing to the garage. He got her into the car and buckled her before pressing the remote for the garage and the gate . He got to his side and before the garage door could finally open fully he stepped on the accelerator reversing and drove out pressing the keys and they closed as he sped to the hospital.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:46] Lynne : Chapter 51

At The Hospital.

Mxolisi sat by Rose holding her hand as the doctor checked her eyes and her heart rate and all those . He sighed looking at Mxolisi before opening a brown envelope narrowing his eyes and shook his head looking at Rose .

Mxolisi: What is it doc ? Is everything alright with her ?

Doctor: Well Mr Meleka . Unfortunately I cant give you anything. We ran multiple test just to be sure and we get the same results .Your wife seems perfectly healthy and fine . We couldn't find anything wrong with her .

Mxolisi: But how? She was literally shaking . Are you sure its not ET ?

Doctor: Fortunately it's not ET sir . She is perfectly fine and I dont see why we should keep her here . I'll be discharging her .

Mxolisi looked at him and clicked his tongue before looking at Rose who has been looking at the ceiling for quite a while now . She sighed looking at Mxolisi .

Rose: You didn't call them right ?

Mxolisi: Your parents?

Rose: Yes .

Mxolisi: You said you wanted to cut ties with them so I didn't see why I should though I wanted too . I really dont understand why you'd wish to distance yourself from your own parents though .

Rose: I just need a break from the Lyon drama . If dad in not on my neck then their fighting one

another including uncle Breeze and aunt Sagi . Their just a lot for me to handle.

Mxolisi: So in other words your running away from your own family shadow ? Which is highly impossible course even if it doesn't come directly in will , one way or another indirectly.

Rose: I'm not running away. I just want the whole thing to pass. It's just a lot for me to handle plus the fact that I'm married.

Mxolisi: mmhhh!

He helped her off the bed and got down helping her wear her shoes . He stood up taking the car keys on the table and held her hand and they walked out .

The next day .

Early in the morning .With headphones on playing loud music in his gym wear , Breeze jogged on the treadmill as sweat dripped off him like they just

poured water all over him . He pressed the button slowing the pace until it stopped then he got off reaching for ha towel. He took out his phone and stopped the music and took the headphones heading to their room .

Meanwhile Odirile put the pin on the door and it unlocked . He got in and walked straight towards the fridge with his mind glued to Bonolo . This days she seemed occupied every chance he gets to want to meet up with her nor little to talk to her over the phone . He took out sandwich ingredients and made himself a sandwich and ate without putting everything back where it should be . He took out a juice jar and put it on the counter before taking out a glass and poured himself juice ,still didn't put it back in the fridge.

After a while , Sagi walked down the stairs balancing herself on the wall and breathed out . This bump was getting bigger and bigger for a person on her 3rd month . She looked like she was on her 5th month. She rubbed her forehead when her eyes landed on the counter in the kitchen.

Sagi : Breeze...!

She walked over and frowned looking at Odirile leaning on the counter drinking juice with a cucumber in his hand . She bit her lip and rushed over grabbing the glass in his hand .

Sagi: What the hell do you think your doing ?

Odirile: I thought I had a chance babe . You know for a second I thought she was mine . But she's not .

Sagi : Who ? Pack everything back ! This is not a food hub . Who is that ? Start cleaning.

Odirile lazily stood up and started putting everything back .

Odirile: Remember the girl I was with the other day when we met at the store ?

Sagi: Bonolo ?

Odirile: yeah yena .!

Sagi: yeah I remember her . What did she do ?

Odirile: You see this girl my sister is a darling . She makes me laugh and makes me feel things I haven't felt in years since my girlfriend passed on . She has this beautiful smile just like yours that makes me want to bow down and kiss her toes . Flop is that she's got a boyfriend. And this guy is always around him and I cant help it but ..it hurts . I'm hurt . Now i dont get to talk to her freely and full time . She doesn't answer my calls sometimes. And on the other hand ..your husband said I shouldn't track her course that'll be stalking. So yeah ..in other words I'm stuck in the middle of hurt and happy .

He wiped the counter and took out a cup making Sagi a cup of tea and put it in front of her .

Sagi : Is it lust or you truly are into her ?

Odirile: Look at me Sagi .. look at me . I've never been serious with anyone's daughter after my girl and now her . I feel like she's a missing part that has been missing .

Sagi : Well ..go get your girl . If you truly love her then go get her . Follow your instincts . If your interest in her you need to show her and that you'd make a good boyfriend. Try telling her how you feel . Then leave the rest to her to make her decision and take the next move to whether she leaves her boyfriend or she runs to you so you could both have a romantic relationship.

Odirile: But what if I tell her and she shuts me off . Ignores me forever.

Sagi: then the least you can do is respect her decision babe .

Odirile: But..

Sagi: No Odirile. You cant force her into this . J ust tell the girl how you feel and let her take the wheel .

Breeze walked down the stairs and picked his car keys on the table walking towards Sagi . He put his hand on her bump and kissed her before bumping shoulders with Odirile.

Breeze: You good ?

Odirile: now that I spoke to my girl ..hell yeah .

Breeze: then I guess we should get going. Babe I'll see you later .

Sagi: you be safe alright?

Breeze : I promise. I love you .

Sagi: I love you too .

Odirile looked at them as they kissed when he smiled and waited for Breeze to step back .

Odirile: I love you babe .

Sagi:(smiling) I love you too babe .

He walked over holding in his laughter and leaned over for a kiss when Breeze pulled him by the back of his neck and they all laughed as they walked out .

At the Lyons Mansion.

Jane looked at herself on the mirror and sighed as most of her dresses didn't fit her . She looked at the mess she made and took off the one she was wearing and sat on the bed . She took her phone and went through her gallery looking at pictures when she came across the one Jack shot with her and Breeze sitting on the garden chairs ,more like an unexpected pic . Before all the feeling and drama started. When everything between them was just normal, like brother and sister. But then all that has passed and looking at this pic , they'd make a perfect couple . They look so good together and they both deserve each other . She has to go get her man .

She smiled and stood up picking a floral dress and wore her sleepers. She took her car keys and phone and rushed out .

On her way down .. Jack sat down around the table having breakfast alone in his suit ready for work . He spotted her rush out without saying even as little as a good morning. He was hoping now that it was a new day , they'd sit down and talk this through but clearly he was wrong. He swallowed shaking his head and even lost appetite when he threw the fork in the plate and stood up . He took his brief and car keys then left .

Back at Breeze's.

Thirty mins later . Jane drove through the yard and parked on the parking lot before checking herself on the mirror and smiled stepping out . She walked towards the door fixing her hair and smiled before president the bell .

Inside Sagi frowned looking at the door calculating the steps she would take towards it and how long plus energy it would take her to get there . She continued eating when the bell rang again but still she glanced at the door and continued eating. It rang again and she hit the table getting off the chair and slowly walked over . She opened the door with a serious face when she came bump to bump with Jane . She looked at her bump that was pointing at hers and looked at her feeling like strangling her at this point .

Jane: Hi ..is Breeze around.

Sagi: how do you feel sleeping with you husbands brother ? Little bother on top of that ?

Jane swallowed looking at her and rubbed her bump looking behind her . Sagis anger brewed as she ignored her and kept stretching her neck looking behind her . She bit her lip and roughly pushed her back with her bump and closed the door

as she trembled back and finally gained balance looking at her . Sagi held her hips with a neutral face looking at Jane who looked at her with anger .

Sagi: Kare how do you feel mma ? Kana o avoida nna ?

Jane: Sagi I'm not here for you and your tantrums . I'm here to see Breeze. So stay out of my way please .

Sagi: Haii wena ! Your in my property first of all and you asking for my man on top of that ! Ska batla go ntena nna ka makgakga a gago nnanyana! O batlang monneng wame ?

Jane: Kare stay out of my way Sagi !

Sagi:(smiling) Kana ke tlo go bets a Jane . And trust me I dont wanna hurt that baby your caring but your pushing me to the edge now . What are you looking for Breeze?

Jane: I'm not talking to you about this . Stay in your lane and focus on your mental health issue . If you

were stable up in there Breeze wouldn't have cheated or at least learned how to control that anger of yours . But since you can baby girl ..sit back and watch and learn how to -

A hot slap landed on her cheek before she can finish her sentence. She held her cheek looking at Sagi before returning it .

Sagi held her cheek and smiled .

Sagi: you hit me bitch !

Jane: (angry) I did ...and just so you should know why I was here ..its because I'm carrying Breeze's first heir. And I want hi-

Just right there .Sagi pulled her by her head and smashed her on the door and she landed on the floor screaming in pain . Like it wasn't enough, she grabbed a hand full of her hair and pulled to her car and again smashed her head on the window as she

screamed again in pain bleeding. She pulled another hand full from the back of her head and hit her forehead four times on the door before hitting her hard and let go leaving blood on the car as she screamed. She bit her lip looking at her as she cried on the ground holding her bleeding forehead and kicked her on the neck and she fell on her side protecting her bump .

Sagi: A -you don't touch me . Not when I'm pregnant, I'll kill you when coming to my baby . I'm mean literally kill you J ane . Nx !

She pulled her dress and walked back into the house closing the door behind her leaving J ane on the ground crying in pain. After a while a very strong pain hit her below her abdomen when she frowned screaming. She held her bump breathing in crying and balanced herself with the car standing and opened the door . She moved the glasses and got in screaming and started the car as it hit hard

this time . She clenched her jaws as the blood made it's way to her eyes and she quickly rubbed it and drove out crying in pain .

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:46] Lynne : Chapter 52 .

In J ane's car .

Jane pulled more tissues from the box and put them on her forehead crying as she made her way to the hospital. She wiped herself one more time before pulling her phone and dialed Breeze. At first it went unanswered then finally he picked.

Breeze: You know what Jane . I think it's about damn time I get a restraining order against you course you cant stay away from me since I cant push you hard enough . I would do it my way but I cant since your my brothers wife .

Jane: That goes to your wife too . Listen when I get to the hospital I'm calling the police and I'm opening a case against her . I dont even know why your still with this crazy woman . She not right for you . Tonight she's going to sleep in a jail cell . Nx !

She hang up before he could answer as she got a little bit weak . She took more tissues and applied pressure on her forehead as she made a turn into

the hospital and went to park on the parking lot . She stepped out holding her phone and car keys with her dress covered in blood and shut the door . A nurse who was on lunch noticed her and rushed over to her and helped her inside .

At Club 808 .

Outside Breeze took the phone off his ear with a frown and tried to call her again but it didn't go through. He tried more times but still . He shook his head dialing Sagi when it also went answered for a while until she picked.

Sagi: Hey baby .

Breeze: Hii ..what what are you doing?

Sagi: Nothing.. I'm laying on the couch having fish fingers with peanut butter and tomato sauce. Its really delicious. Why ?

Breeze: (frown) Fish fingers with peanut butter and

tomato sauce? Sagi what are you feeding my baby ? Those things dont even get along. Was Jane there ?

Sagi: Yeah.

Breeze:What happened?

Sagi: We just had a little bit of a chat . A girl talk . Dont ask me why and how I handle it course its between her and I. And I handled it just fine .

The way she was so calm over the phone, i swear you'd fall for it .He sighed as his heart started racing and he smiled hanging up and opened the car door just as Odirile stepped out .

Odirile: And then ? Where are you going ? Those man are here so you could see how they perform so they can start dancing tonight.

Breeze: Well my friend. I have an issue to handle . A big one more than to watch Male strippers. You came up with the idea ,I'm sure you can handle it just fine without me . Cheers !

Odirile: We are going to make a lot money man out of this !

Breeze scoffed before getting in the car and drove off . Odirile sighed taking his phone out of his pocket and went to the dial log looking hesitating to call Bonolo. He clenched his jaws and switched it off putting it back and walked inside.

Inside man of different sexy sizes and colors sat on the stage shirtless chatting and when Odirile walked over they gave him their attention.

Odirile: Sorry guys. Big guy wont be able to join us hes got an emergency to attend , so we'll have to take it on our own . Remember you being here is not only about dancing and taking your clothes off for the ladies. It's about making them happy . Some come here to get away from their daily routines, their husbands, and when they get off from work, they want to relax and have fun spending their hard earned money. I saw how you guys are not only

great dancers but with skills and your scales come with better money. Another thing is you need to also remember that you need the whole package , forget about an unhealthy rivalry. It's not only about the body, the personality is just as important. You'll have to engage with the viewers and the individuals . You will become well known by the end of the night ,recommended and not only will your name be passed on ,You will get more clients and gain yourself more tips which is a big part of you being a Male stripper.

They clapped hand as they whistled and he shook his head raising his hand .

Odirile: And remember..sleeping with clients is off the table man .

All: (laughed) but why not ?

Odirile : its simple.. if you want them to come back or recommend you , set some boundaries , limits and dont ever cross the line . You need to be

professional guys . Kana you guys will be more like artists. Come on gents . Its certainly not a piece of cake .

They all laughed as they got up and one of them remained on the stage stretching his hands and walked back then came back starting the routine.

At Breezes.

Breeze drove into the yard and parked his car stepping out when he saw glasses on the ground. He looked around and put his hands in the pockets before walking into the house .

He closed the door behind him and walked to the living room finding Sagi peacefully sleeping with a peanut butter on her bump and a plate of fish fingers with tomato source on her chest with the TV on . He took the remote and switched off the TV then moved everything from her taking them to the

kitchen. He came back and picked her legs sitting down putting them on his laps before gently waking her .

Sagi: (yawning) your back ?

Breeze: yess ..and I think you might have lied to me . What are those glasses doing outside ? Thought you guys had a decent chat ?

Sagi: We did ..and she pushed me right where it hurts. Becouse I cant handle the pain I lashed it out on her .

Breeze: But baby we agreed no violence! That pers on is pregnant an-

Sagi: Dont worry I was careful ! I wouldn't hurt a baby . (sarcastic) Your baby is fine !

She pulled her legs off him and stood up as his mouth dropped . He rubbed his head before standing and followed her to the kitchen.

Breeze: I thought we talked about this . Chances are there baby .

Sagi: Chances Breeze! That's one of your problems! You like taking chances !

Breeze: Sagi -

Sagi: No .. I'm not fine with it ! It hurts. I thought I could handle it but I cant ,its just too much . Every time I see her ,I just want to see her face as I strangle her running out of breath in my bare hands . And now that baby- (teary) I have nothing against it and I have no intentions of hurting it but by the time it gets to this planet..he or she'll be a constant reminder and I wont be able to live with that . Unless if it was Gail's. Today she kept on poking me ,reminding me every thing I tried to bury behind me . I dont think her and I will ever get along like we used to . I'm sorry babe ..I cant . Keep her away from me or I'll kill her this time . And mean it .

Meanwhile..outside a police van drove into the yard and two police officers stepped . They both looked

around and shook their heads .

Officer 1: I've been here before just that last time we were here for the husband .

Officer2: I dont understand rich people . They have money but instead of separating and go separate ways they'd rather fight like cats . 60 % of people in jail are rich with nails and are able to afford anything they want yet you'd wonder why couldn't they stay away from Unlawful acts and enjoy their lives.

They looked at the glasses on the ground and looked at one another before going to the door and pressed the bell .

Meanwhile Breeze rubbed his hands together on the counter as Sagi drank water when the bell rang and they looked at one another. Sagis heart pounded so hard on her chest and the glass slipped put of her hand broke of the floor . Breeze rushed to her pulling her into a hug .

Sagi: (crying) I cant sleep in jail Breeze. Please help me .

Breeze: its ohk babe ..I'll handle this .

Sagi: I'm sorry..I'm really sorry. Please dont let them take me . I'm pregnant.

Breeze pulled out his phone from the pocket dialing Jane but it went straight to voicemail. Sagi looked at him in tears and rubbed them gathering herself. She knew what she was doing and she had to face the consequences. She signed with a beating heart holding Breezes hand pulling him to the door and opened.

Officer: Mrs Sagi Lyon ?

Sagi: Yess . That's me .

Officer: You under arrest for assaulting a pre- hold on ..your pregnant too ?

Officer 2: Kana re mmerekong monna ,stop the questions and let's take this woman. Mam your under arrest for assaulting a pregnant women . Everything you say or do will be used against you in the court of law .

Breeze: Ohk hold on with the says and do's let me talk to Jane . This is a family matter and I'm sure we can fix it without including the police.

Officer 2: Sir we are doing our job and if you stay in our way or go against it we are also ordered to lock you in too and you'll be charged wi-

Sagi: no need for all of that . I'll go. (To Breeze) just promise you'll not let us spend more than 30 days in pris on baby nor 7 . Please.

She leaned in kissing him as the officers stood there watching. She broke the kiss and smiled turning around and they cuffed her escorting her to the car before driving out . Breezes eyes welled up in tears as his heart ached with anger and pain . He clenched his jaws and took out his phone dialing

Stone .

Stone : Boss ! I can explain. She forced me ! I had no choice!

Breeze: (frowned) What ?

Stone: it was months back and I tried to tell her that I dont want to get involved and she blackmailed me . I'm really sorry.

Breeze: What are you talking about ? Who forced you to what?

Stone: uhm ..I uhm .. nothing boss. No one forced me to do anything. I was just playing you , wanted to see how you'd react.

Breeze: Better not be lying . But now I need your help . Last week my lawyer passed away and now there's an emergency up on me . I need a best lawyer to get my wife out of prison.

Stone: I think I have one in mind . Someone so professional and knows what they do in court. Someone who breathes laws but he costs a lot .

Breeze: Money is not a problem. Send me his details and set up a meeting .

Stone : on it .

Breeze walked inside and went to take his car keys when his phone notified him . He took it out and opened his emails looking for contact and bothered less to look at the name saving them. He closed the door and jogged to his car ,got in and drove off .

At Club 808 .

Odirile sat on the bar as the guys rehearsed. He clapped hands as Sagis words got in his head . He sighed pulling a bottle of whiskey and poured himself a glass and gulped it at a go . He poured another one and took out his phone . He cleared his thought before dialing Bonolo.

At Bonolo's house.

Bonolo's layed on her back reading a novel on her bed when her phone rang by her side . She sighed folding the page she was reading and rolled laying on her stomach and picked the phone .

Bonolo: hey Rile ?

Odirile: Wow ! A nickname , I like it . How are you ?

Bonolo: I'm good . You ?

Odirile: I'll be good if you give me one valid reason why your ignoring me ?

Bonolo: I'm not ignoring you . J ust that ..everytime you call ,I'm around my boyfriend.

Odirile: So are you saying I got a bad timing of checking up on you ?

Bonolo: Yeah. And always I have to come up with lies that your my friend from where I used to live and things like that . And i hate lying to him course I love him .

Odirile: What about me?

Bonolo: (swallowed) What about you ?

Odirile: Do you love me ?

Her heart beat raced as words stuck in her mouth not knowing how to reply him . This guy was totally charming but so did Kagiso. They both had their ways of making her happy . Odirile makes her laugh and live in the moment making the world around her not to exist while Kagiso makes her feel like she's the only girl in the world encourages her and helps her by giving her full supporting everything. Out of all they all make her happy . She didn't want to hurt him and loose him but also didn't want to mix them course it never ends well . She enjoys his company and his attention and she also didn't want to lose that .

Bonolo: but I hardly know you . It's hard to tell if whether I love you or not.

Odirile: Then give me a chance . A chance to prove myself to you . I know you have a boyfriend but please give us a shot . I'm really into you and I cant help but wonder more, just give me a chance to love you and give yourself the chance to love me and I swear you'll never live to regret it . I cant promise to be the best partner in the whole wide world course I know it's part of a relationship to grow to have fights but I can promise to never live , I'll always be by you . I've fallen deep and I love you Bonolo. I love you . I cant think of anything else this day becouse of you . I keep asking advices which is something I never do course usually I'm the one they come to for advices but because I'm even scared a bit to come out to you I do . Your always on my mind and my tongue . My friend is even tired of hearing me call out your name . You make me do crazy things Bonolo and I'm talking about abnormal things..

Bonolo: (giggles)

Odirile : (smiling) on a serious note Nolo . I love you and I want you . I want no one but you . I dont care

if you have a boyfriend but just know I want no one but you and I'll wait for as long as I can to be with you .

He sighed as she listened and he hang up putting a weigh on her heart . She swallowed rolling back looking up the ceiling as her mind span around with clutching feelings . This was going to be hard than she thought.

At Kagiso's.

Kagiso walked into the yard holding a live chicken as his mother sat under a tree cutting her nails . She knew very well that his son always had a thing with chickens so she stopped cutting her nails and watched him as he walked to the side and put the poor chicken in an empty dustbin and wiped his face with his shirt.

Veronica: heii voets ek wena !

Kagiso turned looking at her and laughed .

Veronica: your going to slaughter that chicken the least you can do is honour it before its death . Who on earth put a chicken in a dustbin. Take that poor chicken out .

Kagiso: but mama-

Veronica: but mama what ? Put that poor chicken in that huge bird cage you once made . It'll fit in just fine in there . Heban!

He sighed taking out the chicken and went to put it in the bird cage and she shook her head then continued cutting her nails . After he put it there he went to wash his hands on a tap and got inside taking out his books sitting on the chair and started reading . He was really committed to this .

At the Lyons Mansion.

Breeze raced into the yard and hit the break when the wheels scratched on the ground leaving marks . He stepped out jogging into as the guards and gardeners looked him wondering what was wrong . He busted into the house when Dineo saw him and rushed over with a pounding heart.

Dineo: Mr Lyon .

Breeze: Where is that bitch that calls herself the lady of the house .

Dineo: uhm ..Mrs Lyon is not here yet but Mr Mr Lyon just returned from wor-

Voice: What the hell are you doing in my house ?!

Breeze smirked and turned looking at Jack as he got off the stairs with his huge belly in casual .

Jack : I said what are you doing my house ?

Outside Jane parked her car looking at Breezes and smiled looking at the door . Maybe he was here to sweet talk her to dropping the charges but she wasn't about to do that without a taste of that dick . She smiled stepping out and closed the door as everyone turned looking at her with a bandage around her head . She cleared her throat with a smile walking in and frowned to Breeze and Jack looking like boxers ready for a fight . As soon as Breeze saw her he rushed over and pulled her by her neck with one hand and pinned her against the wall blocking her air way . Her bag fell off from her grip slapping his hand off when Jack rushed over in anger and pulled him away and she coughed falling on her knees crying gasping for air .

Jack threw a punch at Breeze and he returned it . Breeze pulled him by his neck and headed him on his nose when he lost balance and stumbled back hitting a flower vase and it fell .

Breeze: I told you to stay away from me ! More especially her ! Your pregnant for christ sake. If you dont care about your life the least you could do is think about that baby your carrying !

J ane: (crying) that's what I'm doing ! I think for the baby !

Breeze : What the hell were you doing at my house in the first place? What were you expecting? A warm welcome from Sagi ? For her to pop a champagne at her stage ?

J ane: (crying) she assaulted me !

Breeze: you were disrespecting her in her yard ! And now you involved the police. Your lucky she thought of the baby and didn't crack your thick skull for you and trust me she will . You have absolutely no idea what you just started course she has more cooking for you . If I were you I'd drop those charges course prison drives people crazy. Imagine her when she gets out in her health condition ! Why are you so careless ? A grown ass woman like you

who is a doctor should know more not to mess with a person in her condition! What the hell is wrong with you ? Cant you see I'm trying to protect you ?

Jane: (crying) But Breeze I-

Breeze: No "but's" Jane ! From now on ...you stay away from me and my family! Not once should you contact me or come anywhere near me unless its important! You gonna get yourself killed woman !
Arg !

He threw his hands shaking his head in frustration and went out . Meanwhile Jack pulled his shirt out and rubbing the blood as his nose bleed uncontrollably.

Jack: What was that about ? Course clearly there's more to all that and you've been seeing-

Jane: just shut up .

Jack : no I wont shut up Jane ! Ano-

Jane:(screaming) I said shut up ! Just shut up !

Shut up ! I dont wanna hear you say a word ! I dont
wanna her you speak and I dont even wanna hear
you breath ! I dont wanna see you ! I dont want to
look at you ! I dont want to hear your heartbeat!
J ust shut up ! Shut up !

She stood up holding her neck and picked her bag
crying and went up the stairs leaving J ack amazed .

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

. Comment

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:46] Lynne : Chapter 53 .

At the police station .

Breeze parked his car in the parking lot and stepped out . He looked at the police building and not once has he ever thought he'd come back here under different circumstances ,especially for his wife ,not again . He walked in the building and went to the table looking at the pretty woman on the table answering a phone call . She cut the call looking at him and smiled .

Her: Mr Lyon . Nice to see you again.

Breeze: Wish I can say the same . I need to talk to the detective that's holding my wifes case . She's pregnant and I need to see her , she could be hungry.

Her: Detective Letsoalo is the one on this case . And knowing the beef he has with you , i doubt he'll allow you to see her . But let me call him .

He bit his lip stepping back as the lady did a call . He took out his phone and dialed Stone .

Stone : He says today he wont be able to make it . His wife is not fine si he'll have to stay in but tomorrow he'll be able to meet up with you .

Breeze: WTF ! Didn't you tell this guy that I need him as in like today? I cant let my wife sleep in here while carrying my child! Tell him that I want him as in like today !

He hang up turning around as the detective walked over to him . He sighed looking at his smirk and rubbed his face .

Detective: you and your wife just cant keep your

hands to yourself, can you ?

Breeze: Can I see my wife please ?

Detective: No ! You cant . Your wife assaulted a pregnant woman . She is facing a minimum mandatory sentence range of one year charged with assault in the 3rd degree to 5 years .

Breeze: But you haven't charged her yet ! I want to see my wife detective, she's pregnant!

Detective: she should have thought about that before she layed her hand on another woman . Your wife will appear in court on Monday . I'll try with everything I have to make sure her court appearance is brought up forward.

Breeze: Dont do this . She's pregnant. Cant you guys have some sympathy?! Fine you'll do what you say you'd do but now you haven't yet charged her with any -

Detective: she is guilty. There's no way we are letting her out of here with all the strong evidence we have against her . I'm sorry man . But I cant let you see her . All you can do is find her a good

lawyer though I doubt he'll be able to apply a bail for her course this is serious. Maybe the lawyer will help with the imprisonment sentence. But since you have connections inside, I doubt it'll be hard to find her a security squad for her safety and the baby.

He pat his shoulder and turned Around leaving him feeling powerless. Now he missed Gail more than ever. He swallowed a painful lump and turned around leaving the building. He got in his car and drove off

Inside a holding cell.

Sagi layed on the stinky mattress slowly rubbing her bump calculating everything. Her mind went all bloody as she rubbed her bump without emotions on her face. She heard footsteps approaching and turned her head looking at the police officer opening the gate for another woman who was

sorrowfully crying begging with her hands together. They pushed her inside and closed the gate before she put her hands between the poles and they uncuffed her as she begged .

Her:(crying) Please ..I didn't mean too ,you have to believe me . Hey ! It was a mistake!

The police officer ignored her and walked away when she instantly kept quiet and wiped her tears rolling her eyes .

Her: Mxm !

She took off her jacket and turned around looking at Sagi and smiled at her but she didn't smile back . She walked over and sat on the other mattress e looking at Sagi .

Her: hi ..I'm Dikeledi .

Sagi: Sagi .

Her: So what are you in here for ? Oh wait let me start . I was on a money heist and I accidentally shot the woman that was selling in the shop . Now is in cama. I felt guilty and panicked so I called the police and reported myself and an ambulance. Which is the dumbest thing one can ever do . Now I'm back to where I started .

Sagi: I assaulted a pregnant woman. Hit her against the door ,window and her car until she bled.

Dikeledi: did she do anything to offend you ?

Sagi: yeah ..she said some really offensive things to me and she slept with my man . And now she's pregnant with his child

Dikeledi: Shit ! You sound more crazy than me . You hit a pregnant woman . But I dont get it ..why would they put you in here when your also pregnant? Are they going to put you in prison for 5years ?

Sagi: that's what I'm waiting here to find out . (Sigh)

I hope not course when I get out , its going down .

At Breezes house.

Breeze walked into the empty house and threw the keys on the table by the door and walked toward the bar . He sat on the high chair and pulled a strong liquor bottle opening it and drank from the mouth .

The house felt so lonely without them and couldn't imagine how she must be holding up in the cell .

A call came through when he took out his phone and answered.

Odirile: You home ?

Breeze: Nop ..

Odirile: Cool ..course I'm coming over .

Breeze: (lips together)Bbbrrr ..

He cut the call and drank his sorrow.

At Rose's house.

Around 8pm .

Rose stepped out of the shower and pulled a towel wrapping herself. She walked to the mirror and looked at herself . She was back to square one again. She recognized the girl on the mirror and the other one was gone . Hidden by the one she was looking at . She doesn't laugh and nothing pleases her . She sighed and walked out to her closet and took the towel off applying lotion on her body . She looked at the sparkling diamond ring on her finger and bit her lip . Her eyes suddenly got heavy when she blinked multiple times as her side got blurry. Her heart raced when she rubbed her eyes and when she opened them it started to get dark . She rubbed them again when she completely saw darkness. She couldn't see anything . She opened her eyes widely but still .She used her fingers

opening them, but not a change when she screamed. She cried rubbing them but nothing happened.

In the dining room . Mxolisi was on a phone call with his hand typing something on the laptop when he heard Rose scream. He took the phone off his ear and listened attentively before cutting the call and stood up rushing upstairs.

He ran to her closet and found her naked screaming when he gasped as she tried finding something with her hands with her eyes wide open crying . He looked at her as she rubbed her eyes crying and walked over and tried to touch her but she got away from him .

Mxolisi: Rose ! It's me!

Rose: (crying) Help me ! I cant see ! I cant see anything ! Mxolisi help ! Please!

He frowned looking at her when he walked over

waving his hand before her eyes but she couldn't see anything. She raised her hands looking for him when he led her hand and she pulled him hugging him as she cried .

Rose: (crying) help me ..

.

.

Next day

.

.

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:47] Lynne : Chapter 54

At Breezes

The next day .Breeze tossed and turned for the one hundredth time without getting any sleep. He checked the time and sighed looking up the ceiling. The sheets were so cold without them . The house felt so empty and silent. He wouldn't survive without them and which is why he had to fight for them .

The time was 6am .

He kicked the sheets off and lazily got off the bed going to take a cold shower . After a while he stepped out and pulled a blanket drying himself and went to stand by the mirror. He looked at himself and couldn't help but smile at how they so loved seeing him wet like this . How Sagi loves wrapping her tiny hands behind him and lay her head on his back . The way Gail loves kissing. He sighed walking out to his closet and applied lotion before getting dressed in black casual. He isn't much into suits .

He went into the bedroom and fixed the bed before

looking for Sagi's medical history then took his phone going downstairs to the kitchen.

He put everything on the counter looking around as a memory of Sagi forcing him to eat flashed before his eyes . He wasn't even hungry today . Didn't feel like eating while his wife is in jail sleeping on an empty stomach while carrying his baby . He opened the fridge and pulled a bottle of water then took Sagi's medical history along with his phone leaving picking the keys by the door .

At Rose's house.

Rose layed on the bed not wanting to open her eyes course thinking what's the use ? Meanwhile Mxolisi stood by her side in his formal wear looking at her .

Mxolisi: Common Rose . Let's go get your eyes checked.

Rose: No ..

Mxolisi: So you'd rather remain like this forever? Who knows maybe the doctor can find something that's blinding you .

Rose: I told you I'm ohk . Last time we went there they found nothing wrong with me ,what makes you think they'll find anything now ?

Mxolisi: last time it was different. Right n-

Rose: You should go to work. Yesterday you recieved multiple calls from your clients. You don't want to be on the bad side loosing them. Go .

Mxolisi: I'd rather stay here with you. And don't change the subject course I'm taking you to the hospital. Like it or not . Clients can wait . Your my first priority and it's not up for discussion. Your health matter's to me more than being in a suit standing up for someone I don't even know.

He walked to her closet and took out a pair of jeans, her bra and a sweater. He walked back and pulled the sheet off and she slowly got up then he helped her wear them . He went back to get her kicks and

sock then came back helping her wear them. He stood up looking at her cute round face . Her lips draw him in when he held himself and breathed out turning her around. He tied her hair into a pony tail then took her hand taking her to the bathroom to wash her teeth. After they were done he picked her then headed downstairs to make her food to eat on the way .

Rose: Are you cooking ?

Mxolisi: What ? No ! I'm bad in cooking, I'm making you a sandwich with juice, and in the oven I'm heating up the fries .

Rose: Ohk ..thank you .

Mxolisi: your welcome.

After he was done he packed everything and helped her off the chair heading to the car . He opened her side and she got in and he put the food on her laps then went to his side as she ate while he drove off.

He turned looking at her as she ate without opening her eyes and sighed looking at the road.

Mxolisi: I think we should call your parents and myn . Maybe they'll help u-

Rose: No ..not myn. My parents hate me that's the reason I'm here with you. They sold me out and as for my mother ,instead of stopping the whole thing she went along. I dont want them anywhere near me . Ever !

Mxolisi: but they're your parents . They deserve to know what's happening with you right now. I could be abusing you .

Rose: Well your not ,are you ?

Mxolisi: I'm not but ...think of the blame I'll be having on my shoulders if anything happens to you . What if worse happens after this ? Do you know that I'll end up being caught in the middle of all of this just because you stopped me from picking up the phone and call them ? Your parents will see me as the guilty, irresponsible one in all of this .

Rose: (low) still ...I don't want them near me . I'll take the full blame . If I die just know that it's not your fault. It's all on me .

Mxolisi: No no no ! No one is dieing. Your not leaving this world . We are not talking about death here ,we are talking about your health now . What if next time you wake up having an eternal bleeding? How am I going to take care of that on my own?

Rose: I don't want them . Better if you call aunty Sagi and uncle Breeze. They're the only ones I consider parents at this point. Not myn.

Mxolisi: (swallowed) fine..let's say I call your uncle and your aunt, and the something happens under their care . Do you know they could end up arrested ? Same thing goes to me !

Rose: Why do you keep pushing me towards my parents? ! I dont want them in my life ! I want nothing to do with them ! Why do you keep forcing the relationship to work while to me its already broken?

Mxolisi: Because their your parents Rose . And

there's no amount of hatred and anger that can cut and take that away. They gave you life . I cant do what they can do for you ,not even a tiny bit . I cant replace them , I cant do what their capable of doing in your life . I cant fill in the missing part in but they can at least try. Their your parents and even though your angry, you can't run away from that . You can get angry , open multiple restraining orders, get away , die , love hard , do whatever shit that you want but you can never get away from a parent. Who knows...maybe they can find a solution to our problem.

Rose picked a fry in the lunch box and chewed it swallowing with a huge lump on her throat. Mxolisi looked at her before pulling her hand and kissed it before putting it on the gear changing with her.

Mxolisi: I'm just saying- think it through ohk ... just think about it.

At The Police station.

The police officer looked at Breeze before unpacking everything in the plastic he was holding ,taking out different kinds of food . He sighed putting them all back and gave the two plastics to Breeze.

Officer: Follow me . Remember I'm doing this only for the baby she's carrying other than that we have no business. The baby is innocent in all of this . I'm going behind detective Letsoalo just so the baby can survive.

Breeze: I really appreciate your help man . Thanks a lot .

Officer : Remember you have only 15 minutes and that's that .

Breeze: I wont be long .

Officer: I mean it Mr Lyon. My job is on the line here .

Breeze: you have my word officer.

They walked into a visitor room leaving Breeze in there then he went to the holding cell . He hit the poles with the keys when Sagi looked at him with puffy eyes .

Officer: You have a visitor Mrs .

She looked at Dikeledi peacefully sleeping and got off the mattress then went to put her hands between the pole and he cuffed her before opening the gate . He closed the gate and led the way as she paced behind him with her huge bump to the visitor room .

He opened the door and she gave him her hands.

Officer: I'm sorry mam ..but I can't remove the cuffs

.

She sighed walking in and the officer closed the door . Her eyes fell on Breeze when the both rushed to each other and he gave her a tight hug . She raised her cuffed hands and he got in between them and they kissed as tears ran down her cheeks . The kiss got heated when they broke it and she raised her hands letting him out then sat down . She smiled as the incredible smell hit her nostrils .

Sagi: Are those myn ?

Breeze: Yeah ...

He took out a plate from PnP when she shook her head pointing at the Mc Donald plastic . He smiled taking out everything and put them on the table . Without wasting anytime she pulled them all close to her and started digging in . He looked at her as she ate like someone who hasn't ate in a long time . Tears burned his eyes as he thought off how she coped inside such a smelly place course clearly she

couldn't sleep looking at her eyes . She finished the McDonald's food when she pointed at the 3 boxes of Debonairs pizza as she drank her drink. He put them on the table and she gave him one box before she continued eating but he didn't looking at her. He watched her as she kept on struggling to eat with those cuffs on. She put the slice of pizza down and looked at him .

Sagi: Baby eat .

Breeze: I'm not hungry.

Sagi :Then I wont eat as well if your not . Eat with me .

He sighed looking at her and opened the box taking out a slice and ate . She smiled looking at him and continued eating until she finished both boxes while he still was eating the 3rd slice. She drank her cool drink and took out Lays potato chips when she tried opening but she couldn't. She sighed as Breeze took them from her and opened them for her then

fed her .

Breeze: I'm gonna get you out of here . I promise .

Sagi: And promise to never let me being in here drag you back incase we don't make it out. Look at you . Its been a day and already you look like I've been in here for like a month . You look weak ,out of energy. Dont over work yourself, get some rest . I knew what I was doing and what I was getting myself into when I hit her . I'm really sorry that i became self centered and inconsiderate for our baby . Sorry I let my emotions get in between you and our baby, our family. Sorry for being the reason behind all of this .

Breeze: Its ohk .. Yesterday I called Stone and he found us a good lawyer. I haven't met him yet but they way he said it , it was like he knew a lot about this guy course he did a background research and his reputation is quite pleasant. I'm going to meet this guy and until then ,you say no word to anyone until he gets here .

Sagi: And until then you dont starve yourself-

Breeze: Sagi this is serous.

Sagi: I know. But don't you think you starving and not taking care of yourself will make things worse for me in here ? What about your health? Course u know you've been drinking last night Breeze! Do you think torturing yourself will make me happy in here? course it'll kill me knowing that your suffering out there .

Breeze: Fine .. I'll try to-

Sagi: No don't try ..do it . And dont tell Gail about all of this . She won't be able to handle this and I don't want to see her here worried about me .

Breeze: But she deserves to know.

Sagi :I know. Baby Gail is soft . She is too fragile and trust me she won't be able to take it . I dont want her stressing over me and my selfishness . Promise me that you guys will live on if I don't make it out of here . Promise me .

Breeze: No . I cant promise that. This is no time for

negativity . You are getting out of here .-

Sagi: Come on babe . There's no way I'm getting out of this . I'm going in . You have to face reality of this right now or else you wont when it unfolds before your eyes in court .

The officer knocked on the door and opened.

Officer: Time is up!

He walked over to Sagi and helped her stand as she pulled the plastic bag that still had food .

Officer: I can't allow you to take that .

Sagi: I'm pregnant dude . I get hungry after every 30 minutes ! Have you ever been pregnant before? Do you know how it's like to -

Officer: ohk fine ..

She smiled looking at him and leaned in kissing Breeze.

Sagi: I love you.

Breeze: I love you too .

She walked out and the officer led her to her cell .
Meanwhile Breeze cleared everything and put them in another plastic before standing and walked out .

He took his phone , wallet and keys by the table on his way put .

He threw the rubbish in a bin and opened his car getting in then drove off with his heart feeling heavy leaving her behind.

At the Lyons Mansion.

Jack tossed to Jane's side with his hand searching for her but it was cold . He opened his eyes and looked around but she wasn't in there . No sign of her .

He sighed putting his hand in his boxer trying to give himself a hand job but his belly was huge distracting him . He kicked the sheets off and got off the bed . He rubbed his eyes going to the bathroom to look for her but she wasn't there . He went back to the bedroom and took his gown wearing it as he yawned and went to check the spare rooms but she wasn't there either.

They haven't had sex in a while and he missed being inside of her . He went back to their room and sat on the bed when the door slid open and Jane walked in in a gym wear.

Jack: Hiie honey.

Jane: Hii ..

She walked to the bathroom when he rubbed his hands together and took off his clothes following her . He walked in to her balancing the water naked and swallowed walking over rubbing her butt .

Jane frowned and ignored him as he kept on rubbing her body . It was somehow weird. She didn't feel anything when he touched her ,not even a spark like he used to make her feel . She stepped under the shower when he followed her stroking himself and parted her legs with his foot. He held his dick trying to locate it to her entrance when she closed her legs and turned around looking at him with a straight face .

Jane: No .

Jack : Come on babe . Just for a few seconds please.

Jane: I said no .

She turned around and continued showering when

he bit his lip and pulled her by her waist bending her over . He used his hand pushing her head down and another one held tight to her waist . She tried fighting to get up when he shoved his meat inside of her .

Jack: oh shit!

He hasn't tapped it in a long time and fuck it felt great .Tears escaped her eyes when she tried walking away but he followed her still plugged inside of her thrusting.

Jane: Jack stop ! I'm going to get you arrested!
Stop !

Jack: Just a min babe..oh fuck !

She used her foot and kicked his knee when he lost balance course his feet were wet and let go of her . She used that moment and pulled away pushing

him and he fell off his butt as she ran out leaving him completely unsatisfied.

She quickly wore her gown and picked her car keys without wearing any shoes and ran out .

Meanwhile..Jack layed on the floor in tears with a boner . So his marriage was thrown down the drain just like that . Because of his own blood brother . He put his hands on his face crying as the pain covered his heart. He never thought he'd lose her like this . The love he had for her , was just too much and it hurts . His wife is gone, lost to his brother and his daughter wants nothing to do with him . His family just tore apart and he didn't see it coming.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

- .
- .
- .

[08/02, 13:47] Lynne : Chapter 55

At the hospital

Mxolisi held Rose's hand as she used a stick to find her way . He looked at her and somehow it felt great holding her now and then . Though he was a bit sad ,he liked being around her . People turned looking at them as he walked with his blind wife to car and help her get it . Some wondered why ? Why would God choose such a site for this beautiful woman ?

He went to his side and got in then drove out.

On the way he kept looking at her and back at the road with so many questions that needed answers ran in his head . Meanwhile Rose kept feeling his eyes on him when she smiled shaking her head .

Rose: What ?

Mxolisi: Aren't you going to say it ?

Rose: Say what ?

Mxolisi: " I told you so " ? Aren't you going too ?

Rose: You were just looking out for me . I get it and , thank you for all of this . I dont know what I'd be doing if it wasn't for you . I appreciate you being patient and understanding with me . I guess this whole arrangement isn't so bad after all.

Mxolisi: Its nothing really, you don't have to thank me . Like you say , it isn't as bad as I pictured it . Not when you have someone who is kind and respectful. I really appreciate you too . And I promise to be there with you every step of the way until we find what's happening to you though we have no idea what were facing.

Rose: Thank you.

Mxolisi : its ohk . Look I gatta get to the firm . There was this client that kept calling saying it's an

emergency so do you mind tagging along. Just so I can keep an eye on you .

Rose: (smiling) I dont . Let's go. I so wanted to visit a law firm . It's a shame I wont be able to see how it operates.

Mxolisi: Hey ..dont beat yourself. You'll be fine . The doctors found nothing wrong with you. I'm sure they'll be fine by tomorrow.

Rose: Ohk ..

He sighed looking at her and smiled stepping on the accelerator.

At the Law Firm.

Breeze parked his Car and stepped out looking at the huge building with a logo of Maleka & Associates. He looked around and took out his phone checking the location. He sighed not wanting to think about who that "Maleka " is ,and

walked into the building. He walked to the table and the receptionist smiled looking at him .

Her: Hi . Welcome to Maleka & Associates. You must be Mr Lyon ?

Breeze: That's right .

Her: ohk ..your meeting is in 10 mins ... follow me , ill show you the board room .

She stood up fixing her tight dress that held her body and the scarf on her neck and led him to the boardroom. They passed by a lot of offices and everyone they met on the way couldn't help but wonder if really the famous Lyon family member J ust walked in the building. They got to the boardroom and he took a sit as the receptionist stood by with her hands behind her .

Her:Mr Maleka is five mins away. Sorry f-

Breeze: Its ohk . Hes not late . I'm the one that's

early.

Her: (smiled) Can I get you any to drink? Coffee?
Water? Tea? Juice?

Breeze: Water please. I don't really feel like I could stomach anything at the moment. Thanks though.

She smiled leaving and he sat back swinging on the chair and sighed. He took out his phone and went to the dial log looking at Gail's numbers. He so missed to hear her voice. He missed her in his arms, her scent and her voice. But the point of sending her away was so she can pick up the pieces of her life in peace and make up her mind. If he called, then all this will be for nothing.

He put the phone down and rubbed his hands together pulling the hoodie on his eyes sitting like a bad boy high school kid.

Outside.

Mxolisi parked the car on his parking spot and

stepped out closing the door . He went to Rose's side and opened the door for her taking her hand and helped her out . He closed the door and took out his briefcase before holding her hand and led her inside.

At the reception . The lady smiled looking at her boss and the young woman walking with a stick . She looked at her and could see she was blind but at the wedding she didn't have it . She scoffed with a smile before focusing her attention to her job .

Mxolisi: Hii Tshego . This is Rosella, my ..uhm ..my wife . Rose , Tshego ..our receptionist.

Rose: (smiling) Hii ..

She stretched her hand and Tshego stretched hers and shook hands .

Tshego: Nice to finally see you this close . Kana boss was all over you at the wedding so I didn't get

the chance to welcome our boss lady . Your so beautiful.

Rose: (smiling) Oh thank you .

Tshego: Your welcome Mrs . Sir you should take pictures of her and put them up in here . Surely her face will attract more clients.

Rose: (smiling) We both know that's not possible. Clients are pulled here because of dedication, hard work , how you hold your standards and the game you pull in court. Not beauty . As long as you guys are up at your game, they care less about the beauty and all those attractive things you may put up in the building, course the work will attract them .

Mxolisi: She's right. So no pictures.

Tshego: Oh common sir . Then put one in your office so that some of us can see her face everyday . I mean we need a beautiful face around here .

Mxolisi: (smiling) Anything for me ?

Tshego: Yess ..and no . Like you requested earlier I submitted some of your cases to our best lawyers

and they were happy to take over . (Gave him a brown envelope) This was delivered today early in the morning for you . Oh and your meeting starts in two mins . The client has arrived.

Mxolisi: Oh ..thank you . Look can you take Rose in my office for me . Make sure no one gets in or comes anywhere near her . And please order her something to eat . I know its so out of profession, I'm really sorry. My PA is not here today .

Tshego: Its ohk .

He gave her R500 and kissed Rose's cheek before rushing to the elevator.

Meanwhile inside..Breeze looked at the Big screen on the wall and sighed swinging as the door opened. He turned back and pulled the hoodie off his eyes when he frowned with jaws dropped .

Mxolisi: Sorry I'm laaa... Hi

Breeze: Now seriously..I'm being damned !

At Bonolo's house .

With a basket, she walked into her mothers room and got her dirty clothes before walking out to the laundry room . She put the separated the clothes in pairs and put in the white ones first before closing the machine and set the time on . She walked out to the bedroom and pulled her phone checking her massages.

Odirile hasn't sent her a message after putting that bomb on her thighs. He hasn't even called or did anything that has to contact with her and it hurt . She sighed sitting on the bed looking at his picture.

Bonolo: Odirile what are you doing to me ?

Her door opened and she quickly hid her phone looking at her mother leaning on the door .

Bonolo: Hii mom

Her: Hi . What are you doing?

Bonolo: I'm doing laundry .

Her: you never do laundry Bonolo. What's so different about today?

Bonolo: oh . . . I just needed to get my mind off something. Try to keep myself busy .

Her: If you want to do that , then why aren't you with your boyfriend ? I mean ..he always put a smile on that lonely face of yours .

Bonolo: (low) Its ... it's just so complicated.

Her: (smiling) oh I know that sound.

She walked over and sat on the chair by the mirror looking at her .

Her: Let me guess (sigh) there's another one in the picture?

Bonolo: Ummm ..

Her: Common baby . You can talk to me . It's bad already that your keeping secrets from me which is not good course that has an effect on your health. It keeps me worried .

Bonolo: Ohk ..yeah .. His name is Odirile. We met this one time when I was at the mall . We just clicked and then we started talking and go to - I mean not really but we started chatting. Then this one time he asked me out and said I'll think about ,and I didn't course those were the days I found out Kagiso was still alive . The conversations and check ups kept going until he started suspecting that I'm ignoring him . And I wasn't course most of the time I spend it with Kagiso since he's the only person I know around here . So a day ago he poured himself out to me and I couldn't answer back . Now he's not calling or texting me and it hurts mama .

Her: Do you Love Kagoso ?

Bonolo: (teary) So much mama . I love him with all that I have and I'm willing to lose a lot for him . I

love him .

Her: Odirile? Do you love him ?

Bonolo: That's it ma ..(crying) I dont know . Crazy thing is I always want to hear his voice . Text him every day. I want his attention and when I dont get it I get hurt . I want him to stick with me .

Her: Does Kagiso make you happy?

Bonolo: Yess .. he does . He is gentle, caring and loving . He is the first person that appreciated me in a long time and loved me for who I am . He welcomed me into this town and we connected the same day . He listens to me and always there when I need him .

Her: What about Odirile?

Bonolo: (crying) Odirile is a nice fun guy . He's bubbly and always makes me laugh. Everytime I see him I just dont want the conversation to end . I want him by my side every now and then . He makes me smile and laugh, with that I forget about everything else , the world around me . He is also gentle with me and makes me feel like I'm the one .

Like I'm the only girl.

Her: Now I want you to put them together and describe the relationship you have with both of them. Course now we know they both make you happy.

Bonolo: (wiped tears) Well .. Kagiso is good and not only to me but to everyone else. I just feel like he bottles up everything and lends his ear instead of letting me do that for him. He is not open about himself. He just won't let me in. He'd rather ease my pain of one bow while he has a lot on him. He's too secretive and hides his pain perfectly fine and you wouldn't notice his pain. On the other hand.. Odirile. I don't know much about him, but he's open. He takes one step at a time and always pours himself out to me. He is just so amazingly fine.

Her: Then you now that you talked it out my girl.. talked your thoughts and heart out. Tell me, what are you going to do about it? They are different in their own ways and make you happy. They are waiting in different directions, Who are you running

too ?

At The Law firm.

Mxolisi put one hand in the pocket and another one rubbed his face . Breeze pulled the sleeves of his sweater and out his hands on the table looking at him. He scoffed shaking his head and Mxolisi looked at him clearing his throat. He knew he had to keep this professional and not let their personal matter get in the way . He fixed his suit and sat down opening the Brown envelope looking at Sagi picture on it . He scoffed again before clearing his throat and fixed his tie putting his hands on the table trying to keep a straight face but eventually laughed . Breeze narrowed his eyes looking at him and he kept on laughing. Breeze leaned back looking at him still laughing until he calmed down still in laughter and looked at the file.

Mxolisi : So she .. (smiling) she hit a pregnant

woman ? (Laughs) I'm sorry .. She assaulted a pregnant woman . I..

Breeze: I thought this was supposed to be professional. What are you laughing at course there's nothing laughable?

Mxolisi: I dont know . Maybe I'm laughing becouse it seems like I really underestimated her .

Breeze: You mean the time you left her to die after hitting her ?

Mxolisi : I didn't hit her . Your wife came at me .

Breeze: No you came at us ! You invaded into our home and took one of us ! .

Mxolisi: I took no one ! If you didn't cheat me and Gail wouldn't have happened. You left her and went to have an affair outside of the marriage, why ?
Becouse your the man ?

Breeze: You had no right to be with her at the first place . She had a ring on . Wasn't that a hint for you to back off ? If you couldn't respect the ring then the least you could have done is respect my space ,

my property and my wife ! Sagi is not violent unless provoked . Jane poked her just the way you poked her the last time . What makes me mad is you left her to die !

Mxolisi: I didn't leave her to die ! I called an ambulance after the incident and I was also in pain . You panel beated my face and she took it far with her craziness and bit me . Who does that ? ! You should have seen the way she smiled with my blood scattered all over her mouth . I mean ..WTF ?

Breeze: To answer that ..you gonna need this .
(Pushed the envelope) I could have sued you for breaking my marriage like that .

Mxolisi: But you didn't . Why ?

Breeze sat back and smiled looking at him . He put his hands back at the table and bit his lip with a smirk.

Breeze: Let's say ..I had a lot planned for you and

then found out something interesting.

Mxolisi: What's that supposed to mean ?

Breeze: It means I decided to let shit unfold .

Course you were not myn to punish .

Mxolisi looked at him as he picked the glass of water and drank before putting it down biting his lip .

Breeze: And its gonna hurt my friend.(swallowed) A lot . I wouldn't wish this to anyone not even you, but knowing what your dad and my stupid fat ass brother did . I doubt you'll make it out . It'll be by the grace of God if you do . Or her .

He picked the glass again and drank water as he looked at him trying to figure out what he was talking about . He bit his lip looking back at the file still confused . He shook his head and sighed putting all his effort into the game now .

At the Lyons Mansion.

Jack sat on the bed and tried to call Jane for the 50th time . He sighed throwing the phone on the bed . Tears blurred his eyes when whe they rolled down . He sniffed rubbing his eyes when he stood up . A very chilly whispering wind got into the room covering him . His heart pounded so hard on his chest feeling cold when a slap landed on his dick . He hid his privates crying and landed on his knees when all of a sudden the chilly air stopped. The held his privates even tight as they hurt more and more .

At Odirile's house.

In the Jacuzzi. Odirile swam to the other side of the pool and took a breath swimming back doing back strokes . He got to the end and swam to the stairs and stepped out. He pulled the blanket on the chair wiping himself and sat down picking his phone .

He sighed not finding any missed call from her .
Maybe she was really into this guy and he was just
a disturbance.

He put the phone down rubbing his face when
Ditebogo walked over picking his phone . He
quickly stood up when she ran away trying to
unlock his phone.

Odirile: give me my phone Ditebogo !

Ditebogo: You've been checking this phone all day
since yesterday. Whose call are you waiting for ?
That stupid girl I once chased out?

Odirile: Well you've chased out a lot I even lost
count of how many they are .

Ditebogo: That means you've been hoering around
you even lost count on how many you've been with .

Odirile: I'll smack you ! Seka beta go ntena ! Give me
my phone !

Ditebogo: Only if you give me 4000 fo my shopping.

Odirile: Ditebogo I already spend a lot on you . I pay

your studies, you eat me and you live under my roof . Cant you get a job already course some of us need to budget for the futer incase we have wives and children.

Ditebogo: Bro you own a club ! -

Odirile : Correction. I dont own a club . We own the club . Breeze owns 60 and I have 40 % so as such he own large stake, it's his club not myn . I'm just a shareholder. He started the club from the ground.

Ditebogo: Still ...

He looked at her and he knew very well that she wasn't about to give up.

Odirile: Fine ..I'll transfer it into your account. Give me back my phone.

She smiled and walked over handing it to his before kissing his cheek . He rolled his eyes transferring the money and sat down as she jumped like a little girl.

His phone rang in his hand and he looked at the caller as his heart pounded . He took a deep breath and answered

Odirile: Hey you ..

At Breezes .

Breeze drove into the yard when his eyes fell on Jane sitting by the door in her gown . She stood up looking at him driving in and parked on the parking lot . She bit her lip playing with the keys in her hands and breathed looking at him stepping out of the car and walked over .

Breeze : Should I remind you that your trans passing?

Jane: Breeze please just listen to me .

Breeze: Should I also call the cops because you are

getting into my nerves now with you coming into my property without an invitation?

Jane: (teary) He tried to rape me . He wanted to rape me .

Breeze: Excuse me ?

Jane: Jack . He tried to rape me .

Breeze : How can Jack rape you ? Isn't he your husband?

Jane: You said no one should fuck me besides you and I'm holding on to that . Remember, making love to me in my house ?

Breeze : Come on woman ... your losing it now .

He walked to the door and put in the pin and the door unlocked. He got in first and when Jane tried to walk in he stood on the doorway looking at her .

Jane: Breeze...please . I love you . Cant you see that already ? I love you .

Breeze: Jane you have a husband. Go back to him and stop invading my space . You did enough damage already. My wife is pregnant and now she's sleeping in jail and of which she might not make it out for a year all thanks to you . My baby is in jail because of you . I told you to stay away from me but yet you didn't listen, so I guess this was your play . To send my wives away . You wanted her to hit you just so you can get close to me . Isn't?

Jane: (crying) No .. I wanted to talk to you . I want to be with you but I didn't plan for all this to happen. I can drop the charges i-

Breeze: That's a little to late dont you think ? And no Jane . I cant be with you . Dont you get that ? I love my wives . I dont want you , I dont love you . You need to stay away from me and my family or else you'll deal with me . And trust me I'm not so gentle to woman when I'm angry. I could kill you. Go home and you shouldn't be here in the first place.

Jane: (crying) I told you he tried to rape me and you dont care ?! All you talk about is that psychopath and that lose woman yo-

Breeze: That psychopath and loose woman are my wives ,and guess what babe ? I love them . A lot .
So please just go home .

Jane: (crying) He'll rape me !

Breeze: Are you crazy? Do you know how serious the accusation you make is ? Jack loves you and hes your husband. How can he rape you ?

Jane: (crying) I'm carrying your child Damn it ! Do you want him to rape me while I'm carrying you child?!

Breeze sighed running out of energy. He looked at her and rolled his eyes .

Breeze: Book a hotel and stay there . Away from me !

He shut the door before her eyes and she scoffed crying and hit the door . She kept hitting it until she was tired and turned going to her car and got in .

She relaxed the seat crying and layed back until she was asleep. There was no way she is leaving .

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

[08/02, 13:47] Lynne : Chapter 56

At Odirile's house

Odirile sat down on the chair and rubbed his beard with the phone still on his ear and cleared his throat. Meanwhile Bonolo sighed and cleared her throat

either.

Bonolo: How are you ?

Odirile: I'm gud ..But not good . You ?

Bonolo: I'm am and I'm not . (Scoff) I guess we are on the same common emotions today.

Odirile: Yeah .. so have you thought about it ?

Bonolo: Yeah ..

Odirile: And ? ..

Bonolo: And I made a decision that's not yet final .

Odirile: What's that even mean ?

Bonolo: it means that I love you Odirile. But at the same time I'm inlove with someone else . Its gonna take a tall on me to tell him that I fell inlove with another person in his absence. He is the first guy I ever loved and now you .. you make me feel like, I don't know . All I know is I love you and at the same time I dont want to leave him course I also love him .

Odirile: Look Nolo . I'm not rushing you and I'm not

pushing you to being with me . Dont feel pressured because I said I want to be with you and only you . If you love this guy, then carry on with the relationship I wont be coming at you .

Bonolo: But I cant pretend like you dont exist .
Odirile I love you . And i so badly want to be with you .

Odirile : I know baby ...and I love you . All I'm saying is take your time . I'm not going anywhere. I'll be here waiting for you . J ust know I'm waiting for the guy to make a mistake so that I can take my shot .

Bonolo: So what do we do ?

Odirile: We put us on hold . I'm just glad that you feel the same. I'm not going to sleep tonight. Say it again and again and again

Bonolo: (smiling) I love you . I love you . I love you
Odirile.

Odirile: (smiling) Damn I cant get used to that .

At the Lyons Mansion

Jack walked into the bedroom with his legs apart and went to stand in front of the mirror. He took off his shorts and boxer looking at his boner that has been standing and it hurt . He sighed walking into the shower and opened up the cold water as tears flowed . He gets rejected and now suddenly he has a boner out of nowhere .

At Kagiso's house.

Around 9PM.

Kagiso tossed and turned on the bed when he stopped staring at the small window. He sat like that for a while when he got off bed in his new pjs and headed towards the door. He stopped at the door without blinking and turned the key and opened the door with his eyes wide open. He stood there for a while as the moon shined bright on him and he walked out.

.
. .

[08/02, 13:48] Lynne : Chapter 57 .

The next day .

Kagiso tossed when he felt things stinging him . He quickly opened his eyes when they fell on the grave next to him . His heart skipped when he popped looking around and found himself in a grave yard .

Kagiso: (panicking) No no no ! No !

He dusted himself looking at his feet and he wasn't wearing any shoes. He rubbed his head looking at where he was laying and frowned looking at the name , Nakedi Selema . He shook his head with a pounding heart taking steps back when he tripped and fell on another grave . He quickly stood up as

he could literally feel his heart ready to jump out of his chest and ran towards the gate. He got there and looked at the lock and his thoughts ran around. How did he even get past a locked gate . He looked at the long fence and but his lip getting on it until he managed to get out . He started running not looking back with no idea of where he was headed.

At Kagiso's house.

Veronica slowly opened his eyes to the chilly cold that snuck into the sheets. She looked at the wide open door and yawned turning to Kagiso's side but he wasn't there . She shook her head and got out of bed and went to close it before getting back to bed .

Veronica: This boy will kill me of cold man .

She yawned when sleep covered her and she slept .

Around 8 am .

At The Lyons Mansion.

Jack layed In the bath with his boner still there hurting like hell . He closed his eyes trying to touch it when he flinched of pain and let go laying in . Tears rolled down the side of his eyes as he sat like that with no one there for him . Guilt struck him when his memory replayed the night at the wedding. All those horrible words he said to his brother. He felt bad and now he didn't know how to start to fix this whole thing . He used to be heard but now no one cares about him and his about. Even his wife . He still couldn't believe that she kissed his brother and even after all this weeks she hasn't said a thing about it . She doesn't want to talk to him , to see him and have sex with him and all because of Breeze . But then who wouldn't ? Breeze was good in shape and he had a very felt presence. He shook his head

as the pain stinged and he put his hands on the face screaming.

Jack: Aaahh !

He saw needed her so badly right now and where was she ? Nowhere. He needed to get to the hospital but how would he do that when hes in so much pain . He couldn't even stand up from the bathtub just so he could pick up a phone and called her . He sighed sitting back and silently started praying.

At Breezes .

Breeze stepped out of the house wearing his cap in when he saw Jane's car on the parking lot . He shook his head walking over and looked at her through the window as she slept so uncomfortably with her bump exposed . His heart sank as he

thought if this is truly his baby and he treats the mother like this. How will he look at the baby in the eyes one day when its grown and tell it that he used to ill treat its mother like this.

But the he rubbed all that away with the thought of Sagi laying in that stinky place because of her and sighed heading to his car. He unlocked it getting in and sighed and turning the engine on and drove out.

Meanwhile Jane heard the car driving and quickly woke up looking around when she saw him driving out with speed. Her heart shattered as she stared at the gate. So he was seriously not into her. She swallowed rubbing her bump and put the seat right before starting the engine and drove out. Maybe she should go back to work and start afresh with the pregnancy course following him wont actually benefit her. I mean it would but not eternally. She rubbed her tear driving. It also wasn't bad that she hit him right where it hurts too. Serves him right for playing with his feelings like that. Now all she had to do is watch him as his so beloved family crack In

the middle as he tried to put it all together and eventually collapse. Who knows ..? she might take the bat !

.

.

.

.

.

Will continue in the morning

.

.

.

Good nyt y'all

.

.

[08/02, 13:48] Lynne : Chapter 58

At The Lyons Mansion.

Jane drove into the yard with a pounding heart . The thought of how she's going to face him after the stunt she just pulled had her wondering worse . She bit her lip closing her eyes before doing breath exercises and stepped out .

She walked into the house to the mouth watering aroma as always and passed by walking to their room . She got there and slowly opened the door getting in and closed it behind her . She sighed not finding him in there and put her hand on the bandage that was on her forehead throwing the keys on the bed . She let the gown lose and it fell on the floor remaining naked walking to the bathroom.

Without looking around she stood in front of the mirror and looked at herself when she heard someone sniffing behind her . She quickly turned hiding herself when her eyes fell on Jack in the bathtub silently crying with his eyes closed .

Out of nowhere..her heart broke looking at him when she looked down before walking over sitting on the toilet. She played with her fingers before she put her hand on his shoulder.

Jane: (softly) Jack ...? Honey I'm sorry if I hurt you . It wasn't my intention too . I dont know what's gotten into me but I promise I will fix myself. I know words themself are not enough and actions define , promise I'll never disappoint you again . I'll gather myself up and get back to being the-

Jack: (breaking) Not now Jane .

Jane: No ..let me apologize.

Jack : Not now ohk ..?

Jane: (scoff)Why ? do you want sex first?

Jack: No ..

Jane: Fine I'll give you sex then we can talk .

Jack: I dont want sex..I'm ohk .

She stood up dipping her hand in the bathtub touching his dick and frown looking at him. Meanwhile Jack clenched his jaws with his eyes tightly closed as she held his painful dick. He shook his head no longer able to endure the pain and screamed. Jane let go looking at him as tears rolled down his eyes with a pounding heart.

Jane: What was that ?

Jack:

Jane: Jack what's going on with you ?!

She quickly dipped her hand and released the water when her jaws dropped covering her mouth.

On the road .

Breeze stopped on the traffic lights listening to loud music playing "Baby I deserve " by Tank singing

along .

Maybe I deserve

For you to go out and find some other guy

"Maybe I deserve "

For you stay with him all night

"Maybe I deserve "

For you to do all the things I did to you

"Maybe I deserve "

Maybe I deserve (oh yeah)

[Repeat twice]

For you to put on that sexy dress

For me to ask you "Who the hell your tryna impress
"

For you to lough it off , like it ain't nothing

I know its something Maybe just Maybe

To sit at home and wonder where you are

Is he kissing you , touching you , holding you , What ?

Take a drink to help ease my mind

I wanna be mad after all those times

(Repeat chorus)

He sighed as remembered everything with the both of them . The day she was dressed in that elegant dress . The way he slapped her as she begged . And he so deserved what was happening but not for it to pass through them . Sagi deserves even better . A guy in the next car looked at him as he kept on and on with the song . He knew that this was not good at all .

Guy: (shook head) Ng ng Mr . That song is depressing.

Breeze turned looking at him when he scoffed smiling.

Breeze: That's because I'm depressed man .

Guy: Then your making yourself worse listening to that .

Breeze: I relate . That's why I'm listening to it .

Guy: No man . At least listen to Winnie Mas hab than that . You know I dont get why people like depressing songs even when they see that their drowning deep into depression. The next thing you hear that they committed suicide or they have a mental illness . Whatever is stressing you man , fix it . Take it from all sides and trim it into something better . Its not the end of the world. Stop listening to that shit and man up . Face your problems.

Breeze: Suicide is way at the back of my mind man . I have a lot coming to live for .

Guy: Good . One step forward. Now take the second step and change that song . The third one on and on . Dont beat yourself like that . Whatever is going on at he moment, it's just a phase. It'll pass in time . J ust stay positive alright? Stop listening to that .

Listen to Amapiano as a change not that .Shap !

Breeze: Cxxl man !

He looked at the greenlight and the guy took a different route when he continued with his shaking his head . He changed the song and played DaBaby - Masterpiece and shook his head until he feel into it . His mind drifted when he remembered he forgot Sagis toiletries. He hit the wheel and made a u-turn driving back home hoping to not find J ane there .

Somewhere on the Road.

Kagiso walked on the streets barefoot looking around still in pjs . Everywhere he passed everyone turned looking at him. He swallowed trying to find a way to hide his face when he started unbraiding his hair . After a while he was done when he shook it as it filled his face and bouncing on his shoulders. It was a rich afro beautiful afro for a guy . But then he

had no choice to have it . He couldn't afford to cut his hair so his mother started playing him until its grown like this . Now people stared at him wondering if it was a fit woman or a Ndoda-mfazi or a just a man with long hair . But then the pjs .

He threw his head throwing the hair back when he heard voices and saw two school girls walking over .

Kagiso: Hey .. I'm sorry. What place is this ? The name ? Where is this place ?

Girl: Its Norwood.

Kagiso: (jaws dropped) uhm ..ohk Do you know where Breeze Lyon lives when your here ?

Girl2: The Club 808 owner?

Kagiso: I guess..

Girl: Oh .. he lives on Ivy road , I dont remember the address.

Kagiso: How far is that ?

Girl: about 5 km away from here .

Kagiso: Wow..uhm..ohkcxxl . Thanks. Good luck on your exams .

Girls: Thank you .

He gasped thinking of the distance between his town and Norwood. And he wasn't even tired when he woke up then . He shook his head as his hair bounced and kept walking not knowing where he was going but looking at the road signs. He knew the house though , just that the direction.

At Rose's house .

Mxolisi got into the car and switched the engine on . He put his head on the steering wheel licking his lips . He didn't want to leave her all alone and so he didn't want the only person close to Rose , whom she considers a parent to remain in Jail . He sighed getting up and attempted to go out when he bit his lip . She didn't know about Sagi in Jail and

yesterday he told none of them about being in the same building. Even though he and Sagi weren't on good terms he wouldn't want to run that on Rose .

He sighed reversing and drove out.

Meanwhile..inside . Rose layed on the bed with her eyes staring at the ceiling but she couldn't see . She hummed the soft music that played on the little speaker besides her . She didn't understand why her eyes suddenly betrayed her . Where all those weird things, where are they coming from suddenly. She never had such problems before. She never got sick and when she went to the doctor's and they failed to identify it . A tear ran down out of her eye when she thought what if its permanent. She wouldn't forever see the days that God let's her spend .

She sniffed when she felt a wet liquid between her legs . She frowned pulling her dress up and put her hand feeling herself. Her mind ran back to when she had her periods until today . It was her date .

Tears burned her eyes not knowing how she was going to get through with this .

She closed her eyes imagining the room and stood up reaching for her stick then slowly walked straight to her closet . She got there and used her hand to feel around when she got to the drawer opening it and put her hands in searching for a pad and got it along with her panties . She then closed the drawer still with the picture in her head and opened another one taking out a towel . She held them in her armpit and again found her way out with her hand and the stick to the bathroom .

At the Lyons Mansion.

Jane's skin scrawled looking at his dick with her hand over her mouth. He had a boner that had something huge like a balloon with water inside though red on the mushroom . He was all swollen and even looked like had a little bit of pimples on. She moved closer and examined him as he flinched

and looked at him in him . She bit her lip and let go looking at him .

Jane: What happened to you ? Did you fuck someone without checking their status?

Jack: What are you talking about? I never fucked anyone outside of marriage. What's wrong with me ?

Jane: I dont know. I've never seen anything like this before. Jack just tell me the truth? Who were you sleeping with course your dick says a different story?

Jack: I'm not cheating Jane . I never cheated and never had a relationship outside wedlock. You have to trust me . I also dont know what's wrong with me . All I know is something hit me and then it started hurting. It hurts .

Jane: What do you mean something slapped you ? How can someone slap you and you dont even see who it is ? Stop lying and tell me who you slept with !

Jack: For the third time Jane . I didn't sleep with anyone . I've been starving yes , but not once have the thought of going out to find a hoe crossed my mind. I slept with nobody.

Jane: Then what is this ?!

Jack: I don't know. You're the doctor , you tell me ! I'm hurting here . I can't even move my legs, course one movement then the whole package strikes. It's burning like hell . I'm in pain Jane . Help me ..

The look on his face made it so hard to keep on with the question . He was really in pain and she herself didn't know what it was with all the experience she had . She swallowed looking at it and put her hand on her mouth trying to figure out what the hell it was

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

[08/02, 13:48] Lynne : Chapter 59

At the Lyons Mansion.

Jane held her chin looking at him . Her eyes welled up with tears as he layed in there hiding his face with his hand for her not to see him crying. He put both hands when her heart sank and she shook her head in tears holding her bump and went to sit on the bathtub side and leaned in hugging him . She somehow made it feel worse. He felt embarrassed breaking like that in front of her making him feel even weak . He pulled away rubbing his eyes and she leaned back looking at him .

Jane: Its ohk to cry Jack . It helps to relieve the pain.

Jack : I'm not crying.

Jane: Jack .. its ohk . Your also human .

Jack : Please help me Jane . I'm dieing here . It hurts . It hurts so bad and I don't think I'll be able to handle the pain . It's so much . Help me .

Jane: Ohk I never delt with this kind of ...situation before. And I have no idea to how much of pain your going through but I'm here for you . We are going to get through this together . Now I know it hurts ...but your gonna have to pull it together. I'm gonna take you to the hospital-

Jack: No no Jane ! Not the hospital. How am I going to face the crowd when I'm like this ? How will I look at the doctor? What will people think of me ? How will they look at me after this ? No way we are not going there . Your going to treat me .

Jane: So your more concerned about what people will say than your well being?

Jack: No .. not that I'm concerned about what they'll say but my reputation. Me going to the hospital means throwing my reputation and dignity down the drain . I'm a po-

Jane: You know what Mr Reputation'è . First of your in pain . You cant do anything for yourself and all you care about is other people point of views. Jack those people dont care about you . They don't care about your health . All they care about is their blogs. All they want to do is see you fall and by refusing to go to the hospital, your giving them even more power to drive you and run you . I'm here offering you help , which you asked by the way and you shove my nose back ?

Jack: All im saying is that -

Jane: All your saying is shit Jack. Now you need to suck it up or else I'll hold tight to that dick until you stand up and we get to the hospital. I cant be nursing an old ass man like you who cares so much about his reputation than his own wellbeing. Forgive me, I wont . Never !

Jack sighed looking at her and she leaned in helping him out of the bath tub . The pain came so hard on him when he clenched his jaws crying with his arm around Jane . They walked into the bedroom and she put him on the bed before pulling his gown and helped him wear it and she quickly got dressed before they headed out .

At Breezes.

Kagiso stopped holding his knees wiping the sweat off his face and sighed walking towards the gate . The gate was wide open and there wasn't even a security guard. Sometimes you'd wonder why he has a gate course clearly it has no use . Its always wide open . He walked towards the veranda and sat down taking off the pjs shirt wiping himself. He spotted a tap and walked over jumping the flowers and went to wash his face and the shirt before drinking. He washed the sweat off with the shirt

then twisted it and dried himself. He drank water again and went to sit on the veranda hanging the shirt on his shoulder getting lost in thoughts . He still wondered how he got to the graveyard without getting hurt on the way or mugged though he had nothing on him , for such a long distance. He shook his head rubbing his face and sighed . This was so bothering.

In the interrogation room.

Mxolisi sat on the chair under the light checking his watch for the fifteenth time when the door opened and Sagi walked in in cuffs. She had no energy to fight or argue but the least he could have done is warn her who her lawyer was going to be. She sighed walking over and sat on the chair looking at him putting her hands on the table.

Mxolisi: Hii .

Sagi: Hey .

Mxolisi: How are you holding up in there ?

Sagi: I'm fine.

Mxolisi: Ohk ..-

Sagi : When is the hearing ? I'm tired of waiting.
Sorry I heard some police officer saying that he'd do
with everything in his power to prove me guilty and
to make sure that the date is between the weekend.

Mxolisi : Which one ?

Sagi : The detective. He kinda has a thing for
Breeze so I think he's taking it out on me .

Mxolisi: We can use that tomorrow in court to our
advance . The date has been set up to tomorrow.

Sagi: Mxolisi your not telling me every detail I need
to know. Why are you highlighting me ? Not that I'm
expecting so much after the incident we had but
your my lawyer . I think maybe you could be more
professional and help me out of this so that we can
both live to fight another day .

Mxolisi: Sagi .. I'm a professional lawyer. I dont let

personal matters come in between my work and my clients. What we had is behind me though it left a scar, a reminder. I don't have a problem with you.

Sagi: Then tell me. Are you going to be able to help me out of here? I can't give birth in here. Do you think we'll pull this out?

Mxolisi looked at her and he so hated the look she gave him. The one that pleaded and it so broke his heart seeing them like this, putting their all trust on him.

Mxolisi: With all the evidence they have against you...I don't think so. But I can promise to put my all just so you don't-

Sagi: So you're saying there's nothing much you can do to this case?

Mxolisi: I didn't say that. Don't give up just yet. I saw your medication history. We can use that also and the court shall grant you even better-

Sagi: They'll send me to a mental prison ! I'm not crazy . That woman came into my property, which is

-

Mxolisi: Trespassing? I know. I got all that . And she emotionally assaulted you -

Sagi: And she hit back ! It was a self defense!

Mxolisi looked at her as her emotions turned up. He didn't want to stress her course he might put the baby's life in danger. He had to be considerate here He sighed looking at her and she breathed until she calmed.

Sagi: Why are you not giving me straight up answers ? Why are you giving me a runaround ? That bitch slept with my husband and trespassed into my property pregnant to come and assault me emotionally. Yes I hit her first but she hit back , so it was self defense !

Mxolisi: Wait what ? She slept with your husband?

Pregnant?

Sagi: Yeah .. did they forget to mention that ?

Mxolisi smiled looking at her and leaned back with the pen in his hands on the table playing with it .
Sagi looked at him and he smirked.

Sagi: What ?

Mxolisi: Well this just keeps getting better and better .

At Rose's house.

Rose stepped out of the shower and used her hand to find her stick when she found it and hit around with it for a towel . She found it and pulled it when the pad fell on the floor just further from her, and she dried herself. She again used her hand to find her panties when she found them and again looked

for her pad but couldn't find it anywhere. She felt around and got on her knees searching but couldn't find it. Tears started rolling down her eyes to the floor as she walked on her knees searching going to the opposite direction. She stood when she hit the wall and she stood up with it crying using it to walk. She felt it feeling its direction when she turned breathing and walked to the bathtub. She kept walking without an idea she was there when she hit the bathtub and almost fell inside. She cried rubbing her tears and slowly got in the bathtub opening the cold water. The tub filled while she sat in there and she closed it leaning back as tears rolled down the side of her eyes into the bath.

At Kagiso's house.

Veronica sat under the tree eating a carrot waiting for Kagiso to return but he wasn't. Her blood kept rushing when she thought about him but why she had no idea. She bit the carrot when Bonolo walked

into the gate and closed it behind her walking over .
She respectfully put her hands together greeting her
and they both smiled .

Bonolo: How are you ma ?

Veronica: I'm ohk my girl . And you ?

Bonolo: Im also fine . Uhm ..is Kagiso around?
Thought today he wasn't going anywhere.

Veronica: He isn't going to school?

Bonolo: Yeah .. I have his timetable. Today he
wasn't attending. He has an exam in two days so
they gave them some time to read .

Veronica: I thought he had gone to school . Hes not
here . He's been gone since early in the morning
and even forgot to close the door and his phone .
Are you sure he didn't say where he was going to
you ?

Bonolo: He didn't say anything. Kana mma Kagiso
ga a mpolelele sepe . Hes too secretive and he gets
lost in thoughts and then you ask him what's on his

mind he brushes it off nicely so you wouldn't suspect. I feel like he has changed after he returned home . He's always distant.

Veronica: Yeah I realized that . I know he loves his books but this days he's always on them. He doesn't even give himself a break . He can read until at night and not take a break until you ask for him . We dont even talk like we used to . He has nightmares, and always alerted. Has he ever told you anything?

Bonolo: no .. he's just being him when he's with me . He listens and always says the right things . He doesn't look alerted. He just keeps getting to his own world.

Her phone rang when she swallowed looking at Kagiso's mother.

Veronica: Its ohk my girl . You can take it .

Bonolo: Thank you ma . See you .

Veronica : Bye bye .

She turned around walking away when she smiled answering.

Bonolo: (smiling) Hey ..

Odirile: You know I couldn't sleep . I want to see you . Please just let me see you even if its once. I'm begging you .

Bonolo: But I thou-

Odirile: I know babe . I miss you . Please ...

She bit her lip and sighed blushing as butterflies flew in her stomach hearing his voice . Damn he had an amazing voice that could melt you just right now . She smiled wondering how he uses his waist . His hands all over her body . She couldn't wait to taste those lips .

Bonolo: Ohk ..

Odirile: (smiling) Should I pick you up ?

Bonolo: No send me the location and I'll be there .

Odirile: I love you .

Bonolo: I love you too .

She blushed brushing her lip with her finger and walked inside the house . A few mins later Odirile sent the location and she stepped out in another and got in the car driving off .

At the hospital.

Jane stood by the window biting her nail as the doctor shook his head looking at the results. He sighed putting the file back and looked at Jane and Jack .

Jack: Doc what is it ?

Doctor: it's not the STD . We ran multiple test and they all come back the same . There's nothing wrong with you .

Jane: But have you seen him ? That's not healthy. Surely there's something wrong ? That is not normal.

Doctor: Mrs Lyon w-

Jane: Dont give me the "we found nothing " card please . My husband is in pain . He is hurting so bad and you are saying you found nothing ? Go do more test and give him medication to slow down the pain .

Doc: We already did that Mrs-

Jane: Then do it again !

Doctor: if we give him more , he'll die of overdose mam . We a-

Jane: The test's ! Run them again ! This is nothing like fine !

The doctor looked at her before walking out . Jane

bit her lip as tears burned her eyes and she turned looking at him laying on the bed . He looked at her and he could already read her thinking he cheated .

Jack : I swear..I didn't cheat . You have to believe me .

She shook her head in tears and rubbed her face looking out the window as he layed there in pain looking at her .

At Breezes.

Later that day .

Kagiso layed on the veranda asleep with the shirt on his face when a car drove into the yard and parked on the parking lot . Abigail frowned stepping out in her floral dress and sandals looking at the

man in pjs and walked over . She went down on her knees scanning him when her eyes fell on his eight pack . She swallowed scanning him up and shook her head shaking him . She gently shook him when he yawned waking up and pulled the shirt off his face coming face to face with her . She frowned looking at his afro but damn , this guy was hella cute with those brown eyes and those eyebrows that looked watery . And his lips . She shook her head looking at him as he got up and put on his shirt before shaking his hair .

Gail: Hii ..

Kagiso: Hii .. I'm Kagiso . Sorry for coming here unannounced. I had nowhere to go . I'm here to see Mr Lyon .

And the way his lips moved ...damn ..

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:49] Lynne : Chapter 60

At Breezes.

And the way his lips moved ...damn .

She bit her lip looking at him and he looked at her not sure what to do . She shook her head and stood up giving out her hand . Kagiso also stood up and shook her hand .

Gail: Abigail. Abigail Lyon.

Kagiso : Kagiso Mokwena. You must be the first wife ?

Gail: Yeah ..and you must be the son he brags about.

Kagiso: (smiling) Wow .. i guess .

They kept shaking hands longer than usual when Kagiso realized it and gently pulled his hand putting on the shirt. She looked at him as he put on his shirt as his muscles worked until he pulled it down . She sighed looking at him and put on an innocent smile .

Gail: Let's get in . I'm sure he's out , you'll wait for

him inside .

Kagiso: thanks a lot .

She stepped over putting the pin and opened the door wide stepping aside . Kagiso looked at her as she looked at him also waiting for him to get in first but so did he . She sighed and went to the car and opened the boot taking out a huge case struggling with it . Kagiso bit his lip and walked over and took it from her .

Gail: Thanks.

Kagiso: No problem mam .

They looked at each other when Breeze crossed both their minds and she chuckled looking down tucking her hair behind her ear as Kagiso looked away .

Kagiso: I am sorry . I shouldn't be looking at you like that , it's so wrong and disrespectful of me . Forgive me , it'll never happen again . After seeing Mr Lyon , I will be out of your hair .

Gail: (laugh) Your not in my hair Kagiso. And no , you didn't look at me in any inappropriate manner . I did . And I'm really sorry about that course it'll never happen again also .

They looked at each other again for a while without saying anything when they realized it and laughed at the same time . She shook her head and led the way inside and closed the door behind . He put the bag down looking around . Last and the first time here it was at night and he didn't have enough time to look around . This house can hit an A-list . She looked at him and walked over when he stop looking around and looked at her .

Gail: if you dont mind , can you please take it upstairs. First door on the right.

Kagiso : Sure .

She looked at him as he picked the case up the stairs and couldn't help but look at his hands with veins. He wasn't wearing any shoes . She shook her head again and threw her bag on the couch walking to the kitchen.

Gail: Abigail stay in your lane . Stop it .

She walked into the kitchen and started preparing something to eat . A min later Kagiso walked downstairs and stood in the middle of the room not knowing what to do .

At Odirile's house.

Bonolo looked at the GPS one more time and the address when she breathed out switching the

engine off . Her heart pounded countless times when she took a short prayer. She was really here , for him. The gate slid open and she swallowed starting the engine then drove in parking next to his car stepping out. She fixed her tight dress breathing in and walked towards the door ringing thr bell . A female voice answered when her heart pounded. Did she just come to a wrong house or he had a girl here ? Worst a wife .

The door slid open and a girl stood there looking at her with a straight face and no emotions .

Bonolo: (swallowed) Hii ..I'm Bonolo.

Girl: Ditebogo. How may I help you ?

Bonolo: I'm here to see Odirile. He told me he'll be here , is he around ?

Ditebogo : Oh so your one of the chicks that suck my brother and then leave not looking back ?

Bonolo: What ?

Ditebogo : Bona Girl . Kopa gore o lebe fa o tswang

teng and never look back . Dont ever come knocking on this door again or else you'll loose the hand you used to press that button.

Bonolo chuckled looking at her . She clearly didn't know who she was talking too .

Ditebogo: Tswa nnanyana . Boela ko lwapeng pele ke go ntsha meno very fast . My brother is-

Voice: Ditebogo!

She stopped talking and put on a smile and turned looking at her brother walking over . Odirile stepped before her and pulled Bonolo by her waist inside as she stood there .

Odirile : Never ever in your life talk to her like that ever again. Understood?

Ditebogo: No Odirile. This girl is no different fr-

Odirile: Bona ha wena Ditebogo. You will never address her in that manner again . And whenever she is here you should stick to your limits and stop with the being the bull crap . This is my house .So stop chasing away every guest of mine . Especially not her . She'll come here whenever she wants and I expect you to open your hands for her . Be on your best behavior and respect her .

Ditebogo: Why ? What's so different about her ? She'll also break your heart like the rest did leaving you miserable for me to deal with.

Odirile: Look sis. I understand that your trying to look out for me , I get it . And I appreciate it a lot . But can you at least cool it down . I'm older and I can make my own decisions.

Bonolo: And from the way your so protective over him ..I can see you really care about him . I know it must be hard dealing with someone who keeps making bad decisions and come crying on you . But I promise , I won't hurt your brother . I love him .

Ditebogo: Yeah ..nice words but I dont buy it . They

all said that and eventually did the opposite besides the one girl that died with the love for him . I swear to you ...if you hurt him , I'll look for you and i-

Odirile: Ohk that's enough ! I dont need you to look out for me Ditebogo. Shouldn't you be at your friend's and not making threats to my girlfriend?

Ditebogo looked at him and looked at Bonolo before grabbing her bag and car keys leaving .

Bonolo sighed looking at him as he closed the door and walked over to her wrapping his hands around her waist.

Odirile: And that was my little sister. Sorry for her behavior and i-

Bonolo its ohk .. kiss me .

Odirile: Huh ?

Bonolo: Fuck me .

He raised his eyebrows with a smile building and so was his boy expanding. He never expected it to come up so fast . But hey...they also can.

He leaned in kissing her as his hand explored her body. Damn his hands did wonders . Her phone fell of her grip when he took the kiss to her neck sucking the shit out of her leaving hickeys as she moaned. She slid her hand into his pants as her panties soaked and gasped. Is it a bad luck that she always comes across man with big dicks ? His blood rushed through feeling her soft hand on his boy playing with it .She breathed as he pulled her dress up and slid his hand into her panties playing with her cookie when her knees got weak and he picked her up still kissing going upstairs.

At Breezes.

Breeze parked the car feeling hopeless. He leaned on the steering wheel as tears burned his eyes . Why did good people always have to pay the price ? Sagi

was in there because of him . If he hadn't cheated and had a baby outside none of this would have happened. He raised his head rubbing his eyes and looked around when his jaws dropped looking at Gail's car . She wasn't supposed to be here ,not in 4 days. He stepped out thinking how he was going to keep his only promise to Sagi that he could never break since he broke others. He breathed stepping in and put the keys on the table. He walked to the living room and frowned looking at Kagiso with his head down. Funny how he could already recognize his back view so fast .

He walked over and put his hand on his shoulder before sitting down as he rose his head looking at him . He chuckled looking at his hair and rubbed it when Kagiso laughed pushing his hand off .

Breeze: No seriously..you need a hair cut. My woman dont even have such long hair . You look like Zahara when she still had that afro in a male form .

Kagiso: Hers was longer than mine .

Breeze: I see no difference. I mean come on man..girls will do whatever it takes to have this kind of hair . Anyway..why are you in pjs? Couldn't you pick a better outfit?

Kagiso: That's the thing . I never got the chance to pick a better outfit.

Breeze: What do you mean you never got the chance too ? It only takes a min to do so .

Kagiso: I know but I didn't get the chance too , talk about wearing shoes , brushing my teeth, taking a bath!

Breeze frowned and looked at his feet before at him

.

Breeze: What's up sunny?

Kagiso: I woke up in a cemetery. On Nakedi's grave

.

Breeze: What ?

Kagiso: Yeah.. I dont even know how I got there ,all I remember is locking the door and getting in bed sleeping. She hasn't been visiting me since Rose's wedding and now I wake up on her grave .

Breeze: So you were sleepwalking? For kilometers from home to that cemetery?

Kagiso: I don't know. Course I wasn't tired when I got up . My feef weren't hurting or sore . I'm not even injured an inch. Talk about a little cut from trees or a scratch from something. I dont even remember walking out my door or on the road .

Breeze: uhm..I don't know what to say . I've never seen a person sleep walking or heard someone who experienced it . I have no idea what it's like and how it is . But I'm sure you were brought there by her for a reason.

Kagiso: And what reason could that actually be ? I mean Rose is happily married to a rich guy , what can possibly be against that ?

Breeze :I dont know.. but I'll help you find out . Go

take a bath . You can wear some of my clothes until we get you new once. You still remember your room right ?

Kagiso: yeah ..

Breeze: Good . Dont worry . I'll help you through this . She needs to rest and stop bothering you guys.

He pat his shoulder and he stood up going to take a shower . Breeze rubbed his face as his mind filled . He licked his lip standing and went upstairs. He didn't know how he was going to face Abigail and lie through his teeth . That's if her decision is made .

He walked into the master bedroom and closed the door behind him when Gail walked out of her closet with a wide smile and ran over hugging him . He forced a smile with her in his arms and they pulled back looking at each other .

Gail: I love you ...and I want to be with you . Sorry I wasn't a loyal wife . Sorry for hurting you and never

thought through my decision. I decided to take rushed decisions out of pain to hurt you back but now I know better . I'm really sorry baby . I love you and I want us to start over . Please forgive me .

Breeze: I forgave you long before you were even gone . What was the use of me holding you to something that you cant take back and of which I did and worse ? Course that'll hurt me more than it will hurt you . I love you too .

Gail: thank you baby . I promise to be a good wife from now on . To honour and respect you . And bring peace along with happiness into our home .

She layed her head on his chest holding him tight . He sighed hugging her back and put his chin on her head .

Gail :Where is Sagi ?

He pulled away from the hug and kissed her

forehead before taking off his clothes. Abigail looked at him as he ignored her question busy taking off his clothes . He couldn't believe he was about to start their new chapter with a lie.

Gail: babe where is Sagi ?

Breeze: She decided to go away .

Gail: to where?

Breeze: She didn't say . I found a note when I got back from the club saying she needed a break to clear her head .

He walked into the insuit and turned on the shower letting the cold water lick him . Gail sighed as the feeling to not believing him washed over her . He didn't look good and he lost a little bit of weight. She took off her gown remaining naked and walked to the insuit . She stepped into the shower and walked over to him putting her hand behind him and started rubbing him to his chest . She started

planting wet kisses on his back when he breathed out facing up and the water hit his face . He wasn't in the mood . He always was down to this but today was different. He wasn't feeling like it .

Breeze: Not today Gail .

She kept on going kissing his back trying to heat up his blood but today he wasn't touching her back . She put her hands on his chest when he got held them and took them off him stepping out .

Breeze: I said not today. I'm not in the mood .

He grabbed a towel and walked out leaving her in the middle of the shower . Tears burned her eyes as she stared at where he walked out and melted down crying. Maybe he was lying when he said he forgave her and didn't know how to tell her . Maybe he was not into her anymore. She sat there as the

water washed off her tears as she silently cried .

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:51] Lynne : Chapter 61

At Rose's house.

Mxolisi drove into the yard and pressed the remote opening the garage then parked inside. He closed it

and pulled his briefcase stepping out loosening his tie kicking the door going inside.

His stomach crumbled out of hunger when he headed to the kitchen and opened the fridge looking inside . It was almost empty. He bit his lip wondering what she ate , how she was doing ? and all those concerned questions. He rushed out and threw the keys and briefcase on the couch going upstairs busting into their room .

Mxolisi: Rose !

Meanwhile in the bathroom Rose's heart skipped when the door opened. She listened carefully and smiled in tears relaxing.

Rose: I'm in here !

His heart skipped thinking the worst rushing in and stopped by the door looking at her in the bathtub.

He breathed out heavily and smiled when his eyes fell on the pad . He frowned looking at her as his heart sank .

Mxolisi: How are you feeling? Pains, headache?

Rose : I'm ohk ..why do you ask ?

Mxolisi : Because your on your periods .

Rose : I'm not .

Mxolisi : You are .

Rose: I'm not .

Mxolisi: Then what are you doing in a bathtub full of water ? Isn't that the water pressure can stop your flow temporarily ?

Rose: (smiling) It can , but I'm not on my periods .

Mxolisi: (smiling) So you dont have any abdominal cramps? Headache? Tender breasts? Fa-

Rose: (smiling) Tender breasts? How do you know all this ?

Mxolisi: Well let's see ..

He balanced himself on the doorway.

Mxolisi: I got a mother -

Rose: (chuckled) your mother ?

Mxolisi: No listen . I got a mother and she has a daughter. So I used to babysit her. At the age of 11 she had her first periods with me around . So I asked questions on media and Googled . I was terrified at first thinking she had some sort of cervical cancer coursing a vaginal bleeding . But luckily it wasn't that .

Rose: Out of all thing you thought of cancer ?

Mxolisi: I was still a nerd by then . But with the help of a girlfriend I realized it wasn't anything bad but health . So I started asking her questions and she'd answer me without hiding anything from me . I know a lot about women . I've been around them for a long time girl. Are you on your dates ? And dont

lie course I have your pad in my hand .

Rose stood still in the water and bit her lip . This was awkward.

Mxolisi: I'm not going anywhere until you tell me .
Though I know I want you to say it .

She closed her eyes and sighed smiling before standing in the bath. Mxolisi gasped looking at her clearing his throat feeling his boy wake up . He bit his lip putting his hands in the pockets looking away .

Mxolisi: I guess it's a yes .

Rose : Are you looking at me ?

Mxolisi: You knew I was here and stood up just after I told you I wasn't going anywhere until you tell me . Besides ..(clearing his throat) it's not like it's

for the first time seeing you naked .

Rose's mouth dropped with her eyes closed and couldn't help but laugh . He turned looking at her laughing and joined in pulling a towel walking towards her . He stood before her and looked at her mammary glands. They were rounded full boobs , so charming and seductive. He bit his lip going down to her abs and stopped before looking down there .

Mxolisi: Lift up your hands .

She lifted her hands and he wrapped her with the towel before scooping her as she laughed going to the bedroom to help her . After a while he ordered food online and they sat on the bed waiting over a chat getting to know each other . He took out his phone and typed one of his most trusted cousin a message before putting it down . He needed someone to watch over her tomorrow.

The next day .

At Breezes.

Breeze stared at the ceiling with Gail sleeping on his chest. He sighed grabbing his phone on the headboard looking at the clock. Her trial was starting at 7 o'clock in the morning and it was 5am . He sighed putting the phone down gently caressing Gail's hair . He kissed her head before gently laying her on the side and got off the bed heading to the shower. He stood by the mirror looking at himself as tears burned his eyes . Now this one hella weakness. He pulled his teeth brush and applied a toothpaste brushing his teeth. When he was done he soaked his mouth and sighed as questions crossed his mind .

How will she cope in there for a year? . Blame and guilt washed over him when a tear ran down his cheek. Now his wife was going to spend her

merteninty and life time in pris on. A mental pris on on top of that . He shook his head rubbing his tear and took off his pj pants and boxer and stepped into the shower opening the cold water .

After a while he stepped out and dried himself walking to his closet and got dressed. He then walked out grabbing his phone and headed to Kagiso's room and found him sitting on the floor leaning on the bed .

Breeze : Hey .. are you ohk ?

Kagiso: yeah .. just didn't want to sleep .

Breeze: Why not ?

Kagiso: I dont want what happened the other night to repeat itself. The thought of waking up in the cemetery just scares the hell out of me . What will people think of me when they come to bury their loved one and find me laying on her grave ? Ase gona ba tlare ke moloi wa monna ? Do you know

what they'll do to me ? (Teary) I just want her to leave me alone . My mother is sick and worried about me at the same time . The look on her face everytime I zoom out cracks me . She hurting my loved ones. I know I love Rose but what about my mother ? Where does she put her and my loved ones? Rose is married what else does she want ? She moved on ! Why do I have to get up on her grave ? I got exams for christ sake! Why me ? Why does everything always have to be me ? Who have I wronged on this planet? Why did i have to be the chosen one ?

He looked at Breeze when a tear ran down his cheek and dropped his head . Breeze stood there looking at him not knowing how to answer his rhetoric question though it hurt him seeing him like that .

Kagiso: Not so long ago I was beaten by an angry community for visiting my girlfriend. They didn't even give me the chance to explain myself. I spent

two months in the hospital having nightmares.
Which brings me to the point that I've been seeing a ghost . I fall of from my bed , stoep , chair everywhere! I get called out but when I look , there's no one there . Sometimes I feel crazy .

He rubbed his tear and rubbed his hands together looking at Breeze.

Kagiso: I'm mean ..I'm just a poor boy . Uneducated
-

Breeze: but your on that now aren't you ?

Kagiso: but isn't she trying to ruin that for me ?!
Look at what she's doing? She cares less about my future and more about her friend, and by the way who is married. What about me ? Why does she have to play with my future like this just so she can get what she wants ?

Breeze : I dont know. I cant answer to something I don't know . I grew up modern and I never

experience anything that involved the underground gang . Only when I got married. But I'm sure there's something she see's from far way in the future and she's trying to correct it now . Maybe she's trying to protect you and Rose from something that's coming .

Kagiso: But why all the torture?

He bit his lip rubbing his hands again together when he frowned looking at Breeze.

Kagiso : hold on ..if I'm going through this , what's happening to Rose ?

At Odirile's house.

Odirile grabbed a handful of Bonolo's hair holding tight on her waist hitting her from the back as she pulled the sheets moaning for dear life . Their moans filled the room when her body muscles

twitched uncontrollably as her breathing and heart beat rate changed and her skin flashed feeling tension.

Bonolo: (moaning) Od-ir- ahh..I'm clo-aah

They both released at the same time when he pulled her dipping it all in shooting his family inside of her . They both collapsed on the bed breathing heavily as her pussy throbbed . He pulled her when she frowned.

Bonolo:(pouted) I'm tired ..

Odirile:(smiling) I know . Let me go prepare you a bath .

He pulled her with her chin and kissed her before getting off the bed . His phone vibrated on the headboard when he pulled in going to the bathroom.

Odirile: Hey man !

Breeze : you sound happy. What's up ?

Odirile: (smiling) nothing.

Breeze: Nothing ? Really?

Odirile: yeah .. what's up ?

Breeze: J ust wanted to find out if you'll be able to make it . Your the only friend she has too .

Odirile: Yeah .. I'll be there. I wont let my smucles face the judge all by herself.

Breeze: ohk thanks man . I'll see you there .

Odirile: Yeah ..but I have company.

Breeze: (chuckled) a girl ?

Odirile: (smiling) Non of your business.

Breeze: Is it the same one you've been crying about ?

Odirile: yeah man . Finally I got her . Man I love this woman . I'm really into her and I dont ever want to

let her go .

Breeze: but you said she had a boyfriend. Did they break up ? Or your her side nigga ?

Odirile: Breeze your supposed to be my friend at this moment and congratulate me . Be happy that I found happiness also at last .

Breeze: I'm just trying to look out for you . I dont want you getting cought in the middle of a fight over a girl . I know you love her all I'm asking is you be careful. Dont take rushing decisions yet just because you tapped her pussy and it felt great. Study her first.

Odirile: Come on Breeze .

Breeze: I am happy for you man . Trust me I am . I'm just looking out for my only friend in this world . Congratulations man .

Odirile: (smiling) Thank you

Breeze: Cant wait to meet that bitch that replaced my girls and me in that heart of yours.

Odirile: (laughed) Fuck you man ! Fuck you !

They both laughed and hang up then he added water forming bubbles as the bathtub filled . He went back and threw the phone on the bed picking her up heading to the bathroom.

Odirile: I want you to accompany me somewhere. Please .

Bonolo: (sleepy)as long as you wont fuck me when we get there course I'm burning.

Odirile: (smiling) i wont . It's in public.

She smiled as they got in the bath and she layed on his chest.

At Breezes.

Abigail smiled tossing to Breeze side when she frowned raising her upper body. She looked around

the room getting off the bed and pulled her gown . It's been a month since she had his dick and he disappears on her like this . She checked the bathroom and he wasn't there . She sighed and turned around heading out .

On her way downstairs she passed by Kagiso's room when she stopped on her tracks . She bit her lip as her inner part so badly wanted to see this beautiful guy in there . She bit herself very hard and took baby steps back standing by the slightly open door looking at him sitting on the math with his head down . He had braided his hair into 6 long braids . Damn this guy !

She but her lip fighting to just go in there and make up a conversation just to grab his attention.

Meanwhile Kagiso opened his eyes still facing down feeling someone's eyes on him . He raised his head and finding no one and sighed facing down again .

Meanwhile Gail's heart pounded so hard on her chest by the wall when she held her mouth trying

not to make a sound . She took off her sleepers and picked them sneaking away .

Around 6:30 am

At the State Court .

Breeze sat in the car looking at the time as his heart kept racing . He knew he had to be strong for her but then the weakness kept occupying him . He closed his eyes leaning back putting his hands together.

Breeze: Lord..I know I'm not much of a prayer and a huge sinner before your eyes . I humble myself before you to be with my wife and baby . As she battles today in court , it is not the lawyer I put my trust in , nor is it the judge, but to you . I pray you hear my cries . You my only hope. In your unfailing love , come along side her in this court. Make your

way plain for her to follow. Help Mxolisi to speak clearly, confidently, and convincingly when he stands up for my wife . Shine your love upon her and let her live under your shadow. (Teary) Be with her . Amen .

He closed his eyes for a while when someone knocked on the window. It was Odirile. He smiled wiping his tears and grabbed his phone and keys stepping out hugging him .

Odirile: She'll pull through man .

Breeze: I hope so .

Odirile: Come on man . Dont lose hope . You gatta be there for her .

Breeze: I know .

Odirile: (smiling)Where you crying?

Breeze: (smiling)couldn't help it . I'm hurt . A lot .

A car parked next to them when they both turned looking at it . J ane stepped out and smiled looking at them closing the door .

J ane : Hii boys .

Odirile: Hii

Breeze looked at her as she walked into the building with anger boiling inside of him . He shook his head and turned his attention to Odirile.

Breeze: So where is the lady of the moment ?

He walked to his car and peeked through the window . Meanwhile Bonolo's heart pounded looking at Breeze when they locked eyes . Breeze frowned opening the door not sure and looked at her when his jaws dropped. Bonolo licked her dry lips shamefully and embarrassed avoiding his eyes .

Odirile: All hail to Breeze!

Breeze snapped and turned looking at him forcing a smile .

Breeze: Wow ! Uhm .. she's beautiful ! Jackpot man !

Odirile: Thank you . Babe this is my friend Breeze.
Breeze this is Bonolo . My girlfriend.

Breeze: Hii .

Bonolo: (low) Hii .

Odirile helped her out of the car as she avoided Breeze's eyes . Breeze scoffed unbelievably and looked at his watch .

Breeze: Its about to start 9 mins left . We better get

in

Odirile: Yeah .

Breeze looked at them holding hands and smirked pacing into the courtroom. Now it seems like Juicy Wrld was right - All girls are the same . But hey none of his business. His heart sank looking at Sagi in her maternity dress cuffed being escorted in . So this was really happening.

She turned looking around when she spotted Breeze and smiled trying hard not to show how much of a fear she was carrying. He smiled back and she turned looking around for any familiar face when her eyes fell on Jane rubbing her bump with a smile on her face . Just by looking at her she felt like she could just break this cuffs and go strangle her to death . She breathed out shaking her head when her eyes fell on Odirile and the girl she once saw at the mall . She put on a smile when he waved at her . Meanwhile Breeze looked at Mxolisi when they both slightly bowed their heads and he opened

his file fixing his suit .

Bailing: All rise . (Everyone stood up as the judge sat down)Department One of the State Court is now in session. J udge Mike Williams on presiding. Please be seated .

The all sat down and no sound was made .

J udge: Good morning, ladies and gentlemen.
Calling out the case of J ane Lyon verses Sagi Lyon.
Are both sides ready ?

J anes lawyer: Ready your honour .

Mxolisi : Ready for the defendant your honour.

The clerk said his part and the trial began as they crossed fingers

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:51] Lynne : Chapter 62

The whole of court room went silent as the judge wrote something down .

Sagis palms got sweaty when she rubbed them on her dress turning giving Jane a dare look . She shook her head and turned to Breeze who had bit his lip with anxiety and closed his eyes shaking his

head . You could tell that this was taking its toll on him . Behind him , Odirile noticed him shaking and reached out squeezing his shoulder as Bonolo looked at them . They were more like brothers than friends .

Sagis eyes welled up before turning and rubbed her bump looking at the judge as he raised his head looking at her back .

Judge : Assaulting an unborn child based on the degree of harm the baby sustained meaning the higher the level of harm the greater the criminal penalties . Assault of a pregnant woman in the third degree therefore looking at your health statement , Mrs Sagi Lyon , you are hereby charged with the 3rd degree harm of assault and sentenced for 9 months in the Mental prison n-.....

Sagis ears immediately became paralyzed when Breeze's eyes popped with his jaws dropped as their heart pounded to the last . Both their eyes

welled up in tears and started rolling. They both turned looking at Jane when she smiled waving and sat back listening further.

Meanwhile Odirile frowned looking at the judge closing the file and stood up leaving the room. Did he even realize that Sagi was also pregnant? Did he even hear the part where they said Jane was the one that came to her house? The part where they said Jane was the one to break in between their marriage? Because she was black? Or the only the part where she assaulted a pregnant woman and mental health. The whole courtroom stood up leaving as the police officer walked over to Sagi escorting her as she silently cried.

Mxolisi eyes welled up when his knees got weak and he melted on the chair rubbing his head. He just disappointed his client when she needed her the most. He himself could tell that the judge charged unfairly and didn't sit well with him. He'll have to do whatever it takes to get her out of there, for Rose of course.

Meanwhile Odirile walked to Breeze as he buried his

face in his palms and pulled him up for a tight hug .

Odirile: I'm sorry man.

Breeze: (crying) She wont survive it , she wont .

Odirile: Hey .. Sagi is a fighter . You know that .
She'll make it . All you gatta do now is be there for
her emotionally . Wipe away those tears .

Breeze: That was unfair and so Unlawful of him to
charge her like that .

Odirile: I know man . I know .

Meanwhile Mxolisi packed the file and put it in his
briefcase before walking over to them . He stood
infront of them not knowing what to say when
Breeze gave him his hand and they bro hugged .

Breeze: Thanks man .

Mxolisi: Dont thank me yet . I'm going to do with all
in power to get her out of there . The judge

sentenced her unfairly without looking at both sides . The fair one was for her to spend at least 90 day in prison .

Odirile: Ware 90? !

Mxolisi: Yeah..look man we are not talking about harming a regular person here . We are talking about a pregnant woman. Sagi could have caused a lot more than body harm to Jane , which is death to the baby or course major harm to it .

Breeze: So what now ?

Mxolisi: Now I'm going to -

Breeze: Hold on ..

He quickly rushed out when he spotted two police officers loading her into the van and ran over .

Breeze: Hey ..Can I please talk her . Just to say good bye . She's my wife .

Officer: 1 minute.

They helped her out when she put on that innocent smile and lifted her hands for him to get in between and they kissed for the whole minute as the officers stood by .

Officer 1: hey...! We're here you know. We are not gay.

They broke the kiss laughing altogether . She let him out and he hugged her for dear life .

Breeze: I'm going to get you out of there . I promise.

Sagi: I hate that tone . Dont break me out please.

Breeze: (chuckles) Really ?

Sagi: Yeah ..

He broke the hug holding her bump as tears bult up

looking at it then at her .

Breeze: I'm sorry I disappointed you . This is all my fault.

Sagi: No it's not baby .

Breeze: It is . If I hadn't cheated all this wouldn't have come about. If I hadn't -

Sagi: You do know I hate " if's " right ?

Breeze: I do but-

Sagi: no Breeze. Yeah you cheated , fine . But are you going to spend the rest of the days regretting and with the endless apologies or trying to prove yourself to me that you won't ever repeat it? Breeze I did this . Without hesitation or remorse. I knew what I was doing when I laid my hands on her though I wish she could be grateful I didn't stand on her belly with my two feet course trust me I wanted too .

Breeze: You wanted to kill my - I mean her baby ?

Sagi: Yeah ..its fine you can say your baby. Yes I

did . Trust me I did . I wanted to step on her until she gave birth to that baby still in the amniotic sac and leave her to die .

Breeze: What ?

Officers: What ?!

Sagi: Nothing ..all I'm saying is , I forgave you . And I want you to stop worrying about me , I can take care of myself.

Breeze: Babe they're sending you to a mental prison. You do realize your going to face lunatics and psychos there ?

Sagi: I'm also one of them. A devil in disguise.

She winked with a smirk with Breeze and the officers looking at her . The look on her face was the one that bothered the most . She had something in that head of her but he couldn't put a finger on it . Meanwhile the officers looked at her unbelievably . How does he keep up with her ? She kissed him one last time and got into the van .

Sagi: Go take care of Gail . She'll be back anytime now and she'll need you more than ever . That's if you still have the keys to her heart . Love her . And you two make sure you dont ripp each others hearts apart while I'm in there . Go on and be happy without me course I dont know how pris on will change me . I'll shield our baby , I promise you that . I won't let harm come to it as long as I still have air in my lungs and my blood running through its veins . After 2 months .. you can come and get our baby and I'll see her or him after a month .

Breeze : Why does this sound like a good bye ?

Sagi: That's because it is . I dont want you to come vis it me when I'm in there -

Breeze: Wait what ?!

Sagi: Yeah ..

Breeze: now you have officially lost it . There's no way I'm going to let my wife and child t-

Sagi: Breeze you couldn't keep your promises and

stand your words . The least least you could do is honour my only wish . I dont want you to come visit me . Ohk..

Breeze: No I cant honour that . Try another one .

Sagi: Move on without me .

Breeze: No another one . I'm not about to do that .

Sagi: there are only two wishes in my book .

Breeze : Sagi noo ..!

She got into the van and the officers closed the door . One of them squeezed his shoulder before going to the other side and they drove off .

Odirile watched from afar looking at him breaking down like that . He never thought he'd see this day coming. He turned to Bonolo and gave her the car keys before kissing her cheek.

Odirile: I'll catch you later . You can take it with you home . I think I'll be with him for the day , he tends

to misbehave during his break down .

Bonolo: ohk ..

She took the car keys and left then he walked over to Breeze and hugged him before they walked to his car and drove off .

At Breezes.

Kagiso walked down the stairs in sweatpants and a huge tee with sleepers looking more like a bad boy with those 6 braids on his head .

He passed by a telephone when he walked back and picked it dialing his mother .

Meanwhile..Gail heard foot steps in the kitchen when she stopped chopping the onion and listened attentively. His voice could make you lower your panties like it or not . She blushed hearing him saying I love you too over the phone as if he was referring to her . She put the onions in the

buttermilk and checked the steak as Kagiso walked in the kitchen.

Kagiso: Hii ..

Gail: (smiling) Hey .. how are you ?

Kagiso: I'm good . You ?

Gail: I'm good . How was your sleep? Slept well?

Kagiso: Uhm... yeah ..I did . You ?

Gail: Something like that. I thought my first day at home after so long will please your dad but I was wrong. He is ignoring me .

Kagiso: Why would he ignore you ? Did you do something?

Gail: Actually we did something , just that I did it out of revenge and pain.

Kagiso: the only thing that can make couples ignore each other and since you said revenge I guess you guy both stepped out.

Gail: (smiling) rrrrrright !

Kagiso : sp why don't you guys fix this . I mean all three of you can just easily sit down and talk things through other than acting like people my age . Your older so I'm sure you know communication is one of the keys in marriage. I'm in not mistaken .

Gail: your not . But Breeze is the kind to believe that action speaks louder than words .

Kagiso: then prove yourself to him . Let him know that your sorry and you love him . Earn each others trust back. I saw the was he left earlier today . His emotions were so low and had eyes full of anxiety along with heartbreak. I got to read him the days I spend with him and he is hurt . I didn't know why but now I do . Talk to him .

Gail: (chuckled) you think I didn't try that ? ..I trust me boy ..I did . I was with him and Sagi at the hospital when we all poured ourselves out and talked through . We even laughed and and snuggled in one bed single bed before he could send me away to find myself. Now that I did and I want him he ignores me. I dont know if its because Sagi is not around or it's me who he doesn't want anymore.

Kagiso: If there's one thing I learned of him is that he cares about you two . So much.

Gail: Breeze cares a lot . He cares about everyone . You cant differentiate between love and care . He cares about you too . He even call you his son .

Kagiso:(smiling) yeah..he is a nice guy. But just try to talk to him and at least make out , it actually works.

Gail: (laughs) Make out ? I tried that Kg . Still .

Kagiso: Then give him a little bit of time and in the meantime prove yourself to him . He loves you .

Time . She looked at him when he smiled blinking like a baby and she laughed .

Gail: (smiling) Stop doing that .

Kagiso: (smiling) What ?

She smiled looking at him. His eyelashes were like

they were watery even when their not with those cute beautiful brown eyes . He even had a dimple the same side as Breeze with a narrow nose and clear skin. You'd swear he's gay . She shook her head and took out the onions in the buttermilk and dipped them in the all purpose flour.

Gail: Care to help ?

Kagiso: Nop . I dont want to mess up your dishes . I only cook African food . That's what I'm good at . Not frying onions and applying whatever you applied on that steak . And definitely not able to do that (pointed)

Gail: (laughing) Those are chicken nuggets. Come on . I'll teach you.

Kagiso: No..I will mess this up .

Gail: Well there's a first time for everything. Come .

Kagiso bit his lip sending chills down her spine and stood up washing his hands . She passed him the

onions and taught him how to make onion rings
over a little chat .

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:51] Lynne : Chapter 63.

At Club 808

Breeze gulped the 30th shot before quickly taking a piece of lemon and swallowed it. Odirile looked at him as he raised his hand calling the bartender.

Breeze : give me 10 more shots. J ust keep them coming. Oh and that bottle of The Balvenie.

Odirile looked at him as he galped another glass of strong liquor and clenched his jaws as the burning taste landed inside.

Breeze: wow..!

He turned looking at Odirile who has been looking at him still holding the first glass. He scoffed when the bartender put his orders before him and left.

Breeze: Are just gonna sit there gawking?

Odirile: Yeah.. I think so.

Breeze: ohk.. (raised glass) To my miserable life.
Cheers!

The bartender turned looking at them when Breeze stood up holding the bottle and went to sit on the chairs. Odirile turned still sitting on the bar looking at him.

Bartender : Are you just gonna let him drink like that?

Odirile : For today. Yep.

Bartender: Why?

Odirile : like he said... He's life is fucked at this point. I want him to drink and all so that when I give him a piece of me, he doesn't throw it in his bin course he listens to no one. He's hurt. A lot.

Bartender : and you as a friend you let him drawn his sorrow in alcohol? What a friend you are boss.

Odirile : Actually the reason why I'm letting him

drink is because the past week he's been on a downfall and today he witnessed a shocking event of his life unfold before his eyes. So as a FRIEND I'm letting him drink because it'll help reduce the risk of him having strokes and developing some heart diseases.

Bartender : understood. But did you know there are also risks for heavy alcohol use?

Odirile : yeah.. That's why I said for today mate.

Bartender : Cool.

He picked his glass and carried on keeping his eye on him.

Meanwhile Breezes phone rang countlessly unanswered in the car with no one to answer.

At Breeze's.

Gail tried him for the 10th time but the was no

answer. She sighed putting the phone back in the pocket and walked to the dining room where Kagiso was standing by a piece of art on the wall looking at it. She smiled and walked over standing next to him.

Gail: You like it.

Kagiso: Yeah.. It's full of emotions. Complicated.

Gail : tell me how you feel about it. The feeling it spreads.

Kagiso: Red for love or Pain. Pink in her eyes, cheerful. The little bit of blue in the eyes too guess she's calm. This green color around her I suppose that's safety. (narrowed eyebrows) Is this about you?

Gail: What? No! Maybe - sometimes. Actually no. It's not. I made that after my mom lost my dad. She was full of love and calm after his passing. She always said she felt his presence everyday and in her eyes all you could see was love, always cheerful and wouldn't notice the pain behind that. I made that after her.

Kagiso:Wow! It's beautiful and touching. Your good at this. I love it.

Gail : thank you. How do you know what the colors represent? Did you study art?

Kagiso : No. I never studied art. Just that when you grow up with nothing, you find yourself exploring the world around you. You try to find the beauty in everything.

Gail : oh.. That's touching.

Kagiso turned looking at her when she looked at him too and he smiled walking to the next one. She smiled following him when they stopped on the one with a dark skinned girl sitting on the chair playing piano. He looked at it and the long curly hair she had before looking at Gail.

Kagiso: I guess that's the other lady of the house?

Gail: Nop. So what do you think of it?

Kagiso : it's dark.

Gail : and..

Kagiso : Emotional.. More like she's alone in the dark with no one to land a hand. No one to confide in. Alone. All by herself. Who is that?

Gail looked at the picture before sighing and looked at him.

Gail: my brother in laws child, Rosella. She's just going through a rough patch after her friend's passing and no one is able to help her. She's all alone in her own world. I know somewhere in her there's still that little girl, beautiful soul waiting to be rescued. Calling out loud but with no one raising their heads to hear her, share her pain. Lost in the darkness and pain.

Kagiso turned looking at her before back at the picture biting his lip. So that's it. He was chosen to rescue her from the darkness she was buried in. But

how will he do that when she is already married.
Matter of fact how is she doing now if he is waking
up in graveyards?

Kagiso : Do you have her number?

Gail: You mean Rose?

Kagiso : yeah. See I once met her and somehow I
fell for her.

Gail : what?

Kagiso : yeah.. Crazy to drop it like that - I know. But
I really need to speak to her please. Mother.

She looked at him and couldn't help but laugh at
that 'mother' at the end. Or maybe was it because it
sounded good coming from him. She shook her
head and took out her phone unlocking it and gave
it to him.

Gail : I'll be upstairs.

Kagiso : Ohk..thanks by the way.

Gail : no problem. Son.

He chuckle looking at her as she went upstairs. She had a nice figure though. He shook his head before checking her contacts. He scrolled through when his eyes landed on Mxolisi. Could it be the same one that married Rose? He bit his lip and scrolled further until he found hers and dialed them by they weren't available. He tried a few times but still.

He clenched his jaws and hang up before dialing Mxolisi with a pounding heart.

Mxolisi : Never thought ill receive a call from you
Abi.

Kagiso : What?

At Rose's house.

A min before.

Mxolisi was in the kitchen making food for Rose when his phone rang on the counter. He grabbed the dishcloth and wiped his hands as his cousin passed by heading out.

Her: ohk.. I'm leaving. See you tomorrow.

Mxolisi : thank you for staying with her. I really appreciate it. Don't forget to zip your mouth about this. It's our little secret.

Her : don't worry. It's kept cuz. But seriously.. You need to do something about this. You couldn't find anything wrong with her, what if it's not something that needs medical attention?

Mxolisi : What do you mean?

Her: I don't know. I'm just saying you need to flip all the cards. Your an African. Not an American. Bye.

Mxolisi : Your being weird.

Her: That's my middle name.

She smiled hanging her backpack and left. He shook his head picking the phone when his heart skipped. He smiled biting his lip and answered.

Mxolisi : Never thought I'd receive a call from you Abi.

Male voice : What?

He quickly moved the phone from his ear and looked at the caller's name before putting it back on his ear as his heart pounded.

Mxolisi : Breeze?

Male: No.. His son. Kagiso.

Mxolisi : (breathed out) oh.. Pheww. Hii. How are you?

Kagiso : I'm good.You?

Mxolisi : Good. Didn't know Abigail had a son
(chuckle) wow.

Kagiso : guess life is full of surprises, isn't?

Mxolisi : yeah.. How may I help man.

Kagiso : can I please talk to Rose? I've been trying
her phone but it did go through.

Mxolisi : sure...

Mxolisi rubbed his eyes feeling stupid before
picking the tray and walked to the bedroom where
Rose was sitting on the bed leaning on the board.
He put the tray on the headboard before holding her
hand giving her the phone on the other one.

Mxolisi : here.. Your cousin wants to speak to you.

Rose: My cousin?

Mxolisi : yeah.. He said his name is Kagiso.

Rose: (smiled) Kagiso.

She quickly put the phone on her ear as tears started to burn her eyes smiling . Mxolisi looked at her and couldn't help but smile.

Rose: Kagiso?

Kagiso : Hey babe. How are you? Are you feeling good? Everything ohk?

Rose:(crying) No..

Kagiso : Hey.. Hey.. Don't cry. Talk to me. What's up?

Rose: (cried) I lost my eye site. I'm blind.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

- .
- .
- .

[08/02, 13:51] Lynne : Chapter 64

At Breezes

Kagiso mouth slid apart with his eyes popped as he felt like his ears were deceiving him . He put his hand on his forehead when he started walking around as she cried over the phone . This was getting out of hand.

Kagiso: Dont cry ..talk to me . What happened?

Rose: (crying) It all started a month after I got married. I started to get cold chills and suddenly faint . I'll literally feel cold even though the weather outside is fine. And then days ago when I was

stepping out of a shower, I just lost my site .

Kagiso: Have you tried consulting a doctor about this ?

Rose: We did . We tried . But all they gave me was the same answer that there was nothing wrong with me.

Kagiso: By "We" you mean you and who?

Rose: Mxolisi. He's been there for me . An-

Kagiso: No no . Its ohk .

Rose: (sighed) He's my husband now Kagiso. We're married. He's been there for me the past couple of rough days . He-

Kagiso: You don't really have to rub it in darling. I know. And I have nothing against your husband. He seems nice

Rose: Kagiso he's been nice to me . Cari-

Kagiso: I don't really want to know full details about your marriage life . I think I'll pass on that one .

They both kept quiet when he stopped in front of her portrait and sighed looking at it .

Kagiso: I'm sorry . That was rude of me .

Rose: Why are you talking to me like that?

Kagiso: (sighed again) Let's see .. because I love you . And it hurts hearing you praise another guy like that .

Rose: But he's part of my life now . He's a part of me ,you need to understand that .

Kagiso: Fine . I'll respect that .

At Rose's house.

Mxolisi looked at her when a smile pulled his lips. So she defends him like that from her family. He never really had someone to do that and it somehow felt great and accepted. He pulled her hand and kissed it when he pulled him and made

him lay on her thighs playing her fingers in his hair. She didn't really feel safe when alone and she knew he was about to leave when he did that . And somehow when with him she felt at ease .

Kagiso: I'm sorry Rose .

Rose: Why ?

Kagiso: I failed you already .

Rose: Kagiso you didn't fail me . You did a lot already in my life that no one has managed to do in the past years . You take out the best in me . The truth buried in me . For that I'll always be grateful. (Smiling) You're the first person to make me smile after a long time .

Kagiso: (smiling) ohk .. I want us to meet . I want to see you. Send me the address.

Rose: Remember I can't see anything. I'll just spell it out .

Kagiso: I'll forget it . Tell him to send it . Oh and by the way . I realized that through out the

conversation you never mentioned your parents ,
why ?

Rose: Oh ..them ? . I canceled them from my life .

Kagiso: (cleared throat) Ohk

Her eyebrows narrowed when she swallowed.

Rose: Aren't you gonna talk me out of this?

Kagiso: Why ?

Rose: Because their my parents and I just instantly
cut them out after my marriage.

Kagiso: there you have your answer .

Rose: Oh ..

Kagiso: Yeah ..so look . If you cant find anything
wrong with your eyes and the doctors confirmed it .
I think maybe we should do it our African way .

Rose: Meaning ?

Kagiso: Meaning the African way . The traditional

way .

Rose: You mean consult a seer . (Chuckles) I doubt he'll also find anything wrong with me .

Kagiso: I guess we'll never know . Send me the address.

Rose: Ohk ..bye .

Kagiso: (softly) I love you .

Rose: (smiling) I know.

Kagiso: (smiling) Come on Rosella, say it .

Rose: (laughed) No ..

Kagiso: (smiling) That hurts . Anyway bye .

Rose: Bye .

She shook her head and he hang up as she put the phone on Mxolisi's face without noticing when he laughed . She gasped with a smile and moved it .

Mxolisi: That happened to be my face .

Rose: (smiling) I'm sorry .

Mxolisi: Its ohk .. are you hungry ?

Rose: Yeah ...

He moved from her and picked the tray putting it on her lap and they began eating .

At The Lyons Mansion.

Later

Jane walked in holding a shopping bag and kicked the door behind her . She walked to the stairs when she spotted Dineo clearing a full table while humming a soft tune .

Jane: I'm sorry honey.

Dineo: Its ohk mam . J ust doing my job .

Jane: I know but you work hard . You should take a break sometime . Get a time off for a few weeks .

Dineo: No mam . I cant do that . I really need the money . Like really need it . I have a family to takecare of.

Jane: I understand. That's why you'll get paid even when you're not working. Just to show how much I appreciate having you work here .

Dineo : (smiling) Really Mrs Lyon ?

Jane: (smiling) for real . Take it as a thank you for being there for my girl when I wasn't. Besides I'll be needing you more when Junior arrives. (winked)

Dineo: Can't wait to meet him . I'm sure he'll be the handsome guy with his sister's eyes and that baby baby face of hers .

Jane: No doubt he'll be handsome. Let's just pray he wont have a hint of a devil like his daddy.

They laughed and she walked upstairs leaving her to finish clearing up .

She walked into the main bedroom and again kicked the door before standing in front of a mirror looking at herself in her merteninty dress . She slowly caressed her bump when she stopped and smirked. She managed to get one out of the way . One more remaining then boom ! She's in .

She smiled walking to her bag and took out her phone dialing Gail before standing back on the mirror rubbing her bump .

At Breezes.

Kagiso rubbed his forehead as his mind drifted. She sounded safe and happy over the phone . At this point he didn't know if weather this whole chosen thing was meant to bring them together or put him on a rescue mission . But anyway, he loved her , no doubt about that . Even though they dont end up together , at least he'll live knowing he saved the girl he loved from her own misery . At least that's honorable. But how ?he chuckled.

Gail's phone rang by his side when he moved his hand from his forehead and picked it looking at the caller. He sighed thinking how it must be to be cut off someone dealy as Rose's life . She must be having it hard . He stood up and jogged upstairs to the main bedroom where he knocked on the door .

Gail: I'm about to take a shower . I'll be there with you shortly !

Kagiso: Oh ..your phone is ringing !

Gail: Who is it ?

Kagiso: J ane !

Gail: Tell her off !

Kagiso: I cant do that , she's an elder .

Gail: Well my boy ..elders know boundaries and have manners . They respect other people's marriages and don't over step ! She's not a saint!

Kagiso: Still ..

Gail: Fine . Tell her to never call me again.

Kagiso: If you so much didn't want to hear her or call her , you could have simply blocked her .

Gail: I kept them for the sake of Rose .

He sighed looking at it as it rang and he answered walking downstairs.

Jane: Hey you ..how are you ? - no dont answer that .
How does it feel ? Actually where's Breeze?

Kagiso: Uhm ...Hello

Jane: (frown) Who's this ?

Kagiso: Kagiso.

Jane: Oh ..the bastard son that stands in between.
Who's your mother ?

Kagiso: Veronica.

Jane: Veronica? What kind of a name is that ? How can Breeze stoop so low to plant a seed in a woman her name is Veronica?

Kagiso: I'm sorry mam . Gail is in the shower and said I should tell you to never call her again. But if its important I can take the massage.

Jane: Can you take the massage ? Yeah .. go tell that bitch that I want to speak to her . And by the way who the hell do you think you are ? Coming out of nowhere after such a long time to claim to be Breezes son . Aren't you ashamed of yourself? Who are you ?

Kagiso stopped on the stairs and scoffed with his hand in the pocket and shook his head .

Kagiso: Definitely someone who doesn't want to get involved in the middle of the Lyon drama . Good night .

He cut the call and released a chuckle. His mother thought him better than to disrespect elders . And he wasn't about to throw that away now . He so had

words for her at this point.

He walked to the kitchen and grabbed an apple sitting on the highchair looking outside the slide open curtain when his heart raced . It's dark outside .

At the Lyons Mansion

Jane pumped with rage inside when she took the phone off her ear . She shook her head as the conversation she had with her daughter flashed . So this is the boy that had an effect on her daughter. How rude and disrespectful of him . Good thing her daughter dodged the bullet . Brat ! She sighed and dialed Breeze and when it rang she smiled .

At Odirile's house.

Odirile parked the car with the music playing out loud as Breeze sang along . He looked at him when

he tried turning the volume down but he slapped his hand off .

Breeze:

I'm sorry for the wrong things that I've done
I'm sorry I'm not always there for my sons
I'm sorry for the fact that I'm not aware
That you cant sleep a night when I am not there
Becouse I'm in the streets like everyday
Sorry for the things that I did not say
Like how you are the best thing in my world
And how I'm so proud to call you my girl

I understand that there are some pro-

Odirile switched off the car and he frowned looking at him .

Breeze: Fine .. what ?

Odirile: Let's go put you to bed .

Breeze: I don't need a babysitter you know . I'm fine .

Odirile: if looking after you is called babysitting, then I'm guilty as charged. Come on .

Breeze: I'm not getting out of this car .

Odirile: Fine ..we'll sleep in here. I dont mind .

He said that relaxing the sit and layed back as Breeze turned looking at him and couldn't help but smile .

Breeze: Dude your home . Go sleep . I'm seriously fine

Odirile: No your not . You drunk and hurt . And I'm not going anywhere.

Breeze: I'm not that drunk .

Odirile: let the pain aside and let the alcohol sink in .
That's when you'll know your drunk . Sleep .

Breeze: I'll call Bonolo to get you out of here .

Odirile: You don't even have her numbers .

Breeze: But I know someone who does .

Odirile: And who could that possibly be ?

He turned looking at Breeze when he just put a
neutral face with no sign of being drunk .

Breeze looked at him and shrugged.

Breeze: You .

Odirile: Mxm .

Breeze's phone rang when he tried to pick it but
Odirile did it before he can and frowned looking at
the caller .

Odirile: Oh ..now would you look at that . How perfect is this . (To the phone) hii .

Jane: (frowned) Who is this ?

Odirile: Odirile. Why ?

Jane: (screamed) Hand the phone over to Breeze . Tell him I'm in pain . Ahhhhhh.. please. Ahhhhhh..

Odirile: Ng ng nnanyana. No . Your barely on your 7th month and already your starting with the baby mama drama . Get a lesson. That's not how it's done. Go sleep some of us are trying to sleep . No marn . Yerr !

He cut the call before pulling Breeze's hand and unlocked the phone before shutting it and put it down . He shook his head laying back sleeping without an idea that Breeze was staring at him with a smile all along . He shook his head looking outside before back at Odirile. He's like a bother he never had . One of the best thing that has ever happened to him . He bit his lip and relaxed the seat looking up .

Breeze: I love you man .

He closed his eyes and immediately drifted as
Odirile opened his eyes one by one looking at him .
He smiled and shook his head closing his eyes.

Odirile: Love you too man .

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:52] Lynne : Chapter 65

At Breezes .

Early around 4h30

Odirile parked the car on the drive way before switching off the engine and turned to Breeze. Breeze looked at him back before grabbing his jacket from the back and opened the door stepping out . He shut the door and still found Odirile's eyes on him , he sighed .

Breeze: Fine I get it . You want to be my bodyguard. But I'm home now . And I promise I wont do anything unlawful.

Odirile: Who said I want to be your bodyguard? I'm

your friend, practically the only friend you have .
And with that it's my responsibility to look after you .

Breeze: And I'm grateful that your the only friend I
have .

Odirile: Sure . Now go in . And don't leave the house
, not yet.

Breeze: You know I gatta do something if you want
me to pass through this . Staying here will only pull
me down .

Odirile: How do you know that ?

Breeze: i guess i learned that from my niece. So no
. I will get out of this house and go make some
money . J ust to get my mind off the fact that my
wife is in jail because of me .

Odirile: Ohk ..but make sure to hit me up so i can
tag along .

Breeze: i told you i dont need a babysitter. I'm fine .
J ust a little off.

Odirile: i know , and that's why I want to be there to
switch that off into an on . Man you still have a lot

to live for .

Breeze: With my wife and child in prison , I guess not .

Odirile: For Gail . Your son . Kagiso needs you man . You can't just come into his life and plant that father figure in him then drop him off like that . Gail , she came back to you . That's how she loves you to fight her emotions just so she could be with you .

Breeze: (swallowed) You know what I realized this past couple of months .

Odirile:

Breeze: that their consequences for those who love me . At first it was my parents, they died because they loved me more than my siblings . If they hadn't chosen me they would still be alive . Maybe James wouldn't be in Jail as we speak and maybe Jack would have been something better than the beast he hides behind the suit . Sagi ... when I met her she was a sweet innocent girl and I took that away from her . Her dignity as a woman . All because she loved me . Despite everything. And then there's Gail

. She has always been strong and innocent. But then I broke her . No matter how tough she was I kept on and on making my way into her innocence. So is Jane. I mean ..if we look into this man , without being picky . She was happily married until I came along . She was a good woman, mother and a wife . I - I ruined that ! I'm the cause of what they have all become ! I am the author of their miserable life. All of them

Odirle: ...

Breeze: (wiped tear) I turned my brothers into murders . I broke my wife into a cheat . I triggered my wifes mental illness. I flipped Jane into someone who's obsessed with me . I killed my parents. Now tell me Odirle. Does that sound noble to you ?

Odirle: (swallowed) ...

Breeze: Yeah ..I thought as much . I'm broken
Odirle. I'm so Broken !

Odirle: No man stop that . You cant keep -

Breeze: What ? Blaming myself? Hell yeah I blame

myself. All this people I love are in this because of me . I'm scared to be alone in this . I'm scared to be broken alone so i break everyone around me ! And i know you realized it course your the one that's always there for me no matter what i did . Dont tell me you didn't.

Odirile: Why does it matter if i did or didn't? All that matters is what your going to do about this. Those people you claim to love and broke still love you .

Breeze: Then why do they all end up leaving me . Jack is going to leave me for good and hate me to the last when he finds out about that baby . Hes the only one I'm left with and when he tried to make mend between us , I- .. I tore us again because of wanting someone to blame for our parents death though I was the course of it . I am my worst nightmare. (Sniffed) Now I'm scared I'll even break my own kids . All three of them will be a part of my sworn life . And already I see Kagiso is dragged into it and theres nothing I can do to fix it . (Tear flowed)
And you - my friend

Odirile: (looked at him)

Breeze: Your the next chapter in the book of THE CURSED AIR . Maybe your the Chosen One in my book , your the one to break me further . I have a feeling that , your the next target of my misery. Its already started the day at court . And after that ,blood will never seas to flow .

He bit his lip wiping his tear and walked to the house as Odirile sat in there with his heart shattered and pounding at the same time . He wiped a tear that flowed before starting the engine and drove off .

Inside .

Kagiso heard the door open and got off the bed walking downstairs. He stopped at the stairs looking at Breeze leaning on the door silently crying when he threw his jacket on the table . He swallowed before walking over not knowing what to do although seeing him like this hurt . He put his hand on his shoulder when Breeze stopped crying and turned looking at him . The first boy his heart

loved unconditionally on first site . His boy . The one he loved like a son . Kagiso looked at him before pulling him and they hugged tightly never wanting to let go of one another .

Kagiso: Whatever it is - it'll pass in time . I know you'll make it through.

Breeze: (teary) You have to distance yourself from me . I'm gonna break you .

Kagiso: You cant break what's already broken .I'm here to stay . I wont abandon you just because your going through a lot . I understand that you dont like people looking after you but I'm going nowhere . You've been there for me when no one else was . And now - I will be here for you . Though you chose to leave me , I'll always be here for you - Dad .

A tear escaped his eyes and Kagiso felt it when they hugged even tight .

Meanwhile...Gail hid behind the wall upstairs

looking at them when a tear ran down her cheek .
That was sweet . She swallowed before walking
over without them noticing and hugged them
joining in .

Gail: So will I.

At Rose's house.

Around 9h00

Mxolisi helped her into her zip her dress before
standing before her smiling . She was so beautiful
and now he seemed to have been slowly and slowly
falling for her . He sighed and held her shoulders.

Mxolisi: You look beautiful.

Rose : (smiling) Thank you . Are you coming along
with us .

Mxolisi: Uhm ..I wish I could but I have a lot of things to take care of . I'm sure your cousin will never harm you or let any harm to you. He sounded responsible.

Rose : He is . But I just wish you would be there , for me .

Mxolisi: (smiling) I see you dont want me away from you , what's up ? You good ?

Rose : yeah ..I'm fine. J ust that I feel safe when I'm with you this days .

Mxolisi: (smiling) ohk ..

Rose: (smiling) ohk?

Mxolisi: Yeah... I'll come along .

Outside.. Gail drove through the gate when she frowned looking at the familiar car and it number plate . She looked at the house but it was different besides the car . Meanwhile Kagiso's heart pounded hard when he sighed looking around. This people are filthy rich . So many cars and such a huge

house for them only .

Gail : Hold on ... Are you sure this is the right place ?

Kagiso: I'm not , course I've never been here before.
Are you sure you put in the correct address ?

Gail : Yeah ... I am .

Kagiso: Are you sure your GPS is working just fine ?

Gail : Yeah ..

Kagiso: Then what is it ?

Gail: Nothing ..just that ..I've seen this car before.

Kagiso: yeah.. I bet you did . He's Rose's husband
now . Kinda freaks me out when I think of it .

Gail: Wait...Mxolisi?

Kagiso: Yep .. hey let's get out . Its rude to stay in
the car gossiping like this in someone's yard .

Gail's heart raced as they both stepped out and
Kagiso looked at her as she looked around . He

walked over and pulled her hand looking at her .

Kagiso: Are you sure your ohk ?

Gail : yeah ..(swallowed) I'm fine . I'm fine .

They walked towards the door and rang the bell stepping back a little . Gail bit his lip anxiously when Kagiso looked at her being uneasy. The door opened and Abigail's eyes widened as her jaws dropped looking at him . Meanwhile Mxolisi stared at Abigail as his heart skipped. She looked beautiful in a dress and had gained a little but of weight. She was even glowing and very eye catching. Realizing the awkwardness , Kagiso cleared his throat and Mxolisi turned his attention to him avoiding Abigail .

Kagiso: Hii .. you must be Mxolisi.

Mxolisi: and you must be the favorite cousin.
Please ..come in .

He stepped aside opening the door wide and they walked in as Gail fiddled to Kagiso holding his hand. Mxolisi noticed it when he smirked and led them to the dining room.

Kagiso: Is she here ?

Mxolisi: She's upstairs. Second door on the left. You can go check her.

Kagiso stood up and rushed through the stairs when the awkwardness filled the room. Mxolisi rubbed his hands together before standing and poured her a glass of wine and poured himself whiskey then gave her.

Gail : Thank you .

Mxolisi: You look beautiful by the way .

Gail: Mxolisi please ... dont .

Mxolisi: what ? I'm just complimenting you . Unless

I still have an effect on you and somehow you dont want to raise that electricity inside .

Gail looked at him before as he sat down opposite her .

Mxolisi: Dont worry. I'm married now . I have a wife . And I'll respect your space .

Gail: Did you plan this ? To hurt me through my niece.

Mxolisi: Woooo ...! Noo no no ! That's a bit harsh . I'd never hurt you Gail, you know that . Besides your the one that hurt me . You chose another man in my presence and belittled me before him . Do you know how much of a burden pain you placed over me ?

Gail : I am married. You knew I'd always chose him over you despite everything he did . Hes my husband and it'll always come around to him .

Mxolisi : But stepping on my dignity like that infront him ..! Was that your way to earn his trust and love

for you ? Making me feel less important and -

Gail : I'm sorry! Ohk ? I'm sorry. It wasn't my intention to hurt you like that .

Mxolisi: Well you did . Actually you used me Abigail. You used me to feed your anger and sexual hunger along with revenge. You led me on just so you can hurt him without considering how it'll make me feel . You cared less of my feelings just so you can fill the gap missing in you .

Gail: I didn't use you Mxolisi ! Trust me I didn't. What we had was real . You know that . But at the end of the day we all have our part to play and there's always the one that wins and he did !

Mxolisi: So if you loved me , why didn't you tell me ?

Gail :(teary) Because the feelings I had for you were nothing compared to what I have for him . Years of love and bonding can never be broken by a simple one good night stand .

Mxolisi: Wow ! So you did enjoy yourself yet you made me a fool in front of him! How could you be so heartless ?

Gail : (teary) I'm sorry ! I dont know how long its going to take for you to forgive me but I am so so sorry . I am sorry .

Mxolisi : I loved you Abigail. And even now I do . But you hurt me more than I could have ever imagined. You broke my self esteem and here you are trying to repair it with meaningless apologies. Maybe it was for the best .

He stood up and went to the kitchen where he poured himself a glass of cold water when she quickly stood up in tears and followed him .

Gail: Dont be acting all victim in this when you not !

Mxolisi: Am I not ? Please babe ...elaborate me on that ? Who is the victim in all this fun party of ours ?

Gail : Only one person is the victim here . Sagi is . And now she's away , and we have no idea where she is . She left with a heavy heart .

Mxolisi: (swallowed) Away ?

Gail: Yeah ..and I cant seem to reach her since she wanted some space . That woman is the victim in all of this . Not me ,not you and absolutely not Breeze. Sagi is . The one you left to die on the ground like a coward running away .

Mxolisi: I didn't leave her to die. After what your husband plus your sister wife did to me , I was in pain and the bruises had to be taken care off .

Gail: Pathetic ! Wack excuse from a high standard lawyer like you . I guess I expected a lot from you .

Mxolisi : So did I.

They both looked at one another when Gail turned heading out and he filled another glass galping it . So she didn't know what was happening in her absence. But it was not in his place to say , he had to keep his clients information to himself.

Earlier .. Kagiso rubbed his sweaty hands on his jean before holding the handle and slowly opened

the door. His heart pounded as it broke looking at her sitting on the bed with a stick in her hands humming a song .

She felt someone's presence when she stopped humming and stood up with a smile .

Rose : ke mang ?

Kagiso: (smiling) oh well ..you got a bad way of saying "Hii" . But anyway Hii to you too Rosy.

You know how butterflies like to just pop into our stomachs. Rose's face brightened when a tear of joy escaped her eye and he walked over hugging her tight and so did she . It all turned emotional when tears blurred both of them still hugging .

Kagiso: I'm so sorry you going through this . I'm gonna help you fix it .

Rose : I'm sorry too to drag you into my life like this only to play doctor .

Kagiso: Well if that's what I am to you , then I'm happy to help .

Rose: No ..not like that .. not that you are the super guy in my life , only needed when I'm in pain . What I'm saying is I feel like your there for me and offer a lot to me that I never had and I have nothing to offer back. I feel like the worst person . A burden to you .

Kagiso : Then you're my burden and im happy to carry you when ever you need me . We're going to find out what is happening to you today, I promise .

Rose: Do you know any traditional doctor?

Kagiso: No .. but I know someone who might . She's also into tradition and so much believes and proud of her culture .

Rose : She sounds like an old person .

Kagiso: she is and that's why we are heading to her to find the good doctor for you. You said the doctors in the hospital found nothing right ?

Rose: Yeah ..

Kagiso: Then I'm pretty sure this one can tell us

what's behind your sudden blindness. Let's pray he does course I need you to see something.

Rose: (smiling) What is it ?

Kagiso: (smiling) Nothing . Come on , we should get going.

Rose: (smiling) I'm not going anywhere until you tell me what it is ?

Kagiso: I doubt not .

Rose:(smiling) see if I would.

Kagiso: (smiling) do you know how tiny you are ? I can easily pick you and put you on my shoulder and you wouldn't escape .

She kept on smiling not moving when he scoffed with a smile and picked her jacket along with her head wrap. He held them with one hand before scooping her with the other putting her on his shoulder as she laughed like a little girl in a store of candies while they headed downstairs.

Meanwhile..Mxolisi frowned listening to an unfamiliar laughter when he walked out of the kitchen and saw Rose on Kagiso's shoulder laughing. Ohk this was weird. She can laugh . His eyes narrowed looking at them pass by him and went out as she kept on laughing. Gail stood up from the couch and followed them and he picked his jacket following.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:52] Lynne : Chapter 66

At the Traditional healer.

Gail sat in the car listening to soft music when tears started rolling. She thought she was over him but seeing him right now, brought back all the memories. He was right. She did use him and now when she had a chance to make that right, she kept tossing the tables. She did hurt him. She also thought that the gateway trip was going to help but it didn't. Maybe she had to take responsibility for her own actions and fix this.

Inside a hut ...the healer spilled his bones making sound as he separated them. Rose's heart pounded when she reached for both their hands and they both turned looking at her squeezing her hands. They looked at one another before back at the healer as she relaxed feeling safer now.

Healer : The girl is surrounded . She is pulled into both your family and a girl's side . Your ancestors don't want her so they are punishing her for she will bring darkness to you . IYOOH! So does her ancestors .

Mxolisi: Myn ? But ..

Healer : The girl carries a lot of darkness . The union between the two of you was not approved by the ancestors so their holding on to her as punishment. But I see a girl , she's crying. She's crying over you. She is crying. Iyyooh!

Rose : Nakedi ?

Healer: mmmhh ... she stands by a an animal. It's meant to protect you but it can't becouse your ...mmhh o tlametswe ngwana'ka. The girl is crying and not in peace. She won't rest in peace until your safe . Iyooohh!! She is crying.

All three of them their hearts pounded looking at the healer clapping hands . Rose's eyes welled up when her body loosened and she melted on Kagiso crying.

Mxolisi rubbed his face trying to understand why . I mean she was perfect. He looked at Rose laying on Kagiso crying and bit his lip , it hurt seeing her leaning on another guy like that crying. The healer looked at them and they looked at her.

Mxolisi: So ..we have to separate? Like ..take different paths ?

Healer: that's the only way to help her . You will have to announce the separation to them and your entire family . Ask for forgiveness for bringing this upon your family with a goat's blood to the ancestors. They will release her by midnight and I'll have to take her to the river to cleanse her . From there her ancestors will welcome her again . This time she'll have to unite with her guardian .

She turned looking at Kagiso when he cleared his throat avoiding her eyes and hugged Rose tightly. Mxolisi looked at them and sighed without an idea who the guardian is . He thought he had found her ,

but now she also has to leave . He rubbed his eyes when Kagiso noticed him and sighed. He knew the pain of loosing Rose to another guy . She was a jewel this one , but his to care .

At Bonolo's house.

Odirile parked a meter away from her house and stepped put leaning on the door looking at her house . He took out his phone and dialed her and she picked up after four rings .

Odirile: Babe .

Bonolo: (blushing) Hii . How are you ?

Odirile: I'm not good . You ?

Bonolo: Now that you said your not good , then so am I. What's up ?

Odirile: Why dont you come and find out . I'm outside

Bonolo: Outside where ? My place .

Odirile: Yep .

Bonolo : (peaking through the window) Odirile how did you - OMG ! .

She hang up and wore her shoes running out .

Meanwhile Odirile smiled looking at her rushing out the door to the gate . She stopped at the gate to be sure before running over and he met her halfway picked her . The feeling of having her in his arms was something else . This is what he's been looking for .

Meanwhile Veronica picked the last rubbish and put them in a bucket before wiping the sweat off her face . She picked the bucket heading to the side of the street to dispose it when she quickly noticed Bonolo with another man kissing . She stopped holding her waist and shook her head carrying on with what helped her keep her mind off things like this . She disposed the rubbish and walked back to

her yard , this was non of her business anyway.

Bonolo turned around when she saw her heading into her yard and her heart skipped wondering if she saw her . She pulled Odirile and they got in the car and she sighed .

Odirile: Are you ohk ?

Bonolo : Yeah .. I'm fine . How did you find me anyway?

Odirile: Do I really need to explain why and how I make my plans to see my girl ?

Bonolo: (blushing) yeah .. I feel like your stalking me now .

Odirile: is that a problem ?

Bonolo: A very huge one .

He looked at her and she blushed looking around the car . She picked a plastic from the back and

opened it

Bonolo: Are this mine ?

Odirile: Yeah .. can I ask you something ? It is out of line though.

Bonolo: Ohk.. what's up ?

Odirile: Where is your boyfriend? Does he leave anywhere nearby?

Bonolo: (sighed) I thought we agreed that when I'm with you we leave him out . This is just going to ruin our moment .

Odirile: sorry but I have to ask . I mean we are gambling with ones feelings here. Like you said , hes quite and doesn't like expressing his feelings. What if he does one day when he finds us together and goes all psycho on us ? You do realize your the one that's gonna get hurt the most right ? And I dont want that .

Bonolo: He's not like that . Hes sweet and gentle. He wouldn't even harm a fly . Besides..I haven't

seen him in like four days .

Odirile: fine , no need to get all worked up . I'm just asking course I know how much it hurts seeing the girl you love with another guy . Asking from experience.

Bonolo: Dont worry. He is not a violent guy .

Odirile: Ohk ..but one day you'll have to tell him - or me . You cant have us both and I cant keep sharing you with another guy .

She looked at him and sighed looking out the window . He was right in a way . She cant keep mixing them like this . Not only is not right , but it's also unhealthy course she has sex with both of them . She sighed looking at him .

Odirile: J ust think about it . I hate sharing . Especially when it comes to you .

Bonolo: Ohk ..

Odirile: So ... would you like to join me to check on

my friend? He's been down since the day at court .

Bonolo : I can imagine the pain he's going through right now . Plus she is pregnant. That woman seemed so sweet the day I met her . She was all smiling and she didn't deserve what turned out .

Odirile: The results of a cheating partner. But I'm glad my boy is taking responsibility for his actions. He's starting to realise how his actions affect the ones around him . So as a friend, I want to always be there by his side and walk with him through the difficult time since he refuses to let anyone close to him .

Bonolo : You're so sweet . You sound like a brother other than a friend. I wish I had that . Someone to confide in .

Odirile: Oh come on babe . I'm here . You can confide in me . So are you coming?

Bonolo : Who will be there ?

Odirile: His wife , Abigail. I'm not sure if he's son will be there .

Bonolo: (cleared throat) oh uhm .. I forgot...my mom said well be having guest's tonight. I really wish I could be there to support but ..I cant .

Odirile: Oh ..I understand. Be with your mom and I'll be with Breeze.

Bonolo: I love you .

Odirile : I love you too .

At the Lyons Mansion.

Jane sat on the couch with the massaging lady massaging her swollen feet . She smiled relaxing as another maid brought her juice and she picked it drinking. Now this was a life . She picked her phone and went to the contacts looking at Rose's number . She sighed dialing it but it didn't go through . This was getting to her. Her own child ignoring her like this .

She sighed and dialed someone she never thought she'll call .

Jane : Hello .

Jacob : Jane . How are you ?

Jane: I'm fine . You ?

Jacob : I'm also good . To what do I owe the pleasure?

Jane:I'm looking for my daughter . I can't seem to reach her since the day she got married. At first I thought she was angry with us but now I fear that's not the case . Have you somehow been in contact with them ?

Jacob : I think both you and I have something in common here . Both our children ignore us , though mine it's been like that ever since . No ...I haven't talked to him since the wedding either . Me and Donald never had a father and son connection unlike Lefa. Donald enjoys his own space and making his own decisions without me by his side . I guess they had big plans of their own if their ignoring us like this

Jane: And what big plans are those that are beyond family?! I blame you for my child negligence towards me .

Jacob: heii ! Watch it when talking to me . I'm not your husband. Dont let those ridiculous hormones lead you towards me . Pregnancy doesn't start with you . What I did was marry our children and save them from the burden of heartbreak. Her ghosting you has nothing to do with that . If she is , then the question you should be asking is "why" and "what you did " . Stop pointing your filthy fingers towards us just because you cant deal with your own problems ! Know your limits !

He cut the call and she frowned looking at it before gulping the juice. Her phone recieved a notification and he opened it looking at the address.

Jane: At least your useful you piece of shit . (To the lady) hey ..look I gatta go . Let me send the money into your account. Thank you so much by the way .

Lady : Ohk .

At Rose's house .

Later..

Mxolisi parked the car and they all remained inside as all emotions flew around . Kagiso has been staring outside with his hand holding Rose as she closed her eyes . Meanwhile Mxolisi held on tight to the wheel not knowing how to move as Gail also stared outside not knowing what to do . Mxolisi sighed and let go looking at Gail .

Mxolisi: Y'all good ?

All :

Mxolisi: ohk ...

He opened the door stepping out when a car drove into the yard and parked behind them . Gail looked

at the side mirror and frowned looking at Jane stepping out . She quickly got out and slammed the door waking Rose and Kagiso frowned .

Rose : Is everything ohk ?

Kagiso : Yeah just that they ...have to sort out something. Do you want to listen to music ?

Rose : So you can deaf me not to hear what going on , no !

Kagiso: Nothing is going on Rosy . I assure you on that .

Rose : Ohk ..

He leaned over and turned the key before switching on the music and turned the volume up . The way Gail got of this car clearly it wasn't going to go well plus he didn't want her to hear any part of Jane since she said she doesn't want them . Unless she changed her mind . He pulled her over and made her lay on his chest running his fingers in her hair ,

softly rubbing her sculp and she relaxed .

Gail : O batla eng J ane ?

J ane : last time I checked this was my child house and i should be asking you that . Wena where is my baby?

Mxolisi: Hii ..right now Rose is-

J ane : Kare where is my child o tlogele go mpoella ka di right now. What did you do to her? Did you feed her? What nonsense did you say to her you ungrateful son of a bitch?!

Mxolisi: Hoo ..no no woman . Now your taking it to far .

Gail: And last time I checked , you are the hoe here ? The one that leaves her panties in other people husbands pants ! Aren't you even ashamed to flip that to another woman who's loyal ?

J ane: True what they say , one can only see one's mistakes other than hers . What about you ? Didn't you cheat on Breeze? Leaving him to go ride

another dick ? Now that you had enough you want jump back into the happily married life ? No darling . You and I are the same , just different creation. You see this , this is a result of unprotected love . A mini Breeze is on his way . If Breeze so wanted it to end he would have forced me to abort . But becouse he didn't and enjoyed it so bad , he did not . Did he mention not only did he fuck me once , but countless times ? How stupid are you ? Not noticing the dif-

Gail pulled her by her hair before she can finish her sentence and Mxolisi gasped trying to pull her back ,but she held on tight . He let go of her waist and tried to open her fist from J ane's hair until he managed. He pulled Gail by her waist and she released one more kick kicking her on her shoulder .

Gail : I'll kill you J ane ! I'm going to kill you !

J ane: (evil laughter) That's if your ready to join your sister wife in pris on bitch !

Gail : (frown) What ?

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:52] Lynne : Chapter 67

At Rose's

Abigail: What ?

Jane : (smiling) Oops! How irresponsible of you . So much for someone that cares about her own family . You didn't even notice the red flags hanging all around you . (Laughs) Oh you hypocrite little bitch !

Abigail's body got weak as her head rang with questions.

Abigail: What do you mean Sagi is in prison? She is away !

Jane: Oh poor little Abigail. You lived with a person for over 15 years yet you aren't actually aware of their absence motive . How of an absent brain do you carry around in that cute little head of yours ? Truth be told - I feel sorry for you right now . You surrounded by liars and manipulators.

Abigail: (teary) your lying?

Jane: (sigh) Am I? Why dont you ask your lawyer side nigga here ? He was the one on the case . Isn't son in law? And yeah ..i know about your little secret.

Abigail released herself from him when he bit his lip rubbing his face avoiding her eyes . Abigail scoffed looking at him as tears ran down her cheek.

Abigail: Is this true ? Mxolisi?

Mxolisi: Abigail..

Abigail: (shouted) Dont Abigail me and tell me this isn't true !

Mxolisi: I'm not allowed to -

Before he could finish his sentence a hot slap landed on his cheek and when he turned , he faced a very pissed Abigail. Jane on the other hand smiled looking at this unfold , joy .

Abigail: (crying) Why couldn't you just tell me ? Is this a way of you trying to make me pay for the pain I put you through? With Sagi ? (To Jane) What has she done ?

Jane: She a psychopath darling? She did what every mental dis ordered pers on will do when they find out about their husbands child outside the marriage. She assaulted a pregnant women.

Abigail: Breeze would have told me .

Jane : But he didn't. That it's self should tell you how little he cares about the both of you . He's lost interest in all of this pathetic marriage of yours . Friendly advice- leave . You cant keep fixing this when one part of it its already broken . Leave hunny .

She gave a smile and walked towards the car and opened the door looking at Rose laying her head on Kagiso's chest .

Jane : Wena ! ? Tswa mo koloing ! Tswaa!

Rose's heart skipped when she raised her head and Kagiso stared at Jane not knowing what to say to her. Her valga towards his mother was the only thing that ran in his head at this point. He bit his lip looking at Rose and squeezed her hand before getting out of the car.

Jane: Dont let me for once catch you at the side of my daughter. Or I'll make you wish you were never born to be a part of this family.

Rose : Mom ? What do you want here ?

Jane looked at her as she stared another way not looking at her.

Jane : Baby I want us to talk. I miss you. You've been ignoring me. For months. You dont answer your phone when I call and you dont even return my

calls

Rose : Well shouldn't that give you the answer to the question why I'm ignoring you ? I dont want you in my life mom ! I hate you with every little bit as much as dad .

Jane : Rose I had no say in this ! I'm sorry . I know I was wrong to go along with it instead of stopping it .

Rose : You knew but you didn't.

Jane: And I'll spend the rest of my life apologizing and making up for that . Rosella your my child . I'm your mother and I love you. I wouldn't wish any bad to come upon you and trust me i regret letting the wedding take place .

Rose : Well the bad has already come upon me mother . I'm blind . All because of you and dad .

Jane: (shocked) Wait what ?

Rose: Oh please mother ..spare me the mother to daughter love . You dont care about me . Stop acting shocked and let me have my space with the only person you just chased out like a dog ,who by

the way is the one of those that care about me . And to take a page from your book " Dont let me for once hear you talk to him like that . Or you'll wish you have never gave birth to me to be part of your family tree "

Jane's heart cracked as it sank in pain looking at her . Tears rolled down her cheeks when she waved her hand on her angry face to be sure and yeah she didn't sho any reaction. She quickly took out her phone and turned on the touch and played it on her eyes and still . Words stuck into her mouth when she tried tucking her hair behind her ear but Rose pushed it off .

Rose : if you love me like you say , you'll leave me alone.

Jane: (crying) Rose dont push me away ! I love you ! I'm your mother .

Rose: You lost that title the day you let them marry me . Leave.

Jane looked at her one more before touching her hands but she pushed it off . She looked at her before looking at Kagiso.

Jane : (to Rose) I love you . I will always do .

She rubbed her tears before walking to her car and drove off . Meanwhile Kagiso stood at the door and watched Rose cry . As someone who grew up without a father he knew the pain and emptiness . And by looking at her , she wouldn't survive without the both of them . She was still angry. He licked his lips before getting inside and hugged her .

Outside ..Abigail looked at Mxolisi in tears when he tried to come near her but she stopped him and walked towards the car . She looked at Kagiso and Rose . This reminded her on how Breeze used to comfort her like this when she was hurt . When their

love was still strong and pure without secrets. She wiped her tears and sighed .

Abigail : I got to go somewhere. Actually home .
Are you coming or I should come get you later on ?

Mxolisi: (walking over) Let him stay with her . I'm going home too to talk this through with my family. Please man , stay with her .

Kagiso: Ohk ..

He sighed before handing Kagiso the house keys and they stepped out heading to the house . Mxolisi shut the door and walked to the driver's side getting in and Abigail went to her's getting then they drove out at the same time.

At Breezes.

With high speed- Abigail drove into the yard and

stopped and inch away from a flower pot . She quickly got out and rushed inside slamming the door behind jogging up the stairs to the bedroom.

She stopped at the door looking at Breeze laying on he bed wide awake looking drained . Anger brewed inside of her and she rushed over punching his back countless times when he flinched in pain pulling a pillow to his head . She pulled in off and slapped his neck when he hid it getting up .

Abigail: (angry) Where is Sagi ? Away ?!

Breeze:

Abigail: Care to explain where exactly is that and how she got there ?

Breeze: ...

She landed a hot slap from the back of her hand when he bit his tongue and blood filled his mouth. He tried standing to go wash off but she pushed him back and he looked at her before swallowing.

Abigail: (crying) Breeze I know I fucked up . Big time . And trust me I'm trying to fix this . I know there is no excuse to make up for what I did but I'm trying . Why do you lock me out like this ? I too am part of this family and I care about Sagi too .

Breeze: You think I dont know that ? I too did something I cant take back and I can't make up for it . So please...spare me the apologies I'm not in the mood to say "I forgive you " when it's clear enough you wont forgive me either.

Abigail: Breeze i forgave you the moment you confessed! What would be the use for me to keep holding you on to that ? How will that benefit me ?

Breeze: You forgave me ? Really? Are you telling me when that baby is born you'll love him as your own without taking him as a reminder ? Without a little bit of hatred towards him when you couldn't love me enough to not use your body to hurt me back ? Really ?

Abigail: ...

Breeze: Exactly... your not capable of forgiveness
Abigail. You know that . This child will be born to
this family and will always be with me reminding
you the pain and agony I put you through. And we
both know how you handle pain . Pain with pain.

Abigail: Fine ..I agree . I haven't forgiven you but
me being here after everything should mean much
to you Breeze. This should show you how much I
love you and willing to take that very same pain just
to wake up by your side course my heart cant let
anyone else in but you .Now I made a vow . To stick
with you throught out the worst . For better or worse
. In sickness and in health . And I meant that from
the bottom of my heart Breeze. I love you . And if
loving you means taking all the pain, then I will .
What's yours is mine and what's mine is yours . I'll
accept the child as my own , though I wish it could
have been from someone different at least not her
.(crying)

Breeze: (sighed) I didn't tell you because she said I
shouldn't. I wanted too but I didn't. And now I see
why she said I shouldn't , she was right . It tears

you apart . I know you deserved to know and I dont have an excuse for that , I'm sorry . She was trying to protect you fro-

Abigail: Dont give me that ! I'm tired of you two treating me like an egg . I can take whatever you throw at me . Why is she in prison ? She only responds when provoked. What happened?

Breeze: J ane happened. She came in here and provoked her . One thing led to another and she smashed her head twice or so and then with the car window before kicking her . She's at a mental pris on .

Abigail: But she invaded her home ! She's pregnant. Didn't you guys-

Breeze: We did . Pulled every card including her health card , but still . They gave her 9 months inside.

Her knees got weak when she landed on the floor crying as Breeze sat on the bed with blurry eyes .

Abigail: She deserves better (crying)

Breeze: I know . And to what she said to me , I dont think I'll be getting her back . She's gone , for good .

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:52] Lynne : Chapter 68

At Mxolisi's home.

The rest of the family elders sat around in the dining room with their words stuck into their mouth. Jacob looked around and found every uncles eyes on him when he looked down shamefully not knowing what to say . Meanwhile Mxolisi rubbed his hands with his face down with an aching heart .

Uncle 1 : Jacob .. Bolela monna . O tsere kae Rose ?

Jacob: It was an arranged marriage uncle . Her family is the one at fault . They should have done all the necessary precautions before handing her to us . They should have performed all the rituals and cleansed her .

Uncle 1: Why are you pointing fingers at Rose's

family when you too took part in all of this arranged marriage. You rushed the whole process just to keep your son on the leash without consulting us for help and advice. Now look at what you put us through.

Uncle 2: What if worse happened before they got alarmed and went to look for help? What if the girl brought death upon our family? To your son?

Jacob: Well he's not dead Joseph. We should be grateful.

Steven: Yeah..I also agree with Jacob and also disagree. We all are at fault here. Why are you putting all the blame on him. We also as the elders of the family were wrong. We should have asked the family and sat down before agreeing for the wedding to take place. So instead of fighting why dont we find a way forward? As a family course were in this together.

Uncle 4: I agree. So what did the sangoma say son about moving forward?

Mxolisi: She said we need to ask for forgiveness

with a goat and they'll release her . After that when it strikes midnight she'll be cleansed at the river . That way she'll get her eyesight back and she'll have to unite with her guardian. (swallowed)

Staven : That's simple. I thought maybe they'd want more but that's even generous. We can do so tomorrow, right .

Joseph: Yeah ..the sooner the better.

The rest of the family agreed along when Mxolisi stood up feeling suffocated and walked out . Meanwhile, Lefa sat on the kitchen counter with his wife between his legs laughing when he saw his little brother rushing out .

Lefa : Excuse me babe . Let me go check on him .

Her: Sure . I'll make them tea .

Lefa: Cool .

He got off the counter and jogged out looking for Mxolisi but he wasn't in the front . He sighed looking around then he went to check behind the house and saw him holding on to the tree with his head down silently crying. He walked over and stood next to him putting his hand on his shoulder .

Lefa : its gonna be alright man . I'm sorry .

Mxolisi: (sobbed) I've fallen for her .

Lefa: I know ..

Mxolisi : But why ? Why does every girl that I fall inlove with has to always leave me for another guy ? How less of a man am I? What's wrong with me ?

Lefa : There is nothing wrong with you Donald . Why would you think theres anything wrong with you ? Your a man enough. Stop looking down on yourself just because a chick always leaves you . Your one of a kind man . They're lucky they got an opportunity to be with someone like you . Someone who loves them dearly.

Mxolisi: But love sometimes its not enough right ? I dont know what to do anymore. My relationships fail and now my marriage failed , within months . How come I always end up broken ?

Lefa : Becouse you my brother , let people become your everything. That's why you end up hurt . Let the ceremony take place , then go tell her how much you love her . Let it all out on her and see if she feels the same way . Dont be judgy yet towards her feelings for you . She could be into you too .

Mxolisi: Still.. what's the point of loving someone who has to be with someone . Why me ? What have I done or who have I wronged ? I was supposed to be happy with her ,and I am . I'm very much happy when I'm with Rose . We were supposed to have a happily ever after . But now I understand that theres no such a thing as a happily ever after.

Lefa: Hey ... dont beat yourself so hard . Come on ..let's go talk inside .

He looked at his brother and shook his head no but

Lefa pulled him and they walked inside.

At Breezes house.

Abigail sat on the edge of the looking at Breeze laying down facing up with his eyes wide open . She licked her lips and fiddled with her fingers .

Abigail: I have no problem with your child Breeze. I understand that baby was a mistake. We-

Breeze: You understand shit Abigail. No one is a mistake. Including my child .

Abigail: So you made a baby with her on perpose ?

Breeze: What I'm saying is i knew what I was doing when I slept with her . I knew what the results will be and the baby happened to be that result. So never ever call my child a mistake course hes not .

Abigail: You sound proud.

Breeze: I'm not proud, I'm ashamed . But my baby

is - not a loophole.

Tears blurred her site when she faced another direction and bit her nails . Tears silently rolled down her cheeks when she bit her lip trying not to make a sound.

Abigail: I just wish it could have been me . Mine .
Our baby !

Breeze: I know . And I'm really sorry .

Abigail:(shouted) But you dont sound sorry
Breeze !!!

Breeze: What do you want me to say ? What do you want me to do ? Tell me . Course what ever it is , I'll do it if it makes you forgive me .

Abigail: How will I forgive you when everytime I'll have a constant reminder of what you did ?

Breeze : (low) See .. you'll never see my child for who he is . All you'll ever see is a reminder and someone to blame right ? Well go ahead Gail , hate

me , hate my child . I don't know for how long your gonna keep up with it , but just know that I love you . And if you want someone to blame for our messed up reunion then you have a perfect husband. Course no matter how much I try , I'll never leave my kid behind . Not my blood . I'm sorry .

He stood up from the bed and checked his phone for any missed calls and found none . He put it back and walked towards the bathroom.

Abigail: I want a child of my own too Breeze.

Breeze stopped on his steps and scoffed turning and looked at her .

Breeze: What ?

Abigail: I want a child too .

Breeze: Abigail your not thinking straight. Your

hurt , and I get that . But you cant just jump into wanting a baby .

Abigail : I can . I want a child and your going to fuck me until your sperm fertilizes me .

Breeze: Abigail your my wife . I dont have to fuck you , i have to make love to you in order for you to conceive .

Abigail: Then make love to me . Please . (Cry)

Her tears always brought pain to his heart . He bit his lip looking at her and sighed rubbing his nose .

Breeze: No .

Abigail: No ? What do you mean " no "? So you'd rather make love to your bitches and not me , your so called wife ! And worse make babies out of our marriage!

Breeze: (rolled eyes) Here we go again .

Abigail: Have you been having sex with her all

along ?

Breeze: What ?

Abigail: Is she satisfying you ? The day I returned I tried to get close to you and you didn't feel me .

Wait is that it ? You dont feel me anymore?

Breeze: Your hurt . And you need to calm down and collect yourself.

Abigail: I've done a lot of collection Breeze. If you dont love me then why the hell are you still with me ? Divorce me ! That way you can have your peace with your sugar mama !

Breeze: I'm not going to do that !

Abigail: Why the hell not ! So you can hurt me further ! You dont wanna touch me , you hardly look at me , you dont kiss me , you dont want to make love to me , you dont fuck me , you keep secrets from me , least even talking to me , what am I still doing here ! ?

Breeze: Your my wife and I love you .

Abigail: No you dont . You love J ane more . You

say you love me and Sagi but she's pregnant in Jail rotting and your not doing a damn thing !, meanwhile your baby mama sways her ass right , left and center . She's pregnant for God's sake .

Breeze: (teary) My hands are tied Abigail. And for your information, I love Sagi .

Abigail: Wow ! Just wow Breeze ! You dont love anyone but your self. You dont love her , course if you did , you'd break every rule just so you can see her . Love doesn't have rules and skips boundries . No matter what she said , you'd go high and low until you reach out to her . Your love is no capable to go against all odds isn't?

Breeze swallowed looking at her not knowing what to say . She stood up from the bed and walked towards the door .

Abigail: I've had enough Breeze. I'm tired . I've been beaten and broken, I'm afraid I cant keep up even though you still hold my heart in your palms . I'm

sorry but now I have to choose me over anything and anyone.

She wiped her tears and looked at the ring on her finger. She bit her lip as tears rolled down and she took it off putting it on the table looking at him.

Abigail: This is for the best . You'll receive the papers from my lawyer . I love you .

She took one last look before biting her lip and walked out. Meanwhile Breeze's knees got weak and weaker until he couldn't stand and he fell on them . He could literally feel his heart breaking into pieces as tears streamed uncontrollably. It hurt so bad that he ended up screaming just to release the pain . He quickly stood up and ran out . By the time he reached the door he saw her car driving out as the lights disappeared in the darkness .

.

.

.

.

.

.

Another one is coming .

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

[08/02, 13:53] Lynne : Chapter 69 .

Breeze sat on the math with two strong liquors besides him and another one in his hand. He gulped from the bottle when he heard the door open and quickly stood up to check hoping it was Abigail .

He frowned looking at Odirile who smiled at him .

Odirile: Wow this is a surprise. Happy to see me , you even- Is that a ...no Breeze come on man . You had enough of this last night . This shit will make your system disfunction.

He grabbed the bottle from him and disposed it outside before going to throw the bottle in a bin . Breeze scoffed before walking back to the lounge and opened another one drinking just as Odirile walked in . He bit his lip looking at him before sitting down.

Odirile: I only left for hours and already you turned yourself into a liquor tank . Now tell me if you dont need a babysitter again and I'll punch you right in between the eyes .

Breeze: She's leaving me. Might as well just die .

Odirile: Sagi will never leave you man . And stop

talking about dieing. Who'll take care of your kids?
Their mothers ?

Breeze: I meant Abigail. And my kids will be better off without me . I'm pretty sure their mama's will do a very good job raising them . Look at Kagiso's mother . She raised him without a man by her side, so Sagi and Jane can also do the same .

Odirile: And they'll do a very good job . But don't you think they deserve a father? Someone to shield and protect them from the dangers of the world? Dont you think they deserve a father's love ?

Breeze looked at him and galped the liquor as Odirile scoffed.

Odirile: Or maybe your still worried about pending daddy-hood .

Breeze: No ...its not that . Its Abigail. She's leaving me .

Odirile: That's ridiculous. Gail will never leave you

for anything in the world.

Breeze: Well she will . She's divorcing me .

Odirile: (jaws dropped) What ?

Breeze: Yeah ...so unless you want dont want to join me , then please leave or give me a piece of mind .

He looked at him wipe a tear before sighing and went to get a glass . Drink a friends sorrows always did played a part in friends hip.

.

.

THE NEXT DAY

.

.

At Rose's house.

Rose tossed on the bed and finally woke up . This

was the most hurting part . Waking up but not being able to see anything, just complete darkness. She sighed raising her upper body and tried to feel if anyone was in there.

Meanwhile Kagiso sat on the chair with a blanket adoring her as she stood still . He smiled looking at her getting off the bed and walked over searching with her hands touching him .

Rose : Kagiso?

Kagiso: (smiling) mmhh?

Rose : Are you awake ?

Kagiso: Now I am beautiful. How can I help you ? Stop touching or you'll wake my bones up .

Rose :(smiled) What bones ?

Kagiso: your a married woman, dont tell me you have no idea what I'm talking about. Stop doing that ! (laughed)

He quickly got off before she could touch his dick and laughed as she smiled .

Rose : oh ...you meant your dick ?

Kagiso: J eez you dont have to be so s straight with it m but yeah . Your too slow .

Rose : Well ..is it awake ?

Kagiso: kinda ... but I'll be good .

She bit her lip as her heart started racing . The last and the first time she did this she ended up bleeding and unable to walk for 3 to 4 days . She can imagine the pain now .

Meanwhile Kagiso looked at her as she kept quiet with a face expresshe couldn't explain.

Kagiso: Are you ohk ?

Rose: Do you wanna have sex with me ?

Kagiso: What ?

Rose : I want to have sex with you .

Kagiso: (cleared throat) mmmkkgmm what ? Rose your still a married woman .

Rose : Well not for long . We are separating and you'll have to be with me right ?

Kagiso: How did you know I was supposed to be the one to be with you ?

Rose: Put one plus one together and they pointed to you.

Kagiso: Oh ..

Rose : Yeah .. so are we having sex ?

Kagiso looked at her not knowing what to say . He never had anyone talk obvious about sex like this to him . And even though he found it cute he still had to respect her marriage even if its coming to an end .

Kagiso: We will . But not now . After this whole thing , I promise you'll have all the sex you need .

Rose : Promise ? Course I never had sex before. I did but it wasn't sex . Mxolisi just broke my virginity just so he can get the blood stain and pulled out . We never had sex even until now .

Kagiso: So you guys lived in one house lusting over one another and starving but you didn't even think of tapping even if its once?

Rose : Yepp . He's the husband , he was supposed to come home and get it but he didn't want to invade my space . He promised not to touch me or do anything to me without me permitting him to do so .

Kagiso: He sounds like a gentleman. But he overdoes it le yena .

Rose : He's a cool guy though. Keeps his promises and knows how to treat a lady .

Kagiso: so who helped you take a bath , dress and all?

Rose : He did . He dressed me and fed me . He's been there for me and I cant thank him enough. Even when I was on my periods , he never abandoned me . He's been there with me every step of the way going up and down with me trying to find help for me since I got blind . But not once tried to take advantage of me and had sex with me without me giving in to it or touched me inappropriately.

Kagiso looked at her but couldn't help but smile at how she always notices the good in someone and not the bad . He pulled her hand by the hand hugging her before kissing her forehead.

Kagiso: That's why I love you .

She wrapped hers around his waist when the door slid open and Mxolisi's walked in . He sighed looking at them and they broke the hug .

Mxolisi: Morning.

Them : Morning.

Mxolisi: You guys should prepare yourselves. We are leaving in an hour. Dont worry , I'll help her man .

Kagiso looked at him and sighed kissing Rose's forehead again before leaving the room . Meanwhile Mxolisi looked at Rose standing in the middle of the room and he couldn't help but rushed over leaving the door and hugged her when she hugged him back . The hug became tight and emotional when Rose felt a tear drop on her head . She hugged him even tight too before they broke it . He cubed her face as tears burned her eyes .

Mxolisi: Rose I love you . I know I never really said this but over the couple of months I grew to love you as I got to know you and be with you . This might sound ridiculous and selfish for me to say this today when we are being separated but I wanted you to know how much of a place you hold

in my heart . I never felt like this since the last person I've been with until you . Ever since I've met you I wake up knowing I have a purpose to live that is renewed every single morning when the sun rises . And I begin to think about us and not only me . I've been meaning to say these words course they've been haunting me ever since I met you . I love you Rosella Lyon . My words aren't enough to describe what I feel for you. When I'm at work , I get impatient wishing for the time to travel faster just so I can come home to you . And somehow when I'm with you I want it to travel slower . It tried stopping myself from falling for you making presumptions on how you feel about me but the more I avoided my feelings for you , the more they grew . I try to keep you out of my head overworking myself but you keep on popping inside dragging me home . When I get an idea of something or see couples on the streets I keep praying that it could be us . Sometimes I just want to shout at them because I can't tell you about my feelings and I get jealous of them, course I can't have what they have with you . You make me feel the essence of living

every second, minute, and hour as I still have air in my lungs . The little moments i spent with you played a part in my love for you . The little chats and the smiles . I wont trade this feeling I have for you for anything on this planet . I cant stop thinking about you and I wont stop thinking about you and I wont even try to stop thinking about you . I may not be with you in the future , but never for a second think my love for you has blown away or any less . (Crying) I love you Rose . I love you so bad . It hurts that all I'll be left with from now all will be a memory of you sleeping next to me . It hurts me that when I'll close my eyes at night to sleep your face won't be there to sleep too and to wake up too . Hurts course I chose to love you more than i can handle . I love you . It hurts me that I'll have to live loving you like this though I already see you'll get your happiness with someone else and definitely something you'll never have with me . I love you Rosella Lyon. I'll always and forever do .

Rose's tears rolled down uncontrollably whe she

broke down crying. Mxolisi pulled her again hugging her and she wrapped her hands around him hugging him tight not wanting to let go wetting his shirt . He pulled her face looking at her and wiped her tears and couldn't help but lean in and they kissed .

Meanwhile..Kagiso stood against the wall with a racing broken heart and tears in his eyes . He bit his lip and peaked over when he saw them kissing . His heart broke to the last as he watched them pull their shirts off and he picked her putting her on the bed . He swallowed as tears rolled down his cheeks looking at him kissing her with his hands scanning her body . When he was about to pull down her pj pants Kagiso moved away with his ribs protecting dust walking down the stairs as her mouns filled his ears . She screamed as he broke through her second virginity when Kagiso received chest pains . He rubbed his chest unable to walk and breath properly but kept on walking just to get out as fast as he can . He put his hands on his ears trying to

cover it out along with the pain when he missed a step and fell rolling on the stairs until he reached the floor hitting his head and blanked out .

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:53] Lynne : Chapter 70

At Breezes house.

He couldn't sleep last night . And he had to keep up with the pain because Odirile only allowed him to drink one bottle which they shared . He stood up from the couch when he remembered that Kagiso was out last night with Abigail but never came home . He jogged upstairs to his room and knocked getting in and found no one. Could he have gone with her ? He went to get his phone as a fatherly instinct covered him and with a pounding heart dialed Abigail. After a few tries he sat on the stairs and wrote a message.

Breeze: You know, if you're gonna leave me , leave me with something to keep me smiling. And I'm not calling to talk about the divorce, I'm calling because my son didn't come home last night . Where is he ?

30 seconds passed and she replied.

Abigail: Sorry I forgot to tell you last night . He's at Rose's house.

He read the message and sighed as his heart ached to ask her about them . He bit his lip and shut the phone going upstairs to take a shower. After a while he walked jogged down the stairs and found Odirile wide awake drinking coffee standing by the door.

Breeze: Now your being creepy.

Odirile: Where are you going?

Breeze: I'm going to check on my niece and son . I still don't trust that guy . Besides, I need something to keep me busy ,right ?

Odirile: I'm coming along.

Breeze: No !

Odirile: It wasn't a question . Let's get going .

He led the way as Breeze chuckled and followed.

At Rose's house.

About an hour after he fell . Mxolisi grinded deep inside of her with her legs on his shoulders as their mouns filled the room . Both their bodies clapped against one another and he held her tight shooting his generation inside of her before collapsing on top of her . That was epic ! He wiped the sweat of his face and turned looking at Rose who slowly drifted . He smiled and went to prepare her bath then came back to get her . After putting her inside he took a quick shower and when he was done he went out to get dressed. He pulled the sheets off and smiled at how flexy and sweet she was . How did he even miss that deliciousness staying with her in the same house ? He shook his head and put the clean ones on then went out with the dirty ones. As he got out of the room he spotted Kagiso laying on the ground recklessly and frowned walking down the

stairs. He saw a little bit of blood stain on the white carpet where he layed and panicked leaving the sheets getting on his knees checking his pulse. It was faint . He picked his head to check how bad it was when he saw a lot of blood that covered his shirt and his leg facing the other direction.

Mxolisi: (panicking) Kagiso man please . Wake up ..Kagiso.

He heard a car drive through outside and there's only one person he knew who like this loud car's. He bit his lip and put Kagiso's head down looking at the blood that coverd his hands and quickly ran out and yep , it was Breeze.

Meanwhile Breeze and Odirile looked around impressed still sitting in the car and frowned looking at Mxolisi sprinting out with blood on his hands . Both their hearts pounded and they quickly stepped out .

Breeze: I swear if you did something to hurt him ,
I'm gonna kill you this time !

Mxolisi: I didn't do anything, I found him laying on
the floor bleeding with a dislocated leg .

Odirile :Bleeding and dislocated leg . Boy better
start praying .

He swallowed following them inside and watched
them trying to wake him up and finally picked him
taking him to the car . Meanwhile Rose heard
people shouting downstairs in her sleep and woke
up to a stinging pain between her legs . She
balanced herself getting put pf the water and picked
a towel wrapping herself before walking out
touching the wall's to get her way out .

Outside ..Breeze shut the door and looked at Mxolisi
with one hell of a dare look before getting in the car
and Odirile sped out .

Mxolisi swallowed a huge lump and could almost

imagine the pain after this . He walked back inside and saw Rose standing on the blood walking over .

Mxolisi: Hey where are you going?

Rose : I heard voices shouting. Familiar voices actually.

Mxolisi: Oh ..it was nothing. Let's get you ready. We have to go .

Rose : Where is Kagiso ?

Mxolisi: (choked) He ..he went out with his father.

Rose : Uncle Breeze was here ? Why didn't you wake me ?

Mxolisi : They were in a rush .

Rose : Why is your voice shaking? What's going on and why is the carpet wet ?

Mxolisi: I spilled water and as for my voice, I'm scared because this is the last day I spend with you . Are you sure you dont want to call your parents for the ceremony ? It'll be good if they were there .

Rose : My parents care less about me Mxolisi . They got rid of me the second they found out that mom was pregnant. I was just a burden to them and I hate being one . I've been replaced in that household and please dont bring this up .

Mxolisi: But you do realize that the elders might need them for the ceremony to be successful?

Rose : I've got auntie Sagi , Gail and Breeze to play that part in my life .

Mxolisi: But their not your parents . Come on Rose , one way or another you'll have to get over yourself and mend things with them . Your a girl not a boy . You need your mother. Your still a child and you'll need them when you get older and face life challenges.

Rose : I wasn't a kid when you put all your dick inside of me . Stop talking about my parents.

Mxolisi's eyes widened as his jaws dropped looking at her going up the stairs leaving blood footprints on her way. He scoffed to her statement before

following her to help her get dressed.

At the mental prison.

Abigail looked at the man as he pressed the computer and sighed looking at her.

Man : I'm sorry mam . But your not on the visitors list, infact the prisoner put you on those she didn't want them to come visit her .

Abigail: Sagi will never do that . Check again.

Man : I did . I'm sorry i cant let you in .

She looked at the man and sighed walking out to get her stuff walking to the car with a heavy heart . She got into the car and layed back feeling helpless. She took out her phone and dialed her lawyer.

Abigail: Is it done ?

Lady: Yeah ... I will deliver them by the end of today . But Abigail are you sure you want to do this ? You've been married to this guy for over years and he is your first love . Dont you think maybe you should sit down and think this through course this is a huge step your taking? I still think your hurt and your doing this out of pain .

Abigail: Well love almost killed me out of heartbreak and paralyzed me . I've put up with nonsense and it's time I put an end to that Lucia .

Lucia : But you still love him ?

Abigail: My affections dont matter no more . A girl's got to do what a girl is got to do to survive. I'm done with Breeze. And last time I checked , you were my lawyer and not my therapist.

Lucia: Well this lawyer is saying this out of concern and hates to see her clients going through a difficult time only because they didn't take time for themselves and think everything through before taking a big step . It's also a good thing , for you but

... anyway that's you right ? Let me just concentrate on what I'm hired to do .

They cut the call and she sighed looking at the building. This is a way forward for her to heal. If she wanted to find happiness outside then this is it . She shook her head and drove off .

At the hospital.

Jane walked in Jack's ward and found him laying on the bed asleep. They've been sedating while trying to find out what's wrong with him and still nothing . She walked over and sat next to him on the chair and pulled his hand. He seemed peaceful when asleep and she missed that. Just that the feelings she has for his little brother were growing each day and he can't fight them .

Jane: Hey .. I just hope you can hear me . Uhm -

Jack, I know you and I have not been seeing eye to eye since Rose lost her friend. And worse recently. I wanted to let you know that its not your fault . I too am to blame course I did a lot of selfish things that when I'll tell you you'll literally break and file for divorce. I don't know why, but I'm also scared to lose you . I've done a really unforgivable thing Jack, under your nose and- and I think maybe if I let you know what it is you'll- you know what? Let's just leave that for when you've recovered. I need you to fight this Jack. I know we had our differences but I'm saying this out of a wifely concern. You can fight this . Please do this for Rose. You owe her to fight and be strong so you can come home to see her as you wish. (Teary) She needs you . Rosella needs her father .

A tear rolled down followed by the other when she felt him gently squeeze her hand. She raised her head and smiled as another tears followed.

Her phone beeped and she wiped her tears using one hand to check her phone .

At Mxolisi's house.

An hour later ..

Jane parked outside looking at the cars in the yard . Judging from the paragraph they sent her , her presence was not approved by Rose . But she had to be here anyway. As her parent. She sighed stepping out and pulled her jacket wearing it and her head wrap. Lefa met her half way and they walked inside the house and greeted everyone.

Steven: Shall we get started. She who gave life to her is here ,we heard about the father over the phone . Mxolisi go get your wife so we can do this .

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:53] Lynne : Chapter 71

At the Hospital.

Kagiso watched as the doctor checked his heart rate then wrote on the file before checking his eyes . He clenched his jaws as the memory of them taking off their clothes flashed before his eyes . He closed his eyes then opened them looking outside thinking what could be happening at this point.

Doctor : I'll come check on you later .

Kagiso: unfortunately doctor, I don't have until later . I have to be somewhere tonight .

Doctor: Mr Lyon I have to keep you here for fur-

Kagiso: (snapped) I said I don't have time ! . I'm sorry but I have to get out of this place . I can barely even breathe with this walls around me when I spent months in here . It's suffocating.

The doctor looked at him before fixing his glasses and sighed before putting the file back and left .

A tear escaped at the corner of his eye when he quickly wiped it . Clearly love doesn't suit him . He thought maybe she would at least , at least respect him enough with a simple little thing by respecting his presence in her house , but no . This only shows how unwelcome he was . He was invading their privacy.

Kagiso : (chuckles)What did I expect? Hugs and kisses. Mxm .

So this was how this friend of hers liked to see him like . Suffering and coming countless times to the hospital? Only for her. At first he was punished for not taking action. Secondly when he did he was turned down . Thirdly he tried pulling her out of her darkness , but hey , baby girl refused . Fourth, she stepped on his heart like it was nothing but a toy to play with . Worst was waking up in a cemetery. For what ? Maybe it was better if he completed the task he was given and stay out of her life course clearly Nakedi had no intention to let him go not a minute until it's done.

The door slid open and Breeze walked in with Odirile . They stood next to him and both put their hands in the pockets.

Kagiso: What ?

Breeze: What did he do to you ?

Kagiso: who did what to me ?

Breeze: Mxolisi - What did he do ?

Kagiso: Nothing . He did nothing. I fell off the stairs by myself. Missed a step then rolled down until I reached the floor .

Breeze: And where was he ?

Kagiso: Busy .

Breeze: Busy with what exactly? You were their guest. They were supposed to be on a look out . You lost a lot of blood . Seemed like you bled for a long time while he was "busy" . What was he doing?

Kagiso: I don't know. Probably making babies with his wife , I don't care . I want to get out of here and go get this nonsense over and done with.

Breeze: What nonsense?

Kagiso: This whole chosen by a friend shit ! The sooner I get this out of the way the better . I have a soul to nurse . I want nothing to do with what happens after this . Guardian or no guardian. I'm done

Breeze: Thought you loved Rose ?

Kagiso: Well love is overrated .

Breeze: Yeah ..I think I got an idea about that.

Odirile: So wait ... what's the "Chosen by a friend " thingy ? Is it like a paranormal thing ?

Breeze: Something like that . He was chosen to rescue Rose from her luck of light . I guess my niece chopped his heart somehow. What happened in that house for you to want to get this out of the way so bad ?

Kagiso: Even if I tell you, there's nothing you can do about it anyway.

Breeze: Then tell me .

Kagiso: Why ?

Odirile: You said it yourself, "There's nothing he can do about it " he'll just keep his hands to himself , it'll tie his hands. So what is it ?

Kagiso: (sighed) they were doing it in my presence. You know "It" . Input and output .

Both : Ooooww !

Kagiso: Yeah ...ooww .. so soon they'll be process .

Both : Rrrriigghht ..

Odirile : Apple doesn't fall far from it's tree .

Breeze: (agreed) Mmh-mmh . So how do you intend on solving this spider of yours?

Odirile: Simple . Do what he was instructed to do and leave the girl . There are a lot of beautiful , intelligent girls out there . Clearly if she could do that it shows how less she loves him . Actually she doesn't love you ! If she could pretend to care like this then what will happen in the future ? You'll find yourself raising kids that aren't yours while she has a side nigga besides her that keeps planting seeds for you to water and bloom them. J ust be happy that you managed to see another side of her that no one else has ever seen . Be happy you got to see the inner Rose that is lost deep down inside the sweet one your sent to erase before she could appear in her true form . But I don't blame her , it runs in the family.

Breeze scoffed looking at him but he kept a straight face staring at Kagiso. Kagiso looked at them and couldn't stop the laughter until it escaped. Breeze turned looking at him and bit his lip trying not to laugh but eventually busted .

Breeze: You just had to ruin one good speech ,didn't you ?

Odirile: Well my friend, in every speech you have to state facts . And that's a fact .

Breeze: I guess ... and there are a lot of love triangles in this circle of ours. Welcome to the hood my boy. Let me go talk to the doctor.

He walked towards he door and turned looking at Odirile.

Breeze: isn't this the part where you come along ?

Odirile: Hela ! I'm not your bodyguard.

Breeze: Ofcourse , but your my babysitter.

Odirile: (chuckled) yeah ..but now I got a real baby to look out for . Me and my nephew here , have a lot to discuss. So I resign on you . I give up

Breeze: Aren't you now scared I'm gonna do anything stupid?

Odirile: Are you going to do anything stupid ?

Breeze: Probably. But no .

Odirile: Then go get the bloody doctor ! J ust picture me breathing on you neck and you wont do anything stupid .

They all laughed and he went out. Odirile pulled a chair and sat down .

Odirile: So ...tell me .

Kagiso: What ?

Odirile: You know - this whole chosen thing. How did it start and up until today .

Kagiso: Well ..{ narrated }

At Mxolisi's house.

After cleansing them both with the goats blood , they stood up from the grass math and Rose was escorted from the kral and led into the house. The elders remained in the kral communicating with the ancestors and after a while they also went out .

Jane walked besides the ladies and when they were getting inside she stood at the door before turning back and went to her car . Jacob spotted her walking away and excused himself to go to her .

Jacob: Jane ?

Jane: Hii .. is there anything else left ?

Jacob: Oh no no ! We did everything that was requested from us . They're no longer husband and wife . The girl has to go get cleansed once the clock strikes midnight.

Jane: oh ..I get it . So what did you want to talk about?

Jacob: I wanted to ask you about Jacks condition. What's wrong?

Jane: We dont know yet . Hes in pain and can hardly walk . The doctors tried and are still trying but nothing has come to reveal itself. All they can do right now is ease the pain and sedate him , though they have to give him more than one can take . It could kill him . And I don't want that . He has a child to love and look out for . Rose deserves to feel the love after what has occurred to her the couple of months.

Jacob: I'm sorry your going through this . Is there anything we can do to help? Kana he's my friend.

Jane: Right now all you can do is keep him in prayers. He's fighting and could use your help through prayers.

Jacob : Yeah I will do so. And by the way m sorry about all this . This is all my fault. I take the blame. If I hadn't insisted your daughter wouldn't have

been robbed the couple of weeks of her life . I hope you find a place in your heart to feel my heartfelt apology. I'm truly sorry . I owe you guys a lot after the trauma I put your family through.

Jane: You don't owe us anything. You did what you thought was right . That also payed off and the little happiness they had can never be destroyed . They were happy and we should at least look at the good that came out of the whole thing. And I'll also like to apologize for the way I spoke to you last time . I was mean and selfish and you didn't deserve that . I'm sorry. Forgive me .

Jack: it's ohk . Your a mother and you were saying all those things out of concern for your child . That's why I sent you the address after course I understand how it's like to miss your child . My wife is always angry course Donald doesn't come home often nor use the simplest technical gadget to contact us . He'd rather spend the whole year not talking to you than call .

Jane: (laughed) He's a man now. No need for you to want to keep him by your side . He can make his

own decisions and learn from them .

Jacob: like arranging him in a marriage - I'm so done with it. I'll have to come to terms with him not being a family man .

Jane: Well Sometimes family sucks ! Total pain in the back side !

Jacob: (laughs) Yeah ,that it is. But at the end of the day , it's the only place to find true eternal love .

.

.

Around 11H30 PM

.

.

At the River.

Kagiso and Breeze sat in the back seat while Odirile sat on the drivers eating chicken nuggets . He spotted a car driving over and chuckled still cannot clear the picture of seeing Bonolo with another man

having sex in front of him .

Odirile: (laughed) Man I'd die !

Breeze: What ?

Odirile: So boy you watched this guy caress your baby girl and you did nothing ? Man I'd run in there and punch his knife teeth out . I'd rearrange that pretty glowing face of his . Damn !

Kagiso: Well not all of us are violent . Beside she's his wife , why the hell not have sex with him? It was in their house anyway.

Breeze : I cheated too , but not in my wifes presence. At least that's forgivable. Only thing left will be an imagination of what happened. But boy she left you with a clear picture in your head , dont tell me you'll ever forgive and forget that course that's impossible ! In your presence on top of that ! Boy no !

Kagiso: Well - it's done and I'll get over it . I got over a lot of things even bigger than losing a girl so

what is she ?

Odirile: The girl you love daar ! What could possibly hurt more than getting your heart crushed like that ?

Kagiso: (low) Pushing life without a parent. Waking up in the morning having sleepless nights worrying if the one left is still breathing course their sick.

Being scared and alone . Being hated just because your from a poor background. Everywhere you go you get spat at . To grow not knowing love and everytime you found it , it betrays you . That's what hurts more than loosing a girl uncle Rile .

He signed and stepped out of the car limping .

Odirile turned around with a stuck face and looked at Breeze who shrugged .

Odirile: Does he always have to say something that touches way deep ?

Breeze: He's hurt .

Odirile: Deep man . This ain't good for his health .

You gatta do something about this . Therapy or something.

Breeze sighed looking at Kagiso as he stood there looking up at the moon . Mxolisi parked on the other side and helped Rose out of the car just as Jane parked on their side . Breeze frowned stepping out and Odirile shook his head following.

Odirile: Hope she didn't bring her melodramatic act here .

Breeze: So do I.

Jane stepped out of the car with a pounding heart and locked the door before walking over to them .

Jane : Hii .

Them : Hii .

She looked at them and bit her lip not knowing what to say before awkwardly walking to Kagiso who has been staring at the bright moon.

Jane : Hii Kagiso .

Kagiso: (surprised) Hi Mrs Lyon .

Jane : Call me Jane . No need for formality. I wanted to apologize for the way I mistreated you and talked to you . There's been a lot that's been happening to me recently and I promise I'm not the kind of woman . This days I've been off and I tend to take it out on anyone and sorry you had to be one of those . You had no reason to be a victim of the hormonal me . Sorry I started our book on the backside. I'm really sorry that I even called out your mother , I had no reason to disrespect her like that . I dont even know her. I'm truly sorry.

Kagiso: Its ohk . I guess we all have our bad moments.

Jane: Yeah ..and I promise it wont happen again .
Can we call it a truce ?

Kagiso: (smiled) Truce .

They shook hands and she looked at him and smiling.

She frowned remembering that last time she saw him he wasn't wearing any bandage around his head and cement on his leg

Jane: What happened? You weren't hurt when I saw you ?

Kagiso : This .. I fell from the stairs. Missed a step and kinda made my way down .

Jane : Or .. how bad is it ?

Kagiso: Not bad . Just small injuries, I'll be fine .

Jane shook her head and smiled again when the healer walked out from the river and called them .

Jane : So your the boy my daughter was bragging about last time I was with her . Your the one Nakedi chose ?

Kagiso: Yeah ...kinda crazy you know.

Jane : She made a wise choice. Your perfect.

Kagiso chuckled before walking away and she followed . Meanwhile Odirile and Breeze looked at one another with questions roaming in their heads .

Odirile: That's not good .

Breeze: Definitely abnormal.

The healer helped Rose down the rocks as Jane helped Kagiso down to the river leaving the rest of the guys awkwardly staring at one another not knowing what to say .

Odirile: I hope this fails .

They both turned looking at him with dropped faces and he stared at them back as if he didn't say anything wrong and shrugged folding his hands.

Odirile: What ? I'm just saying.. she deserves to remain blind . She's gonna hoe after this . I mean ..(chucled) if she can hoe while blind then what's stopping her from being a hoe when she gets her eye sight back ? Look at me for all you like , just dont say I didn't warn you .

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:53] Lynne : Chapter 72

The next day .

At Breezes house.

Kagiso stood in the middle of the shower letting the water to lick his body . It still didn't make sense to him why she would just sleep with another guy when he constantly told her how he feels . Couldn't she at least let him get put of the house so he wont have any idea of what happened? How heartless can girls be mara ? The water wiped the tears coming from his eyes when he shook his head and sighed unbraiding his hair so that when he's done it'll dry quickly. After a while he stepped out and wrapped a towel around his waist and took another one drying his hair . He went to the closet were

Abigail had put Breeze's new clothes for him before she left then got dressed before going downstairs still drying his rich long hair .

In the kitchen Breeze put two plates on the counter and dished for the both of them before pouring each a glass of juice. Kagiso walked in and found him covered in flour even on his face and smiled sitting down .

Kagiso: Morning.

Breeze: Boy ..how did you sleep?

Kagiso: hardly, you?

Breeze: same here . So I made fluffy better pancakes. I'm not sure if I nailed them course I never cook . My baby always did the cooking . So took something from her cooking diary .

Kagiso: Who ?

Breeze: Sagi , she knows her way in the kitchen. (smile) she doesn't even want help, no matter if

she's cooking a bunch of dishes . She'll cook them on her own .

Kagiso: Where is she ? I never saw her since I got here .

Breeze: Yeah ..about that . I think its about time you knew what the hell is going on in this family. And I think it might just be all my fault. I cheated.

Kagiso:

Breeze: Yes I did. And Before you say anything I'm not proud of it . I'm disgusted with myself course I fucked up my family. And that woman I cheated with is Jane. That baby she's carrying is mine .

Kagiso: What ? But I thought she was your brother's wife ? How could you mess up his family like that ?

Breeze: I did that because I was vengeful . He and my oldest brother James , who is in jail by the way, killed both our parents only because they chose to give me everything that was theirs , course I was the youngest. And then they tried to kill me by burning the house I inherited while I'm still inside

sleeping.

Kagiso: oow! So that's where all the anger comes from. You still angry, aren't you?

Breeze: Very, and I don't know how to get past that. So when my girls found out about Jane and I, it triggered Sagis mental health and Abigail - she never knew how to handle pain so she cheated too with Mxolisi.

Kagiso: (chuckled) This just keeps getting better and better.

Breeze: Boy I almost died twice in my wife's hands. I've never been so terrified.

Kagiso: (laughed) is she -

Breeze: A psychopath? Yeah. Heard she even bit Mxolisi on his neck and was scattered with his blood on her mouth laughing.

Kagiso: where is she?

Breeze: In a mental prison. Jane came here and poked her when she lost it and smashed her head with everything she saw fit. Jane reported her and

then she landed 9 months in prison. A day after you got here .

Kagiso: Damn ! But she's pregnant !

Breeze: They care less .

Kagiso: And Abigail?

Breeze: Abigail is divorcing me . Still waiting for the pa-

The bell rang when he raised his eyebrows and went to check who it was . He opened the door and his face brightened looking at the curved coloured lady in her suit .

Breeze: Hii Lucia .

Lucia : Hello Mr Lyon. I'm here to serve you with this papers . Please sign here .

Breeze: Did you really have to do it on your own?

Lucia : We sent someone yesterday and you weren't here , so I thought I should do it myself . Please

sign sir .

Breeze: Well well well . And if I say no ?

Lucia: Then you w-

Breeze: Right -dont say it . So she has made up her mind . (Shouted) Boy come see this lady !

Lucia: (frowned) What ?

Kagiso got off from the chair and wrapped his hair with the towel and walked over. The first thing his eyes fell on was her elegant body before her face . And damn she was beautiful. He smiled looking at her before looking at Breeze who smiled at him back as if they were teenage boys . Breeze shook his head looking back at Lucia.

Breeze: Thanx Lucia . Have a nice day .

Lucia: You too .

She breathed out before walking away holding her

chest and got in her car doing breath exercises. Such beautiful men and Abigail is ready to throw that away? She shook her head and drove off.

Meanwhile Breeze and Kagiso walked in the kitchen and he opened the brown envelope pulling out the papers. His heart skipped looking at them and sighed.

Kagiso :Are you gonna sign them?

Breeze: If this is what she wants then the least I can do is free her.

Kagiso: Aren't you gonna fight?

Breeze: Nop . The moment she stepped out of this house she had time to think through . And when she called her lawyer she made her choice so - why should I force someone to love and be with me when clearly they don't want to . You can't force love out of someone. I've got a lot in my plate and if Gail thinks I'm going to beg her to come home , then she definitely doesn't know me .

Kagiso : But you love each other . Why are you divorcing?

Breeze: Abigail is good woman. I'll give you that. Smart , talented and brave . She makes a perfect wife but one thing is she hold grudges. Baby girl is not capable of forgiveness . I have a baby on the way and she is not willing to accept him for who he is all because I made it with another woman and not her . I mean I get it, its wrong but for her to not accept him and see him as a loophole or mistake , that's not what I'd keep up with either. That's my kid and I wont live it behind for anyone, not even her . I wont be one of those fathers that plant their seeds and then run away for their mothers to water and bloom them. That's my blood . I wont let it grow without a father's love just to satisfy her selfishness within. I cant be with someone that makes me choose between her and my blood. She'll find a way to forgive me but I'm not about to let my child neglected.

He took out a pen and signed the papers before

sitting down and they ate .

At the hospital.

Jack tossed on the bed and slept on his tummy when he realized he was not in pain . He quickly got up and pulled the sheets off looking at his dick and it was only swollen a bit, it was no longer erect . He even lost weight. He smiled laying back and put his hands together taking a short prayer as tears escaped his eyes.

At the Lyons Mansion.

Jane walked into Rose's room and put the tray of breakfast on the table before walking over and sat next to her on the bed . Rose tossed to another site still with her eyes closed and scared to open them .

Jane: Rose please. Talk to me .

Rose : J ust get away from me. I told you I went nothing to do with you and dad . You sold me out and look what happened to me . I was supposed to be with Kagiso and you forced a marriage between the two of us .

Jane: Honey I'm sorry. I dont know for how long I have to apologize for you to get how sorry I am but I'm willing to keep up . What me and your dad did was uncalled for. I shouldn't have went along with it and stand with you but I failed as a mother . I'm truly sorry my love .

Rose: (sniffed) Where is Kagiso?

Jane: He's with his father . Should I call him for you ?

Rose: Please .

Jane: Aren't you going to look at me ?

Rose: (smiling) No .. I want him to be the first person I see .

Jane: (smiling) Oh ok . I'm hurt. Let me go call him .

She kissed her cheek before walking out and Rose pulled the sheets smiling anxiously waiting to see him.

At Breezes house.

Breeze and Kagiso walked out of the house and he put in the pin before heading to the car .

Breeze: So when will you be back?

Kagiso: I dont know. I already missed my exams and I doubt they'll let me write them .

Breeze: I can go there and put in some good words. And your still wearing that thing on your leg , so they'd believe it if you say you were injured.

Kagiso : They'll need a doctor's letter .

Breeze: That can be arranged.

Kagiso: Cool . Today I just want to spend it with my mom . I miss her .

Breeze: Then let's take you home then. Just don't forsake me .

Kagiso: I wont .

Breeze's phone rang from his pocket and he took it out looking at the caller . He gave the envelope to Kagiso and rubbed his forehead walking to the flowers answering.

Breeze: Jane ?

Jane : Hii . How are you ?

Breeze: I'm good . You ?

Jane : I'm fine . I'm not calling to argue with you if that's what you think .

Breeze: Why would you think that's what pops in my mind everytime you call ? Jane I got a life and to tell the truth your the last on my list except for that

baby your carrying.

Jane : Oh .. ohk . As long as the baby is on it then I'm good at where you claim me to be at . I'm calling to find out if Kagiso is still there with you ?

Breeze: He is but I'm taking him home . Why ?

Jane : Rose wished to see him first before everyone else , so I was hoping maybe you can bring him over before you take him home ?

Breeze: (chuckled) I'll try .

Jane: What do you mean you'll try ? Bring him please.

Breeze: (laughed)

Jane : What are you laughing at ?

Breeze: I'm laughing because it seems like I'm starting to hate ladies, especially the ones from my family. You guys are annoying.

Jane : What ?

He cut the call and shook his head walking over to

the car and got in . He started the engine and drove out .

Breeze : That was J ane . Apparently your chosen wife wishes to see you .

Kagiso: Well I dont have a chosen wife not anymore.

Breeze: Then your girlfriend.

Kagiso: I only have one girlfriend whom by the way i haven't saw in days.

Breeze: Bonolo ?

Kagiso : Yeah .

Breeze: (sarcastic) Oh wow .

Kagiso: What ?

Breeze: Nothing . Your surrounded by black mamba's and cobra's my boy . I dont wish to be you at this point . Let's go check on one .

Kagiso looked at him and licked his lips looking outside as the car drove off .

At The Lyons Mansion

Breeze parked outside and they both stepped out heading towards the house.

Kagiso: Isn't this house huge for 3 people ?

Breeze: What can we say ? Its Jack . Mind you I'm banned from coming here . Let's just hope he's not home .

He put rang the bell and another maid opened the door for them just as Jane was coming downstairs. She smiled looking at them before waving the maid to come over .

Jane: Pleae make them something to drink.

Maid : Yes mam.

Kagiso: No I'm good . Thank you .

Breeze: Me too .

Jane : Ohk . Lead him to Rose's room please.

The maid led the way and Kagiso hesitantly followed leaving Jane with Breeze awkwardly standing.

Breeze: Where's is your husband?

Jane: He's at the hospital. He's been there for quite a while now .

Breeze: What happened?

Jane: He just had some sort of problem with his privates. Its erected , swollen and - I dont know. I cant even explain it .

Breeze: Is he getting any better?

Jane : The doctors have been sedating him and

giving him medication just to slow the pain down while they figure out what's happening to him.

Breeze: Oh ohk.. And you? The baby?

Jane: I'm doing good. The baby is also good and healthy. I eat healthy and go on check up. I try to limit my stress and, yeah everything is just fine. Thanks for asking. What about you? Everything ohk?

Breeze: Yeah. Everything is just fine. Very much fine actually.

She smiled at him and he returned it before they headed upstairs.

Minutes before, Kagiso stood at the door as his heart told him the opposite to get in. He clenched his jaws and opened the door walking in and went to stand next to her bed. She seemed innocent when like this. He sat on the bed when a smile built on her lips and she opened her eyes to this beautiful face of his. He smiled at her when she quickly got up and hugged him sitting on his laps.

Tears of joy ran down her cheeks and she broke it looking at him .

Rose: Thank you .

Kagiso: For what ?

Rose :(crying) You saved me from everything. I dont know how to thank you .

Kagiso: You can thank me by making the best out of everyday you'll be able to see from now on . Do good .

Rose : I promise you I'll do good . I promise .

He pulled her again for a hug before standing with her and helped her stand. He broke the hug and smiled tucking her hair behind her ear and leaned in . She also leaned in but unfortunately he went for the forehead instead of the lips . She frowned confused and looked at him sadly.

Rose : Is everything ohk ?

Kagiso: Yeah . Everything is just fine .

Rose : Look at me .

He stared at her when she frowned . He was not looking at her the way he did the last time she saw him .

Rose : Are you mad at me or something?

Kagiso: What ? Why would I be mad at you ?

Rose : I dont know , you tell me . Your looking at me differently than the way you used to .

Kagiso : Is it ?

Rose: Yeah .. your different Kagiso. What's wrong with you? What's eating you ?

Kagiso: There's nothing wrong with me love . J ust that you don't know how I look like when I'm no longer interested or in love with you .

With just that , her heart just sliced into million pieces and dropped into her stomach still pounding. He kissed her forehead and smiled before heading out as her knees got weak and her breathing changed as tears rolled out when she screamed his name falling on her knees , but he didn't turn back.

On the way to Rose's room, J ane and Breeze stopped looking at Kagiso walking out and passed by them without a word . Breeze shrugged and followed him and J ane rushed to Rose's room where she found her all red screaming his name in pain crying .

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

Morning

.

.

[08/02, 13:54] Lynne : Chapter 73

At Kagiso's house.

On the way , Breeze drove slowly on the humps changing the music and looked at Kagiso who's been staring outside since they left the Lyons Mansion. He sighed tapping the wheel and picked his drink .

Breeze: You've been quite since we left the house .
Are you ohk?

Kagiso : Well dad , after months of a quarter of my
life , I finally get to take charge again. I'm happy.
Probably becouse I wont be seeing any crazy bitch
ghost forcing me to rescue a living bitch. (sighed)

Breeze: (chuckled) that's... that sounds relieving.
But just dont get too comfortable . We dont know
when that " bitch ghost " will be out to play .

Kagiso: Screw her . I dont care this time . She might
as well kill me , I'm not doing this anymore. I'm out .

Breeze: Good .

He parked infront of the gate and Kagiso pulled his
jacket stepping out just as Bonolo parked infront of
her house . Breeze sighed looking at her when she
stepped out and ran into Kagiso's arms and they
laughed as he lifted her . Breeze rubbed his beard
before starting the engine and they pulled off
holding hands . Bonolo cleared her throat and held
her neck avoiding Breeze's eyes .

Kagiso: leaving already ?

Breeze: Yeah .. I have to take this papers to Lucia .
Wanna get this over and done with , like you .

Kagiso: You know for someone who's parting with
his wife he truly loves , I'd say your moving quite too
fast .

Breeze: (blushed) What are talking about boy ?

Kagiso: Your not going there just to take the papers
. Your going there for her .

Breeze: I have absolutely no idea what your talking
about . (To Bonolo) You watch out Boy . What
happens in the dark always gets revealed in the
light .

Kagiso: Exactly . Your concealment too that you try
too hard to hide will reveal .

Breeze: (smiling) Would you stop it already. I'm not
going there to- you know what ?Bye .

They fist bumped and he reversed leaving Bonolo's throat dry . Kagiso shook his head and turned hugging Bonolo .

Bonolo: (smiling) I missed you .

Kagiso: (smiling) I missed you too .

Bonolo: So I guess the part where I say " where have you been " has been already answered. Now all I want is to eat this - two- pink - protrusions that I haven't tasted in a while before I ask all the remaining questions .

Kagiso: Ohh oh oh .

She blushed wrapping her arms around him and when they were about to kiss Veronica stood in front of them and they broke apart. Bonolo stepped back embarrassed before folding her hands . Kagiso smiled looking at his mother before they hugged .

Veronica: (smiling) You've grown quite

disrespectful in a while didn't you ? Greeting your mother on the gate ? Huh ?

Kagiso: That's because I got off here and there was someone I had to greet too that appeared first .
How are you doing my beloved mother ?

Veronica: Bad . You owe me some good explanation to why you've been missing on me and when I call you dont answer .

Kagiso: Ohk ... I have all the answers you need .

Bonolo: I'm just gonna go . I'm sure you have a lot to catch up on .

Kagiso: You can -

Bonolo: No ..I have an exam to study for . I'll catch you later . (walks away)

Kagiso: Are you ohk ?

Bonolo: (forced smile) Yeah .. I'm good . I love you .

Kagiso: Cxxl , I love you too .

He watched her walk away when Veronica

squeezed his hand gently and he smiled walking with her to the house .

At the Law firm .

Breeze parked outside the firm and sighed stepping out with the envelope. He closed the door and walked into the building.

In the boardroom.

Abigail sat on the chair looking at her picture with Breeze and released a heavy sigh sitting back . She zoomed his smile and couldn't help but smile either . Meanwhile Lucia pressed her laptop stealing glances at her and only a guy can make a girl smile so ridiculously.

Lucia: You do realize that your getting divorced right

?

Abigail: (frown) You do realize we've been waiting here for half an hour and my soon to be ex husband hasn't showed up when he's the one that called us here ?

Lucia: Abigail.. You love this guy .

Abigail: Why does it even matter to you ? Your my lawyer , so do what your hired to do and stop playing best friend course we're not .

Lucia swallowed when the door slid open and Breeze walked in pulling the chair and sat down. He threw the envelope on the table and sat back relaxing .

Breeze : There ..! Signed and sealed. Not really sealed , but delivered

Abigail: (shocked) Wait , you signed the papers !

They both turned looking at her when she calmed down embarrassed and sat back . She cleared her throat taking out the papers .

Breeze: So how do we do this ? We talk about the property and all before it could be finalized course I need to get this out of the way as fast as I can . I got a wife and kids to concentrate on .

Abigail looked at him before swallowing a huge painful lump. Lucia looked at her and sighed before telling them everything step by step from now on .

At the Lyons Mansion.

Rose layed on the bed crying still couldn't figure out what went wrong . He was happy when she was blind . She felt it . She still couldn't put a finger to his sudden change.

She tossed to the headboard picking her phone

rubbing her tears and dialed his number but it went straight to voicemail. She tried him again but still . She wiped her tears getting getting off the bed and walked to her closet to change into comfortable clothes. After a min she grabbed her phone and jogged downstairs wiping her unstopable tears and tied her hair messy . Jane appeared from the lounge holding an icecream and scoffed looking at her in a rush .

Jane : Where are you going ?

Rose : (wiped tears) Mom . Kagiso wont just turn his back on me like that . I need to know why ? He's been there for me and not for once gave up on me . I'm not about to give up on him either.

Jane : So where are you going?

Rose : I dont know . But I'll find him .

Jane : Where ? How ?

Rose : I don't know ! He found me when I needed him . What's stopping me from doing the same? I'll

find him the way he found me .

Jane : And if you dont?

Rose : Then I'll keep searching until I find him . Even if I'll have to travel miles looking for him . I'm not going to let him go. I still need him (runs out)

Jane: Rose wait !

She didn't stop and ran to the car that a guard was still washing and just got in . The guard frowned before pouring water over it and got in driving off as she gave him the location.

At Odirile's house.

Odirile sat on the couch looking at the business paperwork. He pulled a bottle of coke and sipped when Ditebogo pushed he papers off him and sat on his lap .

Odirile: You do realize your no longer a kid right?
And I got a girlfriend. You should find a boyfriend
course I'm sick of you treating me like one of your
side niggas . Move from my lap they are someone's
sit not yours .

Ditebogo: When I find a boyfriend I'll stop sitting on
your lap , but till then not a minute before. Bonolo
can knock herself out . I don't care .

Odirile: What do you want ?

Ditebogo: So 29th then 30th (smiling) Guess what
bug bro ?

Odirile: What ?

Ditebogo: Dont tell me you forgot!

Odirile : Forgot what drums tick?

Ditebogo: I'm not a drumstick. It's my birthday on
the 30th . Only a day left . Can you believe it ! This is
so fucken awesome !

Odirile : " Can I believe it ? " thats the dumbest thing
I've ever heard from a garrulous girl . Get off me
(pushed her off) of course I believe it . Your human

not a statue . Even statues grow , your aging in time
dumb head .

Ditebogo: So you know what this means right ?

Odirile: (contempt) No .

Ditebogo: I want a party.

Odirile: Wa reng ? !

Ditebogo: Kare ke batla party . Come on nkgonne !
I'm finishing my law degree. The least you can do
is throw me a 23th birthday. Please Odirile. Nka
itumela thata .

Odirile: Nyaa Ditebogo (no Ditebogo)

Ditebogo: Hau Odirile! Ke go kopa sentle jaana ?

Odirile: Kare "No" Ditebogo . Aren't you supposed to
be studying instead of asking for parties ?

Ditebogo: Kana Odirile this is a once off thing . You
wont have to do it again and I wont ask you . I've
never had a party before and I so much wish to
have one . It'll mean a lot to me .

Odirile: (laughs) Wa simolola akere ? Mean so

much to you ? J ust go study and leave this things to white people.

Ditebogo: Fela if it was Bonolo you'd be jumping at the opportunity to throw her the biggest party this town has ever seen .

Odirile: Luckily for me , my girl doesn't yet want me to throw her a party . And yes if she will , I'd throw her the most lavish party this whole country has ever seen . So please excuse me .

She swallowed looking at him and walked away climbing the stairs. Odirile turned looking at her and rubbed his head. He had totally forgotten about her birthday , how ignorant for a brother . He bit his lip and picked his phone sending Breeze a message and other contacts in his phone . He wore his sleepers and packed the paper work before walking out .

At the law firm.

Breeze put his foot on the table swinging lightly on the chair when Lucia looked at her and he played with his eyebrows smiling not bothered. Jealousy filled Abigail when she checked her wrist watch before placing her hands on the table.

Abigail: I have a business to run. Can we wrap this up quickly so that you both can flirt unbothered.

Breeze: (smiling) Be careful Abigail, your starting to act like a bitter ex wife .

Abigail: Not yet an " ex wife " it's not finalized.

Breeze: For me as long as you signed the damn paper it's over between us . I dont owe you shit and I can do whatever I want , wherever I am , and with whoever I choose. What i do from now on with my life , is none of your concern as much as what happens in yours is non of mine .

Abigail: Careful Breeze, your starting to show your true colors. I'm sure Sagi will be murders if she

hears you say that . Your right babe , what happens in your life is non of my business, but that doesn't mean I wont look after Sagi . I love her .

Breeze: (smiling)And you love me .

She looked at him with no words and sighed looking back at Lucia who balanced her head with her hand watching them .

Lucia: You both done quarrelling? And should I remind you why I'm here Abigail? You hired me to help you ,im not here to flirt with your husband-

Breeze: (interrupted) Ex- husband love !

Lucia: Whatever you call yourself- I dont care . I'm only here for one thing which is doing my job. So please keep me out of whatever feud you guys have . I dont want to be part of it .

They both looked at each other and she closed the file and stood up .

Lucia: I thought we could push this faster like you both want but I guess you guys need a divorce trial.

Abigail: And what's that ?

Lucia: You guys still have issues that remain unsolved after sitting here talking for an hour . You haven't come to a conclusion other than bite each others heads . This means you should go to trial . And since the trial is costly and time consuming surely it'll make things easier course it takes all the power from both spouses and puts it in the hands of the judge. This will allow you to maintain control and have more predictable results. I was here hoping you guys will listen and I'll help you avoid the trial but clearly you enjoy this . Call me when you made up your mind course I dont have time for this .

Abigail: I hired you !

Lucia: And i can easily drop out and find you another one who'll entertain all this drama of yours , course I'm done with it . If your ready to talk , use

that budget before you Abigail. (Sighed) Well talk - I hope .

She picked her stuff and went out leaving Abigail quite . Breeze moved his foot and swang around laughing before picking his keys and stood up .

Breeze: I like her attitude. Passionate.

He walked to the door and stopped turning around.

Breeze: Patient.

Abigail swallowed looking away and he smiled walking out .

At Breezes house.

About 30 mins later.

Odirile parked next to a black Audi and stepped out looking at Rose sitting on the flower pot . He sighed walking over waving his hand and she smiled rubbing her tears .

Rose: How do you know I was blind?

Odirile: course I was there when they lifted the curse . I even said some very harsh things about you . J ust so you should know .

Rose : And what are those ?

Odirile: Never mind , my wish didn't come true anyway. So why are you sitting here by yourself? Aren't they home ?

Rose : No .

Odirile: But you know the pin . Why dont you just make yourself at home ?

Rose : That's like breaking in uncle Odirile.

Odirile : Who cares ?

He said that putting the pin and the door unlocked getting in and she followed. They walked to the kitchen and he threw the keys on the counter before taking out two glasses and a juice in the fridge .

Odirile: So how does it feel ?

Rose : (smiling) It feels great . It's like God gave me the second chance to see the world again . I'll always be grateful for what Kagiso did for me .

Odirile: Yeah ...that you should. But i wasn't really talking about your eyesight , course to tell the truth I have different feelings to that. What I'm talking about is having two boys worship at your altar. How's that ? Do you like it ?

Rose choked on her drink when he took out his handkerchief and handed it to her . She wiped her mouth still coughing and looked at him .

Odirile: Are you ohk ?

Rose : Yeah ..I think I drank with the wrong pipe .

Odirile : No darling you didn't. Its guilt. But I'm glad Kagiso stepped out of the way before you show him flames . Kana you ripped that boys heart apart Rose . I didn't know you can also be heartless.

Rose: what are you talking about ?

Odirile: Come on . I'm an open person so you can drop the act when with me . Actually why are you here course the woman of the house are not here ?

Rose : I'm here for Kagiso. He's been acting weird.

Odirile : Is it ? I bet you know why dont you ?

Rose : I dont that's why I'm here . And why are you also like this towards me ? What have I done?

Odirile : yeah neh . Youngsters. Anyway, I hate secrets so I'm gonna tell you course I'd hate to chase something I don't know either . He's hurt and very much in pain . The wound in his heart won't heal .

Rose : What ? Why? Who did so ? How come he didn't tell me ?

Odirile: (sipped) That's because you're the reason behind that heart break . So here's an advice= Move on .

He picked his glass and walked to the lounge leaving her still confused .

Odirile : The guy deserves better baby girl . If he's acting weird or however unusual, that should give you more than enough to tell you that he's past the fixing and headed towards the future without you by his side . It's called red flags in other words .
Cheers!

.

.

-
-
-

Comment

-
-
-
-

[08/02, 13:55] Lynne : Chapter 74

At Breezes house.

Odirile sat on the couch and folded his legs sipping his drink with a remote in his hand passing the channels. He switched to the parliament channel and chuckled.

Odirile: Government, Government ! Filled with manipulative bitches and dickheads. Whatever shit they argue about here could be serious but the conclusion will be total nonsense. (Turned) Are you gonna join me or your just gonna stand there ! ?

Rose : I want you to explain properly to me what's happening. Your not being specific.

Odirile: Ae nnanyana ! No Rose ! I've told you enough . J ust that you chose to ignore me, just like you did with Kagiso. I mean what where you thinking? 12 hours hadn't passed after your heard that he was your husband to be then wena purugudlu ! With another guy .

Rose : (teary) What are you saying ?

Odirile: (rolled eyes) Fine ! if you want the burger then I'll give it to you with the hot petty. Kagiso saw you having sex with Mxolisi minutes after you asked him to have sex with you . Happy ?

Rose's heart skipped before it pounded hard on her chest when she held her chest grabbing her drink and drank . She walked over and stood next to him as tears started blurring her sight .

Rose : That's not true . Tell me your lying.

Odirile: If I'm lying then how do you think I know all this ? I wasn't at your 2 second house and damn straight I didn't even know where you lived till I tagged with Breeze to look for him and found him laying in a pool of blood !

Rose : What ?

The door slid open and Breeze walked in with a frown. He shut the door behind him and walked over .

Breeze : You know I should change the pin . This is getting out of hand .

Odirile: Would that make any difference? I'm still

gon get in anyway.

He sighed putting the keys on the counter when he realized that Rose was silently crying. He breathed out as an idea of what happened popped in his head looking at Odirile.

Breeze: What did he say to you Rose ?

Odirile: I didn't say anything. I just told her that I know what she did and I'm not proud of her . Not at all ! I even told her to move on course apparently when I remember , (winked) he said he was done with her . So I just layed the cards infront of her and flipped them for her .

Breeze: What the hell Odirile? She was blind for christ sake ! She didn't have any idea if he was watching.

Odirile: Oh come on Breeze! If you were the one facing this would you say the same ? (walks to the kitchen) The girl broke your sons heart . Actually

she ripped it out and please dont give me the blind card course I know that one . Being blind never stopped anyone to close their legs . (To Rose) Your eyes where the ones that didn't function not your mind .

Rose swallowed when she choked on her tears looking at him speaking. She always knew him to be a straight talker and speaks his mind but this was beyond.

Breeze bit his lip and pinched his nose looking at Rose and sighed looking at Odirile who went to pour himself a glass of whiskey.

Breeze: She's still a child Odirile. She -

Odirile: (interrupted) Hell no ! She wasn't a child when she layed on that bed and took the whole meat raw .That's a woman . Full ass grown woman Breeze! You guys should stop pampering her or she'll keep on acting like a bitch ! Baby I'm sorry if this is hurting but I ain't gonna hide the truth from

you like he does . I'm gonna tell you . What you did , cannot be undidn't and what he saw can never be unsaw . He's a guy , he has feelings too . He gets hurt and now he's hurt . Beyond that hoering imagination of yours .

Breeze: Ohk that's enough Odirile ! You said your peace . Give her a break!

Odirile sighed sipping his drink . Breeze shook his head looking at him before pulling Rose and hugged her .

Breeze : Its ohk honey . Yo-

Odirile: No it's not ohk Breeze! Stop lying to the kid . She fucked up and has to take responsibility of her own actions. She-

Breeze: (shouted) She was bloody married Odirile. He was her husband for christ sake and she heard you ! Would you shut it already?!

Odirile: I'm not going against that bro ! I know she

was married and hell yeah it's fine to have sex with him but - come on . She had just found out that Kagiso was her one true love and as always Kagiso proved that multiple times but no - Rose just had to lower her panties . With him in the same house .
Jeez baby , you got serious balls .

Breeze sighed looking at him rubbing Rose's back as she cried sorrowfully turning red . Odirile looked at her and sighed sadly before gulping his drink and poured another one .

Odirile: Even if you cry darling. The pain you feel right now , is nothing compared to what Kagiso feels at this point. Just thinking of how much pain and suffering he's been through missing his life time just to save you , nc nc ! I cant imagine the pain .

Rose : (crying) I didn't have an idea he saw us . I swear to God I love Kagsio and what happened to between me and Mxolisi was a moment of

weakness. I'm truly sorry.

Odirile: (laughs) " A moment of weakness " ?
Should I tell you a story about a moment of
weakness? Well a moment of weakness is a bitch!
It even kicked the shit out of your uncles marriage
and now he's getting divorced.

Breeze's jaws dropped looking at him as words
stuck in his mouth . Odirile looked at him and
shrugged.

Odirile: What ? You didn't think your divorce will
stay secret for long did you ? One way or another
she was going to know that Abigail is divorcing you .
And that baby girl is all because of a what - A
moment of weakness. So dont pull that card
course I'll preach about it and never finish a single
verse on it .

Breeze: Odirile I think you should leave .

Odirile: I'm not going anywhere. (To Rose) Yours

wasn't a moment of weakness baby . You did that because you were horny and went lose . Even is it was - you mean to tell me that words of love just makes you dive in bed ?

Rose : (crying) No ..

Odirile: No baby that's what you meant. Girls fall for money and you fall for words . A single I love you that came out once and already you fly up the sky with no panties on. Ah your lose my baby !
(Whistle) Very lose my dear .

Rose's heart filled up whe she pulled away from the hug and played with her fingers as tears rolled out .

Rose : Malome I know I messed up . And at this point I have no excuse . But you have to believe me when I say I love Kagiso. It wasn't my intention to . I'm really sorry that I hurt him but I cant let him go . I love him . I'm truly sorry.

Odirile: (sighed) Your apologizing to the wrong

person on my love . You dont owe me any . You owe them to Kagiso though I doubt he'll forgive you . Who knows- he could be a master of forgiveness . He's- I dont know but what I know is he cares a lot and puts others before himself. You should ask forgiveness from him not me .

She bit her nails holding her tears when she walked out going home and Breeze stared at Odirile who raised his left eyebrow unbothered.

Odirile: You got my message?

Breeze: Was that necessary?

Odirile: Oh please dont start with me or I'll tell you too where to back off .

Breeze : (scoffed) Is it really that hard to see people from that high horse of yours ?

Odirile: Not really. But when I'm up here , I get to see a lot and I get filled up so I need to vomit them course they weigh me .

Breeze: (Rolled eyes) She's is a kid and was married. It was her responsibility to please her husband and she was frickin-

Odirile: Blind ? If I hear that word again i swear i might as well learn how to fast spell it from backwards. Stop blaming her loss of eyesight as an excuse. She got lose infront of Kagiso and that's that ! Finish and klar !

Breeze: Screw you ...

Odirile: Thanks a lot , I really appreciate it ... let's go . I'm planning a surprise party for Ditebogo and I need your help.

At Kagiso's house

After narrating the whole story. Veronica pulled the jug of water and drank it before sighing and looked at him . A hot slap landed on his cheek when he frowned looking at her .

Kagiso: That was fair.

Veronica: Why didn't you tell me this all along Kagiso? Kagiso do you know how worried I was and under my condition? I couldn't sleep , I couldn't eat not knowing if whether you had something. I couldn't even -

Kagiso : And I'm really sorry mom . I promise you it will never happen again. I sorted it out and its over . From now on , I promise not to disappear and focus on myself this time around . I wont put anyone's needs before mine .

Veronica shook her head in disappointment and stood up sitting on he bed .

Kagiso: Say something..

Veronica: I need time to process this whole thing you just told me . You being haunted and waking up in graveyards. Being chosen to rescue someone from her own demons . What the hell Kagiso! ?

Kagiso: It has passed mama . It's over .

Veronica: I hope it is .

Kagiso: I promise .

She pulled her plastic of pills and drank them with water before laying down . Kagiso sighed and took his phone from the solar charger switching it on .

Messages flew in when he put it down and walked outside to check if Bonolo hadn't went out either. He put his hands in the pocket going back inside and picked the phone looking at the last message of today . It was a message inviting him to a party from Breeze and Odirile . He licked his lower lip and rubbed his forehead reading more .

At The Club .

Breeze and Odirile sat on the VIP section looking as the men came one by one dancing with glasses of liquor in their hands. Breeze shook his head looking

at him .

Breeze : This is crazy. Having Male strippers to a party that will be filled with also guys ?

Odirile: Come on , it'll be fun . Cant wait to see her face when she see this , plus she's pushy .

Breeze: So actually this is a sibling match ?

Odirile: Actually no . I was thinking maybe I surprise her with this before the party. (Clenched jaws) I suck at party planning. I miss smucles.

Breeze: (smiling) You and I both . I wonder how she's doing in there . She must be suffering while im- busy with a glass of liquor planning parties and wearing colognes when she smells prison. With my baby .

Odirile: Come on man - mental prisons are not like the usual one's . I'm sure she is in her own cell with white walls wearing a nice merteninty dress looking just like Sagi . Not crazy , but pregnant.

Breeze: Staring at white walls and what am I doing?

Staring at men shaking their-whatever and showing their eight packs ? (sigh) my life sucks for real .

Odirile looked at him gulp the liquor and pour another glass .

Odirile: So where were you earlier?

Breeze: I went to drop Kagiso home and then passed by the firm to deliver the papers .

Odirile: So she's serious?

Breeze: Deadly..! And guess who's handling it ?

Odirile: Who ?

Breeze : Lucia .

Odirile: Are you serious? (smiling)Damn that baby is fine !

Breeze: (laughs) Very .. I was even showing her to Kagiso early in the morning and he also just smiled without a word .

Odirile: He saw what we all see . Beauty overload!

They both laughed raising their glass and gulped them . Breeze excuses himself to the bathroom and he took out his phone dialing Bonolo for a reply.

At Bonolo's house.

Bonolo sat on the study table drawing when her phone rang on the bed . She put the pencil down and stood up picking it . She had ignored the message out of fear if whether Kagiso will show up too or not . She rubbed her hand on her jeans before answering sitting on the bed .

Bonolo: Hey baby .

Odirile: Hey .. What up ?

Bonolo: Nothing . I was just finishing up my drawing. You ?

Odirile: I'm still waiting for you to reply me . Are you going to be there ?

Bonolo: Uhm .. Odirile i-

Odirile: You know Bonolo for someone who claims to love me it's like your playing games with me . You give me excuse after excuse everytime I want to spend time with you . What is it ? You dont love me ?

Bonolo: No ! It's not that . I love you and you know that . J ust that I'm- I dont know . I'm occupied at this moment.

Odirile: Too occupied to at least spend one day with me ?

Bonolo: No ..-

Odirile: Then I guess I'll see you there. I love you .

Bonolo: Odir-

He cut the call before she could say anything and she dropped on the bed closing her eyes . How will she escape this one ?

•

•

•

•

•

•

•

The day of the party

•

•

•

•

Comment

•

•

•

[08/02, 13:55] Lynne : Chapter 75

At Odirile's house

Breeze parked on the parking lot and stepped out as Ditebogo was just walking out . She smiled walking over and they hugged swinging her around before putting her down moving her hair from her face .

Ditebogo: How are you ?

Breeze: I'm good . You ?

Ditebogo: No I'm not good . Your friend was on my neck two seconds ago . He's just super annoying at times and he doesn't even notice it .

Breeze: You guys fight a lot so it's hard to realize who annoys more than who . But anyway are you going to school today ?

Ditebogo: Nop . I'm going to the library. I cant the stand the sight of Odirile at this point.

Breeze : Ohk (car beep) oh your ride is here , you should get going course I need a genius to handle my case next year . Be good sweetheart.

She smiled waiting for a happy birthday but non came out of his lips instead of a kiss on her forehead. She frowned looking at him walk to the house and she went to her ride with a heavy heart .

Inside - Odirile added more Muesli in his bowl sitting on the counter and more yoghurt before staring .

Breeze : (walking over)That's a lot !

Odirile : Whatever.

He took out his bowl and made himself some before pushing Odirile's legs aside and took out a spoon then took his bowl going to sit on the high chair .

Odirile :(smiling) You dare disrespect me in my own house boy .

Breeze: Whatever... you just made me let your sister down by not saying at least happy birthday. She's used to me saying happy birthday to her and giving her gifts.

Odirile: She'll get over it when she see's what we are planning for her .

Breeze : The party is later and she at the library. Who is going to hold her there ? Course she wont spend the rest of the day all alone . She'll be back before you can even finish up .

Odirile: Uhm ..I never really thought about that . Where is Kagiso? My sister was never the one to resist a pretty face . Will he be here ?

Breeze: Do you really think Kagiso will agree to this after the whole Rose saga ? He is home . He needs time to himself and gather the pieces of his life to get back on his feet . He's been through a lot and I doubt he'll get back here after what he experienced

in this city.

Odirile: (smiling) Now look at that . My boy talking like a father . A real man . I gatta burn mphepho and clap hands to the ancestors for bringing Kagiso into your life . This kid changed you .

Breeze: Kagiso didn't change me . I chose to.

Odirile: You chose to change for him . It's not a bad thing course I love this Breeze. That old one was a pain in the ass .

Breeze: (chuckled)Mxm . Kagiso has n't replied to the invitation yet . And I dont want to bother him with the party . If he does n't want to come then the least we can do is give him the space he wants .

Odirile: (smiling) Fatherly instinct. I like it.

Breeze : How are the preparations going ?

Odirile: I called my long lost cousins to come help with the cooking and I was thinking maybe you'd accompany me to go buy drinks . A lot of them course they'll be a lot of people .

Breeze: Brai ? Catering? extra

Odirile: Of course they'll be a brai but absolutely no catering. She's turning 23 not 10 . No need to be hanging Sofia and Barbie's colors around , they wont put her favorite colors at their parties , so why hers .

Breeze: Whatever your smoking, I need it .

Odirile: Air.

Breeze: Mxm .

He picked his phone and logged into his cellphone banking and sent 7k to Bonolo before putting it down and they continued chatting .

At Bonolo's house .

Bonolo's phone beeped on the couch next to her mother and she picked it looking at the screen. She slid the message down reading it since she cant open the phone and sighed looking at the amount.

Nolo's mom: (shouting) Bonolo ! Phone !

Without wasting time , she came rushing and picked the phone . Her mother looked at her before switching the TV on and changed to the gospel channel.

Nolo's mom: That's a lot of amount for a girlfriend fee . Did you ask for it ?

Bonolo: Mom what happened to privacy ? And no I didn't ask for it I'm just as surprised as you are .

Nolo's mom: Mpolelle mo Nolo . O akanya gore o mang mara ? Why are you mixing this two boys ? What kind of a J ezebel line are you on ? Do you know how much this will hurt?

Bonolo: Nare ware J ezebel mme ? Go rileng o nkakanyetsa dilo di maswe jaana?

Nolo's mom: Becouse your acting like one . Kagiso might not have enough but he loves you . Why do

you want to hurt him like this ? Are you with Odirile because of the money?

Bonolo: No .. I love him.

Nolo's mom: And Kagiso?

Bonolo: I love him too .

Nolo's mom: That's insane . If you dont love Kagiso best let him go so he can find someone who's worth his love course your not .

Bonolo : Mama !

Nolo's mom : Keng ? Your not worth it my baby . Your stabbing him in the back with a very sharp knife and trust me its gonna hurt more when he finds out . Best let him go now.

Bonolo: No ..

Nolo's mom: Your stubborn my girl . But remember nothing stays buried forever.

Bonolo looked at her before standing and went out . She walked out of the gate and went to check if

Kagiso wasn't outside. This days she was too scared to enter after what his mother just witnessed. She sighed dialing his number and he picked .

Kagiso : Hello miss .

Bonolo: (blushing) Hii .. Are you home ?

Kagiso : Yeah .

Bonolo: Cool , I'm outside .

Kagiso : Ohk . I'm coming .

She hang up shoving the phone in her pocket and he got out of the house walking over hugging her before they kissed .

Kagiso: You could've knocked .

Bonolo: I know . But I find it disrespectful kissing in front of an elder .

Kagiso: My mom does n't mind , you know that .

Bonolo: Yeah ..but still . So where are you going today?

Kagiso: (narrowed eyebrows) Nowhere . I'll be home catching up on my studies and next week I'm starting to write my exams non stop . Why ?

Bonolo: Nothing . J ust wondering where my boyfriend will be course if I dont ask, you go missing on me for days without calling . Sucks!

Kagiso :(smiling) Aren't you cute . But don't worry I'm not going anywhere. You ?

Bonolo: I have to go visit my father and his family today . I'll be back tomorrow , for now I want to go buy something at the mall . Mom sent me there .

Kagiso: oh .. need company?

Bonolo : (smiling) I need more than just company.

She kissed him pulling him to her car in her yard and opened the back door pushing him inside before she got in closing the door behind her . ***

An hour later they both stepped out of the car fixing themselves and looked at each other smiling then kissed before Kagiso walked away. She fixed her hair and sighed walking to the house when her phone rang .

Bonolo: Hey baby .

Odirile: Hii .. how are you ? I've been trying to call you multiple times but you weren't picking up .

Bonolo: I'm good . Yeah ..i just saw your missed calls . I was in the shower . Is everything ohk ?

Odirile : Yeah .. wanted to know if you got the money I sent you ?

Bonolo: You know you didn't have to right ?

Odirile: Nolo your my girlfriend and I love you . I sent you that money out of love not because I want to buy you . I'm not buying you . Take that money and go spoil yourself. I'll see you later on right ?

Bonolo: Absolutely. I love you .

Odirile: I love you too .

She hang up breathing out and looked around before walking inside the house . After a while she stepped out fresh and got in the car opening windows driving off .

At Kagiso's house.

Kagiso sat on the plastic chair reading while unbraiding his hair and flipped the page to read another one . He smiled realizing that though he was reading ,his mind wasn't here but to what happened earlier on . Sex in a car . Isn't that a bad thing ? His phone rang on the bed and he stood up picking it and looked at Odirile's call .

Kagiso : Uncle OD . What's up ?

Odirile : Kagiso , my only nephew in this whole wide world. I need your help . Say " Fine " please.

Kagiso: (laugh) I cant just say fine when I dont

know what kind of a favour you want . What if you ask me to go shoot someone?

Odirile : Your dad will kill me if I dare ask that from you . I need you to distract my sister at the library. Make up a conversation with her so that she stays glued on you until sundown. Flirt with her or whatever , I dont care .As long as she doesn't come home early.

Kagiso : Your sister ? I dont even know her .

Odirile : I'll send you her location and her picture. Please ...

Kagiso : Fine, but that's gonna take me like an hour to get there .

Odirile: That's why I sent your father to come get you . He's on his way there as we speak .

Kagiso: What ? No ! He's gonna force me to come to that party .

Odirile: I know, that's why I sent him . Dont worry Rosella wont be here .

Kagiso: Wow .. ohk . J ust this one favour and I'm

done .

Odirile: My man !

He sighed putting the phone down and found his mother looking at him for an explanation.

Kagiso : I promise this is for the last time and I'm done.

Veronica: You said that the last time . Kagiso why do you always have to put other people's needs before you . Look at you , dropping your books to go to wherever sake they call you .

Kagiso : Mom is just a one time favour and it's done . No more favours.

Veronica: (shouts) What about you ? Your future! Your studies! You always drop everything for others but who drops everything for you ?!

Kagiso looked at her and swallowed sitting down .

He pushed his hair back and tied it with a band before opening his books . Veronica looked at him and sighed .

Veronica: I'm not saying you should stop helping people. I know you love helping and it's a good thing , but Kagiso sometimes you got to chose yourself and put your needs before others course if you dont, no one will. It hurts me as a mother seeing you suffer after you landed your hands to someone and they don't pick you up also to come with them . It hurt course you cant say "No" at times . You stop your life to help others , but who stops theirs to help you ?

Tears burned his eyes when he picked a cup of water and drank it all before putting it down .

Veronica: But you promised right ? This is for the last time !

Kagiso: (wiped tear) I swear .

A car beeped outside and he closed his books looking at his mother before he hugged her .

Kagiso: One last time .

Veronica: Ohk . Be safe .

Kagiso: I will .

He kissed her forehead before changing his shirt into a hoodie and sprayed perfume . Veronica frown looking at him and he took out his cap then took his phone.

Veronica: So you just pray perfume, you dont bath ?

Kagiso: (laughs) Ke tla hlapa pele !

{I'll bath when I get there }

They both laughed and he walked out going to the car . He got in the car and Breeze looked at his hair shaking his head before starting the engine and drove off . It increases everytime he sees it and now it was just passing his armpits . He gave him his card and shook his head changing gears .

Kagiso: (smiling) What ?

Breeze : Your hair is-

Kagiso: I'm not getting a hair cut .

Breeze: (laughs)Dont worry , I already made peace with that . You need to style it . Its - a lot- rich and huge .

Kagiso: Thank you but I'm not getting a hair cut .

Breeze looked at him and they both laughed as he sped off with them arguing about his hair .

At The Library.

Kagiso looked at the picture on his phone and looked at the girl sitting at the corner reading a book . He sighed wearing his cap to his eyes as his heart pounded and picked a book before walking over .

Kagiso : Hii . Can I sit with you ?

Ditebogo: knock yourself out !

Kagiso: Auch !

She stood up putting the books away and picked another one sitting down and he sat opposite her looking at her . She looked at him and couldn't help but catch site of those pink drawing lips . She sighed sitting back and looked at him .

Ditebogo: If your going to sit with me , then the least you can do is move the cap from your face so that I can see who I'm interacting with . You could be a serial killer for all I know.

He chuckled amazed before moving the cap from his face and wore it from the back looking at her. Her heart skipped when she received butterflies and swallowed looking at his brown eyes. His eyelashes were long and looked watery. Talk about a beautiful man. Holy mother!

Ditebogo: Ohk ...

Kagiso: I'm hungry. Why dont we go get something? I promise I'm not a serial killer. You can take pictures and store them in your phone or send them to someone with a writing of "last person I was with" for evidence if you go missing.

Ditebogo: (laughs) Your crazy. I could go missing but not in your hands and if they find that, you'll be arrested. Let's go, I've been here for long. I'm hungry too.

.

.

.

.

.

Later

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:57] Lynne : Chapter 76 .

Around 19h00

At the Mall .

They sat at the corner in Steers laughing their lungs out telling each other stories of their childhood. Little did she know that she was talking about someone he knows. He picked his drink looking at her and she picked a fry and ate it looking at him back .

Ditebogo: So do you have a girlfriend?

Kagiso : Yeah .. Do you have a boyfriend?

Ditebogo: No . I'm the kind that boys always look away when they see them and pick their friends over them .

Kagiso: So you never dated anyone?

Ditebogo: I did , but I always did the chasing. So I got tired and retired from forcing people to pick me over my friends.

Kagiso: How many friends were they ?

Ditebogo: I had two . Mpumi and Tumi . But they always chose Tumi more . I mean she didn't even try . All the guys I madly wanted picked her over me . Why ? I dont know . So I gave up at the end .

Kagiso: Then whoever those guys are , are stupid . Your a good, beautiful woman and intelligent. Their loss . Good thing you dont doubt yourself or let them make you feel any less about yourself , to question yourself. Dont let them change you .

Ditebogo: I wont . So how long have you been with her ?

Kagiso : Long enough. But I once stepped out of the way when I cought feelings for some girl . Lucky me God showed me another side of her that is hidden and I got back in line .

Ditebogo: And what side is that ?

Kagiso: She had sex infront of me .

Ditebogo: Aoww ! (Laughs) And you just stood by and watched?

Kagiso: I dont entirely blame her though. She was

married and she was at her house with her husband, I was only visiting.

Ditebogo: She got you good !

Kagiso looked at her and shook his head laughing. She just took his heartbreak and made it a joke to her. His phone vibrated on the table and he picked it looking at Odirile's message. He looked at her before taking her hand helping her stand and she quickly picked her bag pack.

Ditebogo: Where are we going?

Kagiso: I don't know. I just got a message to come home and someone is here to pick me. We'll drop you off.

Ditebogo: (laughs) You're lying. You just said you don't know then all of sudden you're going home.

Kagiso: (scoffed) Take the second statement. I'm going home. Sorry.

Ditebogo: It's ok. No need to apologize.

They stood outside the building when he tapped his foot on the ground not knowing which car he was waiting for . A car stopped in front of them and he opened the door for her but she stood there with second thoughts.

Kagiso : get in .

Ditebogo: (hesitantly) I think I'll just request an uber. Thanks a lot .

Kagiso: Having second thoughts about me ?

Ditebogo: No . Just that I'm not used to getting rides from anyone except those I fully know . I just met you

Kagiso: Ditebogo you just spend half of your day with me and I told you everything you needed to know even what just happened recently. I'm not a monster I'm a responsible guy .

Ditebogo: Responsible guys are the most dangerous one . You could be planning to sell my

organs for all I know , and I'm not ready to die yet .

Kagiso: (laughs) What ? Why would you think that?

Ditebogo: Because your too handsome to be kind .
You look like a bod boy ,and bad boys bring heaven .

Kagiso: So you think I'm good looking?

Ditebogo: Dont you have a mirror? Of course your handsome. Extremely good looking and I'm not taking any chances.

He scoffed looking at her when she breathed heavily before attempting to walk away but he pulled her by her waist . He pulled her too close to him breathing same air with her as her breathing changed . She bit her lip looking at his and he leaned in slightly touching her lips with his before he French kissed her . Her lips were so soft and tender . Meanwhile chills ran down Ditebogo's spine kissing his juicy soft lips , she could do this none stop . The kiss changed to a Lizzy kiss and from there to butterfly kiss then again to single lip kiss before back to lizzy kiss .

The driver turned looking at them and shook his head . With their breaths on high level with their body temperature , they slowly let go and put their foreheads together .

Kagiso : I could never hurt a girl . I would never hurt you . You can trust me .

Ditebogo: (blushes) then I think I might need that picture.

Kagiso: (laughs) Fine .

He stood back putting his hands in the pocket to hide his boner and she took out her phone taking a picture of him and sent it to Odirile. She smiled putting the phone away when her eyes fell on his hands trying hard to extend the pants so he wont show .

Ditebogo: (smiling) Get someone to take care of that

Kagiso : You should be the one taking care of it .
Dont start what you cant finish.

They laughed getting in and the driver drove off
taking her address though he knows it .

At Odirile's house .

Cars parked meters away from the house to clear
the suspicion , the yard filled with people having
booze and others busy with brai . You'd swear it
was some sort of a wedding or something but a
simple party . Bonolo walked out of the house in her
short elegant dress revealing her hourglass figure
holding a glass of wine and went to the pool site
where Odirile met her halfway and they kissed.

Odirile: My favorite person .

Bonolo : My dearest one

Odirile: I'm glad you were able to make it . I love you .

Bonolo: I'm glad to be here with you too . Where's Mrs party by the way ?

Odirile: She's on her way .

She smiled wrapping her hands around his neck and kissed him . Meanwhile Breeze sat on the camp chair with a beer in his hand looking at them and took a sip looking away . They broke the kiss when her eyes fell on Breeze and he looked at her and she avoided his eyes .

Bonolo: I'm going to use the bathroom. I'll be right back .

Odirile: Ohk

She cleared her throat walking away when Odirile's phone vibrated . He took his phone out and frowned looking at Kagiso's face on the picture she sent him

saying "Last person I was with ". Another messages followed from Kagiso saying were around the corner. He quickly wrote a message to someone inside the house to switch off the lights . The lights went out and everyone went to the yard behind the house and kept quite .

The car parked in front of the gate and Ditebogo sighed looking around the streets and only at this house it was dark . She sighed dialing Odirile but it went straight to voicemail. She looked at Kagiso holding his hand .

Ditebogo: Can you please accompany me inside ? I dont know what to exercises in there. I'll buy the electricity and then you can leave , you wont have to stay . Please.. I know you have to go but I'm scared to go in alone . Your my only hope .

Kagiso: Cool .

They stepped out and he slid the gate open for her and she got in leading the way to the house . He pulled her hand and led her behind .

Kagiso: I think it's best you start in the back . If their thief's, this is the last place where they'll expect you to show up first.

She followed him and he led her to the backdoor before sneaking away from her trying to open the door and went to stand behind a tree . Ditebogo tried opening the door when she realised it was open and her heart pounded.

Ditebogo: Its open. Someone is definitely inside .
(Turning)Would yo- Kagiso ? Kagiso ?

Her heart pounded when her knees got weak as fear consumed her and tears blurred her sight.

She took out her phone dialing Odirile when the light

came on and the crowd screamed "Surprise!"
Making her heart skip and the phone slipped from
her hand falling on the floor as she screamed in
tears .

Odirile walked over and hugged her rubbing her
back as she cried and more people followed.

Odirile: (smiling) Happy 23rd birthday little one .

Ditebogo: (crying) Im gonna kill him ! Im gonna kill
you all !

Odirile: Oh come on .. you should be happy. I love
you sis .

Ditebogo: I love you too bro .

They hugged again and Bonolo smiled hugging her.

Meanwhile Kagiso's smile dropped looking at
Bonolo hugging Ditebogo when he walked over but

stopped on his track looking at her hold hands with Odirile. Her smile was beyond and her outfit did not look like of someone who went to their fathers house.

He leaned on her ear and said something to her that made her laugh before wrapping her hands around his neck and they kissed .

His heart bounced with his jaws dropping and tears betrayed him once again .

On the other hand , Breeze sat on camp chair staring at him wipe a tear then he looked at Odirile still sharing a passionate with Bonolo. He can only imagine the pain . He stood up and walked over to him patting his shoulder watching him wipe a tear .

Breeze: Are you ohk ?

Kagiso: You knew about this ?

Breeze:

Kagiso: Wow ! I cant believe this .

Breeze: I'm sorry .

Kagiso looked at him and shook his head laughing in pain and walked away avoiding to catch Bonolo's eyes and went inside the house . He walked around when he spotted a mini bar and went to sit down grabbing a bottle checking the percentage alcohols he found Bruichladdich of 50%. He pulled a glass filling it and put the bottle down gulping the whole glass .

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:57] Lynne : Chapter 77

At Odirile's house

The crowd sang happy birthday outside , popping champagnes and all . Breeze walked around the crowd searching for Kagiso finding him nowhere. He took out his phone dialing him but it went straight to voicemail.

Breeze: (records message) Hey , look I know that your mad and I don't blame you for not picking up my calls . But at least let me know your fine . I'm worried here .

He hang up and someone tapped him from behind and he turned looking at Bonolo . He looked at her from head to toe before sipping his drink .

Bonolo: Hii . I wanted to ask for forgiveness about what I'm coursing. For putting you in a tight position between your son and your friend. Thank you for not saying anything yet and keeping this between the both of us .

Breeze: (smiling) Wa ntlwaela yoh !

He laughed walking away and met Odirile on his way . He sighed trying to avoid him but he cought up with him.

Odirile:Are you ohk man ?

Breeze: Yeah I'm fine . J ust looking for Kagiso. Do you know where he is ?

Odirile: No , I haven't seen him . He just left Ditebogo on the door and disappeared. Is he ohk ?

Breeze : No , he's not .

Odirile: What's up ?

He looked at him not knowing what to say to him. I mean you can't just tell your friend that he's screwing you sons girlfriend , and you knew this all along . Better if he also finds out himself.

Breeze: I don't know.

Dikeledi walked over holding a champagne and wrapped her arms around their necks covered laughing.

Ditebogo: This is fantastic! Thank you !

Breeze: You should thank him , he's the mastermind of this party.

Ditebogo: I know he did this with your help somewhere, so thank you too . By the way - (blushing) Who's that guy you sent to me ? The cute one . I didn't know you guys had such a charmer in your circle of life.

Odirile: You see ? I told you she can't resist a pretty face.

Ditebogo: Oh come on brother. Have you seen that guy mara ? I can resist man but this one , hai ! No marn . God outdid himself on him . Top 10 !

Odirile: (moved her arm) Ntlogele . You leave that guy alone . He's Breeze's son .

Ditebogo's mouth dropped moving her hands and looked at Breeze.

Ditebogo: You must be kidding? What ? How come I don't know him uncle Breeze?

Breeze: He stays with his mother . Excuse me .

He moved away passing in the crowd taking out his phone and dialed him again leaving them arguing about Kagiso.

Meanwhile Bonolo took her glass of wine and

headed inside to use the bathroom. She walked in and passing by people sitting on the couches laughing and others in the kitchen , and she climbed the stairs when someone held her hand.

Him : Hey beautiful.

Bonolo: Sorry I got a boyfriend.

Him : Who is he ?

Bonolo: The owner of the house .

The guy kissed her hand before winking and walked away . Meanwhile Kagiso recognized her voice and watched them talk . The fact that she even said her "Boyfriend " is the owner of the house filled his mouth and he stood up with the bottle and followed her upstairs without her noticing.

She got in the bathroom and closed the door behind her when it flew again and closed as she was about to undress and her heart skipped looking at the

back view. Kagiso turned around looking at her with a smile when her knees got weak and the pee slightly slipped out as her heart raced .

Kagiso: Excuse me ..you look familiar. Aren't you Bonolo?

Bonolo: (shaking) Kagiso what are you doing here ?

Kagiso: Oh , so it you. You know my name. The question is what are you doing here? Is this your daddy's house?

Bonolo: (teary) Step back! I'm here with my friends!

Kagiso: (stepping over) And who are those ?

Bonolo: Its my friends birthday. I was with her the whole day to distract -

Kagiso: Your lying. At this point, I not the kind you should be lying to. I'm calm and collected on the outside but furious in the inside , so don't you dare force me to do something I'll regret .

His tone was ice cold as he walked over to her slowly. Her eyes welled up in tears stepping back and hit the wall having nowhere else to go .

Kagiso: So again babe . Is this your daddy's house ?

Bonolo: (crying) ...

Kagiso: I'm also starting to hate tears. You guys tend to use them unnecessarily . So answer me sweetie. Is it ?

Bonolo: (crying)...

Kagiso: Ohk..

He walked back to the sink drinking his liquor and pushed the drain plug inside before opening the tap to release small amount of water looking at her .

Kagiso: Again. For the last time . Is this your father's house?

Bonolo: (crying) I told you I'm with a friend.

Kagiso: Your not answering my question.

He opened the tap and filled the water inside before closing it and pulled the sleeves of his Jersey. Bonolo heart pounded hard looking at him and more tears flowed . He picked his drink again and walked over looking at her. He smiled realizing that the walls were sound proofed and stopped in front of her .

Kagiso: Yes or no ?

Bonolo: (crying) Kagiso what are you doing?

Kagiso: I'm gonna drown you .

Bonolo: What ?

Kagiso: Only if you don't answer my questions. So what it gonna be ? Hard way or the easy way ? Answer the question.

Bonolo: I told you I'm here with a friend. I was sent to distract her an-

Kagiso: You think I'm bluffing , don't you ?

Bonolo:...

Kagiso: Ohk

He pulled her by her neck and she screamed walking towards the sink and she made her lean in screaming. He pushed her head inside and she fought trying to get out making bubbles but he was too strong . He pulled her out and she gasped for air coughing and he hugged her with one hand looking at the mirror with her still crying.

Kagiso: (smiling) Is it ?

Bonolo: (crying) No . It's not my father's house .

Kagiso: good girl . So how is your relation with Odirile?

Bonolo : We're friends. I swe-

He pushed her head inside again and she tried

getting out hitting his hand and splashing the water. Kagiso sipped his liquor twice before pulling her out and she gasped rubbing her face coughing . She tried to run to the door crying but he pulled her with her waist and stood behind her pressing her stomach on the sink . He moved her hair from her face looking at her cry on the mirror before kissing her shoulder up until to her neck then grabbed a handful of her hair .

Kagiso : (calm) I'm listening love .

Bonolo: (cough) Romantic.

Kagiso: Oh wow... I'm hurt . Do you know that ?

Bonolo: I'm sorry Kagiso . Im so sorry . I truly am .

Kagiso: For how long has this been going on?

Bonolo: Its been weeks . At first it was friendship until he told me how he felt about me . We met at the mall when I was (cough) when I was buying you mother food months ago .

Kagiso: Weeks ? Weeks Bonolo ? And you didn't tell

him you got a boyfriend?

Bonolo: I did but he kept on and on hitting up on me . I tried to say no countless times until I realized that I also love him .

Kagiso: You love him ? What about me ?

Bonolo: I love you . I swear to God. If I didn't I would have left you , but instead I stayed . But Kagiso what would you have me do ? You go missing and you dont call me . You leave me alone and I felt neglected. Always I was in tears wondering how your doing at the hospital worse worried sick if you made it out of town alive . And even so, you didn't even bother to call me when you woke up to let me know your fine . I went out searching for you for days . Then you returned and what do you do ? You go missing again without a goodbye or at least a trace to where I'd find you . I felt like this relationship had lack of love and low commitment to it .

Kagiso: So instead of waiting for me to explain you go on and lower your panties to someone I refer to

as an uncle? I bet you knew before the whole relationship of yours started.

Bonolo: I did and I'm sorry. I truly am . But you left me Kagiso ! (Crying) You left me! I wanted to feel loved and cared for. Plus you know I love sex so I had more sexual desires and you weren't there . I'm truly sorry if i hurt you but you left me no choice . I had to -

Kagiso: Would you please stop talking ! You had plenty of choices. Wait for me to explain or kill yourself for love . J ust shut up !

Bonolo: You said I should answer to you . Look I know your hurt and feel betrayed and I'm sorry . You have every right to be . I know you angry-

Kagiso: (chuckled) Angry ? Really?

Bonolo: Kagiso..-

Kagiso: You think I'm angry? No baby , I'm not angry . I'm murderous ! I want to kill you ! And you know who else ? Rosella Lyon and everyone that stabbed me in the back . I want someone's soul in my hand !

Her heart pounded looking at him on the mirror when he pushed her head inside . She shook her head trying to get out hitting his hand when she slipped but he still pushed her head inside-

-
-
-
-
-
-

Comment

-
-
-

[08/02, 13:57] Lynne : Chapter 78 .

In the bathroom.

Bonolo gagged as he pressed her head down with a neutral face and bit his lip pulling the bottle and drank the liquor. She slowly got weak and stopped fighting him when someone kicked the door and Breeze frowned rushing over and pulled him pinning him against the wall .

Breeze: (Shouting) Are you crazy ?!

Bonolo took out her head and gasped coughing out the water falling on the floor dragging herself to the corner behind the toilet.

Kagiso's anger brewed seeing her still breathing when he tried escaping but Breeze hit him against the wall and the bottle slipped falling on the fluffy math .

Breeze: Stop it ! She heard you !

Kagiso : Let me go !

Breeze : Kagiso don't force me to line you up right now . She's a girl for christ sake !

Odirile passed through the crowd that was standing on the door and stood at walked in looking at all the water on the floor and Bonolo coughing behind the toilet wet. He closed the door behind him so the crowd wont see anything and looked at Breeze pinning Kagiso on the wall by his neck all furious.

Odirile: Care to explain what is going on in here ?

Kagiso: Oh we were just having a little chat . Isn't it Bonolo?

Breeze : You call drowning someone in a sink full of water a little chat ? Are you out of your mind ? You could've killed her you stupid moron !

Kagiso: That was the whole point of drowning her . I want to kill her . Seeing her still breathing like this

makes me even angrier , let go of me and let me deal with this Jezebel !

Breeze: Do you hear yourself right now ? You wanted to kill her ? Kagiso killing her will not bring you any peace but torture for the rest of your life . Killing her will not make you any different from her but worse . A murder .

Odirile: (sigh) Why do you want to kill her ? Can someone at least shed me the light here course I'm confused.

Kagiso: Why dont you ask her ? She is the author of everything going on here .

Odirile looked at Bonolo curling herself into a ball at the corner crying holding her hurting neck and walked over going down on his knees touching her . He moved her hand from her neck and frowned looking at the hand prints and stood up looking at Kagiso.

Odirile: Bonolo please tell me what's going on here before I rush into conclusion course I ain't got bricks ?

Bonolo: (crying) I'm sorry. Kagiso for the one hundredth time I'm sorry . What do you want me to do?

Kagiso : Oh baby I want you dead . I want nothing much.

Breeze: Would you stop with the threats before I punch you in the middle of the face !

Odirile: Bonolo your ignoring me . Tell me what's happening here or I too will take the truth out of you both my own way. And it ain't gonna be nice , trust me.

She looked at him and wiped her tears hugging her legs and swallowed. Her mothers words played loud in her head when she started crying even more as they all three watched her .

Bonolo: (crying) He's my boyfriend.

Odirile: (gasped) Your what ? !

Bonolo: (crying) Its him . The guy I told you about .
I'm really sorry.

Odirile: So - he is the reason why didn't want to
spend time with me ? He reason why you didn't
want to come with me to Bre- hold on .. Breeze you
knew about this didn't you ?

Breeze: What I know or do not know is not the point
here . The point is Bonolo played the both of you
under your noses . Its wasn't my place to tell you.

Odirile: I cant believe this ! So she's the one that
you told me about whom you found with Kagiso at
the hospital half naked ?

Breeze: And how did this thing get to point at me ?
I'm not at fault here . This is your triangle , better
sort it out before one of you dies . I'm not part of it .
This is the same reason why I didn't tell your course
I knew I'd get cought in the middle of it . Y'all better
grow up and resolve this like people your ages not
teenagers, stop pointing your fingers at me .

Odirile: By keeping this to you as a secret , you signed yourself to get caught in the middle Breeze.

Breeze: I kept it a secret course it was none of my business. I also have a lot to deal with so your triangle was the last thing on my mind . If you want someone to blame for your heartbreak , there she is not me . So get off my back with this joke relationship of yours course I'm not in the mood .
(To Kagiso) Wena ! try killing her or doing anything to harm her or anyone, trust me Rosella and Bonolo will be the least of your problems. That also goes to you Odirile.

He pushed Kagiso off looking at him and took the bottle of liquor walking out pissed . Kagiso rubbed his neck looking at Bonolo and shook his head out of words and walked out coming face to face with Ditebogo smiling with wine in her hand .

Ditebogo: (laughing) Ohk this party just got interesting!

Kagiso narrowed his eyebrows looking at her and walked passed her as she got in looking at Bonolo at the corner and Odirile leaning on the sink . She closed the door smiling and stood in front of her brother leaning over widening her eye teasing him before laughing.

Ditebogo: (laughs) So what's popping? Heard someone was crying and one was pinned on the wall by uncle Breeze. And what's up with the water? And wena why are you wet ?

Odirile: Ditebogo you asked doe for a party and I threw one for you . Why dont you go and be with your guest before i lose it totally!

Ditebogo: I know that tone ..(smiling) She hurt you didn't she ? And then you got angry and tried to drown in there right ? That's why she's crying?

Odirile: You know ,for someone who's on her last year of law you prattle shit . Quit already, you wasting my money .

Ditebogo's mouth fell and he looked at her going to help Bonolo stand before picking her then they walked out.

Odirile: Clean up the mess .

Ditebogo: What did I do ?

In Odirile's room .

He walked in carrying her and went to put her on the bed before going to his closet and brought her his shirt without a word. She rubbed her tear looking at him and took the shirt .

Bonolo: I know I've done wrong but at least say something not the silent treatment.

Odirile: ...

Bonolo: Odirile please. Why aren't you saying anything?

Odirile: because I'm hurt , overwhelmed and angry . And with this three my tongue doesn't function pretty well . I'm quiet because I dont want to say anything that would hurt you or make the situation worse . You should be grateful I'm giving you the silent treatment, not everyone gets it from me .

She looked at him sighing before walking out and she busted in tears standing and went to take a shower .

Outside...Kagiso put his hands in the pocket and walked over to Breeze's car and breathed out before standing next to him leaning on the car .

Kagiso: I'm sorry .

Breeze: Do you know how serious a case of murder is? You could go to jail for 20 -25 years or get a

maximum penalty of life imprisonment. And then what would happen of your future? Your mother?

Kagiso: (swallowed) I was angry and hurt. My emotions were all over the place.

Breeze: So now you handle your pain with violence? Take out your anger on a vulnerable girl? You could've taken a life Kagiso that's not a light thing. How do you expect your mother feel if that girl had died in your hands? Yes she might still love you course your her child but do you really think she'd be proud of what you would've done?

Kagiso: No ..

Breeze: Kana even so, what you did tonight she can still go open a case and you'll be charged with attempted murder. And tell you what my boy, jail is not a child's play. Prison life is hard as fuck and its nothing like what you see on TV. No. Inside there are serial killers, gangsters, rapist and all sorts of people you can think of and anytime it could be a blood pool party. Kagiso killing someone is nothing like ABCD. After killing someone that becomes a

part of you and there's no way your going to escape that course it's like a weigh of darkness above you .

Kagiso: It won't happen again .

Breeze: It better not ! Course if it does you'll spend the rest of your life in dungeon. You're not the first person who is been hurt by a girl. I got hurt too, thousand times and I know it's not a great feeling , but you gotta learn how to take control. Don't let your emotions take over , it could go bad . If you had killed the girl not only will you have lost your humanity but your dignity as a man. Your future down the drain.

Kagiso: I'm sorry I truly am. I know what I did was uncalled for . But I'm hurt. A lot. I am in pain and it hurts even more that I can't handle it. I spend months trying to save someone , I lost my lifetime trying to rescue someone from her own darkness . And what do I get out of all this ? heartbreak , pain. And there's Bonolo. She pretends to care and love me knowing very well that she is with someone else. I mean who does that ? like for real who does that ? I know that I'm broke ,and I know that I'm from a poor

background but don't I deserve love ? don't I deserve someone to be there for me when I need them ? someone to care about me . Why does everyone i love always have to betray me ? betray my trust and play with my feelings like this ?

Breeze: if I were you I'll be happy that I dodged a bullet. Girls can be pain in the ass. If she can leave you this should show you how the less she cares about you. She can even lie in your face, look you in your eyes and tell you a different story and the outcomes becomes something quite different from what she told you. I think this is a great thing in disguise. This also gives you an opportunity to focus on your life , you got school to focus on. It's about time we gather yourself and focus on you. Think about yourself for once in a while. Build yourself first and then you can help build others later. Bonolo and Rose are not the only girls that are alive on this planet. There are a lot of girls out there who would be grateful to have you as their man. So killing her is not an option. Actually killing was never an option but a choice. You still have a lot to

live up to than going to prison only because you killed someone out of pain. Just imagine going to prison because you're hurt. I think it's the dumbest reason for 1 to go to jail for. Girls may come and go but just remember there is only one who is constant, and that's your mother. Remember that everything that you do not only would it affect you but her in the process. So think twice before you act. I'm going to get another bottle.

Kagiso looked at him walk away and sighed rubbing his face before getting in the car.

In the backyard...Odirile picked a bottle out of the cooler box just as Breeze walked over and he grabbed two of them.

Odirile: look I'm sorry man. I shouldn't have blamed you like that. I now realise that you didn't tell me because you wanted me to find out myself. You were right this is on me and them, we gotta fix that

on our own and leave you out of this.

Breeze: it's cool man , I did try to warn you thought and you shut me out saying that I don't want you to be happy. So I thought maybe if you find out yourself you'd be able to predict what you want. I'm also sorry that it didn't turn out how you expected.

Odirile: I just don't get why should lie to me. I never give her the benefit of the doubt. I thought we were open with each other.

Breeze: she's a girl ,what did you expect , pile of pancakes with honey and a cherry on top?

Odirile: (laughs) you know just because Abigail hurt you doesn't mean that all girls are like her? Gail situation is quite different from ours .

Breeze: she's a girl like her. So there's nothing different about them from each other . They all got p**** and they all got boobies. So they use them recklessly to hurt us. But anyway.. where are you going to do about it?

Odirile: I love her very much. So I think I'll try to mend things between us. I'll try to forgive her for

lying about this and I hope next time she won't repeat the same mistake.

Breeze: good luck with that! Just don't get those hopes up too high. I'm taking Kagiso home so I'll catch you later.

Odirile: How is he by the way ?

Breeze : He's still angry and hurt . I want to take him away from here before he does another stupid thing he'll live to regret for real this time .

Odirile: Ohk .. I'll call him and sort this out with him tomorrow.

Breeze: Ohk cool .

They fist bumped and Breeze walked to the car and he walked the house .

Breeze: I want you to make a promise.

Kagiso: What promise?

Breeze : That you'd stay away from girls for now

and allow yourself to heal . To focus on your studies and never come back here until your done with your exams . That you'll study hard and make your mother proud. To focus on you and what you want . To put your needs before other people's. To work hard and take care of your system course after what you've been through, you need spiritual healing . To go back to being you but not the too caring kind .

Kagiso :(smiling) I promise .

Breeze: Promise what ?

Kagiso: I promise dad .

Breeze: Good .

They both laughed as he reversed carefully not to hit other cars and drove off .

.

.

.

.

.

.

. 3 months later

.

.

.

.

Comment .

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:57] Lynne : Chapter 79

At the taxi rank .

A couple sat on the two plastic chairs not moving changing positions as Kagiso kept looking at them and used his paints to draw them. His work was improving daily and more people came to him for their drawing and to buy traditional jewelry. He stepped back smiling looking at the picture and put the paint down turning the canvas to them . It was like they had taken a picture and just plucked it there after a little bit of editing.

Woman: Wow this is beautiful . I cant wait to put it on the wall in our house for everyone one to see when they get in .

Man : I totally agree . Man this is impressive. You've got a gift .

Kagiso : Thank you. I really appreciate your support .

Voice : Can I also have one of my drawings specially drawn with your hand? And a little bit of a signature at the bottom.

Kagiso : (smiling)" A little bit of a signature " Hii Ditebogo.

He said that turning with a smile and she smiled sitting on a crate . He turned looking at the couple and they paid him before he lifted the painting to their van and bid goodbye as the drove off . He put the money in the pocket and sat down as another customer sat on the chair.

Kagiso : (smiling) Hi . What can I do for you ?

Boy : I want a picture of my face drawn with a graphite pencil only on a 20 × 16 in canvas .

Kagiso: Cool . Is this for your room ?

Boy : (smiling) Yeah . I kind of want to decorate it course we just moved in . It's empty so I thought a little bit something on the wall , as a memory of moving here for the first couple of days .

Kagiso: sounds amazing !

He started drawing when Ditebogo picked the crate and went to sit next to him watching him draw . He looked at her and smiled continuing with the drawing.

Kagiso: How did you find me ?

Ditebogo: It took sometime , but what matters is I made it .

Kagiso: So they told you where I stay ?
Blabbermouth's .

Ditebogo: Come on , you should be happy to see me . I mean after what you did , leaving me in the dark ,you owe me the warm welcome for coming after you. And then for leaving without saying goodbye.

Kagiso: I had reasons why I left without saying goodbye ,I didn't want anyone to find me. Especially people from around that town.

Ditebogo: Is Bonolo and Rosella the one's behind your disappearance ? Come on dude . It's been

three months. Let that slide . Let it be water under the bridge. Why are you still holding on to the past? Like you said you had your reasons to leave , so why are you still holding on to what happened between the three of you ?

Kagiso: I guess the scar ran too deep .

Ditebogo: there's no such thing as this scar went too deep. You can't heal if you're still holding on to the pain and in order to do so you need to forgive yourself first before you can take another step.

Kagiso: Forgive myself for what ? I did nothing wrong.

Ditebogo: You did . You're the cause of your own unhealthy heart and somehow I feel like not only are you scared to get hurt , you're now scared to love . But anyway I'm not here to play doctor Phill , I'm here to visit a friend.

Kagiso: And emotionally suck me .

Ditebogo: Yeah, that counts . I want to know know why you left without saying goodbye for three months without a word ?

Kagiso: I left without saying goodbye because I was not in the right state. I am sorry that I didn't say goodbye. Hold on... you came all the way here just to ask me why I didn't say goodbye?

Ditebogo: I guess I did , didn't I?

Kagiso : Or maybe you had your reasons (smiling)
What is it ?

Ditebogo: Nothing. I just wanted to see you.

Kagiso: why ?

Ditebogo: Does one need a reason to see you ?

Kagiso: Technically, yes !

Ditebogo: Well I guess when you spend some quality time with someone, even if it was fake you tend to get lured in out of curiosity to get to know them and build some sort of relation .

He stopped drawing and looked at her when she smiled looking away before looking at him as he bit his lip . The boy looked at them and giggled distracting them when they coughed embarrassed

and he continued drawing his face . She licked her lips remembering their steamy kiss and just by looking at his veined hand , her mind goes wild . She pulled herself together clearing her throat when Kagiso blushed shaking his head and continued.

Ditebogo: What ?

Kagiso : Nothing.

At the Lyons Mansion.

Jack walked down the stairs in his summer shorts and a man vintage shirt whistling heading to the kitchen. He had lost few kilos and his shape was now getting back to of the person his age. He took out a cucumber and lettuce preparing to make himself a salad when Rose walked in and took out strawberries without a word .

Jack: Hello to you too Rosella.

She turned looking at him and put on a two second sarcastic smile before walking away climbing the stairs . He watched her as she jogged on the stairs and sighed putting everything back since he lost his appetite .

Meanwhile, Jane walked on the hallway holding her waist with the huge bump leading the way . She's been having backaches since morning . Her uterus muscles contracted when she stoped walking balancing herself with the wall twisting her face until they relaxed . She heavily sighed feeling the urge to go to the bathroom coursing by the baby's pressing her bowel then suddenly her water broke .

Jane : No no no ! (Screaming) Jack ! Jack !

Jack's heart skipped putting the dishcloth down and rushed up the stairs and smiled looking at Jane . He

rushed over to her and wrapped her hand around his neck and walked with her . Rose got out of her room pacing whe she saw her mother heavily breathing as they walked downstairs . J ane turned her head looking at Rose following them .

J ane : Baby get my back in the closet . The blue one .

She clenched her jaws as the urge to push washed her and Rose ran to get the bag .

J ane : (crying) J ack I'm dying! Let's move faster! I don't want to give birth in a car please ! Rose!

J ack bit his lip and picked her gasping at how heavy she was but kept going until he got to the car and guard opened the door for him then he out her inside. Rose ran out of the house with the bag and got in balancing her and J ack closed the door

taking the keys driving out in speed as screamed.

St Breezes house .

Breeze pulled the bar on the Pulldown machine and his muscles twitched as sweat dripped all over his body . He exhaled letting it go and stood up grabbing the towel and wiped the sweat standing on the treadmill switching it on. He started running increasing the speed listening to the music playing and he sang along. Usher confessions 2 .

These are my confessions

Just when I thought I said all I can say

My chick on the side said she got one on the way

These are my confessions

Man I'm throwed and I don't know what to do

I guess I gatta give you part two of my confessions

If I'm gonna tell it then I gatta tell it all
Damn near cried when I got that phone call
I'm so throwed and I dont know what to do
But to give you part two of my confes-

The music cut when he turned his head looking and
shook his head stopping the treadmill . He heavily
breathed looking at Odirile and wiped his sweat .

Breeze : It has always been in you my friend to spoil
my fun.

Odirile: You call working out this much over sad
music a way of having fun ? There's must be
something fundamentally wrong with you .

Breeze : Mxm .. what do you want? Is Bonolo not
there to entertain you today ?

Odirile: well if you should know, my baby is a phone
call away to entertain me. So I don't need to over
exercise to entertain myself like you do.

Breeze: good then. Take out your phone and call her course I can see your bored .

Odirile: Oh come on I'm not bored , I'm worried about you . You've been cooked up in here for three months and only go out when going to check Kagiso or buy something to eat . If not going to find out about the divorce. (Shrugged) You need some air. Let's go out and have two left feet.

Breeze: I'm not going anywhere.

Odirile: You know the fact that you always take an order as a question irritates me sometimes. I wasn't asking. We are going.

Breeze: Are you gonna make me ?

Odirile: Yess , by all means . Even if ill have to burn this whole house down along with the memories to get you out .

Breeze looked at him before walking out of the gym room and he followed him to the bedroom and threw himself on the bed .

Breeze: Dude , I'm going to take a shower. No need to keep an eye on me naked , I'm not going to run away. Privacy please .

Odirile: What privacy? Get over yourself, if there's something I haven't seen before I'll put 10 k on it .

Breeze sighed defeated and threw the towel on him before walking into the insuit .

Odirile: (shouting) did I ever tell you I like your tattoos ? So adorable. I love love . Makes you do crazy at times . Now look , where is she ? Gone . And you're left with nothing but a reminder on your skin . Your so stupid !

Breeze peaked on the door looking at him searching his drawer taking out a book leaning on the headboard .

Breeze : (press) Dickhead .

He bit his tongue putting the book on his face laughing and Breeze sighed going back to take a shower .

Thirty mins later they walked out of the house and went to Odirile's car driving off .

At The taxi rank.

Kagiso stood up putting the pencil on Ditebogo's lap before turning the drawing to the boy and he smiled taking out the money .

Boy : I love it . Thanks a lot .

Kagiso: I'm glad . Take care man .

Ditebogo stood up looking at the traditional jewelry

and picked a bracelet wearing it . Kagiso looked at her packing his pencils before standing next to her and smiled .

Kagiso: Looks good on you .

Ditebogo: So you made this ?

Kagiso : Not all of them , but that one yes. Some are made by mam'Silvia. She's not here today.

Ditebogo: This are beautiful. You'll force us to wear this as a fashion trend.

Kagiso: (smiling) it wouldn't be for the first time with you . Most people this day wear traditional attire as fashion . You like it ?

Ditebogo: I love it . I'm keeping it .

She searched her purse and took out R50 giving it to him but he declined it .

Ditebogo: No Kagiso, your running a business here .

You cant let your correlation with people get in the middle of it . You need to -

Kagiso: I'm not letting my correlation with anyone get in the middle of this job I'm doing. I'm only giving this to you course I owe you an apology .

Ditebogo: So it's an I'm sorry gift in a way ?

Kagiso: Something like that .

Ditebogo: Well I don't need any gifts, I need you to say it on my face not to wrap me with jewellery's . I came all the way here just so I can look you in the eyes saying it .

Kagiso: (smiling) So you came all the way here to look at my eyes ?

Ditebogo: Their beautiful, attractive and sexy , do you blame me ? I wasn't the one that told your parents to come together and have you . So apologize.

Kagiso: (laughing) Girl your crazy. Who travels a long distance to look at one's eyes ? You sure there's nothing wrong with you?

Ditebogo: Stop insulting me and apologize .

Kagiso: Why are you here Ditebogo?

Ditebogo: To collect my apology from you since you couldn't come say it yourself .

Kagiso: No ...I mean the main reason why you here ? Stop lying to me that you traveled all the way from where you come from just so you can get an apology from me , course you ain't getting any heartfelt one .

Ditebogo bit her lip looking at him and swallowed playing with the bracelet on her wrist.

Ditebogo: I wanted to see you. I don't know why but somehow I felt like you are there best person to be around. The first day I met you I thought maybe you were there only to seduce me into your bed but it turned out different. I know saying this sounds crazy and offenseive but I just can't seem to the stay away from you. The little time I spend with you ,

meant a lot to me. I was mad that day course none of everyone I knew said happy birthday to me.

Which is kind of childish. And then you came along and swept all the pain of the day. But I guess it wasn't meant to last. So what I'm saying is I'm not here for an apology you're right , I'm here for you. I'm here because I wanted to see you .

Kagiso: (smiling) I knew it . But I meant it , keep the bracelet.

Ditebogo: I told you I don't need you to give me this as an apology .

Kagiso : then take it as an appreciation gift.

Ditebogo: Appreciation for what?

Kagiso: for being the first girl that ever cared about me and the little moments I spent with her. I appreciate you .

She smiled looking at him and he smiled back pulling her into a hug . Her alarm rang in her pocket and she took out her phone switching it off.

Ditebogo :Its time for me to leave. I dont want to arrive late .

Kagiso: Thank you for coming to check up on me . And being here with me for the daily hustle , you hold the key girl.

Ditebogo: Your welcome. Bye .

Kagiso: Bye .

He watched her walk away and cought a taxi before he packed everything and put it in his wheelbarrow heading home smiling.

At the hospital.

Jane clenched her jaws with her legs apart and sweat dripped off screaming feeling her cookie crack open. One could never get use to this pain . It was like an extreme pain that take your breath away

and makes you unable to talk . All you focus on at this stage is getting the baby out .

Midwife: I can see the baby J ane . Push dear ! Its already here.

She grabbed the sheets blowing air before clenching her jaws again and pushing feeling the baby's head popping out . She screamed to the last as the baby slid out and she collapsed on the bed weak crying. The midwife cut the umbilical cord and wrapped the baby carefully smiling.

Midwife: Its a healthy baby boy . Congratulations .

J ane weakly smiled laying on the bed and the midwife went to wipe the baby while others took care of J ane .

After a while they pushed her to her ward and she woke up to feed her baby.

She smiled looking at him suck her breast when a tear escaped her eye . This was definitely Breezes...
The door slowly opened and Rose walked in with Jack standing besides her .

Rosella : (smiling) Mom he's cute , dad look at him .

Jack: (smiling) I'm the happiest man alive at this point. Thank you my love .

He leaned in kissing her with tears flowing out and he took him gently and carefully from her arms slowly rocking him happily .

Jack : Have you thought about a name yet ?

Rose : How about Tristan ?

Jack : Tristan? Really ?

Rose : Come on dad . I know I'm bad at names but I love it . Please . Mom please...

Jack: Ohk then Tristan Agang Ly-

Jane: (low) Air ..

Jack: What ?

Jane : Air ...His name is Air . Air Tristan Lyon.

Tears filled her when she covered her face crying.
She just named him after his father and he doesn't
even realize it course he's too happy to ask
questions behind the name . How cruel can she be ?

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.
. .
[08/02, 13:58] Lynne : Chapter 80 .

At the hospital.

Jane looked at the baby in a cot and sighed looking away . Having the baby was a good feeling but the thought again of losing her husband course of all this just made her cry . Yes she was in love with the father but the pain and betrayal she is planting was growing day by day in hours and minutes .

She pulled her phone underneath the pillow and rubbed her tears dialing Breeze . He picked with a loud music and people screaming at the back .

Breeze: Hii . Hold on .

He got away from the crowd and the noise to where she'll be able to hear him .

Breeze: Hey.

Jane : Hi , how are you ?

Breeze: Apart from being forced to party , I'm doing just fine . You ? .

Asking her if she was fine just wasn't a good idea course then tears started flowing. She put her hand on her face as guilt and whirlwind emotions consumed her .

Jane : (crying) Breeze I love you. -

Breeze : I thought we were passed that . Jane you messed up my family . Both my wives want nothing to do with me because of you .

Jane : I know and I'm sorry. But the feelings I have for you grow daily and I dont know what to do with

them . At the same time I dont want to lose J ack.
He's been nothing but a good husband to me .

Breeze: See . Then why don't you fix your marriage
course trust me, me being with you not only will it
put you under depression but it'll kill you . I drove
my own wife insane and another one , I broke her
now she's leaving me . And as if that wasn't enough
you took Sagi from me . I'll never forgive you for
that . J ust so you should know. J ack loves you ,
very much . You guys have been together for a long
while , don't let your affections for me get in the way
of your happiness and marriage.

J ane : I understand. But Sagi assaulted me .

Breeze: J ane tell me love , ever since you met Sagi
has she ever acted shady , been unkind or tried to
inflict pain to you ?

J ane : No . But what counts is that she did in the
end .

Breeze: She did because she was angry staying
home avoiding drama and you browled at her . You
knew about her condition yet you went there to start

up a fight with her knowing very well it'll never end well for either of you . Now my wife is laying in a mental pris on with my baby where I can't protect them . Who knows how it'll change her ? It's been 4 months J ane ! Four ! You cant even survive four months without your tantrums imagine how she is in there .

J ane: (crying) I'm sorry . I was acting impulsive and thought of no one other than my own happiness .
But-

Breeze : No buts , you dont love me J ane. You hurt me beyond my imagination taking my wifes away from me . The feelings you have are just absurd. I recomend counseling or therapy. This ain't healthy for you and the baby .

J ane: (sigh) I'm at the hospital. It's a boy .

Breeze : (smiling) Are you serious ?

J ane: Yeah ..you can come see him . J ack and Rose went home to prepare for my return.

He hang up without saying anything further and she sighed looking at the baby . She smiled before touching his cheek and took her phone taking few beautiful pictures of his little hand . She covered him and sat back logging on Facebook posting them and on WhatsApp. Within 3 mins comment started flowing in and with more like and she replied everyone of them .

At Abigail's home .

Abigail's sister Priscilla layed on the couch busy with her social media when she scrolled down and came across a picture of a baby's hand on a white baby blanket. She smiled liking it and viewed more before commenting. She realized that it was Jane's when she quickly stood up and ran to Abigails room where she found her laying on the bed in shorts busy with her laptop.

Priscilla: Why didn't you tell me that Jane was

pregnant?

Abigail: I didn't know that i have to report my soon to be ex family to you ? What are you ? Some sort of a judge J udy?

Priscilla: Whatever..she gave birth to a baby boy named Air Tristan Lyon. How adorable are the names?

Abigail: (shocked) Did you just say " Air "?

Priscilla: Yeah ..its a cute name isn't?

She quickly got off the bed and snatched the phone from her looking at the picture. Her anger brewed when she quickly got dressed with her sister laying on the bed and took her car keys going out .

At the hospital.

Breeze and Odirile walked down the corridor looking for her room and finally found her . She looked at

them walking in and smiled moving the blanket from the baby's face .

Breeze walk over to the baby cot and smiled looking at the baby before holding his soft hand looking at Jane .

Breeze : Thank you.

Jane : Your welcome.

Odirile: (snapped) ' Your welcome' ya eng ? Ng ng , he's not welcome. He is fucked . Now that the baby is born, he is fine and healthy, I think it's time you pop the pimple.

Breeze : No ! Not now .

Odirile: Why wait ? You do realize the more you wait , that's the more the baby grows and him and Jack get to bond with you as a cast out . Remember he doesn't want you near him after the kiss you guys shared .

Jane : I agree with Odirile. The more we wait the heavier it gets . I also feel like its time we come

clean about this . If I lose him , then I lose him . I dont want to carry on holding my breath hoping he doesn't find out. Its tiring . And if it happens he finds out about him when he's older , this will be devastating for our baby . It'll affect him .

Odirile: Exactly wena J ane . At least for once we have something in common we agree on . Breeze just think this through . I mean aren't you tired of keeping this from your brother . Fine the baby was a - (clear throat) right that , love -

Breeze : "a" what ?

Odirile: I was about to say loophole .(gave him a dare look) But I didn't, dont look at me like that . You forced it out of my mouth. That's not the point. The point is you guys have to come clean . That way you'll be able to see your kid whenever you want than to sneak behind your brothers back .

Breeze sighed looking at the baby before looking at them and put his hands in the pocket.

Jane : For Air Breeze. Please .

Odirile: (coughed) ' Air ' you named him Air ?

Jane : Yes , after his father. I hope he doesn't mind since he-

Breeze: I dont . (smiling)Actually it is a great name .

Odirile: You have one hell of an insect liver woman .
Mother Mary ! Remind me to never cheat on my girl .
I feel for Jack. I truly do .

Breeze: (sighed) Fine . Well tell him about this tomorrow.

Odirile:(slipped) I wish he slaps you with divorce and kicks your cheating ass out of that Mansion.
And today I will bow down and pray till I got no words left , for the rain to fall like never before with you walking on the streets of this town holding nothing but your rags and your stupid degree.
(Smiling)That would be awesome!

Breeze: With my baby .

Odirile: oh .. without the baby . He takes the baby before slapping you with the divorce papers.

Breeze: And does what with him exactly?

Odirile: Why are you interviewing me . You want me to say something to you either, fine . I wish he beats your backstabbing ass and kicks you out of his house . And then later sue you for breaking his marriage apart like this ! Happy ?

Breeze: Do you hear yourself when you talk? Or think before you talk .

Odirile: Truth to be told , I dont !

Jane: Do you know how much your words hurt? Have you ever had anyone wish you like that without hiding but saying it in your face like you do ? How would you feel if someone says all that to ?

Odirile: No , never had one . I'd feel rather fine , course that person wouldn't live a week without a piece of me . Actually Breeze told me shit at my sisters party and he's the only person that does.

At the Lyons Mansion.

Abigail parked her car and took out her phone looking at the picture on Facebook. This was supposed to be hers . She rubbed her eyes before stepping out of the car and shut the door behind her walking to the house . She held her breath putting the pin by the door and it showed a green light unlocking ,she sighed walking in . She heard someone humming a song in the dining room and went there finding Dineo wiping the table.

Abigail: Hii .

Dineo: Hii Mrs Lyon. How are you ?

Abigail: I'm good . Is J ack around?

Dineo : Yeah he just got back to prepare for Mrs Lyon's return. I'll go call him for you .

Abigail: Please do . I'll be on the bar .

Dineo: Yes mam .

Dineo walked upstairs and she walked to the bar sitting on the high chair pouring herself a glass of

whiskey. She smiled looking at it before shaking her head drinking it .

Jack walked over to her and they hugged before he sat on the chair next to her pouring himself a glass .

Abigail: You look well. Lost a little weight .

Jack: (smiling) I'll take that as a compliment. How are you by the way ?

Abigail: I'm good . Fantastic.

Jack: I see, Breeze is treating you well .

Abigail: Actually he's not . We are getting divorced.

Jack: What ? Why ?

Abigail: Because a bitch tore us apart. But anyway how are you ?

Jack: I'm happy. (Smiling) Jane gave birth to a baby boy . Healthy and strong . If I'm not the happiest man alive then I dont know.

Abigail: Happy I see . I aim to change that .

Jack looked at her as she poured him more liquor and poured one for herself.

Abigail: Tell me . Why is it that you and your brother never talk anymore?

Jack: Why do you want to know?

Abigail: Course I want to play some sort of a professor? Fill you in on the parts your missing . Shoot .

Jack: What parts are those ?

Abigail: Just tell me why Jack ?

Jack: I found them kissing behind a house at Rose's wedding. I told him I want nothing to do with him and that I don't want him near my family ever again. Though I might have said some harsh words to him in the process.

Abigail: Come on dont feel bad . Do you know why your brother would kiss your wife ?

Jack : I dont . I tried asking Jane but she keeps giving me run arounds . So i decided to let it go .

Abigail: Well (gave him a glass) I think it's about time we fill you in in this circle of ours , dont you think? Everything happening in the Lyon Family until to the baby's birth name . Air .

She smiled folding her legs and he looked at her before she started spilling every bin including hers .

At the Mental prison.

Sagi layed on the bed in her white clothes facing up rubbing her bump . Everything around the room was white including the floor. She slowly caressed her bump looking at the light before turning to the side taking out a white toothbrush that had a sharp end .

Sagi : (slowly)

Twinkle twinkle little J ane
How I wonder how you are .
Up above the world so high
Like a darkness in the sky

She kept singing that song on the same paragraph
until the light went out but kept on singing in the
dark .

-
-
-
-
-
-
-

Comment

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

[08/02, 13:58] Lynne : Chapter 81.

At the Lyons Mansion.

Jack looked at her as she drank her whiskey and he picked his glass gulping it .

Jack : You said you and Breeze are divorcing, how do I know your not lying to me ?

Abigail: Do really think I'd travel miles and avoiding accidents just so I could get here to lie to you ? How stupid do you think I am ?

Jack: Your not stupid, you're starting to act bitter because he doesn't revolve around you anymore so you come here to tell me all this - nonsense. I mean do you expect me to believe that my Jane was pregnant with my own brothers child ?

Abigail: Believe it or not I dont care . Though I was expecting a different kind of reaction other than the tables to turn to me . (Sipped) But its ohk . Let's make a deal ?

Jack: I'm not making any deal with you . You've said enough about my wife and I won't tolerate more .

Abigail: Your reaction to this I guess it's a good sign . I know it's hard to find out about her and Breeze like this . Especially from a soon to be divorcee . It's hard to believe, I get that . But remember no one is a saint . So here is the deal - Why dont you go and ask her ? Put them in the same room and tell them I told you and you want to know why ? Include my name when asking them course that way they wont have anywhere to hide their lies . Or to make it easier for you to believe,

run DNA tests.

Jack: That baby was born yesterday, I cant just plug an injection into him , he's still fragile.

Abigail: Are you stupid or your slow ? Blood test is not the only way to confirm if the baby is yours or not . Cut his hair , take his saliva for christ sake!

Jack : I think you've said enough.

Abigail: if you think I'm lying or making this up to get back at Breeze then fine , I'm not the one that'll be living in a web of lies . Raising another mans child as my own .

She finished her drink and stood up looking at him before she left . Jack looked at her walking out when it all sank in. She didn't want to get intimate with him , was it becouse Breeze was always there to tickle her on his behalf. But Jane would never do such a thing to him . He pulled the bottle as second thoughts swiped into his mind , she could also be right .

He stood up going upstairs and after min came back with his car keys and left to the hospital.

At the Mental pris on .

Still singing, She turned looking up in the dark and started smiling rubbing her bump getting off the bed . She walked to the wall touching it with her eyes closed before taking the toothbrush and cut her finger . She flinched clenching her jaws biting her lip and put her bloody finger on the wall as a mark of spending the fourth month in here . Every side in the room had her bloody finger print counting months .

She moved from the wall and went back to bed putting the cut finger in her mouth sucking the blood until she dosed off.

At the hospital

Jack drove around the parking lot anxiously looking for Breezes car . His heart pounded with every second looking at the cars from far when he see a sport car then get find out that its not his . He went to the next line searching but still couldn't find it .

He drove out of the parking when he noticed a familiar registration on the car by the exit and stopped looking at it . It was a black Mercedes. He took out his phone and logged in of Facebook searching for Ditebogo then went through her pictures coming across the same car with the same registration. This was definitely Odirile's car .

His heart pounded so hard when he reversed into a parking space nearby and switched off the engine stepping out closing the door. He jogged to the lift and waited for it to open then got in pressing the button countless times for it to close .

His heart got heavier and heavier the more he got closer to her ward. He wasn't supposed to be here actually course it's late patients have got to rest .

He stopped on her door and sighed listening carefully.

Inside

Breeze carefully held the baby in his arms slowly rocking him with a priceless smile on his face . Odirile looked at him taking out his phone to capture this moment and looked at Jane.

Jane: What ?

Odirile: (whispering) You know just because I agreed with you on something it doesn't give you the power to swoon under his skin thinking I won't pull you back in the favours of the baby. Tell you what , I will . This guy is a married man with a wife whom you sent to Jail to get him and has a child on its way . You destroyed his family using Air as leverage , no more. You're a part of him now , your his weakness because he can't do anything to his child

mother ,but remember your not mine . If I dare find you crawling next to him , I'll drag your doctor as far away from him . Ever since what happened, he's been down and doesn't think straight so that makes me his shield through this difficult time . I love my friend J ane , he's the only brother that I have . I won't let you try happy family with Sagis tears and taking advantage of his weakness. If I dare even ones find you sneaking towards him , trust me what you did was nothing. I'll deliver a worst nightmare.

She looked in his stone cold eyes and swallowed looking at Breeze walking around with the baby . Her heart beat races when she pulled the glass of water drinking.

J ane: he already told me countless times that he doesn't want me .

Odirile: Then its about time you put your ears to use course I wont play soft with you . You will stay away from Breeze and only interact with him as

parents to Air, not lovers . You got that?

Jane: (swallowed) Crystal .

He pulled a smile tucking her hair behind her ear when the door slid open and Jack stood at the door looking at them.

Breeze turned with the baby looking at his brother, and could tell that this was not good at all .

Meanwhile Jane's heart pounded so hard looking at Jack licking her dry lip when Odirile whistled.

Odirile: And there comes Batista! Go tile go nyewa.

Jack: So it's true that you guys have been sneaking behind my back and even had a baby ?

Jane: (teary) Hunny I can explain.

Jack:(closed the door) Please do sweetheart .

Maybe it'll make me understand why you'd sleep with my brother and have a baby with him course I'm angry right now . I'm growing violent.

Jane: Please don't hurt my baby . Please .

Jack : Can't promise anything at this point love. Talk

.

Breeze: If you dare harm my baby Jack , I'd care less if your my brother . I'll rip your head off and make it watch as I stand on your dying crops . I don't mind going to jail remember that .

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .

[08/02, 13:58] Lynne : Chapter 82

At the hospital.

Jack looked at Breeze unbelievably then turned to the rest of them scoffing.

Jack: can you believe it ! the nerve of this guy.
Breeze you got the nerve to look me in the eye and threaten me after what you did to me. After what you did to my family! Really you look me in the eye and promise to cut my head off after what you did with my wife! How dare you!

Breeze : look I know what I did was wrong I have no excuse for that. What I did was beyond measure and you have to believe me when I say I didn't plan

to have a baby with her. It was just a moment we had. One thing led to another and she got pregnant. I'm really sorry. I was mad after what you've taken from me ,I was mad that you ripped me a chance to get loved by our parents . And I know that this doesn't give me a right to sleep with her , worst have a baby with her.

Jack: but you did , didn't you ? You both played me for a fool. You let me live under your web of lies . Jane how do you live with me in the same house and look me in the eye ,and watch me as i caress your bump knowing very well that it was someone else's child and not mine?

Jane: (crying) I'm sorry. I swear to God we didn't plan this , it just happened out of nowhere and we both couldn't hold back . I'm truly sorry.

Jack: How long has this been going on ? How long did you have sex and where ? !

Odirile: Sorry , but you don't want to know that . No .

Jack: You stay out of this ! This is a family matter and your not family! So keep your mouth shut or

walk out of here course your presence is not really needed here!

Odirile : Right ! But actually I'm here as a friend and my presence may be of help . Remember your little brother has one hell of a temper that he hides under that mask of his so anytime he can grab your neck and stop the air from passing or worse - break it . So in other words im standing here to protect you.

Jack: Mxm . How long Jane ?

Jane looked at him before looking at Breeze and rubbed her tears as they rolled uncontrollably. She put her hands on her face and busted in tears with Breeze trying not to scare the baby hiding his ears . Odirile looked at her narrowing his eyes . He couldn't help but everytime when he sees this woman his stomach just gets upset.

Odirile: Let me clear the way for you Jack so that you guys can get this over and done with. It happened in her office when he was comforting her

after the tragic incident Rose has . More than 3 rounds if you ask me. (Chuckles) No wonder girls called him Beast . Surely this guy right here fuck for everything to go where it has to be . And- at your house . (Smiling) On your bed. So that makes it twice (hand gesture) Two . Damn !

Breeze looked at him not knowing what to say when he shrugged sitting back on the chair . Meanwhile Jack looked at Jane as tears burned his eyes and his heart ached ready to crack in the middle.

Jack: On our bed ? Did you enjoy it ? Was it good ?

Odirle: of course she enjoyed herself. It was good. Did I forget to mention that she kept coming for more and even tore his family apart. Baby girl wanted that dick for real dude. She loved it !

Breeze : Would you shut up ! And let me deal with this!

He woke the baby when it started crying and he clenched his jaws giving him to Jane before rubbing his face . Jack looked at him as rage started to build up with every breath he takes .

Jack : Breeze you tore my family apart .

Breeze: I know , and I'm sorry Jack.

Jack: (to Jane) What's that that he has that I dont Jane ? What is it about my brother that made you lower your panties for him but not me ?

Jane : (crying) Nothing, I swear to God. Nothing .

Jack: Dont say its nothing when you kept going to him for more living me stranded in the house .

Clearly he gave it to you good and your soul got tied to his . Do you love him ?

Jane : ...

Jack: I'm asking you a question Jane ?

Odirle: Of course she does . I mean look at Breeze. He's in shape and all . Tell you what , Breeze has sick fantasies surely she got dragged to him

because your sex drive is low . His is high . He can't marry two wives if it wasn't. So Jane wanted that . That's why she fell for him .

Jane : Shut up ! You dont know what your talking about. Stop talking course your not even part of this . Jack I love you . I love you only .

Jack: If you do then why ?

Jane: (crying) It was a moment we shared. Non of us planned this to happen. I'm sorry . I have no words to describe how sorry I am . I'm truly sorry.

Jack: Jane I've done everything - everything to prove myself to you . I loved you throughout . Over the years I've done nothing but being a good husband to you . How could you do this to us ? Me ? (To Breeze) Breeze your my brother . Maybe if it was someone else from the streets that did this but you , you hurt me beyond my expectations. Having a baby with my wife , this is on another level of hatred towards me . You brag about me and James taking our parents from you , I used to feel sorry and wished if I can take the time back so we could

grow and I'll have what you have with Odirile. But not anymore. Right now I remember how much I hated you . I hate you with every cell in my system. And I'm glad our parents didn't live to see what of a disgrace you've grown to be . You've grown vengeful and heartless towards your own blood . Maybe you and I were always meant to hate each other . You'll pay for this in blood..

Breeze looked at him.as his heart cracked. He opened his mouth to say something but words stuck in his mouth and he turned rubbing his face facing the other direction. Jack looked at him expecting a reply but he didn't and that angered him more with the fact that he turned his back on him .

He roughly stood up from the chair pushing it back and went to pull Breeze by his hoodie pinning his against the wall throwing a punch. Breeze returned it when Jack punched his on the stomach . He grounded in pain before hitting him with a spear and they fell on the floor getting on him and threw multiple punches. Jack rolled him also and got on

top of him throwing punches .

Meanwhile Jane cried looking at them screaming for them to stop but her voice wasn't heard and on the other side the baby cried also . She turned looking at Odirile who sat on the chair smiling and eventually laughed then punched in the air .

Jane:(shouting) Are you serious? Aren't you gonna do something?

Odirile: What ? No . This is just getting fun . Besides you heard the man , this is a family matter. Why should I get involved?

Jane: Their both angry Odirile ! They could hurt each other or worse!

Odirile : Come on darling their already hurt. You hurt them . Now I want you to look at this . Look at them as they fight . How do you feel about yourself knowing your the fuel in this brotherly feud ? Huh ?

Jane :(crying) Odirile please... I'm sorry . Stop them .

Odirile: (taking the baby) No love , your going to

stop them . You started it . End it !

He took the baby from her arms and rocked him as Jane looked at him in tears . She bit her lip looking at them roll on the floor then took the drip out before getting off the bed still in pain crying.

She tried pushing them apart but they were too strong for her. She moved away from them grabbing her glass of water breaking it on the floor .

Odirile: That's a dumb move !

Breeze rolled on Jack punched him in anger before grabbing his neck tightly blocking his air way .

Odirile gasped quickly putting the baby in its cot still crying while Jane stood there not knowing what to do other than cry . He tried pulling Breeze off him but he held on to Jack's neck as he turned red and veins appeared on his forehead.

Odirile: Breeze that enough! You killing him ! Dont just stand there go call security!

Jane quickly went out and Jack kept slapping Breezes hands but he wasn't letting go but instead had a neutral face with no emotions or any facial expression. Odirile tried pulling him back but even so he just didn't let go . Jack used his hand to find anything close on the floor when he touched a glass pulling it .

Odirile saw it and tried to take it but Jack was too fast stabbing it in his chest. That's when he let go falling on the floor holding his chest as blood went out uncontrollably. Odirile quickly went on his knees trying to stop the bleeding with his hands as Jack struggled to stand coughing while the baby cried .

Odirile: Common man ! Jack are you crazy ?!

Jack: He was going to kill me !

The security came rushing in along with a nurse and went to Breeze attending him . One of the security went out to call more doctors as the nurse applied pressure to his wound . Jane took her baby calming him still crying and looked at Jack rubbing his neck with bruises on his face . Odirile's eyes welled up in tears looking at Breeze feeling guilty when the two doctors and a nurse walked in with a bed . Odirile walked next to them and helped lift Breeze on the bed before they went out to attend him .

Odirile: This is on you Jane ! All you !

Jane : I told you to stop them and you said I should!
This happens course of that high horse of yours!

Odirile: Dont you dare pin this on me ! Or else-

Jack: Or else what ?!

Odirile: Protective husband! I like that, that's cute .
Or else I'll make her wish she never met me . That also includes you .

He looked at them before going out following the doctors.

Meanwhile ...Jack rubbed the blood coming from his nose and sat down rubbing the blood by his eye .

Jane: What have you done ? You could get arrested for this .

Jack: It was self defense! Why are you even defending him ? You said you don't love him .

Jane: I said I didn't love him not that I don't care!
He's your brother for christ sake !

Jack: My brother died a long time in a flaming house . That right there - is a vision of the one that died . The Breeze I knew was never like this , he was innocent ,pure,untainted. That's a monster. You made a baby with a devil himself. And I dare find you near him or him near that baby , he'd wish he didn't survive death in my hands twice .

Jane: (crying) But it's his child . What even makes you think he'll survive a glass on the chest ?

Jack: He's a survivor. He will make it . And I'll torture him till I take my last breath. He'll pay for destroying my happiness . Even if I'll have to hurt him where it hurts the most .

Jane :(held the baby tight) What do you mean ?

Jack: (smiling) We all know a way to hurt a man , is though his heart .

Jane: Your not harming my baby Jack .

Jack: Common sweetheart, Breeze doesn't have one child . He has three children.

Jane swallowed looking at him smirk rubbing the blood on his mouth . All she can wish for right now is for the cops to get here as fast as they can and get him out course she cant stand this sudden Jack before her .

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:58] Lynne : Chapter 83

At Kagiso's house.

The next day.

After bathing , he put on his pants and went to

dispose the water in a bucket. He got back and grabbed his shirt wearing it and went out of the house walking to the gate . He stood there looking at the street as kids played along on the road caring less about what life holds and what will happen after their done playing. He sighed thinking how fast time flies .

Bonolo's car passed by and they looked at one another as she drove along when his phone rang .

Kagiso: Uncle Od.

Odirile: Hey man . You good ?

Kagiso: Yeah..I am , you ?

Odirile: Uhm ..kinda . Look - are you busy with anything ?

Kagiso: I'm done with my exams . And besides hustling on the streets , nop . Why ?

Odirile: So your not doing anything for today ?

Kagiso: Today I was gonna take a day off .

Odirile: Ohk. Can you please use the day to come check on your father . He's in the hospital. The one you were admitted to .

Kagiso: What happened?

Odirile: I'll explain everything when you get here.

He hang up and Kagiso bit his lip looking up at the sky . He shook his head going inside and took some money he made yesterday then took his Jersey putting on a cap and went to look for his mother.

Veronica walked from behind the house where they planted veggies looking at him walk over. She sighed holding her hips .

Veronica: Your going to the city aren't you ?

Kagiso: Mom Breeze is at the hospital. I dont know what happened but I need to check up on him . He's been nothing's but a father I always wanted. He's been there for me , I want to be there for him either.

Veronica: You know I'm starting to get worried

about this whole chosen thing . Its driving me nutts actually.

Kagiso: What do you mean ? I'm talking about someone I deeply care about who's In hospital and I'm -

Veronica: I heard you very well . J ust that I'm worried that not only were you chosen to save the girl , but it seems like the rest of the family for her sake .

Kagiso: No mom , just Rose . But that is all over and done with . Right now I'm focusing on me and those that really matter in my life . Rose was just a chapter in my book of life . Made peace with that months back.

Veronica: ohk .. But your not going to stay there for the rest of the week. I know you said you have your room and all but you need to get back here .

Kagiso: (smiling) I will .

Veronica: I know how much you care but , I also need my son by my side .

Kagiso: I will be back. I promise.

They hugged before he kissed his cheek and went out.

At Bonolo's house.

Bonolo washed her hands in the sink getting ready to eat when she saw Kagiso walking out . She pushed the curtains to be sure then rubbed her hands on her shorts walking out .

Nolo's mom: Where are you going?

Bonolo: I'm going to say hi to Kagiso. He hasn't been talking to me after what happened and its been months. I'm getting tired of this whole thing. Its torture enough that he didn't talk to me for 3 month. Or at least a Hello.

Nolo's mom: (shaking her head) No no no Bonolo .

Leave that boy alone . Your with Odirile now . You've hurt him and that's enough. If he doesn't want to speak to you , then honor that for once.

Bonolo: But mom, all I want from him is to know how he is doing and that's all . I wont bother him .

Nolo's mom : If he's ignoring you then take it as an "I'm doing well without you " . You dont even have to ask , you can see he is fine . Take your food and eat , stop chasing Kagiso . He's had enough of you .

Bonolo: But -

Nolo's mom: No Bonolo.

At the hospital.

Odirile stood by the window looking outside. He's been standing there since the call with guilt written all over his face . If he had stopped the fight before it heated up maybe he wouldn't have been on that bed . Thank God he didn't lose a lot of blood and the glass didn't go in too deep.

Breeze slowly opened his eyes looking at the white ceiling and frowned at the pain on his chest as flash backs played in his mind. He turned pulling the glass of water drinking before looking at Odirile looking stressed by the window.

Breeze: If that face is about me , I'm fine .

Odirile turned smiling with relief and walked over hugging him .

Odirile: (smiling) I swear to God, if you sleep that long again , I'm gonna suffocate you with a pillow.

Breeze: (smiling) pretty great actually, thanks for asking

He pulled from the hug punching him playfully on the shoulder before he sat down.

Odirile: For real man , are you good ?

Breeze: Your concerns about my well being, are quite touching. (Smiling) I'm good . Seriously. It doesn't hurt that bad .

Odirile: Doctors said the glass didn't go in to deep , and you didn't lose that much of blood . They stitched you.

Breeze: Yeah , i can tell .

Odirile: Sorry i didn't stop the fight . That was selfish and careless of me . And maybe your right, this high horse of mine makes me irresponsible.

Breeze: I didn't say your irresponsible, I said it makes it hard for you to see others .

Odirile: it's the same thing . I'm truly sorry.

Breeze: Its ohk , what matters is your here. This wraps it all .

Odirile: (laughs) You talk like a lady now.

Breeze: F*** you . Where's is he ? Jack ?

Odirile: Oh the cops took him in . You guys almost

killed each other .

Breeze: I wasn't going to kill him. You of all people should know I don't kill , I intentionally wanted him to experience agony.

Odirile: yeah .. but you were on the lose , you should have seen yourself.

Breeze: Trust me , I wasn't going to do that . I have kids , what example will I stating to them ? That its ohk to kill ,more especially your sibling? I'd never do such a thing. Not in my mortal life , no matter how I hate a person, I'll never put them in a body bag.

Odirile: Right . Oh and by the way , your kid is on his way as we speak.

Breeze: You called him here ?

Odirile: Yeah .. I thought maybe he should come and check on you .

Breeze: Odirile I sent him away for a reason. This city will break him. He has never had a good experience ever since he stepped here . His life just

gets mixed up and he ends up losing himself, you know that . He is still recovering.

Odirile: he doesn't have to stay . He'll be here to check you that's all . Besides, (sigh) he deserves to know about his father don't you think?

Breeze looked at him and drank his water laying back staring at the ceiling.

At The Lyons Mansion.

Rose kept checking the watch on her wrist and its been hours . She doesn't exactly know the time he went to the hospital but its been quite a while now . She layed down on the couch when Dineo walked in with a tray and a glass of juice.

Dineo: You look like a mess . What's up ?

Rose: besides waiting here for my parents to show

up , life is what's up .

Dineo: Want to talk about it?

Rose: (smiling) I'd rather not.

She picked her juice and drank it as Dineo looked at her before sitting next to her.

Dineo: I know your free . Recently you smile , you laugh and your energetic. You no longer lock yourself in your room , crying all day . But dont you think bottling things that bother you inside are going to pull you back to where you started?

Rose : (sigh)

Dineo: Rosella you know I'm always here for you , you can talk to me about everything , I'm your shoulder to cry on . I wonder judge you or see you in a different way after this .

Rose: months after I got married, I lost my eyesight and the only person that could help me get it back was my uncle son. Kagiso. The one we saw

brutally beaten by a community on Facebook.

Dineo: Oh yeah , I remember. The criminal.

Rose: Actually he's not a criminal. Apparently they misunderstood what was going on . He was getting out of his girlfriend's house and they thought he was stealing or committing something unlawful.

Dineo: Oh .. so he's the one you fell for at the hospital when you went out with your uncle?

Rose : yeah ..him . So one day he called and assured me that he'll help me past this and I didn't doubt that . He came to my house and took me to the traditional healer and she told us everything. Got back and the next day I asked him to have sex with me since he was my one true husband, but he said I was still married and didn't want to - you know- fiddle into that .

Dineo: Sounds like a responsible guy .

Rose: He is. Then my ex husband got in and confessed his love for me and then boom , had sex with him without considering Kagiso feelings. I got lost in the moment just because I wanted to have

sex and in the process I lost someone dear to me .
The only person I love with all of me . And I'm afraid
I won't get him back. I lost him for good .

Dineo: ...

Rose: He went through pain and suffering just to
reach out to me and I gave him my back . Countless
times and now he's gone . I hurt him so much , even
I myself wouldn't handle the pain I brought to him .

Dineo: ...

Rose: You should have seen how he looked at me
the day I got my eyesight back. Like a regular
person not the same Rosella Lyon he fell inlove with.
I could hardly recognize the Kagiso that stood there
infront of me . The look. (Teary) And then he
walked out as I screamed his name on top of my
lungs , but he didn't turn back. He left.

Dineo: I'm so sorry .

Rose: I'm having a hard time dealing with the fact
that I'll never get to be with him . All this smiles and
laughter are just a filter of how broken I am inside.
This is a promise I made to him that I'll make the

best out of everyday and smile , but I can't and it hurts Dineo. (Crying) Uncle Breeze won't even tell me where to find him , even uncle Odirile. They don't want me near him and it's so clear that neither does he . I cant put up with the pretense of being happy when I'm not ! I'm hurting ! I'm hurting and no one from my family realizes that! It hurts Dineo!
(Crying)

Dineo pulled her into a tight hug and she cried even more holding tight to her.

At The mall .

Abigail walked around with a shopping basket picking food that were appetizing to her . She walked to the drinks section and picked two fizzy drinks and went to pay .

Meanwhile Mxolisi walked passed the shop she was in and spotted her paying. He went to stand on

the benches and when she went out he stood up following her .

Mxolisi: We should stop meeting like this .

Abigail: You mean, you should stop stalking me .

Mxolisi: Out of all people in this world, why would I choose to stalk you?

Abigail: Let me guess- Because your lonely, and bored . Because you want me to keep apologizing for things that happened months ago ! Get a life ! I'm sorry!

Mxolisi: (smiling) why are you yelling ! Yes I wanted you to keep apologizing till I heard enough, but realized it's just a waste of time. So I'm over it . As long as he makes you happy.

Abigail: Yeah right .. not anymore.

She walked to her car and opened the boot putting everything inside with his help .

Mxolisi: What do you mean not anymore?

Abigail: we're getting divorced. You can go pop a champagne! Hooray!

Mxolisi: Are you crazy? Why would I celebrate something like this ? Yes I wanted him to miss a step but never thought of celebrating someone's broken heart. Why are you guys even divorcing? Thought you loved each other .

Abigail: Well Mxolisi, sometimes love is just isn't enough.

Mxolisi: Got an idea of that . So what's up ?

Abigail: I realized that I wouldn't be able to handle the pressure. And that he'll have to go there and be with her for time beings for the child sake plus I thought that I forgave him while actually i didn't. The woman he cheated with gave birth and named her son after him . How will I cope with that ?

Mxolisi: To me sounds like your just making up excuses to get out of this marriage. J ust saying .

Abigail: What ?

Mxolisi: You both cheated Abigail. Sagi should be the one leaving not you , at least that would be understandable and make sense. He cheated with Jane and you with me . His part just happened to bear an apple. You could have been pregnant with mine eighter . You not being able to cope or wouldn't is just something you use to leave this marriage though you love him . And the fact that you cant forgive him , your just telling yourself that because you don't want to .

Abigail: I can't.

Mxolisi: Not that you can't Abigail, you don't want to . And you keep using his mistakes to cover that up .No one is incapable of forgiveness just that we dont want to forgive those who wronged us . But anyway that's your choice . Good luck .

He closed the boot for her before kissing her cheek and went to his car driving off as she stood there looking at him . She bit her lip and got in her car

starting the engine and drove off.

At The police station.

Jack sat in the holding cell by the corner with his hands on his mouth as everything swiped in . Regret and anxiety to find out how he is doing ate him from the inside and out. He's the only one that's left for him and he can't go to jail for murdering his brother .

He acted out of anger though he still wishes to inflict him more pain than the physical pain. He wants him to feel the pain he feels right now even though it'll hurt till eternity of his life . Not murder .

He rubbed his face and went to lay on the mattress .

At the hospital.

Kagiso walked to Breeze's room and sighed getting

in . They both turned looking at him before smiling as he walked over hugging Breeze on the bed .

Kagiso: (smiling) You look well . Why are you still laying here ?

Breeze: When you hugged me you raised the pain . But I'm good. I also don't know why their still holding me here.

Odirile: They said you'll get out of here tomorrow, stop being a baby .

Breeze : Hospitals smell bad . I want to get out of here , look what I'm wearing. I need a proper shower and proper clothes. Not this thing.

Kagiso: You should be grateful your leaving tomorrow , I spent months in that same thing .

Odirile: Exactly old man , take a lesson from the kid and be patient. You'll be out .

They both chuckled as Kagiso pulled the chair and sat down .

Breeze: How is everything going?

Kagiso: No - Let's start of how you ended up on this bed. Care to tell course I'm all ears .

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

[08/02, 13:59] Lynne : Chapter 84

At the hospital.

Kagiso sat back with his finger slowly rubbing his lower lip and another hand folded on his chest listening . Odirile stood up and went to stand by the window looking outside then sighed turning to them

- .

Kagiso: So you just stood by and watched as they fought?

Odirile: like I said , i didn't think it'll escalate so fast .

Kagiso: How can you even tell a lady that just gave birth to stop the fight between two men ? She's still in pain and weak !

Breeze: It was not his fight and definitely was not the one that fueled it . He only wanted us to sort out our issues but it turned out different than he expected it to be. It's a hospital, who would've thought we'd heat it up in here ?

Odirile: And of course-a family matter .

Kagiso: All I'm saying is you were reckless.

Odirile:(smiling) And you should watch it when speaking to me. I apologized.

They looked at each other as Breeze kept gazing at each of them . He could tell that the staring was not only about him , but also about Bonolo.

Breeze: I thought you were over her .

Kagiso: Your gonna have to be a little bit more specific.

Breeze: oh please- drop the act ...why else would you look at each other like that ? Of course its Bonolo.

Kagiso:(stands) I dont know what your talking about

Breeze: Kagiso, the love you gave that girl was not really supposed to be given to her in the first place . She even proved to you that she doesn't even deserve to be loved by you . You took weeks without all of this , you were healing . Dont let yourself into all of this drama again course this time you'll lose yourself. And somehow it scares the crap out of me course I wont be able to save you from yourself. And all that would be happening course of a girl . J ust let her go already.

Kagiso: I'm going to get some water . (To Odirile) I'm sorry . Didn't mean to offend.

Odirile: You didn't. It's cool.

He walked out and Odirile sighed sitting on the chair

Odirile: This is bad man . I messed this kid's relationship and I get to look at him and pretend like nothing happened?!

Breeze: You also didn't know that you were getting in between. I'm sure he'll find a way to understand all that . He's still hurt ,he'll get over it .

Outside Rose's car parked outside and she got out fixing her shirt heading towards the building when the door slid open and her heart skipped before pounding looking at Kagiso . She slowed down as he bit his lip looking at her and passed her .

She took a deep breath with her shattered heart pumping so fast and jogged over to him .

Rose : Hii .

Kagiso: Hii .

Rose: How are you ?

Kagiso: I'm good , you ?

Rose : Uhm.. I am getting there .

Kagiso: Great to know .

He kept pacing and she couldn't keep up when she pulled arm .

Rose : Would you at least slow down and talk to me !

He sighed stoping and turned looking at her . She looked at him back as her breath changed and she looked away not knowing what to say . The embarrassment of what she has done swiped in and the pain .

Rose : I'm sorry .

Kagiso: Sorry for what ?

Rose :

Kagiso: Come on darling, sorry for what ? For stopping me or sorry for ripping my heart out of my chest ?!

Rose : For everything Kagiso! For dragging you into my life and everything that's happening right now course it's all because of me . I know I'm the last person you wish to see right now and I understand why your angry with me af-

Kagiso: Why does everyone keep thinking that I'm angry? I'm not !

Rose: Kagiso stop doing what your doing! Your hurting me .

Kagiso: Hurting you ? I'm not doing anything Rose . I'm not hurting you . J ust guilt and shame that's feeding on your feelings , not me . Why did you even stop me ?

Rose: (teary) Course I want to tell you something that I've been meaning to tell you ever since we met . I love you Kagiso ! I thought eventually it'll fade not seeing you but it makes me go crazy . I miss you in my life and even now I'm still missing you though

your standing right in front of me .

Kagiso : No love , you dont love me . If had , you wouldn't have landed in bed with someone else in my presence just after you asked to have sex with me , blind or not .

Rose : (crying) Dont say I don't love you course I do . Believe me when I say that your the only pers on I think of . I keep myself busy with the little things just so I can fulfill my promise but its driving me nutts course I cant be with you . The day you walked out of that door you left a gap in my heart and it cant be fulfilled until you come back to me. I need you in my life course without you , I feel like I have no purpose. I smile but with a dark broken heart, I wake up with a heavy heart , and only you are capable of making me feel happiness and joy . I love you and I need you Kagiso.

Kagiso looked at her before smiling and pulled her into a hug. She hugged him tightly crying and he slowly rubbed her hair then cubed her face with her

hands wrapped around his waist.

Kagiso: You do have perpose sweetheart. Your a daughter of the most respected family . Your rich with nails but most of all - Your a friend , daughter and a niece. Though their rich they are looking up to you to make a change . To be a better person than to cry over a man that wants nothing to do with you.

Rose : Kagiso no ..

She pulled back looking at him and he sighed taking out his phone and sent Ditebogo a message before putting it back and looked at her .

Rose : (crying) How could you have fallen so far ?
Kagiso I love you . I love you so so much . I wish I had said this before you left my life and I'm going to always regret not saying so the rest of my life . I know I hurt you . I hurt you so bad that even

thinking of seeing you with another woman having sex in my mind is nothing but beyond . I know i cant take back time and undo what I did but please let me try to correct my mistakes in the future where you are with me. Your the perfect man in my life and I'm sorry for doing all the horrible things I've done to you . I'm so sorry for the pain I've course you .

Kagiso: I hear you love - but would you still be sorry if your weren't cought or seen by me ?

Rose : (crying) I was married Kagiso-

Kagiso: See I thought as much . Unfortunately sorry is not enough Rose .

Rose : Kagiso give me a chance , I can prove to you how much I want you, how much I love you ! It wasn't my intention to hurt you .

Kagiso : Look - Rose you hurt me . You hurt me more than everyone else has . We weren't dating but the pain of seeing someone you love whole heartly with another person making babies , that's like million nails to the heart . (took her hands)

Rosella I'm hurt . A lot . And I hate myself right now

course I can't hate you so I hate you for that . I hate you course I can't hate you . You said I was angry with you , but I'm not , I'm hurt and there's a huge difference between the two . Not only are you at fault but so am I, course i let you in thinking you'll hold my heart with both hands and keep it safe . I was wrong .

Rose : (crying) Kagiso I love you , I know I-

Kagiso: I know . I know you love me and trust me I love you too , but it's not working. I won't be able to pretend like this never happened. If I do - I'll end up hurting you and I'd hate myself even more for that . So it's best I let you go .

Rose : (crying) You're the one that I have to be with .

Kagiso: Rosella I only followed this shit your friend said to save you -

Rose : So if it wasn't that you wouldn't ha-

Kagiso: No darling- I did that out of love . And not for a second will i regret helping you course i love you . But I won't let the dead predict my future, why the hell do you ? We tried and it didn't work, so let's

just call it out . Rosella your a beautiful young lady .
Your a survivor and your strong . Dont let me stand
in the way of you and your happiness . You'll find a
man that'll love you more than anything and you'll
forget that you even had me in your life.

Rose : (crying) I don't want him , I want that man to
be you . I love you Kagiso dont you hear me!

Kagiso: And I love you too !

Rose : Then why wont you give us a chance ?!

Kagiso: Course I cant ! Not now and not ever . I'd
rather be something else than a lover to you . I'm
sorry.

Her heart sank as she looked at him before turning
to walk away but stopped as tears rolled out .

Kagiso swallowed looking at her then she turned
looking at him .

Rose : I love you. You know one day you'll wake up
and realize how much I did . And when that day

comes I wouldn't be there course I would've waken up with that same guy you put on my laps .

Kagiso: And I'd rather wake up alone than wake up to your face next to me .

Her jaws dropped looking at him as he walked away crossing the road . She bit her lip before busting in tears and turned heading inside caring less what people are saying or if whether they're looking at her crying .

At the Police station.

Abigail sat in on the chair tapping her foot countless times when the door slid open and Jack walked in with cuffs sitting down .

Jack: I guess you heard - bad news indeed travel fast

Abigail: What the hell do you think your up to ?

Jack: I thought you didn't care .

Abigail : What part of divorce does it state that you don't care ? Besides he's still my husband for christ sake. I'm not yet ready to become a widow.

Jack: Now you completely lost it . Why would you think I'd go that far ? And why would you become a widow course your no longer together ?

Abigail: Like I said we're still married. Jack I didn't tell you all this just so you can go on a killing spree. He's your brother for God's sake! Couldn't you guys sit down and sort this out like adults?

Jack: Abigail you came to me and told me all of this becouse you wanted to make him feel pain . You knew how I was going to react otherwise why would you tell me something so hurtful ?

Abigail looked at him with nothing to say before putting her hands on the table and sighed .

Abigail: Yes I want to hurt him , but I don't want him dead . He could've died, what were you thinking?!

Jack: He was going to kill me if I hadn't stabbed him . It was either me or him , and I chose myself.

Abigail: (smiling) Now I believe your both born from the same womb . But I'm afraid I'll have to rectify you a bit . Breeze is a lot of things but not a murder. He wouldn't even try to kill someone as much as you , his sibling. Your the only person he has as his family. He loves you and cares about you though his ego doesn't allow him to let go of the past . So he's vengeful.

Jack: You know I used to think that maybe one day not now , we'll find our way back to each other as the same blood but I was wrong. The only thing Breeze knows how to do is inflict pain to those around him . And somehow he always has someone with a sweet tongue to smooth things for him then everything goes on as if nothing happened. Not this time . I'm going to hurt him like nothing before. Your divorce will not be nothing compared

to what I'm cooking for him .

Abigail: What are you going to do ? Burn his club ?
Steal his money? Burn his house to the ground ?

Jack: No Abi. I'm targeting the ones he hold close
to his heart and as we speak they have air in their
lungs . I aim to change that .

Abigail: (angry) If you dare lay hands on Sagis baby
and Kagiso you'll get a piece of me , I swear to God !
If you want to be a child killer , go for Rose or Air
and leave my kids alone !

Jack: (smiling) You little bitch- This is a police
station and why on earth will I kill my children?

Abigail: You have totally gone off the road in that
head of yours . Touch my kids and you'll know
what I'm capable of .

She stood up and walked to the door before looking
at him.

Abigail: And I hope you know what you'd be getting

yourself into if you touch them . Sagi ? Nx-nx-nx .
Knowing her she wont hesitate to slit your throat ,
and I mean literally slit it . And then Breeze , if he
can choke air out of your lungs, imagine what he
could do worse . Kagiso , I heard rumors about him
also . He turns out to be quite dangerous when
angry and in pain, devil himself. You've got the ball
in your hand, play carefully, dont let the heat burn
you .

Jack : I wouldn't hold my breath.

She winked at him before smiling heading out and
he sat there as thoughts skipped his mind .

At Coffee Cafe

Ditebogo sat opposite Kagiso looking at him
explaining but all her mind could think of was their
kiss . It was so damn hard to get it out of the head
especially looking at his juicy lips . She hated it

talking to him about other girls , because she herself was one and madly attracted to him .
Looking at his jawline and his adams apple was like looking at some TV character standing right there in front of her . He scoffed revealing his well packed teeth saying something and she couldn't help but smile picking her cup sipping her coffee. This was definitely the man from the motherland.

Kagiso: (smiling) With that I walked away and why are you smiling ?

Ditebogo: I'm smiling?

Kagiso: Should I say your blushing?

Ditebogo: (blushing) Oh please, why would I blush ?

Kagiso: You tell me .

She looked at him when he raised his eyebrows for an answer making her blush even more until it turned to laughter putting her cup down.

Ditebogo: Its nothing, really.

Kagiso: so you just blush out of blue ?

Ditebogo: apparently. So in other words your pushing her away?

Kagiso: Its not like I have any other choice . I can't look her in the eyes and not think of what I saw that day . And when I do , every inch of my body wants to grab her and hit her against anything and everything that is around me until she is laying in pool of blood .

Ditebogo: You've got serious anger issues. That's not normal .

Kagiso: I know . And that's why I try to avoid anger at all costs course I don't want to get my hands dirty though sometimes I cant control myself.

Ditebogo : And you'd rather push her away ?

Kagiso: What would you have me do ?

Ditebogo: Kill her .

Kagiso: What?

Ditebogo: If that'll ease the pain , then get it all over with . Wear gloves and a mask and go suffocate her in a tub full of water . When your done wipe everything to clear the evidence and move on .

Kagiso: How are you even a lawyer?

Ditebogo: the same way you hide your identity behind your pretty face .

Kagiso: (scoffed) You think I'm pretty ?

Ditebogo: Dont you have a mirror?

Kagiso: I don't really use it .

Ditebogo: Whatever- Do you still love her ? Them ?

Kagiso: I'm not sure course I'm still pissed . They both betrayed my trust and divided my heart into two equal parts for themselves.

Ditebogo: But you still love them ?

Her tone was different. He looked at her as she stared back at him without any emotions but her neutral self . He sighed pushed the coffee aside and

balanced his hands on the table looking at her .

Kagiso: Are you ok ?

Ditebogo: I'm fine, but your hurt . Why don't we take it all out ? Let's talk about the feelings you have for them . Are they strong to still build a relationship? Or their on low battery?

Kagiso: In between.

Ditebogo: Why did they sink so low ?

Kagiso: Course I thought I had a place in their heart , but all along I was fool . To them I am like a candle and burnt when needed . Rosella used me to pull herself from her darkness and tossed me aside when she finally did . Bonolo used me as a sex toy (chuckles) who would have thought ? But somehow I don't blame them course I too was absent in mine and Bonolo's relationship and me and Rosella weren't exactly in a relationship. I feel like I'm overreacting and it hurts.

Ditebogo: I can see your hurt . Why dont you just

tell them how you feel to ease the heart before making any decisions? They love you too .

Kagiso: What's the point? I cant even look at them . And no they dont love me course if they did , they wouldn't do what they did .

Ditebogo: You sound like a polygamist. I know it hurts to love someone and not get the same love in return , I've been there and I know it's not a great feeling. But do you know what hurts more ?

Kagiso: What ?

Ditebogo: To fall for someone so badly inlove and never have the strength and courage to tell them how you feel . That's what hurts . Its hurts Kagiso .

He looked at her as she still stared in his eyes before grabbing his coffee drinking it since he wasn't. He pulled the cup from her hand putting it on the table and held her hands in his .

Kagiso: Is there anything you want to tell me ?

Ditebogo: No .

Kagiso: Are you sure ?

Ditebogo: 100 %

He looked at her not satisfied with her answer biting his lip and stood up pulling her with her hand .

Ditebogo: Where are we going?

Kagiso: To the restroom

Ditebogo: Males rest-room ?

Kagiso: No the group's restroom.

She gasped when he opened the door and pulled her by the waist getting her inside and closed the door pinning her against it taking her breath away. He put her hands above her head on the door with one hand and another one smoothed her jawline before pulling her chin kissing the lights out of her . Her knees got weak just as his hand grabbed her

breasts before sliding down rubbing her cookie on the jeans and her mouns escaped their kiss.

He kissed her one last time before pulling away and stood 3 steps away from her putting his hands in the pockets looking at her gasp for air and her skin flashed . She crossed her legs biting her lip in tears and quickly ran to the toilet to pee .

He walked over looking at her hide her face sitting on the sit then went down pulling her hands off her face looking at her .

Kagiso: Is there anything you want to tell me now ?

Ditebogo: (teary) You didn't have to take the truth out like that .

Kagiso: How was I supposed to get it out of you when you couldn't tell me ?

Ditebogo: So tested my lust over you ?

Kagiso : Had any idea on when you were going to tell me ? And how exactly when you're tight up ?

Ditebogo : I wasn't going to tell you .

Kagiso: Tell me what ?

Ditebogo:...

Kagiso: Should I ask again?

Ditebogo: Give me a moment please.

He shook his head standing and pulled the door on his way out and stood by the sink's .

She got out and went to wash her hands then dried her hands going to stand in front of him . She bit her lip landing a hot slap on his cheek then sighed stepping back.

Ditebogo : Don't you ever do that again . See you .

She walked out and he clenched his jaws looking at himself on the mirror when the door on another toilet slid open . He bit his lip turning to look at the man in a wheel chair not knowing what to say heading out .

Kagiso: Good evening.

Man: Good evening son . I guess it was you .

Kagiso: (cleared his throat) I'm sorry . I didn't know there was anyone.

Man : its ohk ,.I've been there before. If she act like this , trust me she's the one .

Kagiso: Oh ..right. Bye .

He quickly went out exhaling .

At the hospital.

Rose rocked the baby smiling still holding in her tears as her mother packed her bag . She sniffed looking at the baby's hands before stopping to rock him with Kagiso's words turning in her head and her heart pounded.

" We weren't dating but the pain of seeing the person you love wholeheartedly making babies, that's like million nails to the heart "

She swallowed looking at her mother and back at the baby . It would be a great feeling to have a family of her own but she wants it with only one person and if not him then no one .

Rose : Mom am I different?

Jane: By different you mean your old self and now , yeah. You're even more beautiful.

Rose : (heart skipped) Mom like any changes on me . Am I fat ?

Jane : Yeah you gained weight , not fat . Why are you asking me these questions? Are you ok ?

Rose : Yeah ..I'm fine . I just wanted to ask .

Jane looked at her looking at the baby and touching his hand . She put the bag down and sat in the bed .

Jane : I thought we were over this Rosella . I told you that you can tell me anything . I am your mother , why are you holding back ? It's not healthy and you know that .

Rose : No , it's nothing . Where is dad ? I thought he came here to get you .

Jane : Something came up . Now tell me what it is course I'm not backing down .

Rose : Promise me you wont freak out.

Jane : I promise .

Rose : I haven't been on my periods last month and Mxolisi and I had a moment which happened a week before we entered a new month. The month ended and it's been a week and 3 days but still .

Jane's jaws dropped looking at her with words stuck in her mouth. This was her mother's daughter

indeed .She closed her mouth looking at her and shook her head picking her bag and walked over to her .

J ane : Your pregnant?

Rose : I don't know. (Teary) And if I am , mom I dont want it . I want Kagis o's baby not anyone else's. Mom I'm also not ready to have a baby . I'm still young to have one . (Crying) I dont want it . Help me ..

J ane : Rose we're not sure yet . And what do you mean you don't want that baby , that's if you're pregnant ? Your not going to abandon your baby and nor will you terminate it . Your not going to kill that child . If indeed your pregnant, we'll talk to his family about this and see how we are going to come up with. I'm not going to let you make the biggest mistake of your life over a boy that cares less of you and wont even look at you .

Rose : (crying) Mama I love him and I want to carry his first child . He's the one I want to start a family

with . I dont want any other .

Jane : Well sweety, if your pregnant you'll raise that baby. You will not leave my side . And besides were not sure yet.

Rose : I will kill it .

Jane : Shut up !

She took out her phone and dialed one of her colleagues before putting it back and sat on the bed looking at her.

Rose : (crying) Mom dont make me do this . You promised not to make decision for me .

Jane : I did . And I'm not making you any but preventing you from making the biggest mistake and a murder.

Rose : (crying) This is my body !

Jane : And I'm your mother !

The door slid open and a female doctor walked in smiling standing next to Rose looking at the baby .

Doctor: Ncww he's so cute ... He's so beautiful
Jane. Congratulations.

Jane : Thank you Jessy .

Doctor: Is this your daughter? She's grown

Jane : Yes , she is . Look I need a favour , maybe
you could squeeze us in .

Doctor : Sure. I was about to knock out anyway.

Jane : Great, look my baby here thinks she's
pregnant and we are not sure yet , can you please
run the test's for us .

Doctor: Yeah sure . Let's go .

Jane: Thank you so much. I owe you one .

Doctor: (smiling) Holding you to that .

They smiled walking out and Rose used the baby's

blanket following them with a pounding heart .

In Breeze's room .

Kagiso walked in with the hoodie pulled to his face and threw himself on the chair relaxing while releasing a heavy sigh. They both looked at him and Odirile saw something red under on his cheek . He frowned walking over and quickly pulled it off his face and he clenched his jaws .

Kagiso: Hey !

Odirile: You look well .

Kagiso: Thank you.

Odirile: Your welcome.

Breeze: Who's handprint is that ?

Kagiso: No one .

Breeze: Does "no - one " have a name ?

Odirile: And does that 'no-one ' happen to be a girl?

Kagiso: No ...

Breeze: Definitely a girl . (Sighed) Cant stay away can you ?

Kagiso : Something's are out of my control.

Odirile: Clearly.

Odirile's phone rang from his pocket and he took it out looking at the caller .

Odirile: Ohk gentleman-when-they-like I gatta bounce . See you tomorrow . I'll come get you , dont go anywhere without me .

Breeze: Cxxl .

They fist bumped and he went out smiling on his own.

Breeze: Talked to your mother about your stay for the day ?

Kagiso: I don't want to stress her .

Breeze: By not telling her , you are stressing her course she might assume the worst has happened to you . Tell her your staying over and you'll be there tomorrow afternoon. Surely you wont get there on time .

Kagiso: Ohk . I will . So you're seriously going to drop those charges ?

Breeze: Yeah ..that's if I can drop them . Hes my brother and he also has a right to be angry after what I did . He's the closest one I have to family and I cant let him go to prison , not when he has a daughter to come mend things with .

Kagiso: (smiling) Damn Your too kind . I'd let him sit in there for months .

Breeze: No you wouldn't. Your also too caring and too helpful. You dont really care about yourself but more about others . And that's what makes us who we are .

Kagiso: Your right .

He took his phone from underneath the pillow and dialed the detective ad Kagiso stood up to call his mother also .

In doctor J essie's office.

Rose rubbed her hands together anxiously waiting with a racing heart with J ane laying on the patient bed breast feeding her baby . She turned looking at her and rubbed her tear when as the doctor sat on the chair looking at her .

Doctor: I got the results. But I'll also have to confirm by doing an ultrasound scan .

.

.

-
-
-
-

Comment

-
-
-
-
-

[08/02, 13:59] Lynne : Chapter 85

At the police station.

Jack walked to the table and collected his belongings then headed out switching on his phone

but it was on low battery. He shook his head looking at the 16 percent switching in to maximum power saving then dialed a number.

Him : Lyon .

Jack : Hey . Look man , I need a favour.

Him : Ohk , what is it?

Jack : Do you still have contacts inside the mental prison?

Him : Yeah .

Jack: Great. I need you to hook me up with the most trusted person you know there.

Him : Why ?

Jack : J ust do it .

He cut the call sighing before dialing an uber walking to the benches outside the building and sat down . After ordering the uber he dialed another contact.

Man: Yess.

Jack : I need you to kidnap someone for me .

Man : Send the money and details.

Jack : (smiling) I knew I could rely on you .

Man : Anytime old friend.

He chuckled going through Breeze's social media timeline saving Kagiso's picture and sent it then the money. He smiled receiving contact details just as his ride parked by the gate and he stood up dialing the number .

Her : Hello

Jack : Hi ..am I talking to Monique ?

Her : Depends on who this is .

Jack: Oh my bad . Your talking to Jack Lyon.

Her : Oh , Mr Lyon. How can I help you ?

Jack : I don't really like discussing business over the phone , how about we meet tomorrow afternoon, 13h00 , Mc Cafe at the mall ?

Monique : Sounds good .

He cut the call getting in and the car drove off .

At the hospital

Rose rubbed her hands together one last time sitting on the chair looking at the doctor while Jane fixed herself and got off the bed to sit on the chair next to hers .

Jane : Ohk ... So what do the results say?

Doctor: (smiling) It seems like your pregnant Rosella .

Rose : (gasped) What ?

Doctor: Yes . Its looks like you've been cooking in your oven for 8 weeks now . Congratulations.

Rose : Congratulations? No don't congratulate me ! I dont want this baby . I want to abort it .

J ane : You will not do such a thing Rosella . And its risky . You will not harm that baby. You knew what you were doing when you had sex . This baby is innocent in all of this, he or she doesn't deserve to be made a sacrifice of its mothers happiness .

Rose:(crying) Mama Kagiso will not accept me if I keep this baby. I want him and I to start our own family without anything to remind us of our ugly journey.

J ane : If Kagiso truly loves you Rosella , he'll accept you with your baby . If he is a man enough . Dont chose a man over your own blood . This is a human Rose . It's a life growing inside of you and trust me my dear , you dont want to take it .

Doctor: Your mother is right Rosella. This baby could also be the only one that you'll ever have . This could be your only shot of happiness for all

you know . Hope and possibilities . If the guy you talking of is really into you, he'll take the baby as one of his own . But first let's do the ultrasound to be sure.

Rose: (crying) No , I'm not doing that ! You dont know how this baby came about, so dont tell me anything about happiness course it'll only bring me misery. I dont want this baby and I made up my mind with that. Dont try to stop me or change my mind course it'll be a waste of you own time .

Jane : Rosella you wont -

Rose : No mom ! This is my body and it's my decision to make ! I dont care if your my mother but this is about me and not you! You don't have any idea of what I'm going through so don't play that card game on me . I cant lose Kagiso . He never gave up on me, I'm not about to give up on him either. Even if it means taking a life to get him back , then so be it .

She stood up grabbing a tissue in a box heading out

and Jane closed her eyes as the door slammed.
She quickly stood up with the baby and went to take out her phone dialing Kagiso's number.

Doctor: who are you calling?

Jane: The same guy he is willing to kill for.

Doctor: And what will he do ?

Jane: I don't know . But he is a good guy , hopefully he can get her on track even though they don't end up together. She'll heal. (To the phone) Oh Hey Kagiso.

Kagiso : (yawning) Hii .

Jane : how are you and where are you ?

Kagiso : (frown) I'm fine , I'm at the hospital.

Jane : Which Hospital?

Kagiso : the one where you work. Breeze has been admitted here remember.

Jane : Oh yeah ... I'm so sorry for the drama I've caused . Look I wish I had more time to apologize

but I dont . I need a favour.

Kagiso : If it involves you daughter, I'm sorry but I cant help. I planned on keeping my distance from her . What is it ?

Jane : Kagiso I'm really in need of your help . You know no one is able to line up Rose like you do . Your he only person that can handle her .

Kagiso : Rosella and I aren't on good terms . Everytime I see her , worst thoughts cross my mind and trust me, their really bad . Don't ask me to come near her course I cant stand her .

Jane : Kagiso I know all that , but right now your the only person I can turn to . Your my only hope to stopping Rose from doing the most horrific thing she'll live to regret the rest of her life . All this in the name of love for you .

Kagiso :.....

Jane : She's pregnant.

Kagiso: (shocked) What ?

Jane : Yes . Not exactly the type of news you were

expecting but it is what it is . She's 8 weeks pregnant with Mxolisi's child.

Kagiso: Wait , why are you telling me this ?

Jane : Because right now as we speak , I dont know where she's headed but I know she's going to terminate the pregnancy just so she can be able to be with you .

Kagiso: ...

Jane : Kagiso I'm begging you as a mother to help my child. She's losing her mind and she's about to kill an innocent soul . She's going to take her own child's blood and soul into her own hands . Please son - I'm seriously in need of your help and so does Rose.

Kagiso: ...

Jane : You might not love her or care about her anymore but at least then think of the baby she's carrying and rescue her or him from dying in its mothers hands . The baby doesn't deserve to be an offering to clear the way of her own happiness . Please.

Kagiso cut the call and she sighed shoving it in her pocket picking her bag with a heavy heart.

Jane : he's still mad. I don't even know what I was thinking calling him , he's been through enough already . The last thing he needs is a distraction from the mother of the same girl that broke his heart. Thanks for everything Jessie .

Doctor: give her sometime to digest this . It's her first time being pregnant and she's still young , she's shocked . Eventually nature will kick in and she'll realize how wrong it is to kill your own child.

Jane : I doubt that . She's really going to do this . You know what love makes people do . See you .

Doctor : Bye.

In Breezes Room .

Breeze looked at Kagiso pulling the hoodie tightly to his face before releasing a loud sigh sinking on the chair with his lower lip tightly bitten.

Breeze: What does she want ?

Kagiso moved the hood from his face looking at him and lifted his leg putting it on the armrest laying on the other armrest hanging his head upside-down.

Kagiso:(dramatically cries) This city is gonna break me to the last . I've only been here for few hours and already my rebuilding heart is crashed back into my stomach with a simple light push of a finger .
I'm diiiieeiinnnggg !

Breeze : Would you please tell me what this is about ?

Kagiso: Rosella . (screams) SHE'S PREGNANT ! OH MY GAWD ! (Low) I think I need a heart transplant .

Breeze: Rose is pregnant? How ?

Kagiso: With that smart pants kid . I AM DONE ! I AM FINISHED ! I hate that dead girl . This is all her fault that I'm like this . She's the one that keeps breaking me , I despise her to the core ! (screaming) Aaaaaaaahhhh !

Breeze frowned looking at him like he was somehow crazy grabbing the glass of water and drank it as he dramatically cried with no tears coming out .

Breeze : Your making noise , this is a hospital.

Kagiso : I got no tears left to cry .

Breeze : Maybe that's because you let in the pain . You let it take you and now you manage to swim in it . Your slowly healing.

Kagiso: J ane says she went out to abort thinking that if she does , I'll find a way in my dusty heart to forgive her so that we can be a happy- chosen-

couple .

Breeze : And let me guess - you dont feel the same .

Kagiso: Of course I dont ! I love her but , I just don't think that underground bitch made a good match , course Rose and I are not really a good arrangement.

Breeze : But what matters is you love her .

Kagiso : I dated 7 girls and I loved each and every last one of them deeply , but still they left . If I can manage to get over them , then what could possibly stop me from getting over her ? Absolutely nothing. (Stands) So right now , as the personal candle of her life , I'm burnt to go stop her from killing that innocent bat in her cave . Wish me luck !

Breeze narrowed his eyebrows confused not knowing what to say looking at him go to the door and stop turning with a pout.

Kagiso: (pessimistic) I don't even know where I'm

gonna find her . This is a living Hell . J esus christ !

He walked out of the door and Breeze shook his head dialing Abigail number.

At Abigail's home.

Abigail sat on the dinner table busy with her laptop when her mother walked by to the kitchen to get a glass of water before standing next to her.

Gail's mother: What are you doing .?

Abigail: Work .

Gail's mother: this time ? No Abigail go to sleep .
This things can wait till tomorrow.

Abigail : I know, just that I'm not sleepy , so I might as well just finish up since I'm wide awake.

Gail's mother: Is this about your divorce?

Abigail : No , it's not.

Gail's mother: oh it is darling . But anyway, it's on you . J ust know I'll always be here if you need to talk

Abigail :Thank you mom .

She pat her shoulder walking away passing by Priscilla with her headsets on busting music going to grab an apple humming a song before standing by her sister looking at the laptop. She leaned a little closer looking really carefully and frowned taking off her headphones.

Priscilla: Is that what I think it is ?

Abigail: (shuts the laptop) Why are you snooping on me ?

Priscilla: I wasn't snooping. What the hell are you doing Abigail? (opens the laptop) Enter the pin .

Abigail: No ..

Priscilla: Does divorcing really drive people this insane for them to sell their businesses ? An international Business sale ? Really ? Does he have such effect on you ?

Abigail : I need a new life . I need to start up my life on a new page with no remainder of my ex husband. And this- this is me starting off, taking a new step towards my future without him in the picture , anything that he helped build or built for me .

Priscilla: Nare wa tsenwa? Like seriously sis - Are you crazy ?

Abigail : Watch your mouth when talking to me . You have to idea what I went through in that marriage and how I -(phone rang)

Priscilla saw the name on the screen and quickly snatched it running to her bedroom locking it with Abigail following and knocked angrily on the door .

Abigail :Ella tis a phone yame ?! Priscilla open the

door before I knock it down ! Priscilla !

Meanwhile Priscilla connected the phone to her headphones and sighed answering.

Breeze : What game do you think your playing Abigail?

Priscilla: Hello to you too brother in law .

Breeze : oh hey Priscilla. Can I pleas talk to you sister?

Priscilla :Sure , and please talk some sense into her thick skul . She's planning on selling Gail's Gallery online without background checks all in the insanity of getting over you . She's going crazy without you .

Breeze: But she loves that Gallery .

Priscilla : She does . J ust that the divorce is taking its toll on her and she's not thinking straight . She loves art . She keeps digging up for everything even though their buried deep saying she wants to cut ties with you in every direction.

Breeze : Ohk , fine . Give her the phone.

She stood up from her bed and went to open the door to an angry Abigail who snatched the phone from her hand clicking her tongue then walking to her room .

Abigail: Breeze.

Breeze: Do you have any idea what you just coursed?

Abigail: Oh please Breeze, we both know that this is on you. You slept with your brother's wife underneath his nose and even had a baby, all I did was pop the pimple for you since you weren't going to . You should be grateful.

Breeze : Are you out of your mind? I almost died and he's been held in a cell .

Abigail : Quit crying, your still alive aren't you ?

Breeze: (sigh) Abigail I know that I hurt you , and I'll always be angry at myself for that but if your gonna

keep on with this behavior of yours, you and I are gonna have a huge problem.

Abigail: Dont blame your swark relationship with your brother on me . Its been like that even before i came into the picture .

Breeze: So you think putting in more fuel into it is gonna make us even? Abigail we both ruined our relationship just that I came with a baby and you, you decided to pack your bags and leave leaving me behind . I dont know whats burning inside of you but deal with it and leave me and my problems alone .

He hang up and she slowly say on the bed as tears burned her eyes until they flowed .

At the Clinic.

Kagiso sat in the uber that was parking outside looking at the phone tracker anxiously waiting for

her to come out.

Kagiso: hey man ..how accurate are this phone trackers?

Driver: Definitely not 100% accurate.

Kagiso: Great.

He sighed switching his phone off and spotted her walking out holding a small plastic heading to her car then he stepped out jogging over . He pulled her hand startling her but eventually relaxed seeing him and smiled hugging him .

Rose : I thought I was never going to see you for the day .

Kagiso: So did I. What where you getting in there ?

Rose : Pain killers.

Kagiso: Seriously?

Rose : Seriously.

Kagiso : My driver has a headache can we please have one tablet?

Rose : (swallowed) uhm ..let me go buy you guys some.

She attempted to go when he pulled her by her waist and grabbed the plastic raising his hand as she tried to grab it with a pounding heart .

Rose: (teary) Give me the plastic.

Kagiso: What's in here ?

Rose: My pain killers.

Kagiso: Are you going to finish all of them refusing us with just one ? Are you planning to kill yourself of overdose.

Rose :(jumped) The thought crossed my mind but no. I'm not planning on dieing yet . Not until I finally get to be with you .

Kagiso : ' Your not ' yet your planning on killing another person.

Her heart skipped making her feel like it stuck on her throat and her palms got sweaty instantly as the sensation to pee washed her body .

Rose : (crying) I- I- uhm ..

Kagiso : You kill our baby, you lose me for good. And I mean it Rosella.

He pinned the plastic on her chest looking her deep in the eyes and she held the plastic with shaky hands not knowing what to say or do . He smiled pointing her to the car with his head and she quickly ran with locked legs getting in driving off.

Kagiso sighed looking up at the sky before signaling his driver he's coming and went around to the restroom.

Meanwhile a black city car drove near by the toilets

and two men stepped out spraying chloroform on a handkerchief walking inside the toilets.

Kagiso zipped his pants after releasing himself and went to wash his hands when a man stood next to him and he frowned.

Kagiso: Eita .

Man: Ola .

He narrowed his eyebrows when another one put the handkerchief on his nostrils. He tried fighting as he slowly got weak until he blanked out and they carried him to the door where the car was waiting ,putting him in the boot before rushing to their sides and sped off.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 13:59] Lynne : Chapter 86

The next day .

At the hospital

Odirile walked in with a sport bag and a McDonald's

drink placing the bag on Breeze's face who was still asleep.

Odirile: Wake up sleepy head !

Breeze: (yawns pushing the bag off) WTF dude . I'm a patient , at least treat me like one

Odirile : To me your not a patient. Get up , you've been in here for a while now . It's time you go sleep on your own bed .

Breeze: Right . Where's Kagiso? Yesterday I dozed off after speaking with Abigail while he went on to find his lover .

Odirile: Rose ? (He shakes his head) No man . You gatta tell this kid to leave this girl alone .

Breeze : Dont you think I tried? He's down with her . Big time.

Odirile: No dude . Maybe you should try a little harder this time . And why where you talking to Abigail? Is it about the divorce?

Breeze : No , it was about this thing she coursed

between me and Jack . I mean , I dont understand why she'd stick her nose in the family's business when she made her point clear by leaving me . The truth was going to reveal its self , one way or another . It didn't really have to come out from her . She's getting on my nerves , I swear .

Odirile: Yeah it didn't have to , but look on the bright side. She cleared the way for you than for you to carry the burden of truth for that period of time you were willing to go on .

Breeze: But seriously ? Did she really have to spill the beans the same day I went to meet my son for the first time ? Abigail wants more than just her freedom, she wants me dead .

Odirile: Now your exaggerating . Go on change , maybe Kagiso is with Rosella.

At the Lyons Mansion.

Jack walked into the bedroom and stood by looking

at the baby in its cot peacefully sleeping . He walked over putting his hands in the pocket and watched him taking every breath into his lungs and he couldn't be more mad .

Jack: I hate your father . And you boy - your the consent reminder of your mother's evil doing with him . But not to worry . I was thinking of speeding up my revenge . This way , we can live together as a family without me looking at you with anger and my nose on my forehead.

He sighed walking out taking out his phone dialing Monique.

Monique: Mr Lyon

Jack: Change of plans Monique. How about we meet now ? I promise I'll make it worth your while .

Monique: Sure .

Jack: Same location.

He hang up viewing a picture of Kagiso tied on a chair weak , in a dark room that only had a dim light above his head still out . He smiled picking his car keys and put the phone in his pocket.

Jane : Can we talk ?

He turned looking at her holding a bottle of milk and sighed walking away .

Jack: Not now.

Jane bit her lip watching him shut the door behind him and she walked up the stairs to Rose's bedroom knocking . Rose replied from the inside with a faint voice and she walked in closing the door behind her .

Jane : How are you feeling ?

Rose: Mom why ?

Jane : Why what ?

Rose :Why did you call him ? Do you really hate me that much that you want me to miss the only chance to my happiness course of a mistake I did ?

Jane : That baby is not a mistake. You had sex with the father willingly, not because you were going through some stuff . And as for your happiness , Kagiso might say or do anything but he cant stay away from you . He'll always be around , that's what you should be grateful off .

Rose :(shouts) I dont want him to be around , I want him to be with me ! Full time ! For-ever ! What would this baby give me ? Joy ? Peace ? Kagiso will never ever be with me because of it and now that he found out, he's goodbye will be for good this time because of your stupid lousy mouth !

Jane : Dont you dare talk to me like that Rosella ! I'm your mother ,show me some respect ! If Kagiso loves you , he'll care less if you come with a baby or

alone. If he doesn't, he won't accept either of you .
Now stop sulking and put your big girl panties
course your now upgrading to be a mother. Take
responsibility for your own actions and stop
pointing fingers . Face your problems and stop
hiding behind masks .

Rose : How am I even you to face them when he
doesn't even want to talk nor even look at me ?
(teary) Last night he said "our baby" . He said " if
you kill OUR baby " . I dont know if he meant what I
hope he meant or he was just saying that to prevent
me from taking the pills .

Jane: He meant it Rosella. I might not know this
guy but he looks like he keeps his word and means
ever last one of them . He loves you and nothing will
ever change that . Not even the baby your carrying.

Rose : Yeah...(lays flat) ...that's it - he means every
word he says . Maybe he meant it too when he says
he doesn't love me anymore . That he hates me and
he'd rather wake up alone than wake up to my face .

At Abigail's house .

Abigail tossed on the bed before facing the ceiling and exhaled . She could sleep last night thinking about what Breeze said and what Jack was about to do . Somehow she found him correct . If she hadn't acted like a bitter ex-wife this wouldn't have gone this far .

She tossed picking her phone looking at Sagis picture as her wallpaper smiling in a garden of sunflowers holding her hat wearing a summer dress . This were the happy moments and she missed that . Being around her always kept her in check and now that she's gone , she is off the rail . Wonder if she'll be proud of the things she did .

She sighed unlocking it when a call came through.

Abigail : And how are you calling me ?

Jack: Oh I got out last night sweetheart. I guess your stupid husband isn't as clever as he think he is

. Why would he drop the case ?

Abigail : You know what they say - ' Keep your enemies close ' so maybe that's what he's doing since he can't when your in there.

Jack: Well then I guess it's also true when they say ' Great minds think alike ' . Unfortunately I saw him way before he can even see it in him .

Abigail: What's that supposed to mean?

Jack: That it's time I get my payback . (Hangs up)

Abigail: Jack! Jack !

She took the phone off her ear looking at it before jumping off the bed and got dressed picking her car keys with her heart racing then went out fixing her hair

At the Lyons Mansion.

Odirle parked outside and sighed leaning back .

Breeze stepped out of the car holding his chest to decrease the pain a bit before walking to the house pressing the door bell and stepped back .

Dineo opened the door for him with a smile then opened it wide for him to get in .

Dineo : Let me go call Mrs Lyon , Mr Lyon went out a while ago .

Breeze: Oh no its ohk , I just want to ask something. Didn't you see my son come here last night or saw him by chance in here ?

Dineo : No Mr Lyon. I only saw Rosella who got here all by herself.

Breeze: Heard she opens up to you , didn't she say anything about her whereabouts for the rest of the day ?

Dineo : She only told me she was going to the hospital to go get her parents , but then came later after Mrs Lyon who came by herself. Mr Lyon had already arrived a long time before them .

Breeze: Ohk thanks gorgeous. (Leaves)

Dineo: (smiling) No problem.

He walked out and she shook her head when she heard voices arguing upstairs and she sighed shaking her head girl back to work . If you ever try to figure out what's happening in this family ? You'd go insane .

Breeze approached the car getting in and Odirile wasted no time and drove out .

Odirile: Where is he ?

Breeze : Definitely not here . I'm getting worried course he knows no other house around here except for the both of this ones.

Odirile: You worry a lot about this boy , hes not a little boy . He can take care of himself. I'm sure he went to your house .

Breeze: If he had gone there , I'd have seen if there's someone in my house over the phone but

then my phone stayed silent all this long. No alarm triggered.

Odirile: This guy is old enough, stop treating him like a 6 year old wanting to know about he's whereabouts when ever he leaves your site .

At Breezes house.

Later ...

They both stepped out of the car shutting the doors and walked to the house putting the pin by the door and it unlocked before they went in . You know the feeling of feeling like no one has been around a house for days? Yep the same one , natural feeling. The feeling washed over both their bodies and they looked at one another as Odirile closed the door behind him.

Odirile: Maybe he found friends . (shrugs) Or maybe with Abigail . They seemed to have a mother

-son connection building if not romantic.

Breeze rolled his eyes taking out his phone dialing her as he walked to the kitchen to pour them juice .

Abigail: (clears throat) Hii

Breeze : Hey ... Are you with Kagiso?

Abigail : (choked) Uhm ..no . Haven't seen him in a while . Why ?

Breeze : Nothing . Thank you .

He hang up before she could say anything further and walked to the kitchen when his phone rang. He looked at the unfamiliar number and frowned before answering.

Woman : Is this Breeze Lyon?

Breeze: Yeah , who's asking?

Woman: Its Kagiso's mother.

His heart skipped to his throat when he quickly pulled his drink and galped it with Odirile staring at him with one eyebrow up leaning on the counter.

Breeze: Hello . How are you ?

Veronica: I'm not sure yet . My son promised to call me everytime but he didn't , and now when I call him , he doesn't pick up but instead it goes straight to voicemail.

Breeze: (clears throat) Oh ..

Veronica: Yess . And I know about the whole chosen thing which I dont support course not only i feel like not only is he he sent to help that girl but the whole family . I spent months worried about him and opening missing person cases , eventually they stoped helping thinkin I'm someone who's disturbed. And with all that, I'd recieve a one time call from him which wasn't enough.

Breeze: I understand .

Veronica: I know you care about him looking at what you've been doing and that he even considers you as his father, then you'd understand too that I miss my son around me . He's the only one I'm left with and I can't pretend like I'm fine with him being away from me for so long . I'm used to having him here .

Breeze:

Veronica: Can I please talk to him course I cant shake this motherly feeling that something is not right to make sure he's fine ? Please.

Breeze: (looks at Odirile) Uhm ..he went out . He's with my brothers child , they went to the mall .

Veronica: Aren't you guys still in the hospital?

Breeze: Oh no , I got out this morning.

Veronica: Hope your doing fine.

Breeze: I am thank you .

Veronica: Your welcome . Please tell him to call me within an hour or else I'm catching a taxi.

Breeze: (bit his lip) Will do .

Veronica: Thanks. Get well .

Breeze: Thanks.

She hang up and he threw his phone on the counter going to grab a bottle of whiskey coming to pour himself a glass full .

Odirile: (gets off the chair) hey take it easy . Who was that ?

Breeze : His mother . She has a feeling that something is happening to her son and can't shake it off .

Odirile: I'm sure it's just a feeling, it'll pass .

Breeze: She's his mother. She the one that carried him for months, they have a special connection and Kagiso always had been around her and never left her side . She has the strongest feeling that there's something happening even if she's far away from him. That's what makes your mother call you

everytime your about to be in danger, dont you ever ask yourself why ? Mothers and children share a very strong love bond .

Odirile: Its could be an instinct.

Breeze: But this is more than just an instinct if she can call 'ME ' ! She never called me before. This is for the first time she talked to me and it terrifies the hell out of me. She's having a motherly intuition . The same feeling every mother receives when their children are in danger. And I wont ignore that .

He bit his lip looking at him before frowning. He's been with Abigail for years and he always knew when she was not fine from her tone . He grabbed his phone shaking his head and dialed her .

Abigail: Twice a day . Hii again .

Breeze: Twice , yeah so let's make this one more useful . Where's Kagiso?

Abigail: (swallowed) I don't know.

Breeze: Who's at your house?

Abigail : My mother and my sister .

Breeze: (tense) Ohk darling, tell them to pack what they can carry , I'm burning the house down .

Abigail: (heart skipped) What !

He hang up before she can say anything further putting the phone down looking at Odirile who's eyes widened and his mouth partly open shocked as well.

Odirile: What !?

Breeze: And I mean it . She knows something.
(Looks at the phone) Come on love , 5 ; 4 ;3 ;2
and..(rings) 1 .

He smiles picking it and winks at Odirile answering.

Abigail: I think its J ack. Earlier he called saying he sped up his revenge . He also told me that he'll attack you at every direction closet to your heart . Through your kids .

Breeze: Do me a one last favour love , next time I call - try hard not to waste my time .

He cut the call gulping the whole liquor heading upstairs.

Odirile: How did you know she was going to call back?

Breeze: You know when you spend half of your life with someone, you learn more about their ways that they know less about themselves.

He quickly went upstairs and Odirile's heart skipped standing up to follow him .

Odirile: That's not good .

And indeed it wasn't . He stopped on his tracks looking at him walk over holding his gun checking the bullets before putting it together and picked the sport car keys in the drawer by the door heading out .

Odirile: Your not going to kill him , are you ?

Breeze : (smirked) Watch me .

He followed him to the garage where he got in and started the engine driving out with full speed .

He ran to his car taking out his phone and called their most trusted men getting in and drove off following him .

Odirile: Your boss has finally lost it . His chains have gone lose in that head of his . Track down his

SSC Tuatara , he's riding in it .

Stone : On it .

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 14:00] Lynne : Chapter 87

In Odirile's car .

Odirile stepped on the accelerator taking out his phone from the pocket and dialed Breeze putting him on loudspeaker.

Breeze: I know what your going to say and let me tell you before you could preach for me . It ain't gonna work . If I dare hear anyone saying the words "your brother" I swear I'll hunt them and slit their throat .

Odirile: (shrugs) Your sibling then .

Breeze: (scoff) Dumb head .

Odirile: For real dude. Slow down and let's talk about this . Let's call him and find out what he wants first before you could go there in rage .

Breeze: Jack wants nothing but to see my dead crops laying in a box going six fit under with a suit and a white shirt . He keeps reminding me that and now he uses my boy as leverage to get to me . That's not what a brother does to another . So let me just deal with this my way .

Odirile: Fine you will ,but please tell me what your going to do and I promise I won't try to stop you or sabotage your plan . I'll stand by you .

Breeze: Nothing serious .

Odirile: Oh ohk , so what's that your going to do?

Breeze: he took my son as leverage so in gonna do the same . Remember Dan ?

Odirile: Ummm...

Breeze: The guy we met the last time at 808 on the roof to make a deal . The one that wanted woman and children .

Odirile: No Breeze your not ! Rose is your only niece and Kagiso will never forgive you for this .

Breeze: There are a lot of girls in this town he can

pick one . I figured that death will be more merciful so I came up with that . If anything happens to me or any member of my family, he pays with his daughter's dignity, health , life and all . With that Rose will live to hate her father with every inch of her mind, body and soul . While he would suffer the guilt to death and even after death his soul will not rest unable to forgive himself course he couldn't make peace with his ONLY child. So basically Rose will be the one to suffer her father's consequence. And I might even target his source of income, who knows ?

Odirile: That's just cruel. Rose doesn't have to get involved in this . Both kids have been through enough already and both of you as their fathers keep adding more salt to their wounds . This has nothing to do with Kagiso , Air nor Rose but you , Jack and Jane. Leave the kids out of this and sort out your mess without involving them.

Breeze: Odirile do you think I'm enjoying this ? It hurts me . It hurts that my only close member of family is striking me at every site even when I try to

run away from him . He is like a bug I can't get rid off even though it inflicts pain on me . It hurts that right now I have to use the only niece I have also as leverage. That the only person I so have close to my heart as a son is always the one getting caught in my family drama . I don't want to see him nor Rose in pain but he keeps pushing my buttons .

Odirile: I know that you've been trying to avoid him at all cost but - you know what ? Send me your location

Breeze: No .

Odirile: Excuse me ?

Breeze: Odirile you being here will ruin everything. You know I listen to you more than anyone and I know you'll try to stop me so I cant tell you where I'm headed . I'm sorry but youll have to let me do this on my own .

Odirile: Bre-(hang up)

He clenched his jaws and sighed increasing the

volume listening to Wiz Khalifa ft Charlie Puth - See you again when his phone received a notification. He picked it and smiled in relief looking at the locations that keep clocking on his phone .

At a Petrol station.

Breeze stepped out of the car looking at a man lifting three 20 liters of petrol to his van and he approached him .

Few minutes later he took out his card and went into the bank that was near by and took out some R1000 and went to give it to man then he took the bottles to his car . He got in and took out his phone driving out.

Jack : Brother.

Breeze: that word never had an impact coming from your mouth . Bring my kid back Jack. This game your playing of kidnapping my child is lame ,

even for you . Never pictured you as the type to stoop so low , what went wrong ?

Jack: I dont know what your talking about.

Breeze: Jack your feud is with me , you dont have to grab my kid into this . Bring my kid back and you can have me . Kill me or whatever , just let Kagiso go .

Jack: (laughs) Your calling me to ask me to end your pathetic life , who sank low now ? Never pictured you as the type to throw towel just like that ! To lower your weapon before the war even starts.

Breeze: Jack if your enjoying this , don't think that we all do . This is not a game of thrones your talking about people lives here . And no I'm not lowering any weapon, I'm just bowing with them in my hands asking you to end this before it could get worse . Let Kagiso go and sort out your differences with me .

Jack: (laughs in tears) Differences? Really Breeze? You call sleeping with my wife and procreate the difference between us ?

Breeze: you know I'm starting to not feel sorry for

what happened but actually be more gratified of my self. That baby was conceived out of love . Not because we were just hooking up , but because we also had strings that made it even good before they came to pass . But anyway -

Jack : How is Sagi , by the way ? Does she know your busy out here playing father of the year while she rots in the mental prison put by your so called side chick ? with your baby on top of that .

Breeze: (clenched jaws) You reach her I swear to God Jack, I'll be the real cast out of heaven himself and show you hell with both your eyeballs out shoved into your little sluts mouth .

Jack: Threats , threats and threats after threats. What about action little brother. Show me your worst side besides making babies with other people's wives and robbing banks. 21h00 tonight at the containers by sea . Dont be late . Oh and come alone or you'll receive your sons head wrapped in a gift box .

Breeze's eye welled up in pain when he pulled on the side of the road and let them drop . Family has always been everyone's greatest weakness and now that he mentioned Sagi , his battery went from 50 to 0 . All his power drained out of his system . She believed in him and now he'll fail her to the last . Jack is right, his life is messed up as it is and now all he wishes is for it to end so that everyone can be free of his grip . Clearly he wont be able to do this on his own he needed a brother by his side . He picked up his phone rubbing his tear and leaned on the wheel .

Odirile: please tell me you haven't done anything yet .

Breeze: (sobb) Where are you ?

Odirile: Are you ohk ?

Breeze : No I'm not . (Teary) I'm out of it . I dont know what to do . Kagiso's mother needs her son as in like yesterday and my cruel brother has him to go against me and now he thinks of reaching out to

Sagi . Man I dont know what I'm going to do.

Odirile: Hold on .

He hang up and he sighed as more tears rolled down his cheeks . The door opened and he turned his head looking at Odirile looking at him sadly.

Odirile: Come here man .

He got out of the car when he attacked him with a big fat , warm, heartfelt, tight hug. He hugged him back and broke down on his shoulder making Odirile's eyes also burn with tears . He's never seen his friend broken like this and it broke him . Breeze held on to him as his tears wet his shirt. This is what he wanted after the long hours he had .

Odirile: Its ohk man . I'm here . I'll help you and I'll be there with you . We're gonna get them back - we'll bring them home .

Breeze: he said I should come alone . Tonight at 21h00 .

Odirile: Well , you'll go there alone . And I'll follow after . But only if you promise me that you'll leave Rose out of this .

Breeze pulled from the hug looking at him before putting both his hand on his face and rubbed the tears then looked at him again.

Breeze: You for real right now ?

Odirile: Damn straight ! You leave the kid out of this . Breeze your not the one to hurt kids . Dont let Jack turn you into the monster you buried inside of you . Dont let him get to you like that for you to use children as your way into someone. Your better than that man come on .

At Rose's house .

Rose sat in front of the mirror looking at herself. She pictured how the baby was conceived when she shook her head and took her phone looking at Mxolisi's number. It's best if she tells him now than keeping this a secret to herself and have Kagiso as the father, that's if he meant it.

[08/02, 14:00] Lynne : Continued.

In Rose's room.

Rose sat in front of the mirror looking at herself. She pictured how the baby was conceived when she shook her head and took her phone looking at Mxolisi's number. It's best if she tells him now that keeping this a secret to herself and have Kagiso as the father, that's if he meant it. But it wouldn't be fair to Kagiso. Not after the struggle he went through.

Mxolisi is the father. He deserves to be in his child's life and he can't take that away from her child. She took a short prayer before dialing him.

Mxolisi: Hello .

Rose : Hii .

Mxolisi: How are you ?

Rose : I'm good . You ?

Mxolisi: I'm good .

Hearing his deep voice just reminded her of their time together and how it ruined everything for her . She sighed when suddenly her heart skipped when she remembered that that was three months ago. She quickly stood up and pulled her dress looking at her tummy but it wasn't of the person who was working her way to through the forth month to the fifth month. Maybe she should've done that ultrasound scanning.

She sat down rubbing her face then balanced her head with her hand looking at herself on the mirror.

Mxolisi: Is everything ohk?

Rose : Do you love kids ?

Mxolisi: (chuckles) Is that a trick question? Of course I do . They're adorable.

Rose : Mmh -hmm . And would you like to have one ?

He went silent on the phone without any movement or sound heard when her heart pounded so hard she could literally feel it on her throat.

In Mxolisi's house.

Meanwhile back here . Mxolisi had put the phone under a pillow so she wont hear him jumping up and down and punching the air in joy . He calmed down and collected himself before sitting down and pulled it putting it on his ear .

Mxolisi: Sorry what ?

Rose :I said would you like to have one ?

Mxolisi: Are you pregnant?

Rose : Stop answering my question with a question and answer the damn question. Would you?

Mxolisi: (smiling) yeah .

Rose : ohk. Buckle up then . Your going to be a daddy in five or six months.

Mxolisi: Are you serious?

Rose : if you think I got pregnant to trap you then your wrong . I didn't know I was pregnant and if you dont want to be in this baby's life , your not forced to . Kagiso and I can look after the baby and pretty sure he'll do a very great job as a father raising him or her .

Mxolisi: Your willing to give my child to another man Rosella ? And no I didn't think of that . I'm happy with the news but now you dropped my mood with this Kagiso guy . I'm the father and I'll look after my kid and take responsibility. If Kagiso wanted a child, why cant he make one for himself?

If its true that is my child then I'm very much happy to co-parent.

Rose : Why are you getting worked up ?

Mxolisi: your getting me worked up ! Does everything always have to revolve around this guy of yours ? That's my child and your not giving it to him . I can take care of it . Its mine .

Rose : "our" child . And please dont pamper me and all that , I can handle this on my own . And dont be trying to act tough protective daddy , you dont know what might happen. And this better be the last time you talk about him like that or else you'll never see this child . Ever . Since when did you get this cocky ?

Mxolisi: I'm sorry . J ust that , that's my only child. Probably the only thing that matters to me the most in this world . Thank you .

Rose : Its ohk . Bye

Mxolisi: bye . Hold on , when are you going for check up?

Rose: I don't know. And I don't think I'll be needing any.

Mxolisi: (laughs) you do sound like a newbie mom to be . Rosella you need to go for check up to make sure you and the baby are fine . There's nothing wrong with going for checkups. Especially course your always stressed.

Rose: Well , from now on I chose myself. It's me only and if anyone goes against that and try to rub my past in my face it's on them. I'm done !

Mxolisi: Good girl . Bye .

He hang up throwing himself on the bed kicking like a baby when his phone vibrated on the bed . He sighed with a huge smile and picked it looking at Abigails call

Mxolisi: Hello Abi .

Abigail: (breaths heavily) Are you home ?

Mxolisi: (frowned) Yeah ..why ?

Abigail: I need a friend.

Mxolisi: Oh - ohk you can come over .

He hang up biting his lip looking around before quickly packing everything to where it belonged so she could get here and find everything in place .

At the mental pris on.

Sagi sat around a table with three more woman who's hair was messed like hell just like hers . She picked an apple and wiped it on her clothes before biting it when she felt a sharp pain on her abdomen. She flinched coursing all of them to look at her when she breathed in and out and sighed putting on that neutral face and bit her apple . The pain struck her again and this time she released a scream when everyone turned looking at her .

Woman 1 : Is it the baby ?

Woman 2 : Where is the father ?

Woman 1 : I know the pain . That's why I drowned mine trying to punish her for the pain in the labour room .

Sagi frowned looking at her before picking her glass of water and galped it but only then the pain increased even more .

Sagi : (screaming) help ! Aaahh!

Woman 1: Put her on the table !

Woman 3: Why ? !

Woman 1 : We need to take the baby out ! Its hurting her . I have a knife!

Sagi : (frowned) you wouldn't dare cut my babies out you off chain dump ass psycho slut ! Touch me and you'll lose those same hand you used to drown your baby stupid wanker ! Aaahh!

Woman 1 : (crying) She hurt me !

Sagi: Get away from me before I ignore this pain and smash your empty head on this table bitch! Mooaaaaahhh! Where are the bloody security's or warders shit !

She felt warm liquid between her legs and she put her hand and it came back with blood . Her heart skipped when two warders came rushing in and wrapped her hands around their necks walking her out to the other exit she hardly recognized as she got weaker and weaker .

Sagi : Hey ..where are we going ? (She tries to escape) No ! Not there . Please no ! Where are you taking me ? I need a doctor! (crying) please ...please . My babies. Please! (Fainting) My babies..

Her head dropped just as they put her in an ambulance then two paramedics attended her as it also drove towards a different direction and not the Hospital.

*

*

*

Later _ 21h00

*

*

*

At the Containers Storage

Breeze drove around the containers before parking next to a black City car and sighed shoving the gun on his band then pulled his sweater stepping out . He shut the door looking around when a short (dwarf) man walked over to him .

Breeze: (to himself) Wow - ohk .

The man stood in front of him and he looked down on him not knowing what to say to him . But then he wasn't here for that but his boy .

Man: I'm Kingsley. Following me .

He sighed putting his hands in the pocket when his phone rang and the man turn looking at him as if he was the boss here . Breeze frowned looking at him and scoffed taking it out looking at the screen then bit his lip .

Kingsley: Who is that ? No back up remember?

Breeze: Would you just shut up before I step on your brains and do as your told . Stay out of my business . You dont know me .

Kingsley: But I know your here for your son and I also know that your not allowed to be here with someone or he dies . So its eighter you tell me who

it is or I call the shot . Simple .

Breeze looked at him before giving him his phone only because he was desperate to get his son out of this and he had to play along . Kingsley looked at him then back at the screen.

Kingsley: I know this game . You stored your men as ladies just so we wont answer , right?

Breeze: Never knew that a human brain is determined by their height . Thanks for the lesson of the day King

He pat his shoulder passing him when Kingsley frustratedly threw his phone on the ground and stepped on it countless times making Breeze stop on his tracks and look at him . He looked at him and couldn't help even when he's angry to laugh eventually did . This site was something else. Kingsley looked at him before trying to kick it but

missed so he picked it and threw it in the water before dusting his hands and breathed out walking towards him .

Breeze: And anger too . I always knew that one . My shawtie has it to .

Kingsley paced over and he shook his head following for a distance when Kingsley stopped and pointed for him to go over . Breeze bit his lip then kept walking when he stepped on something and the hair on his body stood up and his brain sent signals to his whole body . His heart pounded looking at his foot and yeah , one more move , then boom !

The lights went on flashing on him and he hid his eyes and when he moved his hand his heart sank cracking it's way down .

Breeze: Kagiso ! Kagiso!

Jack: (on speaker) I wouldn't move if I were you .

Breeze: You think this is a movie or something.

What the hell is this ? Let him go !

Jack: See that bomb underneath your foot will not kill you , but instead it'll blow him . So this means his life is in your hands . One more move then its bye bye dear son . J ust like I lost my wife when you shot you plants in her .

Breeze: J ack I said I was sorry. I know I wronged you and I cant take back what I did , all I can say is I'm sorry! Ohk ! J ust let him go and take me instead. Your fight is not with him . It's with me .

Jack: Your right ! But you know that in every war - the innocent ones are the most affected. You should have thought about that . Breeze not only did you make a baby with her - you stripped me my dignity and tore my family apart . She's my life and you took her away from me . With that your going to pay hard for the damage you've coursed . For breaking my marriage and for having a baby with my wife.

Breeze: Fine - just let him go first please. He's innocent in this .

Jack: (laughs) What ? Let him go ? No brother . It wouldn't be a fun game if it wasn't for him .

Breeze : You lose can of a brother , you seriously think this is a game ? Jack-

Jack: Are you in or what ? If not - I can easily tell my guy right there to push you then puff ! Game over , we can all go home happy.

Breeze shook his head and looked at Kagiso who looked like he was beaten and electrocuted . Seeing those wires wrapped on his seat and unconscious he could just scream in pain right now .

Breeze: Fine - what is it ?

Jack: Finally - we are playing Dealers Choice.

Breeze: (frowned) Wait what do you mean Dealers Choice ? Jack what have you done?

Jack : I think I might have taken it a little too far . So I went on and made a call then managed to get your baby mama . Poisoned her . (chuckles) No dont worry , she's not dead . YET ! Right now as we speak she's laying on a surgic table and lucky her I found her the best doctors to perform the surgery.

Breeze: (teary) What ?

Jack: Yeah ..and guess what ? I also found out that not only is she carrying one but two ! So I decided to add some spice to our game . Give them up for adoption.

Breeze: You wouldn't dare !

Jack : Oh yes I will. Two lovely families are on standby to adopt a new born and the twins are perfect. You should be grateful course this way I'm saving them from you and the darkness you come with along with the Lyon misery . Besides you already have Air whom I cant harm , since you know - he's my wifes child . So Dealers Choice - You get to pick one . Between Kagiso, your first son . The only person that makes you a better person and shapes

you into being who you are . The first person who made you feel loved and worthy after so long . Or Sagi - your lover, your one true love . Your baby mama. The only woman that had put up with your nonsense and even went down for you . The only person that went through your highs and lows without blinking or looking back. Your ride or die. The one whom you vowed to love and protect in front of the world and the most high . Who's it going to be ?

Kingsley walked over and handed him a note then walked back. His eyes welled up even more when he looked at the address on the paper and back at Kagiso.

Jack: That's the address she's at . So now the cards are in your hands and you got only 5 mins to decide. All you have to do is move your foot and go get her or stand there and live an eternity of suffering knowing you gave up your kids for

adoption and that your the reason behind your wife's death . So basically is one versus three . Who do you choose ?

Meanwhile back on the side of the road in an Avanza. Odirile rubbed his face listening as his heart broke into pieces. He's never heard him cry or sobb this much a day . It's not easy to choose between two loved ones especially when the bond is so strong . Breeze has always been his brother and today in his desperate time , he needs him more than ever.

Stone: Do we go in now ?

Odirile : Hold on ! There's no way . I am . I called the three of you here because I needed your talent and brains not for you to spill your boss's blood on the soil . He's not going to be happy with that. (sigh) it's been great working with you all . Just to let you know - as your other mini boss , y'all can move on with your lives . Stone you need to get your shit

together and find a job somewhere. Out your skill to use and build a life . J a s o n , you should go finish up that engineering degree of your. And Shoun you need to go back to school.

Stone: No man this is us . Some of us are not destined into careers and all . This is how we make money and we are going to stick with what brings the meal to the table .

Shoun: yeah some of us , our lives do not require a certificate. And why does this sound like a goodbye ?

Odirile: J u s t saying .

J a s o n : As for me , I've been thinking about that for a while now . Your right man . I'm going back there next year .

Odirile : Cxxl - see y'all. Oh wait - change of plans. That's if your still willing to risk it . J a s o n can you please help with cutting the lights and stone , your the bouncer I need you to come grab him . I dont know what's popping in there but I have a feeling he won't want to leave even if I drag him . So you'll help

me with him . And Shoun , you'll grab his boy .

They got out of the car looking at the time and they still had 3 mins . They crossed the road and went to the containers aiming with their guns .His heart pounded so hard this time when he breathed out rapidly having a panic attack and sat down by the container as tears burned his eyes . He took out his phone and removed the pin and went to notes typing something.

Stone : What are you doing?

Odirile: I'll catch up. I'm having an attack.

Shoun : Should i-

Odirile: no . I know we dont have a clear plan but at least let's just save him and the kid. If this area had cameras, no doubt we'll know what's happening in there .

Shoun : We could have bugged him with cameras .

Odirile: He didn't want them . That's why he chose

the one on his tooth. So let's end this

All : Sure .

A while later . Breeze looked at his wrist watch not knowing what to do with the minute and 20 seconds . The time kept moving like nothing is wrong not waiting until it counted down to 30 seconds . His hear raced with every beating when he raised his head with teary eyes looking at the unconscious Kagiso who's head had been facing down all along .

Jack: 10 , 9 , 8 ,7 - come on brother . You know what to do .

Breeze: Shut up and come out here and let's sort this out man to man ! Stop hiding your coward !

Jack: 3 , 2, 1 and now ! Its starting brother . So your telling me you chose this boy over her ? Poor Sagi .. mind you , their doing this without sedating her so she'll feel everything . Pain worse than death .
Nc nc nc .

Breeze: I said come out here you disgraceful
bustard!

Jack: Oh ... ohk .

Jack walked from behind him in a container and went to stand next to him with a smirk in his face . Seeing Breeze in tears brought nothing but joy to his heart . He took out his phone and sent a message before looking at Breeze.

Jack: You can still save her . All you have to do is move a muscle. Go to your hun Breeze. She needs you .

Breeze : Please stop this !

Sagis screams came from the speaker's when his heart shattered like a glass and his eyes welled up .

With anger he pulled Jack with his shirt and standing with one leg on the bomb and locked his neck into his arm taking out his gun aiming it on his

head .

Jack's heart pounded so hard when he swallowed .

Breeze: Call this off or you die along with him .

Jack: I'd rather die than live to see your mistake grow in my eyes everyday with his lungs pumping air now and then .

Breeze : Then I guess its Dealers Choice . Right now as we speak, my man are also on a clock that if they dont hear a word from Kagiso stopping them from taking Rosella to a gods forsaken land with your grandchild by 21h10 then they should proceed . Your only heir . He's the only one that can stop this and by killing him , your giving up your daughter to several men of different statuses , religion ,ages and sizes all around the world and into drugs.

Damn she's so beautiful no man will resist that kind of beauty even if she ages or loses her curves and all . She'll never die yet until she suffers all the pain of your wrath and you wont be there to find her . So stop it and let my family go !

Jack's eyes welled up thinking of every last pain he caused his daughter and even now she hasn't forgiven him . The thought of another man twice his age on her dragged filled his mouth when he bit his lip looking around.

Meanwhile Odirile looked at them still waiting for the lights to cut out but nothing happened. Breeze and Jack started pushing each other but Breeze wouldn't move his foot and Odirile knew that won't last for long . He bit his lip as one last tear dropped and he put his gun on the ground running over to Kagiso. He quickly tried to untie him with his shaky hands when Jack spotted him and by the time he managed to push Breeze off - the five second time on the bomb gave Odirile the opportunity to push Kagiso in the water then he closed his eyes and every part of him got covered by the flame.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 14:00] Lynne : Chapter 88 .

At the containers.

After the explosion, Stone quickly dived into the water to get Kagiso and Sagis screams stopped coming from the speaker. He swam over to Shoun and they helped get him out of water but he wasn't breathing.

Shoun: Is he dead ?

Stone : no no he can't be !

He got down on his knees and performed CPR on him countless times until he gasped coughing out the water. They both sighed looking at each other in relief but their little smiles dropped looking at where the explosion took place. Their eyes welled up with tears walking over but the fire was still huge for them to get there and check if he was still there.

Kagiso weakly stood up walking over and stood by them looking at the fire burning up as his heartbeat began pounding like hell.

Meanwhile Breeze layed on the ground with his

body crippled and shaking from what he saw unable to move with tears streaming down the side of his eyes looking up at the sky . He tried moving but his body was still in shock so he couldn't move a muscle with his heart pounding.

Police sirens approached the area when Jack looked at all of them before standing up and ran back into the containers but Jason appeared from the inside and pushed him back on the ground in anger . If he wasn't Breezes family he'd blow his brains at this point. He turned him around and pushed him back to where Breeze was and pointed a gun on his head .

It's at this point where every memory you shared with someone come fleshing back into your mind and play at the same time before your eyes . Breeze gained his consciousness turning his head looking at Jack by his side and the gun next to him. All the anger and hatred washed over him but Odirile's words cracked their way into his skull . He bit his lip and pulled the gun shooting both his legs and he

went down screaming in pain.

The police cars parked next to them and he dropped his gun as more of them surrounded them . He walked over to where Odirile had sacrificed himself looking at the fire slowly burning down and it hit hard that he couldn't have survived this kind of explosion. Tears streamed effortlessly when he remembered Sagi . He bowed his head before going to pick the note and ran to his car .

Police officer: You cant leave here . In fact your under ar-

Breeze: you can arrest me after I find out if my wife and kids are safe . I wont run . Following me if you want too .

He got in his car and sped off and one police car followed behind him .

Meanwhile the police kept asking questions to what happened here but the three of them just stared at the fire in tears and none of them had anything to say .

An ambulance pulled over and paramedics rushed out with a stretcher to attend Jack who was screaming his lungs out . He just crippled his legs and now he's going to jail like this . He shook his head crying even more .

At the Location on the note

Breeze parked next to an ambulance looking at two paramedics lifting Sagi over and put her inside. He sighed in relief seeing her still pregnant then hopped in holding her hand as they tried to stabilize her .

Breeze: Sagi ? Baby wake up ! Sagi ! Where are the people that kidnapped her ?

Paramedic : We don't know. When we got here there was no one except for her laying on the table and it looks like whoever they are , they tried to perform an operation on her . We only saw another ambulance speeding out . We'll find out if it was lawful or what . But for now , we need to focus on the babies and mommy right here .

Breeze: ohk.

He held her hand kissing it and the ambulance drove off leaving the police on the crime scene.

At Mxolisi's house.

The whole house filled with mouns and groans since they didn't bother to lock the bedroom door. Abigail grinded on him increasing her speed bouncing on him when her body received a wave and she slowed down but Mxolisi held on to her waist helping her ride him until they both released .

He shot his shots in her with her legs vibrating and then she collapsed on the bed next to him with a throbbing cockie.

Damn he missed this . He smiled looking up the ceiling then back at her and she smiled pulling the sheets on her face blushing . He laughed pulling them off and lifted her chin for a kiss then pulled her to lay her head on his arm .

He kissed her forehead and right here this is what he has been looking for all along . Even after what they've been through they still couldn't resist each other . The effect they had against one another was on another level of love . This is the woman that caught his heart and eyes with just a first sight . The one he would like to have for the rest of his life .

Mxolisi: I love you

Abigail: What ?

Mxolisi : I'm serious Abigail. I love you. And I want you to be by my side , to grow old and grey with me . I dont want us to keep up with this fucking but I

want us to love . I know your working your way out of the marriage and this is not the perfect time , but I can't pretend like I don't want you in my life when I do . I want you to always be here and to wake up by you every morning .

Abigail : Are you saying this course of the sex ?

Mxolisi: No - I mean it . I love you and I wouldn't want anyone else to be my wife but you .

Abigail : What ?

Mxolisi: I know this is improper and definitely not romantic but I cant wait any longer. Abigail will you marry me ? Would you please do me the honor of being my wife? The mother of my kids ?

Abigail : (smiling) Yess! Thousand times Yess!

He smiled breathing out heavily and leaned in kissing her and pulling the sheets over them as she giggled

At the Police station

Around 4AM

All four of them in different interrogation rooms, 3 detectives went from room to room asking questions but none of them said anything expect turn everything to Jack .

Kagiso sat on the chair with his hands pinned on the table rubbing his face and flinched since he was beaten . He sighed when tears burned his eyes and the thought of another person sacrificing themselves for him broke him straight in between. This guy had a lot to live up to and now he left his family and friends behind saving him . It was not his time but he took his turn and died for him to live on . Tears streamed down his cheeks and the door slid open then a police officer walked in looking at him .

Police: hey - your leaving . Come on .

He stood up limping and rubbed his tears with the dirty shirt he was wearing going out .

Once he was at the exit , he realized that he didn't know where to go at this point and how he was going to get there . He sighed putting his hands in the pocket when he touched something and frowned taking it out , it was a phone. He switched it on and when he tried to swipe the locker it couldn't course of the water . This was definitely not his phone .

He's mind went back to every last memory of him until when Odirile tried to get him of the chair with shaky hands.

○ Odirile :(pulling the rope) Come on ! Kagiso you need to wake up . I hope you live the of your own after this young blood ! Come - on !

He managed to pull it and untie him before

wrapping his hand on his neck sliding something in his pocket knowingly he wont make it with him to the water in time course he was a bit heavy. So instead of dieing with him , he threw him off and he rolled on the floor until into the water and then the the bomb exploded.

○

He breathed in as his throat dried up and he looked at the phone . He looked around and spotted a police car reversing and he limped over and stood by .

Kagiso: hey can I get a ride please.

Officer: Sure , where are you going?

Kagiso: uhm ..Do you know Breeze Lyons house ?

Officer: yeah , once went there to collect his wife .
Hop in .

Kagiso: thanks a lot .

At The hospital.

Breeze sat on the bench with a fist on his mouth anxiously waiting. He took out his phone leaning back with a heavy heart looking at Odirile's pictures. His brother. The only person that was able to line him and guide him into the right route. The only person that can handle him. The best thing that's ever happened to him. He rubbed his eyes not knowing how he's going to break this to his sister but he knew he had to be the one to tell her. It was hard to believe that he was truly gone.

A doctor walked over to him and he quickly rubbed his tears standing and she smiled holding the stethoscope on her neck.

Breeze: Please I know your going to give me paragraphs but please can we get straight to how

they are ? Are they ohk ?

Doctor: (smiling) Your family is filled with fighters Mr Mr Lyon. The babies are just fine , their healthy . The poison given to your wife didn't affect them but instead it affected the mother . We managed to drain it out of her system , she'll be back in no time and (smiling widely) Its a boy and a girl. We had to get them out before the poison could spread on to them . Congratulations!

As if he didn't cry enough, now he wished he was standing right here patting his shoulder or hugging him tightly celebrating the wonderful news with him , but he wasn't there . He put his hand on his eyes and broke down when the doctor pulled him and they hugged .

Doctor: Its ohk Mr Lyon. They're in safe hands . They're alive and well , they made it . The operation was a success. Come - let's go see them .

They walked down the corridor and stopped at Sagis room. He looked at her through the glass and walked in . She slowly opened her eyes to the sound of someone getting in and a familiar presence looking around. He eyes teared up seeing him after a long while and could help but break down opening her hands widely to hug him tight . Being in each others arms warmed their hearts and felt like where they belonged.

Breeze: I'm so sorry I put you through this. I promise I will never leave you to any harm again.

He pulled back looking at her chubby cheeks and she was still mad beautiful. He rubbed her tears with his thumb before pulling her for a French kiss tasting her lips after so long . The both pulled back out of breath when she realized her huge bump wasn't there .

Sagi: Where are my babies?

The door slid open and a nurse walked in pushing the baby cots then stopped them next to her. Both their heart skipped with joy and Breeze walked to the side looking at them in a pink and blue baby blankets and hats. They were little than when Air was born.

Breeze : (smiling) Their so little I'm scared to touch them.

Nurse : (smiling) That's because they were birthed before time. Luckily they can breath on their own without a machine. You got warriors right here son. Sit down and I'll help you.

He sat down in the chair and the nurse carefully lifted the baby then help him putting her on his chest as she sucked her little hand. He smiled dropping a tear and looked at Sagi as the nurse taught her how to breastfeed. The baby sucked her breast when she flinched looking at him then

adjusted smiling .

Nurse: Ohk .. have you guys thought of their names yet .

Sagi : Have you baby ?

Breeze looked at his baby girl and smiled looking at Sagi .

Breeze: Have you ?

Sagi: I did but I wanted to hear from you .

Breeze: how about Melokuhle and Enzokuhle ? My mom always loved the name Melokuhle hoping she'd have a daughter after me , unfortunately she didn't get the opportunity. It means -Beautiful one and Enzokuhle means -To do good .

Sagi: (smiling) Love the chemistry behind the names too . I love them . Enzo and Melow .

Nurse: I love them too . (Smiling) Congratulations

on your family Lyons. Wishing you all the happiness.

Both : Thank you .

The nurse walked out and Sagi looked at the baby then at Breeze . Even though she spent months in a mental prison, she still knew her husband. She knew that something was wrong with him for him to cry this effortless .

Sagi: I got kidnapped from the prison and apparently I was poisoned . I woke up in a fricken abandoned building and two doctors around me ready to cut me open and take my babies away from me . And I know that there's more to this and i want to know what it is . From the moment I stepped into that van until now holding my kids in my hands laying on this bed .

Breeze looked at her and sighed explaining

everything.

At Breezes house.

The van parked at the gate and Kagiso stepped out thanking the driver before it drove off . He sighed looking at the gate and his jaws dropped looking at his mother sitting next to the gate . He smiled walking over and she stood up meeting him halfway hugging.

Veronica: I told Breeze to tell you to call me before an hour passes or else I'll be here in a blink . I guess he didn't take me seriously that i even ended up sleeping here on his gate . Where have you been ?

Kagiso: Uhm ..at a friends house .

Veronica: Lie to me again and I'll forget that your my son . And what happened to your shirt?

Kagiso: my shirt?

Veronica: Its a bit dark but I can still see that your wearing a torn shirt. Where you involved in a fight ?

Kagiso: Something like that . Yeah.

He picked he small travel bag and held her hand walking to the house . He punched in the pin and they walked in as she looked around amazed . She turned to his son and her jaws dropped looking at his face .

Veronica: I knew that you coming here was a bad idea . Go take a bath and we're leaving this God forsaken place and you'll never step your foot here ever again.

Kagiso: I know you say all that because you care and love me , but mom - this is my home now . I have a family here and they mean well though they can't seem to get out of problems . But I guess every family has problems. Mom this is me . I learnt to accept my role of life and I'm going to live with it . I'm the bait , the fixer and the chosen one of

this family.

Veronica : I know that but what about your future. What about you ? What do you want in life besides being the chosen one ? Kagiso ever since you stepped into this town your life has completely changed . You have changed and your life has taken a different turn. You always in danger and in pain .

Kagiso: But that has always been my life mama . I've always lived in pain and I'm always the one that took the blame in everything happening in our community. Yes it has but to me it changed to the better . Mom I used to gamble , stealing from people's houses , standing by the road for money but that has stopped since I've been here . I got bitten by the community more than a person can usually take but that has changed . Being here - around this people- they took me to school . They feed and dress me . Pay my rent and still give me money every month. They take care of me and I have someone I can call a father . A figure in life that I have always wanted . (Teary) You asked me if

there was anyone that dropped anything for me like I do for the rest and today I saw that unfold before my eyes . This people are not only my wish coming true but they are a blessing in my life and I couldn't be more grateful. They couldn't let me die so instead they'd rather die for me to live my life .

Veronica: (tears blocking her sight) What are you talking about ?

Kagiso : I cant leave mom ! Someone died and it's all my fault ! If I had been careful that day I went to stop Rose I could have ran and saved a life . If I got in that taxi and went back or the moment I saw that suspicious men in the restroom and left this wouldn't have happened. I cant live after what they've done for me . I owe the person who saved my life in exchange for his !

Veronica : What are you saying? Please tell me what happened?

She pulled his hand and they sat on the couch . He leaned his head breaking in tears and she pulled her

over into a tight motherly hug .

At The Lyons Mansion.

Around 7AM

Jane sat on the couch texting Jack to find out about his whereabouts but he still didn't reply. She sighed standing when her phone rang in her hand.

Her : Hii Jessie .

Jessie : Hii Jane . How are you ?

Her : I'm good , you ?

Jessie: I'm also good . Can you please get to the hospital as fast as you can. Your husband has been admitted and I tell you this is not good from what the report says .

Jane : What ? Is he hurt ? Is he ohk ?

Jessie: Please get here course it seems like he's not going to be here for a long time . I think he's going to get arrested or something. J ust get here ohk. I'm treating him .

Her heart pounded so hard and she quickly stood up jogging up the stairs . She went to her room and picked her keys then went to the nursery room finding Rose with the baby .

Rose: Are you ohk ?

Jane : (swallowed) yeah.. can you please look after your brother and I'll be right back.

Rose : yeah ... he looks like mini uncles Breeze, have you noticed.

Jane : (clears throat) yeah ... I'm coming .

She closed the door running down the corridor to the stairs going down and went out the door to the garage. This is all on her and she cant be losing

him like this . Tears burned her eyes starting the engine and drove off . This is not how the fruit of her wicked actions was supposed to taste .

At Odirile's house.

A police car parked on the drive way and two policemen stepped out walking to the door . They pressed the door bell and stepped back waiting for an answer . This was a sad part of being an officer. Informing the deceased family of the passing of their loved one .

Ditebogo opened the door holding her phone and a mug in her hand . She sighed looking at them and smiled.

Ditebogo: He's not here . I know he's gotten in trouble when you come wearing that face . What has he done?

They looked at each other before sighing and looking at her .

Detective: Miss , can we please talk inside .

She narrowed her eyebrows confused and opened the door widely and they got in before she closed the door behind following them to the dining room.

Three minutes later - Breeze sped into the yard and his heart skipped looking at the car . He quickly went out and put the pin by the door then rushed to the dining area where the air was awkward and depressing. The two policemen stood up looking at her before leaving and Breeze stood there not knowing where to start when all of a sudden she screamed sorrowfully to break every living creatures heart . He rushed over hugging her tightly as she screamed with tears trying to release the pain in her heart .

.

-

-

-

-

-

-

-

Five days later

-

-

-

-

-

-

-

Comment

-

- .
- .
- .
- .

[08/02, 14:01] Lynne : Chapter 89

At Mxolisi's house.

Abigail sat on the couch going through her old picture stopping at the one Odirile carrying her on his back with priceless smiles . She smiled with tears and passed to another one which was black and white with him shirtless . He had seductive eyes on this one with a custom made necklace and his hand on his head while the other was in the pocket.

Mxolisi walked from the stair and sat next to her when se quickly passed the picture to the other ones .

Mxolisi: Hey ..I need to tell you something before we take more steps further.

Abigail: (wipes tears) I know that sound . Your not going to the funeral, are you ?

Mxolisi : No babe , it's not about that . I am going to the funeral. Odirile and I had no beef and actually I liked that guy.

Abigail: ohk .

Mxolisi: So - you know I've been married right ?

Abigail: Yeah .. to Rose . I know that .

Mxolisi: Right , so before we separated - her and I shared some quality time together and right now she's- Pregnant.

Her jaws dropped feeling as if her ears just deceived her in a second and she turned looking at him with her whole body .

Abigail : What ?

Mxolisi: Abigail you have to understand this . You and I weren't together by then . We were both married . We didn't know that we were going to leave our partners and be a couple .

Abigail: So you kept this to yourself all along listening to me lay my dirty laundry while you have a skeleton in your closet ? How could you ?

Mxolisi: Your being extra right now .

He stood up heading to the kitchen and she followed him as he made himself a sandwich.

Abigail: I'm being extra? ! Really?

Mxolisi: Yeah - really . Look at yourself right now !

Abigail: Mxolisi you kept a secret from me . Matter of fact a huge one and you expect me to jump to your confession ?

Mxolisi: Actually it's not a confession I'm just

opening up to you about my circle of life . I could have kept this to myself because I know that I really cant keep hiding this course you'll find out anyway so I'm doing you the favors by telling you . No human can be kept a secret . At your age you should be knowing that .

Abigail: Why are you making this about me ? This is about you keeping this from me ! You know I want a child of my own yet you keep another from me . I thought we were more than that .

Mxolisi looked at her before picking his sandwich and bit it .

Abigail : Mxolisi ?

Mxolisi: Mmmh.

Abigail: Why didn't you tell me in time ? The time when we sat down and talked , telling each other about our problems a week ago.

Mxolisi: Well hun , that same day we talked - that

was the same day I found out she was 3 - 4 months pregnant. Sorry i kept it to me and i promise it'll never happen again .

Abigail: just that I was hoping to be the first woman to carry your child . I'm sorry I acted up .

He smiled putting the sandwich down and pulled her by her hand hugging her .

Mxolisi: I'm sorry too .

At The Lyons Mansion.

Jane layed on the bed looking at Air sucking her breast. A tear escaped her eye as guilt struck in that she'll never see her husband in a long time . Rose walked in holding an icecream with two spoons and went to lay next to them with Air in the middle . She gave her a spoon and opened the icecream.

Jane: Baby I need to tell you something.

Rose : If its about dad , I don't care . He can rot in jail for all I care . He had no right to kidnap Kagiso .

Jane: No sweety its about me . Air .

She looked at her baby boy asleep and put her breast away before tucking him nicely and leaned on the headboard pouring her dirty secret.

At Breezes house.

Breeze sat on his minibar taking two glasses and poured brown liquor in each before pushing the other to where Odirile usually sat . He galped his drink and closed his eyes as tears burnt his eyes .

He looked at Odirile's glass and sighed pouring himself another shot before adding more to his glass . He lifted his then drank it at a go again still

hoping he'll find that glass empty but still .

He stood up with the bottle in his hand and walked to the stairs sitting down facing the door . He usually came in without knockin or unannounced and talk shit but for the past few days he never showed up . Each day he kept the hope to him walking in that door and heading straight to his kitchen making himself food without anyone's permission.

His throat dried up and a tear dropped when he lifted the bottle for a sip . He took out his phone to listen to any voice notes from him but none where there . His mind rewinded every second they spend together from when they were young until they were all grown up . He looked at his phone and chuckled in tears .

* He checked his phone and it had several missed calls and messages , he sighed getting a pear and went to sit down .A call came through and he put the pear down answering .

Odirile: Dont tell me you just woke up .

Breeze: Ryle what to do you want ?

Odirile: I want your a** here at the club in 15 minutes.

He hang up before he could respond and Breeze threw his head back .

*

He smiled under pain and tears streaming down his cheeks then took a gulp from the bottle . He closed his eyes before opening them again looking at the bottle in his hand .

*Odirile looked at him as he galped another glass of strong liquor and clenched his jaws as the burning taste landed inside.

Breeze: Wow!

He turned looking at Odirile who's been looking at him still holding the first glass . He scoffed when the bartender put his orders before him and left .

Breeze : Are you just gonna sit the gawking?

Odirile: yeah ..I think so

Breeze: ohk (raised glass) To my miserable life.
Cheers !

*

This was definitely not what he meant by misery when taking that shot . He frustratedly threw the bottle breaking it on the door and Kagiso heard it from upstairs when he came down rushing. He stopped looking at him cry like never before and he swallowed sitting next to him and hugged him without words .

Breeze: (crying) He can't be dead no no nooo! He cant!

*

*

*

The next day.

*

*

*

At Odirile's house.

The yard filled with people going up and down under the cloudy weather wearing black caring less if it was going to rain or not . Ditebogo stood by her brothers window upstairs looking at them in tears and she could hardly even recognize all this people around here . She put her hand in the pockets of Odirile black luther jacket she was wearing and

turned around to lay on his bed .

She pulled his pillow sniffing in his scent which brought even more pain and she bursted in tears thinking that he'll never see him again. The goodbye he said when leaving the house was the final one . Her best buddy. Her best friend. Her pillar of strength and everything in between - he's gone.

The door slid open and she turned looking at Kagiso in black standing there . The usual butterflies she felt didn't raise in her stomach but instead went dead . She frowned feeling weak to say anything and helpless in pain and tears streamed when he walke dove and sat next to her pulling her into a hug .

Kagiso: I'm so so sorry. I'm -

He kept quite realizing that his sorries will only

come out of his mouth , they'll never bring him back .
Losing someone you love is the hardest thing on
this planet to deal with . It hurts more than every
pain you could ever feel . The door slid open and
they turned looking at who it was .

Lady : Heii , it's time to start .

Ditebogo took breath excercises and stood up fixing
her head wrap walking out without looking back at
Kagiso. He swallowed a painful lump and stood up
following her .

Funerals were never said to be fun , but instead
their sweet sorrows. The thought of not seeing
your loved one ever again tears your heart slowly
but painfully. No one can get over that . Not even in
5 years or 20 years, the pain is going to be always
there when the thought crosses your mind .

The pastor opened the service with a prayer before
preaching the name of God with everyone wearing
dry faces . The time came for his loved ones to say

their good byes and Breeze stood up in a suit for the very first time in his life . He tried to keep his neutral face but the pain ripped him apart and tears blurred his eyes . He wiped them standing behind the coffin looking at the people.

You know it's funny what funerals can do , it brings people together even the long lost to celebrate the life and memories of the deceased even though they weren't there all along . He knew his best friend and almost every family member including his friends but today this was not what he expected. New faces.

His face dropped when Abigail and Mxolisi walked in holding hands and went to sit right behind his seat . He swallowed hoping to see Sagi walk in to support him through this difficult time , if her request was approved. He wiped his tear looking at the coffin when he choked to the thought of burying his remains. This is not how a good guy is layed to rest .

Breeze: (wipes tear) Odirile and I were friends since we were toddlers . We both couldn't keep our hands out of trouble, actually I couldn't but he was always there to keep me out of it . After I lost my loved ones , me and my family have been in an endless feud and as always my friend was my shoulder to cry on. We grew up to being more than just friends but brothers - a family. He was my mentor , brother you can even go as far as saying a sire course he was the only one able to put sense into my head . (wipes tear) When I was down on my knees , he was there to get me up . And when I was in pain or had problems- this nigga right here always laughed at me making them bearable. I once came to his house with a broken car and this nigga laughed his lungs out . I could never get over his laughter , it hurts . And then he sat me down and put some sense into my head on how to deal with my issue . Truth be told - I never felt lonely or unworthy of love course of him . He was everyone's best friend but my brother . (They chuckled) In my life people came and left but he was the constant. Always there when I need him . And always on time . I guess with

that I must say I'm the luckiest guy because I have and always will have one- in-a-million brother like him . Oh and this guy had a bubbly mouth - he never shuts up especially when he gives you his piece of mind (they chuckle). And boy did that piece of mind hurt . He never peaked around the bush - if he had something to say , he'll say it without thinking twice . He cared less if he's words hurt you, as long as he's been honest and said what he wanted - he doesn't give a damn, you'll get over it . When I faced with major illness , I knew I was in a better position to survive course of him . Few days ago I was laying on a hospital bed , there was no other person I wished to have by my bed all night than my family and he was there . I don't know what I did to have a best friend like him , but I'm so grateful. He brought out the best in me . If I continue I'll never finish talking course my life with you- is endless. I'm glad your my brother . I look forward to seeing you again . I love you man . Your my brother my best friend forever. Till we meet again OD.

People wiped their tears and he put his hands on the coffin wishing to see him again as tears dropped on the coffin but still .

Someone walked over to him and wrapped her tiny hands around his waist and when he opened his flooded eyes , comfort washed over him and he hugged her .

Sagi : Hes in a better place now .

She wrapped her arm around his and they walked to sit down . She looked at Abigail and frowned at her hand on Mxolisi's lap while she wiped her tears with a tissue. She knew she had to behave for the sake of her babies to get out of that hell hole .

Kagiso stood up and went to sit on another chair and she sat down rubbing his back to calm him .

Kagiso sat few seats behind where Odirile's family were seated and his eyes couldn't get off Ditebogo course of the guilt. It brought pain to him knowing

that a life was lost to protect him and now the family is in grief. Ditebogo wiped her tears standing up and went to stand in front of every one trying hard not to look at him .

Ditebogo: My brother , my other parent, my friend, my everything. He was my world. Everything that I am today and tomorrow its because of him . I was always on his neck and he always put up with it course I'm his sister . I'd annoy him most of the times but he never gave up on me even if he said some horrible thing out of anger . We'd fight , argue , scream, call each other names but all that came out of brother and sister love bond . He's the greatest gift from my parents. His last words to me were ' im off , Take care little sister ' when he went to check uncle Breeze at the hospital. (Teary) I never thought that those were the last words I'd hear coming from his mouth to me or that that was his final goodbye and I'll never see him again . I dont know what I'd do without him from here . He's been my shield and everything . Brother- I promise

I'll make you proud . I'll go to school, graduate and be independent like you always wanted . I promise I wont let any pretty face disturb that like you said . I'll make you proud big bro . I promise .

She kissed her hand putting it on the coffin crying and went to sit down crying even more . Meanwhile Rose sat with her mother at the middle of the crowd staring

at Kagiso who's eyes where locked on someone . She followed his yes to Ditebogo and she sighed sitting back with an aching heart . Bonolo sat with her mother at the front row with tears rolling down her cheek . They still had a lot to cover up . They had a long journey to walk together, and now he's gone . She was hoping they'd get married and have kids , go on family trips and have a life she could ever wish for . What hurts is that she couldn't stand up to say a few words to him course with the pain , she couldn't find the right words besides 'I'll always love you '

More people came to the front to say their last goodbyes to him before they wrapped it up going to the graveyard .

At the grave yard.

With the coffin ready to go down . The crown stood by singing while his most closet were devastated to the last . A cousin walked over to the coffin and layed a blanket before people stood up and each to put Red roses on top while singing.

J oko ya hao e bobebe

E nkgathola pelo

Tumelo ho nna ke thebe

E tla mphemis a lefu

Nyakallo ke e fumane

Tseleng ya hao Morena

Dira ho nna di qhalane
Ke hloletswe ke wena
Ke tla opa ka diatla
Halleluya o se natla
Se nkeneang ho jehovah

They started humming the song as the coffin slowly sank into the ground. Breeze choked from his tears looking at the coffin going down before bursting in front of everybody sorrowfully touching each and everyone around here . Meanwhile Ditebogo screamed in tears feeling the pain when she quickly stood up running over but Kagiso caught her before she can throw herself inside .

Ditebogo: (crying) Ke bata Odirile ! Odirile ! Abuti !
Odirile seka ntshia ! Odirile! I want my brother...

Tears flooded in everyone's eyes as she kept on

screaming trying to escape Kagiso's grip . Her knees good weak when she sank down and he went down with her hugging her still crying. Meanwhile Abigail stood by crying watching Breeze , she could only wish to hold him during this difficult time . Sagi rubbed his back with tears flowing in her eyes as he cried on his knees caring less of what other men think of him . The pain in his heart was ripping every inch and he couldn't take it .

Men walked over with spades and started filling the grave . The song too - nothing adds more pain than a slow song at a funeral. Breeze leaned his head down not wanting to see his friend being buried and filled with soil like that . Sagi held his hand laying her head on his shoulder not knowing how what to say to him .

After they were done filing it they put flowers on hid grave and everyone stood up and those who were standing left heading to their cars leaving them .

They all came to sit down looking at the grave but Kagiso was still on the ground with Ditebogo crying. This was it - hes gone .

Mxolisi: I'm so sorry for your loss man .

Breeze: I didn't lose him , he's resting . J ust that this happens to be his final resting place.

Sagi: He was the best thing that's ever happened to us . I'm glad I got the chance to meet him before he leaves us . (Smiling) he liked calling me smucles.

Breeze: (smiling) And I'd warn him I only call you that but he didn't care .

Abigail: And his wife . (Laughs) He used to say "What's yours is mine get over it "

Sagi: And invite himself to our kitchen and eat everything.

They all laughed in tears thinking of it .

Ditebogo : I remember on my birthday when I walked in on a fight and said whatever came into my mind and he shut me off by saying " You know for someone who's on her last year of law, you prattle shit ! Quit already your wasting my money " and then he walked out on me by saying I should clean up the mess . Can you believe that ! (Laughs)

They all laughed and she stood up dusting herself and went to sit under the stretch tent with them to reminisce about her brother. Bonolo sat there still with her mouth closed unable to form words .

Kagiso looked at her and sighed going to sit next to her holding her hand. She squeezed his hand and layed her head on his shoulder as they honored Odirile with one last laughters with him .

Rose : And I also remember when I messed up every right thing in my life , damn did I get hurt . I've never been hurt by words like that ever in my life .

Sagi : Really?

Rose: Really aunty, I even spent months trying to make it up course his words pushed me to better .

Breeze :(chuckles) I was there , you should have seen what was going on. He'd never shut up even when I asked him to leave , he'd say "I'm not going anywhere"

Jane: He once told me where to get off over the phone , I'll never forget that. That's when I knew words hurt like hell . Even as old as I am , I got hurt .

Sagi : You were being too much , now look at what its coursed- anyway we'll deal with that you and I, this is about Odirile.

Mxolisi: And the day you walked in on me with your sons blood, I told you what's happening and when you walked in he was like " bleeding and dislocated leg . Boy you better start praying " I've never been shaken feel me !

Abigail: (laughs) Why ?

Mxolisi: Course I had an experience of Breeze not being able to put his hands to himself .

They all laughed when two officers walked over and they frowned looking at them . Sagi sighed standing and leaned over kissing Breeze.

Mxolisi : Come on guys couldn't you wait till later . She mourning her friend for christ sake .

Man: You know the rules. She was only permitted to go bury her loved one th-

Sagi : He know . Guys I have to go serve my sentence. I'm only left with four months and then I'll be out .

J ane : I'm sorry I put you through this . I have no -

Sagi :I said not now J ane . I'm glad to see you guys let's not ruin that. Besides I left my kids with a nurse i hardly know over there. I wasn't supposed to be here in the first place. I'm sure the milk i pumped is finished .

Abigail : Wait kids ?

Sagi : (smiling) Yeah ..Melokuhle and Enzokuhle.

Abigail: That's-

Sagi :Yep , in honor of their grandmother.

Mxolisi : I'm sorry too .

Sagi : Its ohk , you tried your best I'll always be thankful for that . I love you all . Especially you baby .

Breeze: I love you more .

Sagi: Don't forget to come get them next month .

Breeze: I wont .

She turned to the grave and picked the rose that fell off and put it there .

Sagi : I love you too dear second husband.

She dropped a tear before going to hug everyone and they took her . Her living like this was like exiting his life for the second time and he couldn't

do anything. He rubbed his tear sweating back with hope to see her again.

They all remained seated looking at the grave for dear Odirile to at least scream so they'd dig him out but nothing until they left.

.

.

.

.

.6 months later .

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.
.
.
[08/02, 14:01] Lynne : Chapter 90 .

At Ditebogo's house

Kagiso leaned on the bed pressing his phone as Ditebogo got out of her closet with different outfits but all he could say was no to any of them . She sighed going back and came back wearing a pink umbrella dress and he smiled before shaking his head.

Ditebogo: Then what am I going to wear?

Kagiso: (smiling) Nothing .

Ditebogo: Hahaha , funny.

She went back inside taking off her dress and threw it by the corner holding her waist. There was nothing else she hasn't tried yet he kept saying No . She looked at herself on the mirror in her panties and bra smiling then turned on her toes walking to the bedroom still holding her hips . Kagiso smiled looking at her before releasing a laughter .

Ditebogo: What could possibly be funny ?

Kagiso: You standing in front of me naked .

Ditebogo: why ? Do I make you feel uncomfortable?
Are you gay or your dragon cant stand still ?

Kagiso: I'm gay .

Ditebogo: Yeah right ..

She said that pulling her gown heading downstairs . He frowned looking at her and quickly jumped off wearing his shoes following her .

Kagiso: What do you mean yeah right ?

Ditebogo: Your too hot to be straight. Glowing clear skin and eye catching lips . Your long beautiful lashes and beautiful eyes . Basically your - I don't know . Beautiful. Pretty .

Kagiso: You mean handsome and irresistible ?

Ditebogo: No . Beautiful and pretty .

Kagiso: (sat on high chair) Only woman are beautiful and pretty. J ust say you cant bring yourself to saying it to my face .

Ditebogo: (Rolls eyes) blah blah . Do you want anything?

Kagiso: a smoothie will do . So have you decided what to wear since I cant chose you any ?

Ditebogo: the whole point of asking you to help me with my outfit is because I cant chose one for myself.

Kagiso: Why do you even need my opinion on your outfit Dee ? You know you look great im whatever you put on .

Ditebogo: Your just saying that course your my friend and you want me to just jump in whatever comes into my mind .

Kagiso: Right . Course that way you'll feel comfortable and you'll know that you picked your own outfit that fits your ligue . Plus I dont want you showing your body around all those people- I'd be jealous.

Ditebogo: Someday you and uncle Breeze will have to get it into your thick skuls that I need a man . I'm a woman and I've got needs . I need to wake up in someone I love's arms , snuggle in bed with him and get some . Build a family of my own.

Kagiso: I'm here to do all that , you dont need a man .

Ditebogo: (rolling eyes) I'm tired of condoms. I want it raw . I need to fe-

Kagiso grabbed her head pinning her lips on his kissing her before pulling back pulling his drink.

Kagiso: Thanks for the smoothie. So out of all the things you could wish for at your age , you wish for sex ? Without a condom .

Ditebogo: Not like that . I just want to be loved . Someone to call me each and every day . Day in day out . Someone to think of me in everything they do . To be held close .

Kagiso: I do that .

Ditebogo: You dont get it . Your my friend, of course you have to do that . But I want someone to have a family with , to grow old and gray with.

Kagiso looked at her with his phone still in his hand having a sip from his drink . She sighed looking at him and damn straight he was right about himself. He's totally irresistible.

Ditebogo: Shit ! I cant keep doing this .

She dropped her gown walking over to him taking the cup from his hand and put it on the counter. He put the phone down kissing her when she slid her hand into his pants rubbing his boy . Without wasting time he turned her around bending her on the counter pulling her panties aside and took out his dick stroking himself and led himself in as she gasped .

At the Lyons Mansion.

Air crawled with a dummy in his mouth from Rose's room down to the stairs when Dineo spotted him and rushed over picking him .

Dineo : Air you shouldn't be on the stairs.

The door opened downstairs and she made her way downstairs rocking Air and when he saw his father he waved his hands up for him . Breeze smiled

holding the plastic in his hand and took him .

Air : Da- Da

Breeze: Oh yeah . Its daddy.

Air: Ba ba da ba da

Breeze: I have no idea what that means but I hope your not insulting me , so I'm gonna take it as an I love you. I love you too big guy.

He tickled him and he laughed when J ane walked in just as Dineo walked up the stairs . She smiled looking at them and walked over putting her hands in her back pockets.

J ane: Hi

Breeze: Hey . I hope it's not early for me to get him , just wanted to spend some quality time with him and others before the party begins.

J ane : Its nothing . Its ohk .

Breeze : Thanks .

Dineo walked down the stairs holding his bag and gave it to him then Jane walked them out to the car . He opened the door and buckled him on his seat next to the twins then Sagi gave him his favourite toy tickling him before sitting back .

Jane: Hii.

Sagi: Hey .

Breeze felt the awkward air roaming when he bit his lip closing the door and got in starting the engine .

Jane: See you guys at the party .

Breeze: Sure .

She waved at them stepping back and he drove off .

Meanwhile Sagi shook her head scoffing and looked out of the window. Breeze turned looking at the kids then at her .

Breeze: Out with it love . What is it ?

Sagi: When she said "see you at the party " she meant who's party ? Mine ? Course I dont think so .

Breeze: She's Air's mother Sagi . She has to be there to look after Air .

Sagi: Hes also your child ! i hired two nannies for a reason . If she comes to my party I swear to God she'll regret being there course I'll drown her in that pool . She's pushing it course I'm being collected.

Breeze: Are we doing this in front of the kids ?

Sagi : Breeze I wanted to have this party just so I could get back into the world outside after spending 9 months in a mental prison . Her being there will just ruin everything for me . I cant stand her ! Why did you invite her in the first place ?

Breeze: Ohk calm down . I didn't know it'll be such

an issue. I'll tell her not to come . But you have to understand that she's his mother and I cant toss her aside .

Sagi : Why are you being defensive ? I didn't say anything about her not being his mother .

Breeze: I'm not being defensive.

Sagi : Yess you are !

Breeze: Fine . I am . Sorry .

She sighed looking outside when he pulled her hand kissing it .

Breeze: I'm sorry smucles.

Sagi: Then tell her not to come .

Breeze: Fine I will . I love you

She looked at him putting her hand on the gear changing it with her and sped up .

Meanwhile Rose tossed on the mat with her heavy bump before waking up facing up . She breathed out wiping the sweat off her forehead and picked up her phone dialing Mxolisi . Her heart skipped realizing Air was not next to her where they were playing and she quickly balanced herself standing up .

Mxolisi : Hii .(holding breath)

Rose : Where are you ?

Mxolisi : Excuse you ?(heavily breathing)

Rose : Come on Mxolisi I told you I have to be at the hospital between the week . Why haven't you come to get me ? You said I should tell you with anything concerning the baby and now your -

Mxolisi: Shoot I'm- so - Shit ! Hold on . I'll call you when I get there .

She shook her head hanging up calling out her little

brother . A very sharp pain hit her on her abdomen when suddenly she felt back pains . She leaned on the wall holding her waist doing breath exercises as her stomach tightened. She bit her lip trying not to make a sound until she couldn't take it no more and screamed. She tried walking and her water broke , this time she screamed for dear life .

Jane came rushing up the stairs followed by Dineo and they helped her downstairs as she felt the urge to push . They walked to the car and they helped her in before Jane got to the drivers side speeding out .

At A gym .

Mxolisi did few more lifting then grabbed his towel wiping the sweat off his face . This is what he needs after dealing with complicated cases .A message notified on his phone when he sighed taking it from the armband reading it . He quickly jumped off and went to take his bag running out .

At a Netball court.

Bonolo walked from the court sweating in her gear going to sit down taking off her cap before rubbing off the sweat . She pulled her bottle of water drinking when the girl she was playing with walked over sitting next to her.

Girl: Great game . Your good .

Bonolo: Thank you , so are you

She stood up picking her bag fishing for her car keys saying her goodbye heading to her car . She got in looking at herself on the mirror and sighed holding the wheel .

A car parked next to her and she turned looking at a couple arguing in the car . The lady stepped out annoyed slamming the door and the guy shook his head balancing it on the window. He rubbed his lip turning to the car next to his and she quickly looked

aside .

He rolled the window down and smiled when her heart skipped and she started the car before rolling up her window.

Him : Oh come on ..I swear I'm not a serial killer .

Bonolo: Why would you assume that I think that of you ?

Him : Because your avoiding me and you attempted to roll up your window when I look at you .

Bonolo : Or maybe you are a serial killer and my guts are right . Why else would you think of that ?

Him: Because that's the first thing that crosses every girls mind when seeing a guy smile at them .
A stranger.

Bonolo: And who's this "Every girl " if I may ask ?

He narrowed his eyebrows looking at her before laughing throwing his head backwards.

Him : Wow !

Bonolo : I was just asking . Anyway I have to go .

Him : I'm Lefa Maleka .

Bonolo : Ohk . (Reversing)

Him : I think this is the part you tell me yours.

Bonolo: I thought so too . Bye .

She winked at him before driving off and he smiled impressed rubbing his face as his wife got in the car.

Her : You must be in a mood while I'm not .

Lefa : J ust because your not , it doesn't mean I shouldn't. Get over yourself J as mine.

She frowned licking her icecream and gave him his drink as he drove off .

Jasmine: Still we are not going to have another child

Lefa : What do you mean ? Jasmine I need a child .Why do you always have to take something and turn it into a debate ? I told you that I wanted 3 kids even before we got married and you said you can carry them for me . Why is it an issue now ?

Jasmine : Course you cheated on me and I bet you still do .

Lefa : For the 100th time Jasmine I'm not cheating . I would never and I have never .

She sighed looking outside as the car sped up .

At Ditebog's house .

Breeze parked the car on the parking space before sighing and turned looking at Sagi . Sagi smiled and

looked out of the window giggling and Breeze couldn't help but also chuckled.

Breeze : I dont know if I should go in there or what .
Should I ?

Sagi: i dont know . You said you wanted to spend time with them . If you wait then your plans are ruined. I'm sure their done by now , he's been here for ages .

Breeze: I doubt that . (Sigh) lord please dont let them screw my eyes , their still virgin.

Sagi laughed as he stepped out of the car hesitantly walking over . He pressed the door bell and they didn't answer . He took a short prayer before walking in when his eyes followed the moans straight to the kitchen counter from a distance .

Breeze: Kids ! My eyes ! J eez! (Puts hand on his eyes)

They both gasped and Kagiso pulled out quickly packing himself with a trail and Ditebogo quickly grabbed her gown embarrassed. Breeze opened one eye followed by the other and sighed rubbing his forehead walking over. Both Kagiso and Ditebogo looked away avoiding each others eyes as Breeze stood by looking at them holding his laughter seeing how embarrassed they were.

Ditebogo: Can I make you anything?

Breeze: In the same kitchen you guys just had sex in front of me? I'll pass. Clean it up then maybe later. Go get ready we're leaving.

Ditebogo: I'm sorry.

Breeze: (chuckled) Why are you apologizing? At least your not gallivanting with different men and sleeping out otherwise I'd be mad as hell. Go on.

She held her gown with her head down and placed

out leaving them . Kagiso rubbed his eyes trying to avoid his eyes touching everything around him before sitting down as he stood there with his hands folded . Kagiso looked at him meeting his eyes and quickly looked away checking the time on his phone then put it back taking a sip from his smoothie.

Kagiso: We were gonna come you know.

Breeze: I know .

Kagiso: Right , you know .

Breeze: (laughs) Was it good ?

Kagiso: What ?

Breeze: You heard me .

Kagiso: (clears throat) Yeah .

Breeze: You do realize that you guys cant keep up with this . At first I thought it was her way to get over her brothers passing and didn't want to get in the way of her grieving but it's been six months. You need to do something about that or else you'll

ruin her, and I don't want that for either of you .
Unless you love her .

Kagiso looked at him with the glass on his lips
drinking slowly and he could hear as he swallowed
down his throat.

Breeze: Do you ?

Kagiso: (still drinking)

Breeze: If you dont then stop leading her on . She's
got feelings and clearly if her knees can get this
weak with the sound fo your voice , she's into you .
Deep . Please dont keep up with this .

Ditebogo walked downstairs in her simple cotton
tracksuits and her hair tied as a bun with socks and
sleepers . She pulled the sleeves in her fists folding
her hands and they turned looking at her still
embarrassed.

Breeze: Come on little sister, loosen up . I promise I didn't see anything . I only heard him breathing like an old generator nothing big . Come on -

He side hugged her walking out with her.

Kagiso: I have few clothes here , let me refresh up quickly.

Breeze: 2 mins .

Kagiso: 2 ..? Right .

He galped his smoothie and walked upstairs rubbing his head as they headed to the car .

She opened the door and smiled looking at the kids playing then she got in playing with them as Breeze and Sagi communicated with their eyes weirdly telling her to talk to Ditebogo. Sagi sighed with a straight face and he winked at her walking back to the house . She gathered her motherly side and turned looking at her carrying baby Melo .

Sagi: Are you ohk?

Ditebogo: Yeah ..

Sagi: Were you guys having sex ?

Ditebogo: (hides face with Melokuhle lifting her) ..

Sagi: Come on Tebogo. You can talk to me . Tell you what , I'm freaky myself. I love sex . I love it . At least you do it under a roof , at your age I didn't care . Your uncle and I did it everywhere, even in front of his friends and they wouldn't notice except your brother course he knew every little secret. In a restroom at malls , parking lot , under a tree - at a park , at the pools and when we were still in college we were worse .

Ditebogo smiled moving the baby and looked at her saying yes with her head . Sagi smiled picking Air's dummy and wiped it putting it in his bag course he didn't want it anymore.

Sagi: Well sex is good and healthy. But it also has effects. Like them . Did you use a condom?

Ditebogo: It just happened so fast we didn't get the time to run upstairs and get one .

Sagi: There's always time to get a condom sis . Especially when it's in the house just few steps away. An erection wouldn't have died by then and both of you would still be hot like mad . If there isn't then both of you can do it next time or try other sexual activities that dont include him thrusting in and out of you .

Ditebogo: ...

Sagi: You just graduated and found a great job as a lawyer . Dont mess that up for yourself by bringing a baby yet in this world. Having a baby is a great thing , a blessing and I'm sure you want one but just - work on yourself and prepare your surrounding for its arrival. And first step is to be on pills though they aren't 100% protective or always carry a condom wherever you go . Two of them in your back pockets just in case you get heated in front of

him . It's not men only that have to carry condoms but anyone who's sexually active. And test . You dont know how many girls he's been with and he doesn't know how many you've been with. Be smart and keep your honey pot sweet.

Ditebogo: I understand. I will , thank you.

Breeze and Kagiso walked out of the house having a chat with his head down and she could tell what that was about course as soon as they approached they kept quite getting in .

Breeze: I'm serious Kagiso.

Kagiso: I got it . I promise Mr Dad

He picked air from his seat playing with him and Ditebogo looked at him admiring this site as the car drove off . He looked so good with a baby . Enzo cried from the seat and he laughed taking him putting them both on his laps . He realised she was

looking at him and winked at her when she rolled her eyes smiling facing away then they both continued playing with the kids as they headed to the mall.

At Breezes house.

Later

Different sizes and models of cars parked in and outside the yard filled . But a few people were there and mostly the ones Sagi knew . It was just a small party with neighbors and friend nothing big. Full of drinks and food .

Sagi tucked the kids in their cots before kissing each of them with the nannies standing by . She smiled walking to the door.

Sagi: The walls are sound proofed, if you need anything just call me . I'm here , I wont get drunk I'm still breast feeding.

Both: Yes mam .

She walked out closing the door when she heard one of her favorite songs (Hey mama by David Guetta ft Nicki Minaj) playing downstairs and ran in her heels heading out as everyone followed.

She got to the stage shaking her waist as everyone rejoiced with her . Calling their club DJ was definitely a great idea . Though the song was old it still hit her. She pulled Bonolo and Ditebogo on stage and they joined in when the DJ passed her the mike.

Crowd :

Be my woman , girl , i'mma

Be your man ..

Be my woman ,girl , imma

Be your man..

Sagi/ Bonolo/ Ditebogo:

Yes I do the cooking

Yes i do the cleaning

Yes i keep the nana real sweet for your eating

Yes you be the boss n yes i be respecting

Whatever that you tell me 'course its game you be spitting

Best believe that when you need that

I'll provide that you will always have it

I'll be on deck keep it in check

When you need that I'mma let you have it

Meanwhile Breeze and Kagiso sat on camp chairs by the pool looking at them as they shook what their mamas gave them and their waist. She didn't look like a mother of two , actually 4 . Her body was back

to the way it was and her jumpsuit fitted her really well revealing her hourglass figure .

Kagiso : Can't believe their doing all this in heels.

Breeze: Woman are full of surprises. She doesn't easily fall when wearing heels but trip and fall when their wearing comfortable shoes. Did you see how she ran to the stage ? I was scared for a second she'll lose her teeth .

They laughed looking at them when Ditebogo and Sagi flirted with them when another song by David Guetta ft Nicki Minaj - Turn me on played . They swallowed sipping at the same time and his phone recieved a notification. He ignored it until the song was over and they got off stage heading to where the drinks were taking Tropicana's .

He took his phone out and frowned looking at the message and stood up heading to the gate . He looked around and spotted Jane's car 4 houses away and sipped his drink walking over and got in.

Jane : What did you mean I shouldn't show up ? My child is in there with a bunch of strangers .

Breeze: You seem to forget that not only is he yours but also mine . I'm his father and trust me i wouldn't let any harm come near him. They are in the house and no one is allowed in there .

Jane: Anyone can get in Breeze ! He's not safe in there you could have brought him back and I'll look after him myself.

Breeze: Please dont ruin my mood . We agreed well that we'll co-parent and now it's myturn to have him .

Jane : You people are getting drunk. Who knows what will your lose can do when she's drunk to my baby ?

Breeze: Dont you dare call my wife a lose can ! J ust because she's patient with you doesn't mean she's over what you did . And Sagi could never harm Air she's not even drinking. Dont poke her or she'll strike and it wont be fun . If I ever hear another word from your mouth insulting her I'll save you the pain

from her hands and you'll have it from me . (Opens door) J ust leave course your wasting my time , I dont even know why your here .

J ane : I said I want my child Breeze.

Breeze: Go sleep.

J ane: I'm not going home , I'm going to the hospital. Bring my baby.

Breeze: So you think driving at this time of a night with him is safer than him staying in a secured house where no one is allowed to enter? Come on J ane , get over yourself this thing of yours is working on our last nerves now .

He slammed the door walking back and she clenched her jaws starting the engine and drove off .

Meanwhile Sagi hid with a car as Breeze passed by and J ane's car then stood up with a neutral face and no feelings about what she just saw . She fixed her hair and her wrists watch walking back like a queen swinging her waist.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

comment

.

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 14:02] Lynne : Chapter 91 .

At Breezes house.

The next day early in the morning around 2am. Bonolo tossed on the bed then finally opened her eyes looking round. She turned to Ditebogo's side but she wasn't there. Her heart skipped a bit and she rubbed her eyes getting off the bed going to the insuit for a pee then washed her hands and face walking out.

She grabbed her gown walking out down the hallway when she stopped hearing moans.

Its been six months without sex and everytime she thinks of it her heart breaks course she'll never see him ever again.

She walked over to Kagiso's door and stood by swallowing before trying to open but it was locked. She bit her lip feeling stupid and sighed walking downstairs to the kitchen making herself some food then went to sit on the dinner table alone. She took a bite from the drumstick and put it back licking her finger closing her eyes as the deliciousness waterd

her mouth down her throat to her stomach.

Foot steps approached from behind her and someone held her shoulders slowly leaning to her neck kissing her leaving hickeys. She gasped feeling his hands slowly going down to her breast rubbing them while the other hand held her neck.

Bonolo: (moaning) Mmh Odirile..

Odirile: Hello Love .

He pulled her head making her face up kissing her with his hand travelling down to her girl and she parted her legs giving him access. He slowly rubbed her and she twisted her toes biting her lip under the kiss . This was mad good . She used her one hand pulling him in further into the kiss moaning in his mouth as he increased the pace . She gasped feeling herself getting close and broke the kiss biting her lip .

Bonolo: (out of breath) Od- irile I am ahhhhhh..

She held his hand as he leaned on her ear while she held her and he pushed her hair off whispering in her ear while she moaned for dear pleasure.

Odirile: (softly) Wake up love .

Bonolo: mmmhh ..aahhh

Odirile: Wake up !

She quickly opened her eyes out of breath facing up the ceiling . Her eyes roamed around and she realized she was still in bed . She turned looking at Ditebogo and Kagiso standing by the bed with concerned faces when tears started to blur her sight and Kagiso sat next to her pulling her in a hug . Ditebogo also snuggle in next to her holding her hand as she cried to Kagiso's chest .

Bonolo: (crying) Why did you wake me ?

Ditebogo: Course you were drowning in a nightmare calling out my brother . Moaning out his name. That's not normal.

Bonolo: It is ! I was with him and you took him away from me !

Kagiso: What were you doing with him ?

Bonolo: Exactly what we did everytime we are together ! (Crying) I want him back !

Ditebogo: And you say its normal ? Girl having sex in a dream is not normal, it's bad .

Bonolo : Its not !

Kagiso: Yes it is . Do you know how long we've been standing here trying to wake you ? Whole 30 mins. She tried closing your legs but they wouldn't.

She turned looking at them with a frown and tears . Ditebogo sighed before giving her her hand and helped her off the bed . Kagiso got off pulling the sheets off and frowned looking at the stain on the

bed. Her mouth dropped looking at the stain and quickly ran to the mirror looking at herself wet .

Bonolo: No no no ! No !

She sank down by the wall crying and Kagiso walked over picking her and Ditebogo rushed to the bathroom preparing her a bath . He put her next to it before walking back and Ditebogo looked at him confused.

Ditebogo: Where are you going?

Kagiso: Giving you girls a moment to get her in the bathtub.

Ditebogo: Why ? It's not like you've never seen her naked before.

Kagiso: I don't know if she feels the same way and she's not like you .

Bonolo: (sobbing) Its ohk. She's right. Dont go .

He sighed walking over and she took off her clothes getting in the bathtub. She leaned back closing her eyes with uncontrollable tears . Ditebogo pulled her hand gently squeezing it . Kagiso sighed walking over when he heard someone calling him . He turned around looking in the room then sighed hoping the kids are fine .

He realised the walls were soundproofed and his heart pounded as the voice began filling his ears.

Kagiso: Can you hear that ?

Ditebogo: Hear what ?

Kagiso : You telling me , you can't hear anything? At all?

Ditebogo: Nothing .

Kagiso: I'm coming.

His heart pounded even more when he walked out

of the bathroom leaving them with question marks on their faces. He walked to the kids room and slightly opened the door looking at them asleep with the nannies sleeping on the bed next to theirs . He closed the door rubbing his ears when he spotted someone on the stairs standing.

He looked around walking over and realized it was Nakedi . This time her face was clear. He swallowed looking at her when she smiled walking away and he followed her not realizing he even walked out of the door barefoot.

Meanwhile the girls sat in the bathroom waiting for his return for over an hour .

Bonolo: Where is he ?

Ditebogo: I'm sure he's on a call with Rose or something.

Bonolo: Are they together again?

Ditebogo: I hope not .

Bonolo: (smiling) Why not ?

Ditebogo: Course - I dont know. He takes a lot of effort and believe in him that he'll heal after a heart break . I dont want to see him hurt ever again. I dont want him to date anymore.

Bonolo: Do you like him ?

Ditebogo: What?

Bonolo: Come on it's just us girls . You can tell me .

Ditebogo: He's your ex .

Bonolo: My ex . You right . I'm over it . Its ohk if you love him , just be careful not to hurt him . He's a devil in disguise . He is a beautiful soul full of love just dont get too comfortable in his love and think by cheating he wouldn't react, he does and badly.

Ditebogo: J ust that I'm not sure he feels the same. I dont want to ruin my perfect friendship with him over some stupid feelings .

Bonolo: They aren't stupid , especially for him . He also finds it hard to reveal his feelings and when he does its something else . He'll always be a darling

and give you all the love . But I see he's been doing all those to you even though your not dating . He loves you Ditebogo. I saw even the way he looks at you . He used to look at me like that but now its beyond with you . He's a good guy.

Ditebogo: (smiling) Well ..enough about me . Let's talk about your situation course I doubt my brother will hunt you or somehow turn into your spiritual husband. He loved you and he wouldn't do that to you.

Bonolo: Maybe its because I find it hard moving past this course it occurred days after the burial.

Ditebogo: I think you're starting to experience what Rosella has been going through. We need to book you in a sanitarium as fast as we can or else Kagiso will have another weigh on his shoulders to lift off .

Bonolo: (smiling) You see you care about him .

Ditebogo: (smiling) I dont !

They laughed and she stood up smiling at her

Ditebogo: Let me go check him .

Bonolo: ohk .

She walked out heading to Kagiso's room with her heart dancing and frowned not finding him there . She went to the insuit before going out to check him . She walked down the hallway and realized there was a moonlight reflection on the tile . The fear consumed her and she slowly walked over until to the door looking outside and gasped looking at the gate wide open . Her heart skipped and she quickly ran back to bang on Breezes bedroom door.

Inside Sagi poused riding with her legs vibrating out of breath sweating while Breeze held her waist also heavily breathing.

Breeze: Seriously? I'm having my glory here .

Sagi: (smiling) Go check on them . Maybe something is wrong .

Breeze: Nothing is wrong come on let's-(banging harder) ohk ..

They pulled off and he sighed still feeling his blood hot getting in his sweat pants shirtless while she wrapped herself with a towel both wearing sleepers and headed to the door.

Ditebogo: (scared) I found the door wide open. I cant find him in his room .

Breeze: What do you mean you can't find him ? Didn't he say anything to you guys ?

Ditebogo: No ..We were all together an hour ago helping Bonolo when suddenly he started asking if we heard something. Which we didn't , then he said he's coming and now I cant find him . (Teary) Do you think the J ack is back for him too ?

Breeze: That's impossible, J ack is in jail , I doubt he'll be getting out anytime soon . (Went to get his gun)

Sagi: But it doesn't mean he can't get his eyes on the ground out here . Let me get dressed.

Breeze: No I'll go look outside for him , you all stay here .

He went out checking his bullets when Bonolo came rushing to them still wet in her gown confused.

Bonolo : What's happening? Is everything ohk ?

Ditebogo: (crying) I can't find him , I'm scared. I don't know why .

Sagi : its ohk ..we'll find him. Let me get dressed and we wi wait downstairs. If Breeze doesn't come back with him we take it in our hands too .

She went back inside and went to get dressed when Breeze walked in going to his closet to change into comfortable clothes before picking his keys .

Breeze: I'll go look for him . He cant be that far if he's walking on foot .

Sagi: The guard ? What does he say ?

Breeze: He said he didn't see anything. He didn't see him walk out or hear the gate open.

Sagi: How is that even possible.

Breeze: With Kagiso, anything is possible.

He planted a kiss on her forehead wearing his leather jacket on his way out as she followed downstairs. He closed the door and she went to the kitchen finding Bonolo making 3 cups of coffee as Ditebogo's stomach turned . She swallowed standing and went to get a glass drinking water but her mouth just filled . She held her mouth as the puke filled her mouth and she ran to the nearby bathroom and fell on her knees vomiting in the toilet . The girls followed standing by the door looking at her vomiting for 2 mins straight and collapsed out

of breath sweating.

Sagi : Oh my God...

Bonolo: That cant be good , right?

Sagi: Are you thinking what I'm thinking?

Bonolo: I guess so .

Ditebogo: What ...? (Pits in the toilet then flashed)

Both: When last did you see your periods?

She looked at the confused before closing the toilet seat and sat on it thinking of if .

Ditebogo: About two weeks back . Why ?

Bonolo : Two weeks is possible , right?

Sagi: Right , plus she didn't give herself a break.

Ditebogo: What are you talking about?

Both: Your pregnant.

Ditebogo: (gasped) What ? (Laughs) No no no, no way I'm pregnant .

She stood up from the toilet and washed her mouth and face on the sink before looking at herself on the mirror then at their reflection too .

Ditebogo: Are you serious?

Both: ...

Sagi: Let's go look for Kagiso .

Ditebogo: Yeah .

They walked out but before Ditebogo and Bonolo went to get dressed meeting her in the car and drove out taking a different route searching .

Sagi: You said you guys were helping Bonolo. .What were you helping her with at 2 am ?

They looked at one another and Ditebogo held her hand .

Ditebogo: She's having a hard time coming to terms with Odirile's death which somehow leads her to having nightmares of them having sexual intercourse. I think this is the same thing that Rose suffered and I was hoping we can talk to her mother and send her to the sanitarium before it worsens.

Sagi: Oh .. I see . How are you though ?

Bonolo: I'll be fine . I'm just glad to be part of this caring family. Let's not talk about me now , Kagiso needs us . He's always been there for all of us , it's time we be there for him .

At the hospital.

Rose sat on the bed looking at Mxolisi walking around with the baby with a priceless face . Jane

smiled and pulled her hand .

Rose : That baby is a newborn, you can't be rocking him this much. Let me breastfeed him ?

Mxolisi: And you just gave birth you need to rest , no one will steal this baby .

Rose : I held him for 10 mins only and you took him from me , let me hold him .(playfully crying)

Mxolisi: Oh come on . You'll spend days with him , let me just enjoy this moment with my son. Please mummy.

They laughed and he walked over giving him to her . She smiled breastfeeding him as he waved his little hand out of the blanket. He gently put it back in and sat next to her on the bed .

Jane : So I see we're all in joy here but I haven't heard a name yet . What's his name ?

Rose : Aiden. What do you think ?

Mxolisi: Its cool . I like it . Aiden Akanyang Maleka .

Jane : Sweet . Now let the boy see her granny batho ...

The door flew open and Abigail walked in followed by the rest of the Maleka family holding balloons and gift all happy surrounding the bed .

Jacob: Hello my dear .

Rose : Dumelang .

Betty: How are you ngwetsi ya Maleka ?

Rose :(laughs) ke teng mma .

Abigail smiled at her before sitting on the chair holding her hand .

Abigail: How are you feeling ?

Rose : I'm happy about the baby and seeing all this people here welcoming my baby with warm hands into their family, just that I hoped that mine will also be here too . (Wipes tear)

Abigail: You mean Kagiso?

Rosella: all of them but mostly him . Yeah .

Abigail: I'm sure he's got held up course I heard there was a party yesterday. And I'm also sorry I took long to get here had to go collect some of his family members plus get ready to leave the building into another.

Rose : Its ohk . I'm glad your here now.

Melinda : And how's my favorite person after the huge diamond delivery she delivered into our family ?

Rose : (smiling) Melinda .. (they hugged) oh my God, I saw you only at the wedding , thought I'll never see you again .

Melinda: Never girl . I'mma always be here when you and my ninja here need me .

Abigail: So what his name ?

Rose : Aiden Akanyang Maleka .

Melinda : Wow .. Adorable.

They laughed as other family members passed each other the baby while Abigail sat by looking. Her eyes welled up in tears and when she looked at Rose her smile was so bright that it made her feel less of herself instantly. She quickly stood up excusing herself and ran out crying .

Feeling her pain Rose pulled Mxolisi's hand and whispered into his ear .

Mxolisi: Are you serious? Oh my God.

Rose : Go find her .

He excused himself and followed her leaving the family with Rosella and the baby .

He looked around for her car and saw a car

reversing with speed and predicted which turn it'll take and stood on it's way.

Abigail looked at him standing before the car as tears rolled out uncontrollably . She didn't deserve him if he cant bear him a fruit . She told herself that when her door opened and Mxolisi leaned over pulling the hand brick then her legs getting in between them pulling her into a tight hug .

Abigail: (crying) im sorry .. sorry i cant give you a child ...I'm so so sorry.

Mxolisi: There's nothing to apologize for baby . I love you with or without a baby . I believe in time we will have one . Abigail you cant keep blaming yourself for not being able to have a child everytime you see someone's child , you didn't chose not to have one . God will bless us some time . We just have to keep the faith.

He lifted her head rubbing her tears and kissed her .

Mxolisi: Your my fiance and I love you . Always keep that in mind .

Abigail: I love you too .

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

COMMENT

.

.

.
.
.
[08/02, 14:02] Lynne : Chapter 92 .

At Breezes house.

The detectives sat opposite them taking statements before standing and headed out . Bonolo stood up fromy the seat and went to take a glass of water drinking and leaned on the counter . His dis appearance did not sit well with her either.

Breeze walked in going to the refrigerator and took out a bottle if water the stood next to her .

Breeze: Heard about the incident?

Bonolo: Oh ..right .

Breeze: I promise we'll get you help.

Bonolo: Thank you .

Breeze: You ohk?

Bonolo: I will be . I just hope they find him quickly
course Ditebogo seriously needs him .

Breeze: Yeah ..I just don't understand how he could
just disappear without a trace. By now he should be
back. He always find his way home even when he's
taken by- hold on .

Bonolo: What is it ?

Breeze: Nakedi. Oh my goodness. This girl is a
pain in the buttocks.

He rushed out and she followed going to the sitting
room picking his phone .

Rosella :(smiling) Hey uncle Breeze.

Breeze: Hey Rose . Is Kagiso with you ?

Rosella: No ..haven't seen him in weeks .

Breeze : Even talk to him ?

Rosella: No ... Why ? Is he ohk ? Did anything happen to him ?

Breeze: Uhm ..Where are you ?

Rosella: I'm getting ready to leave the hospital. Doctors said I'm fine and the baby is all healthy.

Breeze: You gave birth?

Rosella: Yeah . I was hoping you guys would be there but I guess I was wrong . You have bigger problems to deal with than come check on the daughter of the same man that almost blew up your son but instead it was your friend.

Breeze: Dont say that .

Rosella: No it's TRUE uncle. Your all avoiding me . Even when you come check on air you dont talk to me like you used too but instead stand at the door then leave .

Breeze: Rosella I'm not avoiding you . Your my niece . J ust that being in that house overwhelms me and I have to get in anyway because of Air .

Sorry if you felt neglected .

Rosella: Its ohk . Kinda got used to it .

Breeze: So what's his name?

Rosella: His name is Aiden Akanyang Maleka.

Breeze: Cool . We'll come check on him . I promise.

He hang up and turned to the ladies finding all eyes in him . He shrugged picking his jacket and car keys

.

Breeze: Yess you all are going .

Ditebogo: I can't stand her sight . All I can see is her father in

Bonolo: Whom by the way took the love of my life away from me . Ripped me a chance to love and be loved .

Sagi: Same here . Rosella is her father's lookalike in a female form . He kidnapped me and tried operating my babies out to give them up for

adoption. I still need time to get over that .

Breeze: By time you mean blaming her for her father's doing? Rose is not at fault here . She didn't wrong either of you and you guys hurt her by putting all the blame to her when she's innocent. Right now she needs her family. Sagi your her favourite aunt and she looks up to you but your avoiding her at all cost . Ditebogo-though you both didn't talk regularly she considers you a sister course she doesn't have any. Bonolo, you just got into this family and you realize how messed up it is , I get it . But one thing is we care and love each other. Forgiveness being the root to growing this family tree . (Throws hands) But that's not the case . Rosella gave birth yesterday and you all are going to check her . Like it or not ! Spare your immaturity for few hours and be woman that support other woman. Play the lady code for a bit .

He walked out the door and they all looked at one another not knowing what to say. Of course Sagi had a lot to say just that she wanted to learn how to

collect herself. She sighed standing and walked up stairs to the nursery room finding the kids eating then helped the nannies.

Bonolo: He's right though . We're blaming the wrong person here .

Ditebogo: I don't know about that. This is also her fault . If she hadn't been obsessed with the dead maybe uncle wouldn't have had a child with Jane and the brothers wouldn't have fought like that putting my brother's life on the rope .

Bonolo: But are you willing to weigh your soul with all this for the next upcoming years instead of moving on past this . I'm not saying forget course that's highly impossible but are you ?

Ditebogo: Yes . For as long as it takes .

Bonolo: Yeah that's the thing , even if you do - the sun will still shine bright and down the mountain but her life won't stop course of the grudge you hold . She gave birth to a healthy baby that should tell you that even after so long putting the guilt on her

she still flourished. Course we are blaming the wrong person. I know Jack being in jail doesn't justify anything . I know that . But it's time you take care of yourself and leave all this behind, your pregnant.

Ditebogo: I'm not pregnant.

Bonolo: Still you need to take care of your body and soul . Dont let the anything hold you back.

Ditebogo: Says something making a malfunction break.

Bonolo: (laughs) We don't know that yet .

She sat next to he and held her hand smiling.

Ditebogo: My brother loved you and I know if he was here he'd hate seeing you like this . He'd wish for you to live your life to the fullest . Have kids and a family you always wanted .

Bonolo: But I have a family now. You guys are my family and I wont throw that away . Ever . J ust wish

he and I had more time to get married course I don't see myself with another man . And I dont ever want to be with another pers on if it's not him . I love him even when I cant see him everyday . I still feel his presence around us and I know he's here looking out for us like he always did .

Ditebogo smiled hugging her and sighed bot wanting to let go .

Ditebogo: There could be a way .

Bonolo : For ?

Ditebogo: For you two to get married.

Bonolo: (smiling) Are you serious?

Ditebogo: Yes . We just have to talk to the elders first and they'd do everything traditionally.

Bonolo: Oh my God, thank you .

At the grave yard .

Breeze stood in front of Nakedi's grave not knowing what to say or do . He shook his head rubbing his face and put his hands in the pockets.

Breeze: Damn I used to like you thinking your a good friend. But all you do is inflict pain . You know I thought after the cleansing you'll let them be but instead your clinging on to Kagiso . When your friend hurt him you layed dead not doing anything and now that he's healing your back with your tantrums . Dont you get tired . Rest nana rest ! Your dead for christ sake ! Why are you taking out your worry to live to the living ? Your friend is free of you and I'm sure that doesn't sit well with your bones so your taking it out of Kagiso, just stop it ! We're tired if you now !

He turned leaving but then stopped turning back.

Breeze: And right now I'm leaving. I'm going to look for him to God knows where you threw him LEAD THE WAY or I'll crush this tombstone of yours and no one will ever visit you again. Rest in peace .

Two girls who were visiting the one closer to Nakedi's turned looking at him and he gave them 3 seconds smile before walking away not sure if Nakedi really heard him or what .

At A river .

Around 19h00

A traditional healer sat a rock looking at Kagiso still asleep on the huge flat rock with his feet still in the water. She stood up and went to pick a herb when Kagiso tossed facing up feeling the cold from the rock and quickly opened his eyes . His heart pounded but not like the way it usually did when he

is scared and he tossed on his stomach using his hands as a pillow. He already knew he had to walk from here until home at this time of night and somehow he didn't feel like it all tired .

He realised he had his hands as fists all along and sat on his butt opening his hand holding a bone .

Traditional healer: Have you ever asked yourself why she'd chose you out of all the people? Why you were the only one able to communicate with her? See her? And why everything you had trembled? Tell me you didn't really think all that will just unfold in your plate . Or she'd just come straight to you without a valid reason why she'd turn to you for help.

Kagiso:...

Traditional healer: Its becouse your gifted . And now they want you to embrace that .

Kagiso: They ?

Traditional healer: We should start early tomorrow morning you need to rest first.

Kagiso: Excuse me ?

Traditional healer: Lets go .

Kagiso: Go where ? Hello ! I need to get home .

Traditional healer: You will . But not anytime soon.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

- .
- .
- .

[08/02, 14:03] Lynne : Chapter 93

At the Lyons Mansion.

They all stepped out of the car holding the gift bags and closed the door walking to the door pressing the door bell .

Bonolo: Why are you all so uptight ? Relax .

Sagi: I'm not uptight girl , thought of seeing someone in this door just makes me nauseous.

The door opened and they walked in greeting Dineo .

Sagi: Hey ..is she home yet ?

Dineo: Yeah they arrived hours ago .

Sagi: Sure they did . Why am I even asking at this time ?

They all laughed walking upstairs to her room and knocked before entering .

Rosella's face brightened smiling and balanced herself on the headboard as they sat next to her on the bed and Bonolo picked the baby as the two of them hugged her . Tears burned her eyes and they started flowing on their shoulders .

Sagi: I'm so sorry my love .

Ditebogo: So am I.

Bonolo : Me too .

Rosella: Its ohk..what matter is your here now . To see my baby .

They passed each other the baby and gave her the

gift bags . She took out the baby clothes and they were so adorable thanking them .

Rosella: This are cute , thank you .

Sagi: Your welcome. Ohk this guy looks like his daddy or am I seeing things ?

Ditebogo: Definitely him . I only met him once but that definitely him .

Bonolo: yeah he does . And he looks like someone I met yesterday when I was at practice.

Rosella: Who's that ?

Bonolo: He and his wife were having an argument in the car and she went out . When he saw me he rolled down his window and said his name was Lefa Maleka.

Rosella: oh yeah ..That's Mxolisi's older brother. He's also cute .

Sagi : Rose you've been married in that family for few weeks and already you read everyone. What kind of a bride were you course you weren't even

staying nearby?

Rosella: (laughs) I saw his framed pictures at Mxolisi's house . He's fine I won't lie . What did he want ?

Bonolo: Didn't really want to know what he wanted course I drove off as soon as he told me his name .

Sagi: Well you did well . So what this guys name I'm carrying ?

Rosella: Aiden and Akanyang

Ditebogo: Y'all's kids are going to be fire when they grow up . I swear they'll be fought over .

Sagi: Why do you say that ?

Ditebogo: Sis have you seen yourself? Rose ? Uncle Breeze and Mxolisi? Damn you guys are hella fine and hot . Nothing on you guys is wrong .

Bonolo: So will yours too .

Sagi: Yeah damn straight. Let's pray yours doesn't become a player .

Ditebogo: (laughs) How many times must I say this

? I'm not pregnant.

Rosella: When last did you see your period?

Ditebogo: About 2 weeks ago .

Rosella: You know its possible for you to be on your periods even when your 1 or 2 months pregnant.

Ditebogo: Well darling I'm not.

Sagi: She is .

Rosella: (smiling) I guess we will see . Who's the father ?

They all went quite and Sagi rocked the baby while they both stared at her . She pulled a weird smile not wanting to think who it is . She swallowed forcing a smile and looked at them feeling tears ready to burn her eyes while her throat dried .

Rosella: I guess this awkwardness means it's one person right? Kagiso ? Kagiso is the father of your

child .

Ditebogo: We are not sure yet.

Bonolo: Well I am . She's pregnant and she never slept with anyone for the past months except for him without a condom. They don't give each other breaks to breath . They get weak when they are near each other . I'm sorry but it is what it is .

Sagi: Didn't have to rub it in Bonolo. She figured .

Bonolo: We came here to make peace and build this sinking relationship right? So if we are going to continue with it then what will this sisterhood be based on lies ? Yes Kagiso is the father and they love each other , just that they are scared to admit it .

Ditebogo: We are not sure if he loves me either

Bonolo : But you do . And dont deny it course Rose can easily take him back when he comes back .

Rosella : (swallowed) I'm just glad they both make each other happy. I'm staring to think we misunderstood the profecy. He was meant to be

my guardian and unite with me but not in marriage .
I guess I was hoping yo be more than just that with
him.

Ditebogo: Do you love him ?

Rosella: I loved him since the day I layed my eyes
on him on a video . And when I finally met him on
the hospital bed for the first time the feelings I had
for him multiplied. I didn't want to leave his side .
But then all that was crushed by my dad arranging
me in a marriage. He's the best this that's ever
happened to me . He saved me . I saw the way he
looks at you and hold you , just like he used to with
me but with you - its different. Yes I still do . I love
him . And I will always do. But I think his heart is
broken beyond repair in my hands and only you can
fix it and hold it safe . I was a chapter in his life and
your his soul mate.

Sagi : Ohk girls let's clear this as you say Bonolo.
Do you still love Kagiso ?

Bonolo: What ?

Ditebogo: Its time we be honest and start a new

page. Together as a family. Do you ?

Bonolo looked at them and sighed pulling the baby's clothes that Rosella saw starting to pack them.

Bonolo: yeah .. i guess i was never over him . It's hard to move on past him . Besides his beauty there's just something else no one I've ever met has ever given me . I don't know about Odirile course we never got the chance to live our love life to the fullest . He doesn't have much to offer but his love fills all the gaps, even if he is a million miles away you could still feel him . He almost died course of me and I will never forget that. And even so - his love for me never died until I ruined it . I still hold on to our memories together . He's everything a woman can wish for. Loving , sweet , patient and hardworking.

Ditebogo: (smiling) Don't forget beautiful.

Rosella: (smiling) Dont start on that one course

wow !

Bonolo: (laughs) He is exquisite ! Damn !

Sagi: (laughs) You girls are doomed !

Rosella : Aunt Kagiso is irresistible. It's like he just popped from a magazine cover - he is even beyond .

Bonolo : I dont know in what planet or cloud was he made in , but definitely not planet earth.

Ditebogo: Sometimes I swear he is not a human being. And that hair looks even good on him ! Aunt dont tell me you didn't see that.

Sagi: Hai girl..I only got yes on my man . I dont know about Kagiso. He's my son , how will I know that ?

All : (laughing) Oh come on !

They laughed when the door opened and they turned looking at Jane . She sighed walking over and folded her hands .

Jane : So wena when you're here , who's looking after the kids ?

Sagi: Hii Jane . The kids are fine . Air is in safe hands I assure you .

Jane : I hope so . Hi girls .(walking away)

Bonolo/Ditebogo: Hello.

Rosella: Talking not as your daughter - You acting bitter .

Jane: (turns around) Excuse you ?

Rosella: Mom Uncle Breeze doesn't love you . He loves her ,your his baby mama and that's that .

Jane: Who said I love your uncle ? Your right the only thing that keeps us together is Air and that's why I want us to have a friendly relationship for his sake. Nothing more . Stop getting big for your own shoes.

She walked out and Rosella sighed rubbing her hands together then took her baby breast feeding him .

Sagi: Ohk ..I'll see you tomorrow. I got babies too to look out for . Congratulations darling.

Rosella: Thank you .

She hugged her then the rest before walking out and they continued chatting.

The next day

At Breezes house.

Breeze walked in all tired and went straight to the liquor section pouring himself a glass . This was unlike him to get missing like this . He searched everywhere around this neighborhood and his but no one has ever seen him. He sighed rubbing his head when Sagi walked over in his shirt barefoot.

Sagi : Thought I heard the door unlocking. Didn't close the bedroom door .

Breeze: Sorry for waking you .

Sagi: Its ohk . (Sat down) Did you find him ?

Breeze: No ..I don't even know where I'm headed from here . The only places I usually find him at he's never been there .

Sagi: Do you think J ack might have taken him again?

Breeze: (looked at her) I doubt that .

Sagi: What about J ames ? His sentence ends this year right ?

Breeze: It can't be him either. He doesn't even know either of you . Even the thought of running out of places to search frustrates me .

Sagi : Then let's let the police handle this their way since ours failed .

Breeze: How about we take out a reward for anyone who sees him or finds him ? This will make the searching more easier.

Sagi: That could work too but what if he's captured by dangerous people and harm him ? Let's search low we dont want to grab attention we have other kids to look after. We'll find our son , I know it .

Breeze gulped his glass and turned looking at her in that shirt . This was a turn on seeing her like this . He pulled her by her waist kissing her while she helped unbuckle his band then he pushed her on the table . He pulled the shirt up and smiled seeing that she wasn't wearing anything underneath . He took out his boy stroking himself and guided it to her entrance grabbing a hand full of her hair while holding her waist. He pushed himself in and she gasped raising her back but he pushed her down then let her adjust before drilling in and out of her .

At Mxolisi's house.

Abigail sat in front of the mirror wearing her earrings looking at Mxolisi reflection still asleep on the bed.

He tossed with his hand searching for her and finally raised his body looking around leaning on the board rubbing his eyes .

Mxolisi: It's a bit early dont you think?

Abigail: For you it is , not me . I got to go settle some paper work and go check out how my new place is going and go through some -

Mxolisi: Right...(softly) but I thought maybe I could get a morning glory ..

Abigail: (smiling) I promise when I get back I'm all yours. You can do whatever you want I wont resist but for now I have to go to work.

She stood up fixing her suit walking over for a kiss . The kiss got steamy and pulled her rolling on top of her on the bed as she giggled .

Mxolisi: Please ...

Abigail: Not now baby .

Mxolisi: Do you know how fertile sperm is early in the morning?

Abigail: I know but-

Mxolisi: (kissing her neck) But you gotta go to work . I know .

He pulled away laying on her side and she turned looking at him feeling pity . She too wanted a child so bad but work also had her with the sleeves . She sighed rubbing her forehead facing up as the idea of what happened with Breeze could repeat itself with him too . But Breeze had enough sex , he was just being careless .

Mxolisi kissed her cheek before getting out of bed stretching his neck going to take a shower. She looked at him and got off bed taking off her clothes following him inside pinning him on the wall kissing .

Mxolisi: I thought you were going to work .

Abigail: It can wait .

He smiled picking her and walked under the shower having her for breakfast.

At the hospital.

Jane walked into her office and sighed locking the door behind her . It's been a while since she was here and it brought back all the memories that took place in this same office. She sighed putting her bag in the table and sat on her chair swinging around .

Jane : Wow ..

She put her elbows on the table and balanced her head with her hands then sighed . What happened

in here indeed was just a moment they shared . He doesn't love her and she herself isn't really into him . Maybe it's just how it is . She is only attracted to him only when he's here and when not, she isn't. He wasn't hers in the first place and she just has to accept that .

The door slid open and she sat up straight looking at Jessie walking in .

Jessie : A little hii before getting too comfortable would've been nice you know .

Jane : (smiling) I'm so sorry . I missed my office I just went straight into it . Hi - how are you?

Jessie: I'm good . You look well yourself but slightly bothered. Are you ohk?

Jane : Yeah I'm fine . I'm ready to save lives.

Jessie: ohk ...let's get to it then (placed files on the table) . Welcome back!

Jane: Thank you.

She walked out and she wore her coat checking the files putting her stethoscope around her neck .

At The Lyons Mansion.

Ditebogo stood next to the baby cot looking at the baby sleeping and smiled touching his little hand. There is just something about babies that make them so adorable. She needed to go check up first and

if indeed she was pregnant, she couldn't wait to hold her own child in her hands . Her phone recieved a notification and she read it then put it away looking at the baby .

She shook her head and wore her shoes waking Bonolo .

Bonolo : Mmmhh ..

Ditebogo: Aren't you going to school ?

Bonolo: Not today ..(sits up) I think I should just focus on my tennis career. Its kinds working it's way up . I'm not giving up on it to study business . It's getting somewhere . Besides soon I'll be leaving to the Sanatorium.

Ditebogo: Ohk .. see you guys - I'm going to work .

Bonolo : Your late .

Ditebogo: I know. I'll see you guys later . Oh and I'll talk to aunt Sagi to make calls about your issue you should talk to your mother .

Bonolo : Ohk .

She walked out and Bonolo yawned going back to sleep next to Rose who pretended to be asleep all along . Rose sighed looking at her and tossed getting off the bed and went to stand by the window looking at Ditebogo getting in her uber ride . She turned to her baby and covered him as tears blurred her sight and she walked to the bathroom crying.

At Gail's Gallery.

Around 15h00

Breeze drove by when he parked on the parking space . Coming here was not what he planned to do but he had to ask her anyway. He got out fo the car and locked going inside the building greeting the receptionist packing his boxes

Breeze : Hii is she here .

Receptionist: Yeah ..she's finishing up .

Breeze: Ohk thank you .

Receptionist: I don't mean to be rude or interfering but why are you guys divorcing ? I mean your relationship was the A-list polygamy around this town. Everyone's favorite couple.

Breeze : Somethings are not meant to last in life bra.

Receptionist: Yeah neh .

He walked to her office leaving him to carry on . He stopped on the door listening carefully not to disturb course sometimes barging in in offices is never a great idea . But this time it wasn't that , instead he heard sobs . He slightly opened the door and she quickly wiped her tears turning around with her chair for him not to see her . After wiping her tears she turned back and he walked in closing the door .

Breeze: Hii I guess .

Abigail: (smiling) You guess ? You just walked in without knocking .

Breeze: Sorry.. hii .

Abigail: Hii . Take a seat .

Breeze: Nah I'm good standing , I'm not going to stay here for long .

Abigail: Ohk .. how may I help ?

Breeze: Kagiso is missing.

Abigail: (scoffs) Isn't he always missing ?

Breeze: This time its serious. He's been gone since yesterday and I cant find him anywhere . There's no trace of him . I came here to ask you if you haven't seen him by chance ?

Abigail: No ..haven't seen him in a while. But even if he is missing , he always finds his way home doesn't he ? Or maybe he missed his mother .

Breeze: Perhaps but he would've called or said something. Kagiso is not a silent guy coming to his whereabouts. By the way why are you crying ? Please don't tell me he cheated or hurt you course I'll spare few minutes of my time and sort him out .

Abigail: (smiling) I'm glad you still care but it's not that . Me and Mxolisi are fine - sort of .

Breeze: Why do I feel like theres more to that ?
What is it ?

She looked at him and sighed. This was her soon to be ex- husband in a month , and even though - she

still trust him like he's still hers for keeps . He smiled a bit and as always he managed to make her blush and she looked away .

Abigail: Surely you heard Rosella gave birth right?

Breeze: Yep .

Abigail : That's the problem I have . I cant seem to have kids . I dont know what wrong with me and it hurts me that I cant procreate.

Breeze : have you seen a doctor before about this ?

Abigail: I did , even when I was still with you . I cant have kids , though I'm healthy . It's like I'm cursed to not have any .

Breeze looked at her as she wiped her tears . This is exactly what led him to having a child put of marriage. He didn't really know how to comfort a woman when she's deeply in pain especially the ones he's attracted to.

Abigail sniffed looking at him with his hands in the

pockets staring at her and she stood up still in tears going to him.

Abigail: (teary) Can you help me find out ?

Breeze: uhmm ...yeah ..I could drive you to the hospital and do more check ups.

Abigail: No ..Breeze when I got married to you , we were tied together as one by the ancestors. Maybe -

Breeze: (frowned) Maybe what ?

Abigail: Maybe it's you.

Breeze: Me ? What ?

She walked to the door and locked taking out the key going to put it in a safe . Breeze looked at her not knowing what's happening until she rushed over pinning her lips on his kissing him . He missed this lips but he pulled back looking at her .

Breeze: What are you doing?

Abigail: Breeze I'm married to you traditionally. My womb is tied and only you can break me .

Breeze: But your not a virgin.

Abigail: What I mean is only you can get me pregnant.

Breeze: Excuse me? That's madness theres not such a thing and even so - you and I are getting divorced and we'll do the ceremony letting you go then you can have as many kids as you want . Dont be hasty .

Abigail: (kissing him) But I want the child now . Please.

Breeze: (pulled back) No ..

He took steps away from her and went to stand on the other side of the table .

Abigail: Breeze I'm begging you . What if after the

ceremony still I cant get pregnant ? Your my only option.

Breeze: No darling I'm not . You can still adopt, you can still get a surrogate.

Abigail: Let another woman carry my child ? No ! I want mine and to carry it myself . (Crying) Breeze please . Ohk if you dont want to give me a child then fine I'll unseal my womb with your baby then abort .

Breeze: (gasped) What ?! Kill my baby! No ! Absolutely not Abigail ! Open the damn door your losing it !

Abigail : (crying) Breeze I need your help please . Fine I wont abort I'll keep it. Please .

Breeze : No .. Abigail soon your getting married. Trust me you don't want to enter a marriage with your ex husbands child . Gosh what will your fiance say about this ?! He'll lose interest trust me and you dont want that course you love him .

Abigail: And I still love you too . Breeze please . Ohk he'll never know . No one has to know not even Sagi.

Breeze: They will . All my kids look like me .
Everything on them it's me.

Abigail : Then please donate your sperm.

Breeze: Wow ! You really did your homework on
this ,didn't your sweetheart?

Abigail : No .. just desperate. (Takes off her jacket
and top) please (crying) Breeze your the only one
that can help me ..

She took off her clothes as he looked at her not
knowing what to do . He walked to her shelves
looking for a spare key and found nothing. He
swallowed not wanting to look at her as she cried
walking towards him naked .

Abigail : (crying) Do you love me ?

Breeze: No baby , not that card . I'm not doing it .

Abigail: Answer me ! Do you?

Breeze: of course I love you dammit ! But I'm not

leaving you with a child .

He rubbed his face walking over and she tried to unbuckle his band but he held her hands looking at her .

Breeze: Abigail there's no way your womb is sealed for me to impregnate you . I know it could be but I find it hard to believe.

Abigail: (crying) Then why won't you let us find out if it's true ?

Breeze: Because it's wrong. Your getting married and I have a wife . I know I messed up before and I don't want to repeat the same mistake . Mxolisi loves you and if he finds out that you turned to me for help he'll be mad as hell course not only will we have hurt him , but stepped on his dignity as your man . We only have a month left for it to be finalized . And even so we can gather the elders and have the ceremony setting you free , I dont mind but please dont make me do this . You know I love you

and that's why your pulling this on me . But I'm sorry I cant do it .

Abigail: You cant or you dont want to ?

Breeze: I do want to , but I cant . I'm sorry .

Abigail: (crying) No Breeze no ..

She pushed him on the table and pinned her lips on his when he moved away but still she followed him wherever he went .

Breeze : Now your acting crazy , get dressed!

Abigail: Not until you help me !

Breeze: No!

Abigail: Then you and I are not leaving this room until you fuck me !

Breeze: Abigail I have a son to go look for ! Dont push me !

Abigail: You can slap me ! Choke me ! Kill me ! Or

whatever but your not leaving this room until you help me ! Even if you decide to torture the pin of that safe out of i wont break until you help !

Breeze sighed rubbing his head and sat down on her chair looking at her . She picked her phone writing Mxolisi a text and put it back folding her hands .

Breeze: And I don't mind watching you naked all day love . You know that.

Abigail: Fine . I'm ready when you are .

Breeze looked at her laying on the couch and he couldn't help but chuckle amazed . He texted Stone to help search Kagiso with others and sat back as the thought of dialing Mxolisi crossed his mind . But how will he explain himself being here .

Breeze: Are you really that desperate to be a

mother ?

Abigail: Very . (Softly) Come here ..

Breeze: No mam ...No ..

At the doctor's office.

Around 16 h00

Ditebogo layed on the bed as the doctor applied a gel on on her belly.

Ditebogo: That's cold .

Doctor: (smiling) I know .

She started scanning her and her heart pounded looking at the screen. The doctor smiled looking at her .

Doctor: Do you hear that ?

Ditebogo: ...

Doctor: That's your baby's heart beat. (Pointed)
there ...it looks like your 5 weeks pregnant.

Congratulations!

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .

[08/02, 14:03] Lynne : Chapter 94 .

The next day ..

At Midnight.

Abigail looked at Breeze sleeping on the chair with his head on the table . This guy was so attractive and having his child wouldn't be such a bad idea . It wouldn't be for the first time being in a triangle, everyone around them is involved in a triangle. She loved her man but if having another mans child it's her break through to happiness then so be it .

She walked over to him and went under the table unbuckling his band with shaky hands .

Meanwhile Breeze smiled pretending to sleep letting her continue. This was so crazy even for her.

She managed to unbuckle his band and breathed out unbuttoning his J ean then when she was about to slide her hand in he pushed back the seat holding her hands looking at her underneath.

Breeze: Your rapping me now?

Gail: (getting out) Breeze please . What must I do to prove to you how much I need this ? What do you want me to do for you to do this for me ? Name your price I swear I'll deliver. Talk to me baby please.

Breeze : Anything?

Gail: Anything. I swear .

Breeze: unlock the door .

Gail: No not that. Yet !

Breeze: Abigail for the - I don't know how many times but No . You have a fiance who you should be begging this much for sex not me and I have a wife whom by the way if you forgot I'm still trying to

prove myself too , i dont want to mess that up by having a child with my soon to be ex wife . She has had and still has a lot of drama in her life the last thing she needs is two baby mama's knocking on her door . Jane is being a pain in the ass pretty sure it wouldn't take you too two turns to become one when you know how easily she gets irritated.

Gail: I'll talk to Sagi , she understands me . Breeze I'm begging you , do you like seeing me like this ? Breeze I know I hurt you and I'm sorry. Forgive me .

She pulled her hands and slid them into his pants when he gasped standing walking to the other side of the table wearing up .

Breeze: This is rape - harrassment. I could report you for this .

Gail: I know , but do you think they'll believe you? Breeze stop being like this and let's do this. I know you want this cookie come get it .

Breeze: Your right I do but I got to keep my word. I'm working on my marriage and as far as I concerned things are falling back to place. Abigail I left home full. My wifes honey pot does it as always and I don't want to throw that away . You will have a baby in time . Dont let this be the way your baby is conceived love . (took out his phone)

Gail: What are you doing?

Breeze: Texting your lover . Maybe he can straighten you though I'll have to come up with a convincing lie on how I ended up here with you at this time bloody naked .

He typed a message sending it and sat on the couch rubbing his face. Her tears dropped looking at him and she picked her clothes wearing them before walking to the safe taking out the key .

Gail: (wipes tears) Please ..

Breeze: No .

Gail: J ust once and if it fail then I'll let it be .

Breeze: Mmhh- hmm no . I'm sorry.

She wiped her tears giving him the key and he walked to the door unlocking. He turned looking at her facing outside the window and sighed listening to her sobb . He bit his lip realizing how much of an effect she still has on him . He so madly wanted to but the was just something holding him back. He shook his head rushing over and roughly turned her pinning her on the window kissing her . He lifted her hands above her head holding her thigh on his waist then let go of her hands ripping her shirt looking at her babies in that bra . He rubbed them taking them out still kissing her and went down sucking them while twisting as she moaned.

This was so good , she could never get used to feeling his hands all over her like this . She pulled his head up for a kiss unbuckling his band breathing heavily as they walked to the table . He lifted her putting her on the table when Sagi crossed

his mind and he pulled away holding his head

Breeze: Fuck !

Abigail: What is it ?

Breeze: I'm sorry I shouldn't have done that . We can't do this . You love him and I know one day you'll be laying on the doctor's bed looking at your baby on the screen growing in your belly. Not mine. Trust me this will haunt you that your keeping this big secret to you partner . I'm talking from experience. You dont want that course you'll lose everything good in your life when the truth finally reveals its self and it would take years , I know so . Truth never stays buried. It always comes out one way or another.

He walked over fixing himself and rubbed away her tears before cubing her face kissing her then pulled back walking to the door.

Breeze: Stay faithful and truthful to yourself. You are a good healthy woman, you don't need a child to prove that to yourself or anyone. Your time will come be patient and let your body prepare. I love you.

Abigail: I love you too.

He winked at her and she smiled wiping her tears as he walked away.

She went to her seat and took out her phone dialing Mxolisi. She breathed out thinking how she'll explain Breeze's text when earlier she told him over text she was going home for the night. He yawned on the phone and she frowned walking to the door locking it.

Mxolisi: Hey baby. Is everything ok?

Abigail: Yeah..um...everything's just fine...just wanted to tell you I love you.

Mxolisi: (smiling) You call me this time of night to

tell me that ? Lord I feel loved as mad . I love you too my love.

Abigail: Have a beauty sleep.

Mxolisi: You too babe .

She hang up sitting down and broke in tears .

*

*

The next day

*

*

At the Lyons Mansion.

Rose's phone vibrated on the headboard and she turned taking it and answered the conference call. She smiled seeing them (Bonolo and Ditebogo)

Rose : Hey ladies .

All: Hii you .

Ditebogo: How is our boy doing?

Rose: He is a sleepy head . He's still sleeping.

Ditebogo: Oh ..just wanted to check up on you. You must be lonely being all alone there .

Rose: No I have boy here to keep me company.

Bonolo: Doesn't he cry at night ?

Rose: Every baby does , I have mom and Dineo to help with that . How did the call to the Sanatorium go ?

Bonolo: oh well.. Sagi says I'm going there today that's why I wanted to call and say goodbye course apparently were not allowed to use phones there . Mom has agreed course she understands this kind of things and she's really supportive.

Rose: That's good . Your dad ?

Bonolo: Though him and i are not on each others bad books , I decided to cut myself out of his life . He has a family he pays too much attention to and cares less about me . He doesn't call or check up on

me as if I'm the one that he divorced. I dont want to force myself into his life when it's clear enough he doesn't give a damn about me . Can you believe he never calls or anything? All he does is send me money every month as if it's enough .

Ditebogo: in so sorry..

Bonolo: its ohk .. so how did the check up go ? Tell me we were right.

Ditebogo: (smiling) Well .. (shrugged)

Rose: What's that mean ?

Bonolo : Isn't obvious? She cooking up something cheesy in her oven ! We're having a mini Peace!

They both laughed on the call but she just smiled looking at them and bit her lip chuckling.

Rose: I guess Congratulations are in order .

Ditebogo : Thank you love .

Bonolo : Cant wait to see what his seeds grow up to

being ? I'm sure she or he'll look exactly like him .

Ditebogo: God I pray he/she does ! (Smiling)

Rosella: Congratulations! I have to go the baby is waking up . Bye .

She hang up before they could answer her and threw the phone on the bed bursting in tears . That was supposed to be hers to carry and now its misplaced in another woman. This hurt really bad .She shook her head getting off bed and went to get dressed in comfortable clothes . She came back and took her baby going to her mother's room taking her other car keys . She walked out downstairs to the dining room and found Dineo wiping the cardboards .

Rose : hey .. can you please look after him for a few mins and I'll be back ?

Dineo: I will but Rosella your not allowed to get out of the house . You just gave birth.

Rose: I know but this is important. I wouldn't if it wasn't. Please.

Dineo: Fine , just make sure you get back here as fast as you can .

Rose: I promise.

She kissed his forehead and smiled walking out doing breath excercises. She got into the car and checked her phone cover for her card then drove out headed to the clinic .

At Breezes house.

Bonolo packed her small bag and sighed picking it with her phone. She looked around then went downstairs finding Sagi waiting by the stairs carrying Air as he played with his toy .

Sagi: You'll be fine . J ust focus on yourself and

everything will be fine .

Bonolo: Thank you . But first I wanted to go somewhere. I know I haven't been there in a while, just want to go say some few words to him .

Sagi: Ohk ..let me get the kids and I'll accompany you ,we'll pass by the flower shop.

Bonolo: Kids in a graveyard? Is that allowed ? Ohk ?

Sagi: I dont know so I don't want to risk it , I will be outside with them you'll go in alone . They just ate .

Bonolo: Ohk .

She gave him air and went upstairs to get the twins . After a while they all walked out and got in the car driving off .

At The Clinic.

After a while .

Rose stepped out of the Clinic with a pounding heart holding a small brown paper bag . She looked inside then shook her head as tears blurred her sight looking up rubbing her tears .

Rose : No I cant do this ... yes i can , It'll pass in time . No no Rosella no ..

She kept arguing with herself until she gathered herself and walked towards the car . You dont start what you cant finish. She started it and she'll have to finish it . She breathed out rubbing her tears and texted Ditebogo .

Ditebogo: Hey love .

Rosella : What are you doing for the day ?

Ditebogo: Well , right now I'm at work , and when I get off I'm going straight home . Why ? Have anything in mind ?

Rosella: Yeah .. I'm bored here all alone truly speaking . Can you come keep me company?

Ditebogo: Yeah sure, I'll be right there when I knock off .

Rosella: Ohk cool .

She heavily sighed throwing her phone on the passenger seat and drove off.

At the cemetery.

Bonolo walked around the graves to Odirile's and every step she took felt heavy and her eyes welled up until she got there . She stood by looking at it and then put the flowers on the grave reading the tombstone.

Bonolo: (smiled under tears) Cant believe they added boyfriend on your stone . Son , brother ,

friend and boyfriend.

She chuckled rubbing her tears and put her hands in her jacket pockets .

Bonolo: We could've been together right now Odirile. Why did it have to be you ? We had plans and our love was growing non-stop multiplying every single day and hour . You shouldn't have gone there baby. (Teary) Now look at me - hallucinating or whatever I'm doing of you course I cant accept the reality and get along with time . But baby I refuse to think that your my spiritual husband or a ghost haunting me . That's why I'm going to get professional help. (chuckles) Ditebogo thinks you and I can still get married. It's crazy but i hope she's right course I cant be with another man if it's not you . Oh and the message you wrote us , we haven't read it yet since the first line requested us to read it after a year and a half and we're honoring that . I hope your happy wherever you are . Please continue looking after us .

Your forever loved and missed . I love you baby .
Always.

She walked over to the tombstone and planted a lipstick kiss and stepped back smiling still in uncontrollable tears . She bit her lip and walked away crying sorrowfully.

Meanwhile Sagi recieved a message from the Sanatorium and sighed looking at Bonolo walking over crying and she could hear her from a distance. She went out of the car and met her halfway hugging her tightly gently rubbing her back.

Sagi: Shhh ...its ohk ..

Bonolo: (crying) What if he was standing by talking to me and I couldn't hear him ? Or what if he touched me but I felt nothing? It hurts Sagi , I cant take it ! I want to hear his voice and feel his hands wrapped around me . I want to feel his warmth and hear his laughter . Even if it's for the last time ! Why him ?

Sagi: I'm so sorry Bonolo . I'm sorry .

She continued calming her and they walked to the car after a while finding the kids asleep and drove off .

Sagi: they are at the house waiting . If you dont want t-

Bonolo: Its ohk. I have to this . I'll go .

At the traditional healer's

Kagiso sat under the tree looking at other gifted people walking around clapping hands as others took out drums while others crashed herbs. He looked at himself wearing beads and a fabric worse the thought of looking at himself on the mirror got his heart rasing . He had to cut his hair shorter and made dreads. Though everyone told him it wasn't bad he found it hard to believe. Plus not wearing

shoes. But good thing the healer doesn't tolerate untidiness. Everyone here looks beautiful, clean and they had good accommodation.

He sighed looking at the pen and paper, if he doesn't write or say anything about his disappearance they'll grow worried everyday which is not good and unhealthy. Knowing his father he won't stop searching until he finds him. This is the same thing that ruined his relationship with Bonolo, disappearing out of nowhere for months. But then if this is the way to open his way and others ways then he has no choice but to accept who he truly is meant to be.

He chuckled rubbing his lip - what if he goes in the river and never returns? Is it true there's an anaconda that licks you to fulfill your journey as a traditional doctor? He sighed chuckling and started writing three letters: All family members, his mother and Ditebogo.

At Breezes house.

Breeze drove into the yard with his hand on his mouth and parked next to Sagis car looking at the other unfamiliar one . He stepped out looking at the two men as Bonolo and Sagi walked out holding hands with her bag then hugged .

Bonolo: Let's pray it doesn't take me long .

Sagi: You know, I could take you myself.

Bonolo: Its ohk Sagi . I'm grateful you care this much about me to even take it this far to look for help for me . I really appreciate and love you.

Sagi: (holds her hands) That's what Odirile would have done for me too . You family now and in this family we take care of one another. Love you .

They hugged as Breeze walked over fiddling with his keys as his mind blew in questions of how his friend must be feeling seeing his lover having a mental breakdown. Does he do enough as a friend

caring and loving his loved ones ? Bonolo turned looking at him and he forced a smile when she threw herself in his hands hugging him . This was for the first time getting a hug from him and it brought all hope and safety she felt in her man .

Bonolo: Your face says it all . Thank you. I miss him too .

Breeze: Promise me you'll fight through this and come back to us .

Bonolo: I promise .

She hugged him even tight dropping a tear on his shirt

Bonolo: Your a good friend. I love you Breeze.

Breeze: I love you too baby girl.

He kissed her forehead and she smiled going to

kiss Sagi on the lips and hugged her one last time picking her bag getting in the car . Breeze walked over to Sagi and held her hand waving goodbye to Bonolo as the car drove out.

Sagi: (sob) Do you think it might be the same thing as Rose had ?

Breeze: I don't know. But if it is - let's be thankful we caught it in time and give her full support. Ohk ?

Sagi: Ohk ..

He kissed her forehead looking at her cute heart baby face . She a real African beauty . He smiled turning her around hugging her from behind kissing her neck and she giggled as they walked inside closing the door .

At the Lyons Mansion.

Rosella sat on the high chair looking at the abortion pills drinking water. She picked them wiping her tears with a rasing heart. If she was going to do this she needed something stronger than water. She got off the chair and went to get her father's bottle drinking from the mouth. This was her happiness and she took that away from her. They've been through highs and lows and now she gets to get the high price? How? She hit her head countless times crying and galped the drink.

Mins later the door slid open and she quickly took out a glass and juice pouring it inside as Ditebogo walked upstairs not noticing her. She quickly took 2 pills and crashed them with a spoon on the counter and when they were powdered she put it in the drink and stared. She heard foot steps approaching and quickly pulled the dishcloth wiping the powder. She threw it on the floor when she entered and picked the juice jar filling it even more with shaky hands

Ditebogo: (smiling? beauty. How are you?

Rose :(trembling) I - uhm - I'm good . Juice ?

Ditebogo: (pulled it) Sure . Didn't you hear me come in ?

Rose: No ..my mind is all over the place . I'm- (scratch head) I'm worried about Kagiso. Heard anything yet ?

Ditebogo: So am I. No I haven't heard anything and im getting worried which by the way the doctor said it's not healthy for the baby . I wonder how far he is course tell the truth ever since I met him , I didn't want to be far from him . Right now the feeling of loneliness is starting to occupy me . When he left after my party I spent three months searching for him until I did and that's when I felt my soul be at ease .

Rose: (clears throat) You sound like you love him . Deeply.

Ditebogo: Its complicated. (Blushes) I dont know if he's being nice to me course he feels like he owes my brother or he really is into it .

Rose : Nonsense ..theres nothing complicated

coming to love . Are you - gonna drink that ?
Specially made

Ditebogo: (laughs) You mean the juice you bought
your specially made for me ?

Rose :(forced smile) I mixed it for you myself so
yeah . It is .

Ditebogo shook her head picking it as her heart
raced and she looked at her putting it down before
she could drink .

Ditebogo: Are you ohk ?

Rose: What ?

Ditebogo: Your shaking . Is everything ohk ?

Rose : I'm just cold . I'll be fine .

She forced a smile and Ditebogo looked at her
unconvinced. She picked the glass and Rose's
heart pounded beyond the times it should . Her

mind instantly went insane as Kagiso's face when he walked out of that door with her crying his name and didn't turn back flashed before her eyes staring at the glass on her lips .

Her throat dried when she quickly slapped the glass off spilling it all over her and it broke on the floor breathing heavily as Ditebogo gasped shaken

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .

[08/02, 14:03] Lynne : Chapter 95

At the Lyons Mansion

Ditebogo gasped rubbing the juice off her face and stood up from the chair looking at her white shirt then at Rose who breathed like she was running a marathon.

Ditebogo: what the hell Rosella Lyon?!

Rose : (bursts in tears) I'm so so sorry Ditebogo. I'm really sorry .

Ditebogo: Why did you do that ?

Rose : I I I.. oh my God ..

Ditebogo spotted the cloth on the floor and walked over picking it and wiped her hands and slightly pressing it on her shirt . Rose looked at her and more tears filled her hears and she cried even more getting away from her . Ditebogo turned looking at her and put the cloth down as she pulled her hair then cried in her hands .

Ditebogo : Rosella what is it ?

Rose: I'm losing it ...I'm so so sorry.

Ditebogo: Why are you crying? it was just juice.

Rose :(crying) No ..no ..it was not just any juice I'm sorry , forgive me .

Ditebogo: Forgive you for pouring the whole glass on me ? Seriously it's no big deal stop crying.

Rose : (crying) I didn't mean to I'm sorry..

Ditebogo: Rosella .. ?

Rose looked at her before taking put the box and threw it at her and she caught it . Her jaws dropped looking at her then checked it looking at the missing pills . Her eyes welled up as her heart pounded throwing the box at her face hitting her with it .

Ditebogo: (crying) Killing my baby ? Really Rosella? How could you be so cruel ?

Rosella: (crying) I dont know .. I'm sorry . This days I happen to do a lot of things without thinking. My brain is melting everytime I try to figure out why me while you have the best life with the love of my life . Every time I think of what I could have had it just burst my brain . Now you talking about a baby now and then that I- I should've had makes me even angrier. I know it's a good thing and trust me I know that . But I love him . I love him and the love I have drives me crazy when he doesn't pay attention to me . It makes me psycho and I'd do anything and everything to get the things that are in my way out just to find my self in his arms .

Ditebogo: By killing my baby ? Rose are you hearing yourself? You sound like a -

Rosella: (crying) Self-centered notorious psycho little bitch ? Trust me love I'm getting there with every second . Hypocrite and all those bad words that could describe me ? Lash them at me , I don't care course I'm done hurting . It's been 10 months Ditebogo! Ten months of pain that I cant get rid of . (Screams in pain) It hurts ! It hurts me that everytime I get driven away from him . My life is a mess as it is and only he can help me . I love him .

Ditebogo's anger brewed when she ran over grabbing her hair pulling it side to side as she screamed painfully crying. She pulled her head up with her hair and slapped her before pushing her and she fell on the sofa the on the floor. She kicked her countless times on her stomach as she screamed rolling herself and a maid walked over pulling her as more came . Rose tried standing but the pain was too much as she cried and sat up holding her ribs rubbing the blood off her mouth

and eye.

Ditebogo : Your love for Kagiso has nothing to do with me and my baby ! You couldn't keep your legs closed after the profecy has been explained driving him away . You hurt him and now that he doesn't want anything to do with you , you victimize us just to get back to him ! Rosella I'll kill you !

Rose: (scoffs) Has nothing to do with you?

Ditebogo your in my way ! I'm losing my mind I can feel myself every single day . I am willing to do whatever it takes to get rid of anything standing in my way of happiness and I'm so sorry ! I'm so sorry I'm living under the shadow of my friend. I'm so sorry I get driven away every time I get a shot in happiness . I'm sorry I was arranged in a marriage. I'm so sorry I had to perform my wifely duties . I'm so sorry that I hurt him Ditebogo I'm sorry! Sorry I couldn't get my legs closed I'm sorry ! (Tears rolling)
But I didn't have a choice. I never had a choice in my life . I was never given the chance to make my own life decisions and that's what led me here .

After my friend died - I was caught in the middle of two worlds. The living and the dead. Darkness and pain. Alone -(sobbs) No one was able to help nor did they care enough to understand and support me including my own parents if you ask me, course all they did is add more pressure and salt to my wounds. But guess what - one night I was visited by a tiger in my dreams, something that doesn't usually happen-

Ditebogo: What does you having dreams of animals has to do with my ba-

Rose : (shouts) Shut up and listen ! You love him , Bonolo loves him but guess what ? So do I. After I found out about the marriage I cried day and night . Minutes turns into hours and hours into days . Days into weeks , weeks into months ! In endless pain course I couldn't be with him . I was torn from him forcefully and there was nothing I could do . When he walked out on me I felt like a part of me was leaving with him and it did ! And when I heard about the kidnapping I wanted to kill my dad with my own bare hands . And everytime I heard or saw him on a

hospital bed - I felt like I was dying! And now you-
I'm losing my fricken mind !

Ditebogo:...

Rosella: Can you believe I tried to even kill my own baby just to get him back? No one was able to talk me out of it but him . And now he's back at ignoring me and I'm turning murderous. I could suffocate my baby with my breasts! I could slaughter every living thing around me until he gives me his attention! I could burn this whole town right now and go look for him - that's what this love I have inside of me makes me want to do !

Ditebogo: ...

Rosella: (crying) So basically my world revolves around him. My life is in his hands and it sucks that I love him more than I even love myself! It makes me want to go through the extreme lengths . (Tries standing) I know it doesn't make sense to you and doesn't mean anything nor does it explain why I'd do such a horrible thing. Kick me ! Slap me ! Punch me ! Kill me! But the pain you inflict physically is

nothing compared to what I feel and what I wanted you to feel .Trust me when I say I didn't want to do this . If I did I wouldn't have spilled the drink, I would have let you drink it and get a very intense angry stomachache but because of the little hope - (sobbs) I fought through and stopped you . You have to understand I'm not this kind of a person , my life is bound to his .

Ditebogo: (crying) Why ?

Rosella : I lost a friend at a very young age . Someone I used to call a sister. But then when she left me she left with my soul leaving my body behind for years. And he was there to pull me back . Then I got arranged in a marriage dealt with heartbreak and depression. Got blind. And he was there in a split . Fought through reaching out . And then I hurt him . What do you call it " Couldn't keep my legs closed" . Which drove him away . And then I found out I was pregnant- I tried to kill my own baby for him meanwhile he had his eyes on you . But as always he came through. (Teary) Tell me if that normal according to your understanding ? I'm

broken . If you can read through you'd understand that I never had a life of my own . Never enjoyed life and dont know what good life taste like . So with everything I gathered through the years - sorrow , depression , heartbreak mental break I turn dangerous focusing all the anger towards him course he's my guardian. Sorry you had to be the victim of my misery course your also part of his life . I'm truly sorry Ditebogo. Please forgive me .

Meanwhile Jane stood by the door listening with teary eyes as other maids also wiped tears looking at her .

Ditebogo wiped her tears and went to pick her bag but when she tried to leave Rose held on to her leg crying to the last hugging it tight.

Rosella: (crying) Ditebogo please forgive me . I'm so so sorry.... please ...please....

Ditebogo looked at her as her heart broke looking at her veins popped and her eyes red flooded in endless tears and with mucus plus with blood in her mouth. She looked at Jane who held her mouth crying and back at Rose who kept apologizing on her leg hugging it tight . Tears rolled out of her eyes trying to figure out how it all came to this . She let her cry until her grip loosened and she kicked her off when she fell on the tile hitting her head hard but still quickly stood up running after her crying. Jane caught her before she could exit the door following her while screaming and held her back trying to calm her .

Rosella: (screaming) Tebogo please ! Please forgive me. Mama please tell her to forgive me ... please mama .. Come back !

At Breezes house.

Ditebogo drove into the yard with her eyes full and

jumped out slamming the door . She ran towards the door and punched in the pin then ran up the stairs to the main bedroom.

Inside Breeze and Sagi layed in the bed facing up when they heard a loud bang and the door flew open then Ditebogo walked in looking messed and in pain .

She walked over and got between them crying on Sagi

Sagi: What is it ? Talk to me ..

Ditebogo: (crying) She tried to poison me .

Breeze: Who tried to poison you ?

Ditebogo: (crying) Ros ella tried to kill my baby

Sagi: What ?

Breeze: (jaws dropped) Your pregnant?!

She cried even more and he got off giving her space rubbing his face . What the hell is wrong with this

family and love triangles? Sagi rubbed her back trying to calm her as Breeze stood by still surprised.

Sagi: Baby please go get her a glass of water .

Breeze: Wow ...

He turned walking out still amazed - now he's going to be a grandfather at the age of 35 . Wonders shall never end indeed..

At Mxolisi's house.

Abigail walked in with swollen eyes all drained and still in yesterday clothes holding her heels in her hands passing Mxolisi who was on his laptop without a word . He turned around with a frown looking at her and chuckled following her to the main bedroom.

He stood by the door frame folding his hands

watching her taking off her clothes and tying her hair.

Mxolisi: You dont look like someone who's been home ? Where were you ?

Abigail : Sorry ..I was at the office .

Mxolisi: Doing what exactly?

Abigail: Finishing up something.

Mxolisi : Does that something have a name ?

Abigail: Documents.

Mxolisi: All night just for a Gallery ? Come on Abigail even a teenager could do better than that .

She turned looking at him and pulled a towel wrapping herself with it .

Abigail: I'm telling you I was at the office, what do you want me to say ?

Mxolisi: I want you to give me a very solid reason why you'd sleep outside . Is this about the baby issue?

Abigail:...

Mxolisi: I thought we talked about this Gail .

Abigail:..

She sat on the bed looking at him put his hands in the pockets. She looked away remembering Breeze course that's what he likes to doing , always.

Mxolisi: Abigail I loved you without a baby and even now i still love you . Baby or no baby that'll never change . Your going to be my wife and I need you to understand that I'm not expecting you to be a baby machine.

Abigail: But you want one and its my responsibility as a woman, your wife to make sure you have one . Not for you to go get it else where like him.

Mxolisi: Aiden was conceived in my last marriage.

I didn't plan on having a baby by then but he's here .
I'm not rushing you to have a baby and I wouldn't.
Stop pressuring yourself with this baby thing having
sleepless nights outside . I believe one day we will
have one when the time is right. Dont let Aiden
being here make you less of a woman. Be faithful.

Abigail: (looks down) That's what he said too .

Mxolisi: Who ?

She looked at him and her throat dried when she
stood up going to the shower . He figured biting his
lip and followed her finding her wearing a shower
cap before balancing the water .

Mxolisi: You went on and talked to him out of all
people?

Abigail: Hes the only one that could help !

Mxolisi: What the hell is that supposed to mean?

Abigail: I think I'm sealed by the ancestors course
traditionally I'm still married to Breeze. So when he

came by I asked him if it could be possible and he gave me the same answers as you do . Nothing big .

Mxolisi: What the hell was he doing there in the first place ? Leave that thing alone the water won't evaporate and talk to me !

She sighed turning it off and looked at him .

Mxolisi: Why are you still hooked on your old life ? How long have you guys been going behind my back disclosing our relationship problems with him?

Abigail: Seriously?

Mxolisi: How long ?

Abigail : Mxolisi I'd never do that . I did when he came by to ask if I haven't seen Kagiso or heard from him course apparently hes missing. That's when I asked ,nothing is happening between him and I.

Mxolisi: When? Last night?

Abigail: No ! He came by around 14h00 or 15h00 somewhere there

Mxolisi: and I recieved a false message around 7 .

Abigail: Why are you all worked up ?

Mxolisi: Your working me out Abigail ! Why would you turn to your ex-husband out of all people? You could have asked me but no you decided to confide in him leaving me here all alone.

Abigail : I told you he was there to ask about Kagiso ... he left after we talked about the divorce and the ceremony. He promised to make it snappy so that you and I can start building our home on a clean slate without drama .

Mxolisi: So why did you send me a false text ?

Abigail: Becouse I wanted time on my own to cry and release this pain I am in . Mxolisi you have to understand that I also want a child and I'm willing to do anything to have one . All my age mates have children even the ones below me do and I know you do too . Dont say you dont course after marriage you'll be breathing on my neck about this.

Mxolisi: I'm not marrying you to turn you into a baby factory. I'm willing to wait for as long as it takes , as long as I remain with you .

Abigail: Your mouth says that but the heart speaks a different language from what you say .

Mxolisi: So are you a clairvoyance now ? Empath ?

Abigail: No

Mxolisi: Then stop assuming what my heart wants course I'm telling you it wants you . Having you is all that matters the most to me .

Abigail : Sorry I lied ,I shouldn't have done that I should've been honest with you .

Mxolisi: Its ohk .. just dont ever confide in him . Him and I might be fine with one another but ones downfall its another's happiness. You being all around him makes me insecure course I love you and I might lose you . Insecurity is not a nice feeling dont make me go through that .

Abigail: I swear to God nothing happened when we were in the office. We were having a friendly chat

nothing shady happened. I love you and it'll always be you

She swallowed avoiding his eyes after saying that and he pulled her into a hug kissing her head .

He left her to continue showering throwing himself on the bed . He found that hard to believe somehow. The thought of losing her again to him twice ate him now and then . A tear escaped his eye whe he pulled her jacket trying to comfort himself with her scent but instead cought a different one . He raised his upper body sniffing it in and damn straight it was his cologne. He picked her top and frowned looking at the torn buttons and slightly at the buttonholes. He could only imagine how he did this course it didn't look like they had normal sex but rather rough for him to tear this apart .

He clenched his jaws rushing out picking his keys going out .

At Breezes.

Within minutes , Mxolisi drove into the yard with high speed and parked next to his car jumping out . He jogged to the door and pressed the door bell countless time in anger and even started banging the door .

Meanwhile inside.

Breeze rolled his eyes with a poute and hands in his pockets with his legs apart ignoring him . He knew that this was about Abigail and he had no amount of energy to waste on that .

Sagi looked at him still trying to calm Ditebogo as he kept rolling his eyes gay-ish standing there not going to open the door .

Sagi: Could you please ...

Breeze: This is not a brothel , he needs to learn how to knock and stop shouting my name like that . I hate it when people shout out my name course they

misspell it .

Sagi: (shakes her head) Breezee could you please attend the door my love ?

He looked at her with his eyebrows narrowed and rolled her eyes at the same time as he left .

He walked over to the door and chuckled listening to him shouting out his name . He sighed opening the door when a very strong painful punch landed him on the floor . Mxolisi dragged him out and threw him on the ground. He held his cheek and when he was about to say something he pulled her with her shirt punching him countless time . He got fed up with the 6th one blocking it and rolled up on him giving him his piece of strength also .

Sagi rushed down the stairs and stopped looking at them before walking over . She rubbed her eyes leaning on the door frame folding her hands watching them roll each other on the ground .

Sagi: Would you two please cut it out ! Breeze?!
Mxolisi!

She shook her head walking back inside going to the kitchen taking out two knives and two pans . She walked back to them still finding them fighting. She got a bit closer and hit the pans countless times together until they let go rubbing their ears .

Sagi: What the hell do you think your doing ? I got kids in this house and a girl in need of my help and your fighting! Two grown ups fighting , rolling each other on the ground , who do you expect to be your referee this time ? Me ? Course I'll murder you both .

She frustratedly took out the knives from her pocket throwing each at them and they looked at her .

Sagi: What? Take it . Settle this once and for all .

Let's see who has the balls anker that's what you're trying to prove here by fighting? You take my yard for a ring and me as your referee isn't ? Now take those knives and cut each other into pieces , I promise I'll bury all your remains together in one big plastic were no one will ever disturb your fighting corpse's . Take them and let's get it all over with anker lona you can't have a decent chat with your hands kept to yourselves?

Mxolisi: I didn't come to fight.

Breeze: Dont say that shit when you jumped up on me with a superman punch. Dont work on my last nerve like that.

Mxolisi: Why cant you stay away from other people's woman ? Is it really that heard to keep it in your pants?

Sagi: What ?!

Breeze: (chuckled) How quick did the tables turn . What are you talking about?

Mxolisi: Dont ask me that when you know exactly what you did !

Sagi : You know what ? I cant deal with this right now.(walks away)

Breeze: Baby that's not what happened! (to Mxolisi)
Wena o marete straight ! Do you know how long its gonna take to convince her otherwise?

Mxolisi: Well she deserves to know the truth?

Breeze: What truth ?

Mxolisi: How could you sleep with my fiance and pretend like nothing happened?

Breeze looked at him with his eyebrow up trying to maintain a serious face but ended up laughing.

Breeze:(laughs) Wow ...I never thought I'd see this day coming. Her man banging my door in anger with wrong assumptions that I slept with her . I know how good she is down there but I never thought it'll make one risk his life for it . (rubbs his lip standing) Man I never slept with your fiance. Her and I had a - uhm decent chat . Decent? I dont

know about that but we talked it never got that far .

Mxolisi: (rubbs nose) Breeze how long have you been seeing her behind my back?

Breeze: If I was dating your girl , I would've shown you without thinking twice that I have her laying on my chest . It's either ill get her pregnant or drop a used condom purposely in her handbag . That's how heartless I am .I wouldn't even try to hide the truth when you come looking for it . All I'll say is a sorry from my lips that I dont even mean course I got what I wanted .

Mxolisi: (teary) I love her man .

Breeze: I can tell .

Mxolisi: What time did you leave the building ? Please be honest with me .

Breeze: Around ...uhmm...6 , 5 I don't remember I didn't check the time I rushed out home .

Mxolisi: So you've been in there for 4 hours ?

Breeze: (confused) What ?

He put the pieces together of his understanding and sighed rubbing his eyes . He wasn't in there for 4 hours - he was in there for 15 hours . So according to him he thought when he said 5 or 6 he meant in the evening while he meant in the morning.

Breeze : I guess . Look her and I are just friends no strings attached. I went there to ask about Kagiso and that's that . Though she might have opened up about something that caught me off guard. That's why I spent few hours in there .

Mxolisi : That she can't conceive and all that .. do you believe it ?

Breeze: Truthfully no . I don't . If I could I would've done that a long time ago or the past few months leaving her with the mini me's for you to watch growing day and night under your roof.

Mxolisi: (chuckled) Your one hell piece of work you know that ?

Breeze: So I've been told . (Gave him his hand and helped him stand) I'm I making you that insecure?

Mxolisi: Mxm ...

Breeze: Her and I only had a chat . She told me about the possibilities and still I gave her the same answer - I dont believe in that kind of stuff. The time we took was talking about the divorce and the arrangement for the ceremony and that's that . One last thing(changed tone) - Dont you ever come out here at my house looking like an angry food salad and talk shit infront of my wife . That's my woman and she happens to be sensitive when coming to shit like this , if you can't respect me then respect her heart and presence. Dont you ever disrespect her like this ever again or else leave your house knowing you said your goodbyes and a nice straight forward will on your clean counter . Ohk ..

Mxolisi looked at him pulling his hand agreeing . They walked towards his car when Breeze stopped looking at his tattered shirt .

Breeze: This is Gucci dickhead

Mxolisi: (driving off) I heard that !

Breeze:(raising middle finger) Good !

He laughed driving off as the postman put letters in the mailbox waving at him . He waved back walking over and took out the letters walking back in his yard checking them . He came across Kagiso's and dropped the rest and stoped walking opening it with a pounding heart .

"

Dear Mr Dad .

Surely by now your looking beyond my usual stoping spots . I want to let you know that I'm good and safe . Though I dont know where I am , but I'm in a good place surrounded by good people.

I'm gifted =)

I know its kind of a shocker . I was too when I found out about it but then the healer explained everything after finding me at the river. It appears I took it from my father's side , his mother was a traditional doctor. So in order for me to get my life in order, I have to accept my gift and everything will lighten up .

I didn't know any of this but they are still trying to break this whole thing piece by piece including the whole reason why I'm the chosen one .

Oh and I've already started with my intention. I dont know how long its gonna take but not in 5- 9 months I guess. I even thought of running but then - can't keep running away from my destiny, it'll catch up anyway.

I wont lie I'm scared as hell =(What if I dont make it out of the river ? Or what if I dont survive the whole thing ? Worse if it's true there's an anaconda that licks the gifted to fulfill their initiation and all that .

Though thought , I remain hopeful that I'll make it out and my path would be swiped clean for me.

Im writing this to let you know that I'm grateful and I'd really appreciate it if you guys support me . Dont worry about mom - I wrote her hers, hopefully she'll understand. Oh ;) please tell Ditebogo to never forget my pretty face , I'm jealous she'll understand. I tried writing hers but then I run out of words after writing one sentence.

Thank you for always being there for me and being the father I've always wanted . I know I don't really say this but I love you Mr Dad . I hope everything is going well there course its it's pushing me through including mom.

See you soon.

Your son .

Kagiso.

"

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment.

.

.

.

.

.

.

A month later

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 14:04] Lynne : Chapter 96

At the Lyons Mansion

Rose fed her baby boy before wiping his mouth and gave him water . She smiled looking at him as Mxolisi walked in the dining room holding two plastic bags .

He smiled making silly sounds taking him and Rose

stood up going to wash his dish and came back .

Rose : You do realize he's only a few months old right?

Mxolisi: You do realize I miss him right ?

She smiled as he winked at her and continued playing with the baby . She took the plastics looking at the new baby clothes and all the baby products from Johnson . She shook her head and called a maid to take them upstairs before sitting opposite them on the couch admiring.

Mxolisi:(to the baby) Boy-boy tell mama that staring is rude .

Rose : I'm not staring jeez .

She grabbed her phone taking videos and pictures as the baby giggled.

Rose :Shouldn't you be at court supporting Abigail?

Mxolisi: She wanted to do this alone so I didn't want to add pressure. I let her go by herself.

Rose : That's wacko .

Mxolisi: Not at all .

She smiled adding music to the videos before sharing them with him and posted on social media . This happend to be her therapy. Seeing them together warms her heart and the fact that he helps with the baby when he comes to visit just hills her heart with joy that she at least has something good coming from her trauma.

Mxolisi: You should go out some time.

Rose : Me ? No ..absolutely not .

Mxolisi: Why not ?

Rose : I just don't want too . Me being here away

from the world is best for everyone.

Mxolisi: Come on . Rose you've been through a lot including the pregnancy , you just need some time to cool off a bit . Take time to yourself once and forget what people think about you . Your a Lyon for christ sake. Loosen up from the past .

Rose : Well being a Lyon sucks ! This surname is cursed .

Mxolisi: Well according to me it isn't. I just think being a Lyon is about living in every moment . Through better or worse . For example your Uncle Breeze. He's a notorious sociopath when feeling like it and doesn't even care what other people think or how it'll affect them . And when it's time to make mends he'd rather speak shit even when he's wrong and y'all will move on like nothing happened. Sagi once did numbers on me and I'm still carrying proof but still she didn't apologize for what she did . Your mom got in between Sagi and Breezes marriage but never bothered to apologize. So why do you care when your whole family doesn't? I'm not saying what you did was right , but it's been weeks .

Rose: I guess I want something- different from my family's root . I want to learn life beyond the Lyon name . We tend to hurt people in our family and never bother to see things from their prospective. Like Ditebogo. If tables were turned I wouldn't forgive me either. Action out of love or what - I didn't have to do that . I shouldn't have poisoned her drink using the name of love . Fine I'm a slave to darkness but that was so wrong in every direction including using my past and experience. That is an innocent baby . Innocent soul and I almost took that . Look at Aiden ..how would you feel if you came back tomorrow and find out that one of the maids fed him poison ?

Mxolisi: All my achievements will mean less . Meaning I dont mind going to jail and join my fellow enemies I met in court .

Rose: See .. that means you get why she's mad . (Sigh) I'll also paint the whole town red with that person blood . So I wont go out and relax after the trauma I put her through betraying her trust and sabotaging our relationship. She's been nothing but

kind and I- tried taking her one ticket to happiness and love after her brothers passing. (Layed back)
I'm a bad person. Period!

Mxolisi: But you cant keep apologizing if she doesn't want to forgive you . Sometimes all you have to say is "I'm sorry " and let the one you hurt see what they do with it . Shove it where the sun dont shine or accept it as long as you apologized.

Rose: So your saying I should forgive myself and forget ?

Mxolisi: Yes I'm saying forgive yourself first not forget course that's highly impossible. You can't forget the past course that's what will guide you forward . There's no such a thing as forgive and forget . Nooo!..

At Court.

The divorce was finalized and they stepped out holding hands heading to their cars .

Breeze: So we're only left with the ceremony. The preparations are already done . When are you coming? I cant have a full house everyday those people are annoying.

Abigail:(laughs) Let's get this over and done quickly. I'll come by today so that we can begin with the ceremony tomorrow early in the morning.

Sagi: Will your fiance allow you to spend a night at your ex-husband's house .

Breeze: He'll have to , he doesn't really have much of a say in this . This is not about him but her . Besides one way or another, he'll finally accept that she's mine until death do us apart not some piece of papers typed by unlawful people who pretend to be lawful.

Sagi: You just wont stop tormenting this poor guy would you ? He loves her for christ sake.

Abigail: And I love him too. If you do really care about me , then you'll stop with all this .

Breeze: I'm not doing anything. Your boy is just being threatened by me . He's too insecure about you being around me and I kinda like it .

Sagi: Well I hate it when you guys keep fighting like teenagers in my yard .

Breeze: That was the last time it happened.

Abigail: I hope so . Breeze I still love you but I love him too . Cant you guys put the differences you have to rest for my sake , (holds Sagis hand) our sake .

Sagi: Please...?

Breeze : No that's not gonna happen. Tell Mr Smart pants that keeping a close watch. One trip your coming back home and that's not up for a fight or debate. Oh and also please tell me you didn't sell that place yet ? Please..

Sagi: Your so full of yourself. See you later baby .

Abigail: I didn't, yet .Later love .

They hugged pulling back holding hands . They

smiled before grabbing each other for one last French kiss as he stood by with his hands in the pockets. They broke it and she turned pulling him in but he pulled back.

Breeze: Eww Did you kiss him today ?

Abigail: Non of your concern.

Sagi smiled shaking her head and they laughed having a parting kiss . He pulled them both by their waists and they giggled having a group hug then baby kissed her .

Abigail : I'm gonna miss this .

Both : So will I.

Sagi: I love you, and always will .

Abigail: I love you too smucles.

They got in their cars and she sighed looking at them through the window . It was hard thinking that after tomorrow morning her place in the Lyon family will be fully erased. It was a great ride with them and she'll miss the drama .

Breeze: Dont worry, you'll always my wife love . We three dont need a man in a gown and a tight tie struggling to breath to tell us where our love ends .

Sagi: He's right , you'll always be my lover .

He took out his hand out the window and she reached out holding his .

Breeze : I love you .

Abigail: I love you too .

He reversed still with their hands locked until they couldn't hold anymore and he drove off .

Tears blurred her eyes watching him speed off as the memory of them riding in his sport car coming from their vacation replayed in her head . He never sticks to the speed limit. He's a true believer of rules are meant to be broken. But then hey , life . You win some , you lose some . All you have to do is be grateful that you had an opportunity to live up to every moment in time.

She wiped her tears smiling looking at her engagement ring. After tomorrow her life begins on a clean slate with her Mr Right. Hopefully she get pregnant and have the life she always wanted .

At Breezes house.

Breeze stoped at the gate lo6at the cars in his yard and his parking spot. He sighed pulling the handbrake rubbing his face and Sagi turned looking at him and laughed .

Breeze: Its not funny.

Sagi : Come on , it's a little funny. You called them so welcome them .

Breeze : I didn't call extended families and all those I never met before. They are just here to celebrate bad knews look at this . The ceremony is not gonna take place here for God's sake! I only invited 6 people now look at this .

Sagi : Stop it and just park on next to the house . This people wont be here for long . By tomorrow sundown they'll be gone . Relax .

Breeze: Mxm

Sagi: Your just emotional course of the divorce. She still loves you that should count at least .

Breeze : I cant bear the thought of seeing her nor you with another man . Its total torture . (drives in) But then as long as I still have you , (kiss her hand) I have nothing to worry about .

Sagi: Promise me you'll let her be . She's been through tough times and if this is her happiness

then let's give her that . Please .

Breeze: Yeah ..

Sagi : That includes making peace with Mxolisi so he too can feel welcome in our family. This way our family will keep growing and be strong enough to face any obstacles. Our son is coming home to us in a few month , we need to start clean slates so he finds everything and everyone happily. That's what he'd appreciate most and not to let him be the baid in everything happening.

He smiled holding her hand and pulled the handbrake with her before kissing it then they stepped out heading in .

Inside Ditebogo mixed the two baby bottles as the Lyon elder made tea . It was somehow surprising how the whole family of the Lyons can be so welcoming. They careless about who you are or where you come from , as long as your friendly towards them and trustworthy.

Aunt: Aowa nnanyana.. you should be resting.
Your pregnant.

Ditebogo: Ng ng mma . This is good also for my health . It's part of my daily exercise.

Aunt: So you can exercise when pregnant?

Ditebogo: Yeah .. but there are limits . There are some exercises that are good for pregnant woman and some are not.

Aunt: Ai you youngsters.. ohk ...

She shook her head heading out just as Sagi entered the kitchen.

Sagi :Hii .

Ditebogo: Hey ..your back already ... I was making them milk .

Sagi: Oh .. have they eaten anything ?

Ditebogo: Yeah .. let me go give this to them so you could tell me how it went .

Sagi : This pregnancy is turning you into a gossip girl. You like gossiping his days .

Ditebogo: (laughs) No I'm dont . Are you guys still leaving tonight ?

Sagi: Yeah ..we need to get this out of our so we could start afresh. J ust wish it didn't have to reach up to this point .

Ditebogo: Well we dont always get what we want in life do we ? Dont worry I'll look after the kids .

Sagi : No your pregnant you need to relax .

Ditebogo: I wasn't asking -plus I got the nanies which by the way I dont fully trust with kids . And (rubbs her bump) Someone's got to learn sooner rather later .

They laughed walking out passing by the elders who sat around drinking tea with Breeze.

Aunt : Hoow did it go son ?

Lyon : Stop asking the boy how it went , your depressing him .

Breeze: Its ohk uncle . It went well . Her and I parted unexpectedly in pain but now were in good term . Hopefully we can maintain friendship in all of this .

Aunt : That's how a real man talks .

Lyon 2 : Do you love her ?

Breeze: Yes I do , but feelings dont matter now uncle as long as she's happy then so am I. Her happiness counts

Aunt 2 : Well at east you still have your other wife who by the way seems to be able to make a house feel at home . After this give her all the attention and overwhelm her with your love , trust me nothing will get in between you two .

At Mxolisi's house.

Hours later

Mxolisi walked into the house when a delicious smell hit his nostrils. He smiled walking to the dining room to put his jacket on the couch and frowned looking at the travel bag. He sighed putting it down along with the keys and followed the smell to the kitchen finding her behind the pot humming.

He wrapped his hands around her waist looking inside and she scooped soup turning around for him to have a taste. He smiled as she smiled back waiting for a reply.

Abigail: How is it ?

Mxolisi: Its delicious. How did it go ?

Abigail : Better than I expected. Everything was settled fairly and Breeze pulled himself together throughout. Its final . But there's just one thing left .

Mxolisi: Which is ?

Abigail: He already gathered his family at his house and mine also are on their way . We're doing it tomorrow morning before sunrise.

Mxolisi : Does that mean your leaving? With him ?

Abigail: Baby I'm doing this for us so it could come to pass. After tomorrow I swear you'll never hear me or see me near him ever again.

Mxolisi: I'm coming along.

Abigail: No your not.

Mxolisi : And why the hell not ?

Abigail: I know very well that you and I are engaged , they do too, but baby let's face it - that's quite disrespectful. Your from a traditional family , you of all people should know that .

He let go of her and picked a glass drinking water . She sighed switching off the stove and put the spoon down hugging him from behind.

Abigail: I know its irritating seeing me with him - but I swear this is for the last time . It will never happen again. I love you .

At Breezes house

Around 19h00

Mxolisi drove to the gate and parked looking as Breezes family got into their cars laughing followed by Breeze and Sagi. He signed pulling her hand and kissed it and she smiled leaning in and they kissed .

Abigail : One last time and we're over . I promise .

Mxolisi: Behave yourselves there.

Abigail: (laughs) Nothing will happen. As soon as it's done I'm heading straight to you and you can have me for as long as you want .

He shook his head kissing him one last time and

they stepped out. He took out her bag and held her hand as they walked over . Breeze noticed them and met them halfway taking the bag hugging Abigail for one last time .

Mxolisi: I love you.

Abigail : I love you too

Breeze rolled his eyes and Abigail walked past him .

Mxolisi: You look after her . No manga-manga business.

Breeze : Relax .. I got my baby with me so if I'm hungry she'll provide . I dont know about your fiance but I'm always down for a dessert.

Mxolisi frowned looking at him smirk before turning around with a long face and hands in the pockets. Breeze scoffed loading her bag and closed the boot

getting in .

Abigail: What did you say to him ?

Breeze : Nothing you should worry yourself about.

Guy thing .

They drove out in line and catching up and reminding each other of old times .

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

[08/02, 14:04] Lynne : Chapter 97

At the Village.

Early in the morning, the family elders including Abigail's walked out of the house with them heading to the graveyards leaving Sagi by the door. She looked at them drive out and she still couldn't come to terms that in a few mins their love would have drawn a line on the ground and that's that . Their love was so strong one wouldn't have thought that one simple push of a finger will break it down like

this .

She walked back into the kitchen and went to prepare breakfast for their return trying to distract herself from reality . She heard a phone ring and at first ignored it but finally went to check it .

She stood by Abigail's phone looking at Mxolisi's number as it rang countless times hoping it'll stop but he kept on calling and she picked it annoyed .

Sagi: You need to relax.

Mxolisi: And you need to learn how to speak to people, especially when answering people's phones

Sagi: I wouldn't have answered it but then you kept on nagging . Are you that insecure for you to check up in her every 10 mins ?

Mxolisi: I'm not insecure.

Sagi: Well your actions says something quite different from what your saying . If you didn't trust us with her - Breeze with her then you should have gotten her a leash and tie her to your waist and stop

calling after every breath you take .

Mxolisi: And judging from your tone I guess its happening .

Sagi: ...

Mxolisi: And that's why your so salty.

Sagi: How I am or not has nothing to do with their separation. As far as I am in it - I dont have a say in it .

Mxolisi: So that makes you angry ?

Sagi: No ! What makes me angry is hearing your voice at this time of a minute when your the couse of everything my family is going through..!

Mxolisi: Is that how you feel about me ? That I'm the reason why your family is heading separate ways ? Is that the kind of person you view me as ?

Sagi: (teary) How do you expect me to view you Mxolisi? As my lawyer? A good guy in my eyes ? I'm sorry but I don't.

In Mxolisi's car.

Mxolisi sighed and parked the car on the side of the gravel road before looking at the mirrors and took the phone from the phone holder.

Mxolisi: At least something better than nyatsi . Not as a friend also but a man at least.

Sagi: Who's man ? Her man ? Course that's the same thing.

Mxolisi: You have to understand that I love her Sagi . I love her . And I know you might not agree with me or be happy for our relationship but I love her and she's happy with me .

Sagi: She was happy with us until you ruined everything for her !

He rubbed his eyes and looked around again at the trees before sighing .

Mxolisi: Do you love her ?

Sagi: Is that a trick question? Ofcourse I love her .

Mxolisi: Ohk ..how about we meet? Let's talk about this - you and I. Lay our differences on the table and see how we can deal with this course I dont want to keep up with this .

Sagi: What ?

Mxolisi: yeah .. see I was heading there course Abigail told me she'll be back today early in the morning after the whole thing is done so I decided I should surprise her.

Sagi: Well that's the dumbest stupid surprise I've ever heard - fetching a divorcee from her ex-in-laws house ? Quite disrespectful if you ask me .

Mxolisi: Woo... that's spicy but thanks for the honesty. So what do you say ? No one will have to know about the meet up .

Sagi: What if she recognizes you car when they return?

Mxolisi: Its a different one . She doesn't even know the number plate.

Sagi: Ohk ..

Mxolisi: Send the address .

Sagi: If you dont have the address then how were you expecting to find her ?

Mxolisi: Asking around.

She hang up and he waited anxiously then she recieved the address from a different number. He saved the contacts and then followed the GPS.

Mins later he parked infront of an RDP house and frowned checking if he entered the correct location - it was . He sighed biting his lip and started the engine and when he checked the mirrors he saw her approaching in her black long dress. It wasn't hard to notice her even when it was still a bit dark from her height and body under that tight dress on the waist. She got in the car and he looked at her as she rubbed her hands together .

Mxolisi: You cold ?

Sagi: Yeah ..

He switched on the heater and she relaxed as he drove slowly.

Mxolisi: So any place we can talk ?

Sagi : By the river . Not the one around here though. I like the sound of the water hitting on the rock and listening to the birds sing while the trees release a very soft wind . Makes me calm and collected plus I haven't been there in a while , go on I'll guide you .

Mxolisi: You love the beauty of nature - that's ... a progress for me . At least now I know one good thing you love besides always fighting for your loved ones.

She turned looking at him with a long face and he

looked at her before they both laughed as she directed him to the river .

A while later .

At Breezes home .

They all walked in the house smelling the good fresh coffee from the door and walked to the dinning room where they found the food coverd and sat around opening them in smiles .Abigail went to get the coffee and juice in the fridge going to place them on the table before walking around with a small dish to wash hands . Breeze got up feeling in his blood that the house was empty heading upstairs to the room Sagi shared with Abigail last night but she was n't there . He went to check the bathroom but still then he went to his room and found a note on the bed .

" I went out to get some fresh air . I'm I'm ohk and safe , dont worry -I'll be back soon . I love you "

Though it was unsettling he held on to her word timing her with an hour or he'll go looking for her . He cant bear to lose her , she is his everything and without her all will come to an end and mean nothing. She's all he's got and he's willing to do everything he can to correct his wrongs and build his family with her.

Abigail slightly knocked on the door and he turned with the note in his hand .

Abigail: Everything ohk?

Breeze: yeah .. (shoved it in his pocket) Everything is fine .

Abigail: Ohk .. I'm looking for Sagi , she's not in our room . Have you seen her ?

Breeze: She's out - (swallowed) I hope .

Abigail : Are you ohk ..

Breeze: Mmmh- hmm . Let's go .

He passed by her and she looked at him walking down the hallway rubbing his neck with one hand . Even if their business was over - she realized it is still hard to not notice him when he's afraid of something. She needs to stay away from him or what she has will also crumble down in a blink of an eye .

She fiddled with her hands and went to join them sitting around the table .

Lyon : Ao .. where's my girl ?

Breeze: She - went out .

Aunt: out this early ? Is she ohk ?

Breeze: I hope .

Aunt: You hope ? Wena Breeze - Do I have to remind you that that is your wife ? The mother of your

children roaming around at this time in which most murders and rapists escape running out -and your hoping? What's got into you?

Breeze:...

Aunt : Ema oye go bata mosadi Breeze ! Stand up !
Hela ! You hope ?

Abigails aunt : Maybe she needed a break from all of this . Maybe it happens to be too much for her .

Aunt: Ng-ng No Breeze stand up and go look for my daughter-in-law before she goes missing or worse .
Dont you know that when a woman says this you should do the complete opposite ? Stand up !

Abigail will put your food in the oven . Bathong ! You hope !

Breeze looked at the elders eyes on him and he stood up embarrassed and walked away picking the car keys by the door.

Aunt: This boy !

Lyon: (whispered) You didn't have to do that .
Lovers have problems too and sometimes the best way to come around is to give each other some space to think . Dont ever belittle him like that course one day he wont let it slide - he's not a boy anymore.

He sat back and the aunt looked at him before they ate .

At Breezes house

Ditebogo sat on the bed next to Enzo feeding him milk while busy taking pictures of him . She posted them on Instagram and read the clocking comments and answered them . Everyone on Instagram knew the twins as hers and little did they know her cake was still cooking in her oven . She frowned looking at Rose's comment .

" They are so beautiful "

From that comment she could tell she had more to say but went with the simple line . She sighed replying others and stopped. Was it even worthy to hold her accountable for what she did under pain, stress and neglecting ? She knew how it was to lose someone you love from her brothers passing and she could tell she feels like she lost Kagiso too for good . Though it was hard to forgive her she has to to that not only for the peace sake but for herself too to heal past that .

Reply: "Thanks love "

She sighed hitting her inbox.

Ditebogo: Do want to hang out ? I'm bored .

Rosella: Really .. I'd love to .

She smiled telling her where she was and put the phone down taking the bottle from the sleeping baby Enzo.

At the river .

Hours later

They sat on the bonnet looking at the river as the water hit the rocks splashing making small waves , the cold from the mountain forest covered them and listening to the sound of the early birds and leaves whispering. Mxolisi turned looking at her hug her body and got down from the bonnet and went to get his coat covering her .

Sagi: Thank you .

Mxolisi: Your welcome. So what's it about rivers

that inspires you to just want to come here and watch it ?

Sagi: Its- ..open . Always flows . Sometimes it could flow smoothly and sometimes in rapid - in the end not all the water will go the same direction but it'll cut out and take different routes .Like life - it could go really smooth and beautiful but at some point it'll just hit rough patches and separate you from the ones you love .

Mxolisi: So in this case - I happen to be the rough patch your marriage hit .

She turned looking at him and sighed looking back at the river . All memories came in a wave before her eyes and tears blurred her eyes . He turned to her wishing to hold her but knew he had to keep a distance though it hurts seeing a woman in tears like this .

Sagi: Have you ever felt like - there's not a person in the world that understands and gets you ?

Mxolisi: Yeah .. almost every day.

Sagi: How's it feel?

Mxolisi: Sad , lonely - depressing

Sagi: Imagine all those things added with my condition? What do they do ?

Mxolisi: ...Breaking...

Sagi: Exactly...(tears flowed) I'm broken.

Her tears flowered endlessly like the river she was staring at . He looked at her biting his lip and tried touching her when she got off the bonnet .

Sagi: (crying) Do you ever wonder why I'm like this ?
How im feeling?

Mxolisi: How are you feeling?

Sagi: ...

Mxolisi: Sagi you can talk to me so that I can correct myself. So that I can see where I fit in your

life even if I'm at the back of your list . I know you hurt-

Sagi: (raised voice) I'm not hurt ! I'm torn apart . You took someone every valuable to my heart . You came into my life and tore a part of my family away from me. You didn't think how it'll affect me though she told you that I'm not alright ! I got triggered Mxolisi . After I recently found out that the man I love has been gallivanting you came along and forced your way through my broken family that could have been mended . And then I got sent to a mental pris on by the same woman he's been seeing behind my back ! I got poisoned and some freaks almost performed an operation on me trying to take my babies from me and no one has ever asked me how I was doing after the trauma I've been through! Not even once have I heard anyone ask me how I am ! And I try so hard - (crying) So hard to put it together for the sake of my babies and everyone around me ! I'm a victim of nature and a victim of my marriage.... I am my own worst nightmare. Everything around me keeps crumbling down and

everytime I try to help someone ends up getting hurt ! I cant seem to do anything course I'm scared I could kill and I dont want any blood in my hands . You all res urrected the part of me I wished no one to see and now your turning a blind eye focusing on the same happiness you cut from mine ! I live with a false hope that one day you all will see your wrongs you did to me and try correct but no - its like I'm sitting in a room put in the corner all by myself while y'all are popping champagnes while I remain crying and none of you raises their head.

She turned around crying hiding her face as he stood by with a tears burning his eyes . He squeezed his eyes and went to the car taking his bottle of water to give her but she walked 3 steps away from him in tears .

Sagi: Have you ever been hurt to a point that you start to hate life its self ? To a point you believe that maybe there is no God course if he was , he

wouldn't have let this happen , have you..?

Mxolisi: ...

Sagi: I'm sorry if you feel like I'm seeing you as the person that played the part but the question is do you blame me ?

Mxolisi: ...

Sagi: Do you Mxolisi?

Mxolisi: No ..

Sagi : Right course you know that you- you Mxolisi Maleka took something from me . Maybe that's why you stood up for me in court-

Mxolisi : No that was not it . I stood up for you course I wanted to not course of the guilt. Trust me it was all in good intention.

Sagi: Was it now ? (Crying) Your every bit as bad as they are . The family and the ones I committed myself too . Breeze triggered me . Abigail pushed me . Jack forced me and Jane pokes me . You are burning up the flame . With all of this -i even tried one thing I never thought I'd do - inflict a long pain

on myself so that I won't fight back course you guys are backing me into a corner - Tattoo. Huge one . Which was the dumbest thing to do course now I wish to renew it to feel pain . I feel like the devil is clapping hands for me ready to welcome me if I do anything course that's where people like me go . I lost my Faith in the process and feel like the devil is happily ready to work with me with warm arms - but then the love they keep crushing and my babies , are the only things holding me back . I hate to live with bars (crying) I hate my life ! I hate it and I hate all I want to do is make it stop ! Please help me stop the pain course it hurt ! Help me stop ! Kill me once and for all course I'm tired ! (Screams) Kill me and stop the pain please!

Mxolisi: No !

Sagi: (crying) Kill me ! That way you will live your happy life with her knowing nothing will hold you back please...

Mxolisi : I'm not going to kill you Sagi .

Her tears kept rolling down her cheeks as the pain in her heart tore it's way she could feel her chest also in pain . She looked at him and quickly threw the jacket on the ground and ran into the water making Mxolisi's heart skip to his throat and he followed her diving in and the water flowed with them .

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 14:04] Lynne : Chapter 98 .

At the River .

They struggled to breathe as the water flowed with them hitting rocks when Mxolisi spotted a branch on the side of the river further.

Mxolisi: Grab my hand !

She tried by all means to get further to him and finally caught his hand when he pulled her and held her as they went under the branch but he managed to get hold of it .

Sagi : (crying) Dont let go please ...

He turned looking at how terrified she was and he could almost hear her heart pounding so hard as she coughed water holding tight to his hand with her dress torn on the other side of her breast and on the neck. Her eyes said it all .

He pulled her closer as his hand got tired but he told himself that he wont let her down and let her kids grow up without a mother .

She got hold of the branch and he pulled her by the waist grabbing the grass next to them and pushed her so she could hold on and be able to get out of the river and she did . After she had gone out she quickly gave him her hand and even though he was heavy for her she also didn't give up until he was out and they collapsed on the grass next to the river breathing heavily in fear .

Sagi : (shaking) Thank you .

Mxolisi: I know your hurt but that was a stupid move !

Sagi: I'm sorry ..

Mxolisi: Sagi you got kids and family who love you . I know they might hurt you but every family does have obstacles and killing yourself is not the best way to get away from all of it .

Sagi: (teary) I'm sorry .

Mxolisi: You sorry?! You could've died ! Leaving your kids to grow up without a mother ! A mothers love all because she couldn't face her pain and deal with it !

Sagi : How do you expect me to just pick up the pieces when everytime I do I get hurt ? Not so long ago I saw him meeting her in her car at my party. I thought him and I were better than that ! Now Abigail is officially leaving after breaking me !

Mxolisi: But Abigail leaving the union doesn't mean life itself will stop or your marriage wont ever be strong! It will!

She put her hands on her face crying as they flowed

out and he raised his upper body balancing himself with one hand facing her .

Mxolisi: Sagi I know I hurt you in the process of loving Abigail- I'm sorry. You deserve better than death after all that we put you through. You might see yourself as a victim of nature but to some of us we view you quite different from what you assume yourself to be . In my eyes - I see you as a strong ,amazing, beautiful rock of a woman . You dedicate yourself to everyone around you . You are a mother , friend , sister and a lover . With your condition- I also see you as a strong , Intelligent person who is able to strategize and capable of doing anything and everything to protect your loved ones . You are the strongest and bravest woman I've ever met . Killing yourself will devastate a lot of people especially the ones close to you who you don't notice how much they care . Ditebogo , Rose and Bonolo look up to you as you play a mother figure in their lives . Kagiso sees you as his mother and the kids too . Abigail sees you as her sister .

Sagi : Well she has a funny way of showing it when she's the reason why I almost lost my kids !

Mxolisi: I don't know why she did that course she didn't have the right to but I'm sure she regrets it and always will . Air adores you . You and his mother might be on each others toes but you can see when he's with you that he loves you and sometimes when you carry him I heard he doesn't want to go down . Sagi your son is initiating do you want him to come back to finding out that his mother is four foot under ? And though Breeze is a jerk - the guy loves you . You should have seen him when you were in jail , he had given up on the world drinking and locking himself in the house . The only thing that kept him going is a dream to finally hold you and Odirile was there for him then thanks to Kagiso . You might not see it but you being alive really means a lot to a lot of people. Dont you ever do that! Lastly I'm sorry for being the reason behind your sadness . And sorry I couldn't have a backbone to come apologize to you after what I did. I hope one day I'll get to have the relation you have

with others with you . I'll be glad to know I'm in your good books like the rest . Sorry one's again.

She moved her hand from her face still laying on the grass and he smiled moving her hair on her face

.

Mxolisi: I mean it .

She opened her arms and he went down hugging her for a while .

Sagi: I forgive you. I too would have done the same thing for love and care less of what stands in my way or who's happiness I destroy .

Mxolisi: Thank you.

Sagi: J ust love her fully ohk ?

Mxolisi: I will .

He got up and helped her stand dusting the dry grass off themselves but their clothes were still wet . He looked at her torn dress on the breast by the side and realized she wasn't wearing a bra -her breasts were still of a teenager as if she wasn't breastfeeding.

Mxolisi: Did you somehow inject your self with something before?

Sagi: I'm scared of injection, I wouldn't dare try to .

Mxolisi: Had an operation of some sort?

Sagi : No ..why ?

Mxolisi: You dont look like someone who just had babies .

Sagi: I'll take that as a compliment..

He smiled when he realized the car wasn't there but back where they were and frowned.

Sagi : Dont worry, it's not that far from here . Let's just follow the river and we'll be there in no time .

Mxolisi: Damn ... I'm never getting anywhere near this place with you .

Sagi :(laughs) I was cought in pain . Thanks for opening my eyes .

They walked along the river over a small chat heading to the car .

On the road.

Breeze sighed looking at the woman carrying wood staring at the picture and shook their heads worrying him even more .

Breeze: Thank you .

He went back in the car and drove along feeling his heart racing . He checked her at her favorite spots around the village but she wasn't there including the river . He rubbed his face and kept on stopping by anyone he meets on the way asking them while he countlessly called her and back home to check if she's back .

Breeze: (records message) Baby can you please come home .. If there's anything I did that upset you please come back so we can talk . I love you .

2 mins later

Breeze : I'm worried please love ... I need you .

1 min later.

Breeze : If your thinking of leaving me I swear to God killing myself! (Teary)Baby please come home .. I'm begging you .

3 mins later

Breeze : Damn it Sagi please ... I seriously need you . I'm nothing without you . I know I fucked up big time the last couple of month and made excuses for it hurting you in the process - I have no excuse now and I'm sorry . I'm truly sorry my love . Please allow me to prove myself to you . I love you . Come to me baby .

Mins passed as he drove along and everytime he got back in the car after asking people he'd record a voice message. A familiar car to his eyes passed by him as he recorded his endless messages. He turned trying to remember where he saw it and realized he saw it at Mxolisi's Instagram pictures when Kagiso was searching him in the car at the

wedding.

He shook it off and kept on driving .

Breeze : Sagi - im losing my mind right now . Sorry if I made you feel neglected in a way through out the whole thing , I'm sorry. Please get back to me .

He put the phone down rubbing his eyes with a racing heart . Chord Overstreet (Hold on) played when he frowned looking outside . Its funny how most of the time when were sad and play music we get to relate some how with one , and this was definitely touching him on the inside .

hold on I still want you

Come back I still need you

Let me take your hand -

I'll make it right

I swear to love you all my life

Hold on I still need you

Long endless highways ,

Your silent beside me

Driving a nightmare I can't escape from

Helplessly praying ,

The light isn't fading

Hiding the shock and the chill in my bones

They took you away on a table

I pace back and forth as you lay still

They pull you in to feel your heartbeats

Can you hear me screaming?

Please dont leave me

Hold on I still want you

Come back I still need you

Let me take your hand I'll make it right

I swear to love you all my life

Hold on I still need you

He turned off the music and picked his phone when suddenly it rang in his hand and he quickly answered.

Abigail : She's back .

Breeze: I'm on my way .

He made a u-turn in the middle of the road and stepped on the accelerator going home holding his breath.

Earlier ...

Sagi directed him until they got to the Lyons house

and went out to go open the gate for him to park inside the yard .

Abigail spotted her while washing dishes and quickly let go of them rubbing her hands on her clothes rushing out to hug her .

Abigail: Dont you ever leave like that !

Sagi: (smiling) I went out for fresh air - and guess who I ran into ?

She turned around in shock looking at Mxolisi standing right in front of her in the flesh. Who would have thought that love could drag a man down the miles like this ? She smiled ridiculously wanting to jump in his arms but the elders stepped out and he rubbed of his smile putting his hands together while Sagi kept removing dry grass in her hair .

Mxolisi: (respectfully) Thobela bagolo

Elders : Thobela / Dumela

Mxolisi: How are you all ?

Elders : Fine / good . You ?

Mxolisi: I'm also fine .

Lyon Aunt: Wena o mang ?

Mxolisi : uhm i'm a friend of theirs , came all the way to support them through this difficult time .

Lyon: That's so nice of you son , but you seem like you've been vomited by an animal and you makoti . Have you too been together all this time ?

Mxolisi turned looking at Sagi fiddling with her hair avoiding their eyes as Abigail's smile dropped looking at them .

Mxolisi: uhm ..I was supposed to be here earlier before everything starts and when I was on my way here I ran into her crying walking by the road.

Abigail's aunt : So what happened?

Mxolisi: I took her somewhere private to the river

course she said she needed some space to breath after what she's been through and things didn't go as planned and uhm she...uhm ..

He held his tongue not wanting to tell them that she jumped into a full river ready to kill herself. He looked at her as she stared back at him ..

Sagi : I saw a snake course we were sitting on the tall dry grass and i ran into the river but luckily he was there to rescue me otherwise I would have died .

Mxolisi: Right... I'm sorry it took a while to bring her home and worrying you .

Aunt : Its ohk son . Makoti le wena ... a full river ? You could have gotten bitten by another animal in the river or drowned leaving your kids all alone .

Sagi: I'm sorry . I was terrified.

They all turned hearing a car park in full speed as

the wheels scratched on the ground forming dust and Breeze stepped out jogging to her embracing her in a bone crushing hug she could hardly breathe.

Having her in his arms felt so good and calmed him from the nerves , he didn't want to let go .

Breeze : I love you .

Sagi: (heavily) I - can't- breath.

He quickly pulled back holding her shoulders and she took a breath in looking at him and smiled opening her arms for him and he hugged her .

Sagi : I love you too .

The elders walked back inside and Abigail turned to him with a neutral face .

Abigail: They might have believed the whole story but it was - inconvenient. Why dont you tell me the whole truth ?

Mxolisi: Hello to you too . I'm good and I missed you . Yes the story was made up and I'll explain everything if you give me a hug first to welcome your man in a village he almost got lost in looking for you course of the love he has .

She tried keeping a straight face but he just looked at her and out of nowhere she laughed hugging him then stole a kiss .

Mxolisi: (smiling) Better .

Breeze : Hey man .(shook his hand)

Mxolisi: 8ta . How are you?

Breeze: Anxious, scared and everything in between. You ?

Mxolisi: I'm - shocked and happy at the same time .

The girls walked into the house and they leaned on Mxolisi's car .

Breeze : So what shocks you ?

Mxolisi: I was planning on keeping this between your woman and I but I can see that wont happen and its not a good thing to hide it .

Breeze:...

Mxolisi: See I took her to the river trying to sort out my differences with her when suddenly she opened up about her true feelings. She's not well man .. at all . She's a ticking bomb and everytime she holds back with the kids gathering herself.

Breeze: What do you mean ?

Mxolisi: Sagi has a condition and you know that - but at times y'all seem to lock her out and do things without considering her feelings. She's human too . She feels rejected . She feels like she's a victim of nature and a victim in your marriage course always

she's the one that ends up hurt . She feels helpless and doesn't know what to do course everytime she does something someone ends up getting hurt badly . She got sent to pris on by your baby mama and your brother tried to kill her and take her babies while on the other hand I took Abigail from her - the one she considers a sister . Not so long she lost a friend and a brother in Odirile. All those things when combining ripps her from the inside and she hides it with a smile for the sake of everyone around her . She cares about you all but feels like she's not somehow enough or good to be around you all .

Breeze: ...

Mxolisi: She said in oder to keep up with it its either she inflicts pain on herself physically or she let's the thought of being a mother to her kids hold her . Breeze she hurts herself just so she wont take out the pain on others . She's there for anyone but herself. She's scared she'll kill one day course of pain .

Breeze:..

Mxolisi: She tried killing herself today .

Breeze raised his hurt face to him shocked .He couldnt even picture his life without her in it and it made his heart jump to his throat. He looked at him as tears burned his eyes . He could almost hear Odirile as Mxolisi talked though he didn't insult him like he did but the way he put his words - his friend on a serious note .

Mxolisi : Damn straight. She jumped into a full river trying to drown herself so that she could die and leave this horrific life behind course she says she hates it ! She's hurting real bad man . If your not careful you'll bury the mother of your child earlier than you should.

Breeze : ...

Mxolisi: I mean man - Psychopathy and suicidal thoughts, man that's not a good thing ! This should tell you how much she's fighting in the name of love . This thing's dont mix and get good results but

she's fighting through without support from either of you ! What hurts the most is non of you notice that .

Breeze : ..(rubbs face)

Mxolisi: You saw the good in her before triggering her disorder and still you expect good after the trauma she's been through which is highly impossible! You know that ! I dont know if its being ignorant or the way you showcase your love but you cant expect her to be the same after what you put her through . That's just a filter she puts on course you all expect her to be like that always . So basically she's living up to your expectations and you don't even realize it and she's your wife ! You of all people should see that!

Breeze: ...

Mxolisi: She's a ticking bomb . One day she'll lose her key and kill you in your sleep out of pain course that's what drives her . She'll kill everyone that hurt her if not for her . She'll lose it for good with the fake humanity she shows off for your sake and

there's nothing you would do about that . So not only is her life at line , but everyone around her . Dont underestimate her to the point where you think she's fine and life can carry on smoothly like before. Her mind thinks and plans beyond a normal person can . Stagetie . She's capable of all horrific things you could imagine but - but for your sake she doesn't want to let go.

Breeze: (wipes tear) Damn ..

Mxolisi : She's dangerous , she's strong , she's capable actually everything but she keeps it cool . One mistake- One box six feet under , and no one will tell her shit !

Breeze:...

Mxolisi: All I'm saying is be careful. Don't add diesel to her flame course one drop - then Wallah ! Her true identity will be revealed and I swear to God you'll wish Jesus was here to hold your hand and walk with you through your difficult time .

Breeze: ...

Mxolisi: Go in there and start with a simple I'm

sorry to open your door to her heart then you'll take it from there . She loves you and she does this course of you.

Breeze looked at him and breathed out . He gave him his hand and they bro hugged .

Breeze: Thanks for being there man .

Mxolisi: J ust did what I had to . I'm sorry too for breaking your marriage .

Breeze: I'm over it . J ust promise to treat her well .

Mxolisi: I will . Wait your over it ? Seriously?

Breeze: Yeah ..

Mxolisi: then why were you giving me a hard time ?

Breeze: I dont know...I guess I like giving you a hard time .

Mxolisi: Man fuck you !

Breeze : Your welcome.

They laughed heading inside finding the elders not there . Breeze checked outside and saw them under the tree before heading to the girls room and found them hugging as Abigail tried to console her .

He rubbed his hand walking over and stood next to them .

Breeze: Can I?

Abigail: Sure .. I'll be back ohk?

She shook her head rubbing her tears and Abigail walked out closing th door behind her. Breeze sat next to Sagi and pulled her into a hug when she broke down again .

Breeze: I know I haven't been the perfect husband for you . I hurt you and made you feel neglected. I know words wont be enought to explain and make you feel better but I'm sorry. You've been nothing

but a good wife to me and I took you for granted. I have no excuse for my behavior. You're the best thing that's ever happened to me my whole life and I turned a blind eye on that .

He put his fingers in her hair rubbing her scalp as she cried still in his arms . He swallowed a painful lump hearing her sobs which cut deep in his heart .

Breeze: I turned you into the person you are and I'm ashamed to even call myself worthy to be your husband. Worthy of your love. You loved me through better and worse and I took advantage of your love . I'm so sorry my love. I truly am . Sorry if I made you feel unwanted or anything trust me I didn't mean to . Mxolisi told me what happened and how you feel - I take the blame course this whole thing started course of me hurting you in the process. But the idea of waking up without you by my side terrifies me to the last . Losing you will mean me losing my world course my life won't be

the same without you . I cant raise the kids on my own , I need you .

He cubed her face looking at her as tears kept rolling .

Breeze : Sagi I love you . Sorry I got cought up in another dimension apart from ours . Sorry I left you by yourself countless times hurting you . Sorry for being the course of your unhappiness . Sorry for not being the man you deserve and hoped for . Sorry for everything that I've done that hurt you . I promise to love , protect , respect and care for you. To be the husband you wish to have and always be there for you. I promise to not be absent in any occasion of your life and I'm willing to step on each step with you by my side . I need you Sagi . I love you ... (teary)
I cant say this enough but I love you Sagi Sagi Lyon.
I truly do .

Sagi : (crying) Why are you doing this to me ?
Everytime I forgive you , you repeat the same

mistake. What have I done to deserve this from you ?

Breeze: I'm sorry . I'm so sorry . I have nothing to back my actions I'm sorry.

Sagi: Do you love her ?

Breeze: Who ?

Sagi :J ane ?

Breeze: No .. absolutely not .

Sagi : Your lying! You do love her .

Breeze: I swear to God I dont love that woman . I assure you on that .

Sagi: Then why were you with her at my party? Or this how it is - you meet her behind my back in the name of Air ?

Breeze : I will not do such a thing. I will never use my kids name to get what I want . I dont love J ane and I dont need her in my life and I hate the fact that she happened to be the mother of my child but she is . I only love you and that's that. No one else but you. I love you.

She looked at him and smiled a bit getting on his then they hugged, it was as if he was carrying his daughter in a way but cute .

Meanwhile in the Dining room .

Abigail sat next to Mxolisi as he gulped a glass of water and put it down looking at her .

Mxolisi: You've been staring at me for a while .
What do you want?

Abigail: Something you wont be able to give to me at this moment.

He tried keeping a straight face but eventually laughed holding his mouth.

Mxolisi: Well I'm sorry mam I cant provide .

Abigail: (blushing) Not for long . Why dont we get out of here ? My business here is over ..

Mxolisi: Are you serious?

Abigail: I'm serious. It's time I put the past behind me and focus on my future which I want with you . I love you and wish to spend the rest of my life with you without anything standing in our way of happiness. So ?

Mxolisi: (smiling) ohk mam .. where to ?

Abigail: Anywhere ..(blushing) remember I'm yours .

He blushed and leaned over kissing her then she stood up to get her bag . After a while she went to say her goodbyes and met Mxolisi at the car . She got in and held his hand as he drove out .

Mxolisi: How about Cape Town for a week ?

Abigail:(smiling) I'd love to .

-

-

-

-

-

-

-

-

7 months later

-

-

-

-

-

-

-

.

.

.

Comment

.

.

.

.

[08/02, 14:05] Lynne : Chapter 99 .

At Breezes house.

Breeze stood by watching as they build a small traditional hut with Sagi by his side. He folded his hands parting his legs not seeing a necessity of building the hut . Though it was going well and looking beautiful he had preferred to just build a smaller beautiful one room house .

Breeze: please tell me why we're building this instead of a normal one room house with a tile ?

Sagi: Because I chose it and i know he'll love it n besides it's a traditional house . Put in mind that he's a traditional healer now and he has to be in an environment that goes with his status .

Breeze: Are you even sure he'll want to work here ? I mean he's mother could change her mind at anytime.

Sagi: She chose here for a reason. Her son has been through a lot over there and he definitely needs a change in location to start his new life . A place with no reminder of his hard time and where he could raise his child happily and peacefully. A healthy environment which we (pulled his hand) as his parents can provide.

He turned looking at her and pulled her chin up for a kiss and smiled rubbing the lip gloss off his lips .

Breeze : Yaark!

Sagi: (laughs) You kissed me I didn't.

Breeze : Whatever.. look I'm going to check the Gallery. I hope their also done then I'll go check the club .

Sagi: Why dont you go check the Club and I'll check the Gallery?

Breeze : Are you sure ?

Sagi : Yeah ..

Breeze : Then what about your session ? You know we cant afford to miss even a single session.

Sagi: I wont - It's at 14h00 and it's still 10AM , dont worry I'll make it in time.

Breeze : Ohk ..I got the kids .

Sagi : Finally - a little bit of break . Thank you so much

She stole a kiss and walked away t the house through the backdoor and he smiled rubbing the gloss of his lips . He hasn't seen his son for a while , he's missed him so bad and couldn't wait to see him . He'll have to do on his level best to welcome him back home so he could know how much he's been missed for the past nine months.

His phone rang in his pocket and he took it out walking around the house to the car .

Breeze: Hey man .

Mxolisi: hii . J ust called to let you know the papers are ready for his return for him to sign and the building will be his legally .

Breeze : Thanks a lot man . I owe you one .

Mxolisi: Yeah you do , I see already you started preparing everything for him that's good . He'll be very pleased with your effort .

Breeze: I hope he does course he doesn't really enjoy being papamperd .

Mxolisi: He will . Your a great dad man . Hate to say this but your inspiring me to be a better dad to my kid

Breeze : As long as Rosella doesn't complain about anything just know your doing great.

They hang up as Sagi walked out of the house carrying the kids and put them in their seats waving at them .

Sagi : Your going with daddy today ohk..

Kids : Daddy!

Sagi: Yeah ... please drive safely and stick to the speed limit with my kids..I'm begging you .

Breeze: (smiling) I promise.

He kissed her when she frowned looking at her wrist watch

Sagi : I'm waiting for Rose to get here so she could look after Ditebogo. She's still in pain after giving birth 3 days ago .

Breeze : So it's that painful?

Sagi: (long face) What do expect? It is extremely painful. It's like the worst pain one can ever feel or take.

Breeze: (shrugs) At least its worth it . Right?

She frowned dropping her hands and walked away as he smiled looking at her swing her waist getting in the car .

Breeze: (smiling) Another one ? !

Sagi: (shouts) Noo !

He laughed dring off and she smiled getting in the house to Ditebogo's room . She walked in and found her walking back from the insuit and went to sit on

the mattress next to her baby .

Sagi : You can use the bed you know.

Ditebogo: Not yet . It'll hurt when I get on it , it'll course me to spread my legs and i cant do that yet .

Sagi: ohk .

She walked over and sat next to her picking the baby as he released a cry then she rocked him smiling.

Sagi: (smiling) He's so cute , already I can see Kagiso's long eye lashes on him . And the nose too .

Ditebogo: (smiling) let's hope he doesn't take his father's every feature and forget mine . I'll be so jealous.

Sagi: (laughs) You'll get over it . Even if he doesn't take any feature from you , its possible he might take the sense of humor from you. Or your family

member.

Ditebogo: I hope he doesn't do that.

Sagi: you never know. So you still haven't named him ? You do realize you'll have to think of a name anytime soon right ? And that you had to have done that when you were still in hospital course now they'll give you a hard time .

Ditebogo: I do . J ust that I wanted Kagiso to be here to name him himself and be there on his first day on this planet. I guess I was living in my own fantasy.

Sagi: Baby your the mother , you also have a right to pick up a name for him and I'm sure Kagiso will be glad with any that you choose. You guys can add the second name on the certificate when he gets back it won't be that much of an issue.

Ditebogo: In two weeks? (Pouted) feels like 2 decades.

Sagi : You managed to hold on for months , so what is two weeks to you! Absolutely nothing . He'll be back..

Ditebogo: (sigh) I always thought of a name since I was pregnant, just that I wanted to make sure that him and I agree on it first .

Sagi: And the name is ?

Ditebogo: Odirile. In honor of my brother.

Sagi: I love it . It's a beautiful name and has a beautiful chemistry behind it . Kagiso will definitely not be against that one.

The door slid open and Rose walked in holding a plastic . She smiled looking at them and put the plastic of McDonald's next to Ditebogo then threw herself on the bed .

Sagi: So I guess I don't need any explanation why your late course already its right in front of me .

Rose: Yep .. She wanted something spicy and a double cheeseburger. But sorry I'm late .

Sagi: its ohk. Here , sit up (gave her the baby)
Where's Aiden?

Rose : He's at his father's. He doesn't want me anymore, he cries everytime looking for him so I sent him there. I wonder what their doing there that makes him so clingy towards his father all of a sudden .

Sagi : He's a boy , he needs his father . J ust like Enzo , he wants nothing to do with me . He wants his father to do everything for him including to make his bottle and not me . He cries for him everytime he walks out of the door , thank God I have Melow to myself so that I wont feel neglected. But sometimes she turns her back on me and cries for him too .

Ditebogo: (laughs) So basically your jealous sis

Sagi: (laughs) Of course.. (pretends to cry) They took my place in his heart and he took them from me .

Rose : (laughs) they took the place because your the heart.

Sagi: yeah right... Shoot ! I have to go. I'll see you girls later .

Them : Bye ..

She walked out and they continued having a chat as she ate .

At Mxolisi's house.

Mxolisi drove into the yard and parked his car on the parking space leaning back. He closed his eyes for a while and when he opened them he spotted Abigail walking to the poolside then he stepped out . He took off his jacket heading to the house and went to change into casual clothes before going out to join them . Aiden saw him from a distance and quickly stood up running to him scaring Abigail a bit as she turned to see where he was going. He picked him throwing him up then cought him for a couple of times as he laughed then walked over to Abigail kissing her cheek sitting down .

Abigail: Your early..

Mxolisi: Yeah .. where you guys planning a surprise party for me and I happen to have ruined it ?

Abigail: no ...just earlier than usual .

Mxolisi: I told you I wasn't going to spend much time at work. I went there to sort out the papers and they are ready the only thing left is for you to sign and him then is officially not yours but his .

Abigail : Thank you baby. I appreciate your help .

Mxolisi: Right .

Abigail : So are we going to Kagiso's ceremony?

Mxolisi: Are you seriously asking me that ?

Abigail: Should I ask young Aiden ? Of course I'm asking you.

Mxolisi: (scoffs with a blush) I dont know . But if were going to squash our differences I think attending gatherings and giving each other support is a great start . My relation with Breeze and Sagi is improving so I dont see why not when we all want the same thing . Peace .

Abigail: Ohk ... I'm glad to hear that , just want you to know that even if I cut my ties with the Lyons and consider them friends, Kagiso will always be my son . No matter what . I take him as mine too , I've grown to love him like a son to me .

Mxolisi: (smiling) I get that - though i dont get how when he's almost your age . He's 21 and your 29 .

Abigail: That doesn't count . He's my baby and that's all that matters . I'mma always be there for him no matter what .

Mxolisi: I get it love . Like I said , I wont stand in your way with those that make you happy and I wont chose people who you should associate yourself with just dont get too clingy to your previous life .

Abigail: Well love goes on sweetheart.

She gave him his fruit salad and took Aiden sitting with him on the towel feeding him his purity . She took her phone from the seat and dialed Sagi

At the Gallery.

Sagi walked around examining every corner of the building and smiled looking at a portrait of Rosella that was taken from the house placed in his office . She wasn't sure if he'd appreciate having her picture in his office or Ditebogo will . But then by now he must've forgiven her and moved of past the drama of last year . She turned to the other one of Ditebogo and took a picture of it - he surely outdid himself on this one . Just by looking at it and the way he drew it you can just feel the love and happiness in it . He was happy to see her the day she surprised him with her visit ,for him to express it like this .

She walked out to the painting room finding everything sorted and then went to the storeroom and everything had arrived. She walked to the show room and she couldn't be more glad to find more paintings when her phone rang in her hand .

Sagi : Hey baby .

Abigail: Hii .. how are you?

Sagi : I'm good . Actually I'm beyond good I'm happy. Can't believe you left all this beautiful paintings for a start off , they look like they worth a couple for thousands.

Abigail: (laughs) I'm glad you love them . Actually those were an offering from my artists. After I told them we're moving out and my son will be the one to take over the place they couldn't leave their old home empty so they did those for him for him to pick up really fast to find buyers .

Sagi: Wow - I can't thank them enough this is amazing. It'll mean a lot to him . Abigail thank you for not turning your back on our boy even after moving on with your life . And for not tossing us aside holding your future with your husband in your hand .

Abigail: Sagi you'll always be my sister and your kids are mine . Kagiso will always be my son too no

matter how far I go from him , no matter at what corner of the earth i am . That's why i decided not to sell the building to Breeze when he wanted to buy it for him and just let him have it then I got a new one . The building is a gift from an art loving mother . You guys will always be my family though since I'm someone else's wife I have to maintain boundaries.

Sagi: With Breeze? I get it . I also wouldn't like it if Breeze kept on going back to you , not that I have a problem- (clenched teeth) but I do . Hope that didn't sound selfish . I have to open up and talk about my feelings .

Abigail: (smiling) its ohk I get it . But men dont have to get between us girls, right ? We gatta be there for each other .

Sagi : Right ...

They laughed as she walked out and locked the doors heading to the car .

Sagi : So are you guys coming ?

Abigail: We wouldn't miss it for the world.

Sagi : Well I'm glad to hear that . Talk soon

Abigail: Bye .

She hang up getting in the car and connected the phone shutting the door driving out calling at the Sanatorium.

At the club .

Breeze signed a couple of paper works and gave them to the manager as the kids played with their toys on the fluffy math .

Manager : Cant believe ever since they were born this is for the first time I meet them . They are just like you man .

Breeze : Thanks . Look I'll talk to the suppliers to uprise the stuff so that we'll be able to raise the club back to its feet again . People who come here come to dance , to get drunk and to have fun . We cant afford to be running out of booze . And please talk - no I'll talk to them ...

Manager: Oh and I forgot to tell you that we had a problem the system function so I took some of the money last week and sorted it out .

Breeze: How much was it ?

Manager: 5k

Breeze: 5k for a system function?

Manager: Apparantly. You can look at the books and you'll see for yourself and the back statements too .

Breeze: Ooh-k.. anything else.

Manager: Yeah - We lost one of our workers , a waitress . She decided to quite and go back school. And they all wanted to find out if it was possible for the club to provide them with pro-rata payment?

Breeze: Really ?

Manager: Yeah .. I mean I get them . They are working at a high risk environment. So they asked me to ask you as the boss to provide them with pro-rata payment if in case they couldn't work full time of maybe three months if something occurs to them for their families. Quite reasonable if you ask me .

Breeze: (laughs) You mean a Compensation Fund ? Yeah I can do that . Yeah .. sure . I mean they risk their lives everyday working their butts out to make this club what it is today so why not ? I'll sign all of you.

Manager: That one . You do realize that this will assess you annually and invoice you according to your total wage bill and according to the level of risk of the environment, industry the one in which you operate?

Breeze: Are you trying to give me a legal advice? Course if you are - I think I'll rather let my lawyer do that .

Manager: J ust saying . Lastly- I know it's too

sudden to ask about this but what about Odirile's shares ?

Breeze dropped the pen and folded his hands on the table looking at him .

Breeze: What about Odirile's shares ?

Manager: (clears throat) uhm .. wanted to know what will happen to them ? Are they be-

Breeze: Well Sam , it's in my deepest condolences that I'll have to kill that sensation growing inside of you to get your hands on Odirile's shares . Well since Odirile and I were the only ones with the shares in this business, I wont have to fight for shit course in business(sarcastic) Friend, when a shareholder dies - the shareholders shares pass to his estate or his heirs . Unfortunately he didn't have any kids so in this case his shares are his sister's now . Ohk ? Is that clear ?

Sam : Yess sir , I was only asking.

Breeze: And I was only saying that as a brother and a major shareholder. (Gave him the papers) Here .. your doing a great job . Sorry I had to disappoint you like that . Have a nice day .

He stood up and carried the kids then they all walked out .

Sam : Heard you got 4 kids , is it true ?

Breeze: Yeah ...

Sam : How old is your first born ?

Breeze : Probably your age ...(walks off)

Sam : Send my greetings to the lady of the house . We miss her .

He turned around walking in reverse with a serious face when Sam's throat dried and he fixed his eye glasses turning to the bar clearing his throat then Breeze turned walking out the door .

Bartender: (laughs) You just cant keep your mouth shut can you?

Sam : (sarcastic) You just cant keep your mouth shut can you ?

He pulled the paperwork roughly walking up the stairs to the Male stripper's platform leaving the bartender laughing .

At the Lyons Mansion.

Jane sat on the math playing with her son and she could tell how bored he was course he didn't want anything and kept pushing it back to her . She stood up and went to make him food and a bottle of milk then came back to feed him but he wouldn't eat

.

Jane : Air keng ?

Air :...

Jane: Please one spoon baby .. here ..

He looked away with a long face then looked at her and she could almost see his father on him . She sighed packing his toys and took her phone on the couch dialing Breeze on facetime. He picked in his car as the kids made noise in the back .

Jane : Hii.

Breeze: Hey .. What's up ?

Jane : Air wants nothing to do with me .

Breeze: Excuse you ?

Jane : This isn't about me . What you and I had is in the past , this is about Air . Rose is the one that usually helps me with him but today she's not home , I don't know where she is and today I'm working nights hift.

Breeze: Ohk..

Jane: 'ohk I'm sending someone to pick him ' or 'ohk I'll look for Rose ' which one is it ?

Breeze: Stop being extra that's my son and I'll come get him myself. You seem to be caring a lot more about your work this days that you even forget how to treat your son . Anyway chill I'm on my way . 5 mins.

Jane: Thanks.

She called Dineo to prepare his bag and within 10 mins Breeze parked outside and she went out carrying him with his bag .

Jane: Thanks again.

Breeze: ...

He took his son and that's when he started smiling buckling him on his seat with his siblings and

closed the door taking his bag .

Breeze: Bye .

Jane: bye .

He got in his car and drove off and she walked back inside to prepare for work.

At Breezes house.

Breeze and Sagi met at the gate head to head with their cars and he smiled reversing a bit and she smiled too driving in then he followed parking next to her .

She got out and went to open the door for the kids when she saw Air . She looked at Breeze the smiled taking Air and Enzo from their seats .

Sagi: Mommies babies !

Them : Mommy !

Sagi: One and only sweethearts!

Them: Mommy!

She laughed knowing they'll just call her as Breeze took Melo and Airs back closing the door .

Sagi: Did you go get him yourself?

Breeze: Yeah ..

Sagi :

Breeze: (laughs) you need to relax baby - nothing happened and never will. I assure you .

Sagi: Fine ... I just don't feel comfortable when you ho there , that's why I prefer someone gets him or I do .

Breeze looked at her and chuckled as they walked

in the house heading upstairs to their playroom. After refreshing they walked out hand in hand heading for a therapy session.

At Jail .

Later .

He walked down the hallway in his long leather jacket and leather pants with cowboy boots and a cowboy hat on . He wore a cross necklace and a black shirt with a cowboy band. To how and when did he get the expensive necklace no one knew except for him . He went to the table and the police officer gave him his stuff in a brown paper bag as he stood by holding his waist band.

Him : You guys still have this after so long ? I'm sure my credit cards are expired and shit .

Police officer: They are but you can still renew

them . You'll get all your money if the government hasn't taken it along with your stupid one room .
Good bye.

Him : (scoffs) Hhm ! Are this cameras working?

Police: What do you expect? This is your home , you of all people should know they are working .
Why ?

Him : Because I didn't like the way you talked to me so i wanted to pull you underneath this fence right where you passed this paper bag with your tie and shove my two fingers in your fucken eyes . Count yourself lucky man .. lord have mercy. Hallelujah..

He took the paper bag looking at the camera throwing a middle finger and walked out pushing everyone he meets aside . He walked to the dustbin taking out his old phone ,wallet and car keys with his 4 skul rings then smiled revealing his gold teeth. He threw the paper bag inside and wore his rings walking away putting everything in the pockets. Once he was out of the gate he turned looking at the

officers watching from the top at the gate .

Him : Hey Martin ! Poul!

They looked at him and he raised his middle fingers smiling like a raturd with his tongue out .

Poul : Is he ohk ?

Martin : Hes always been crazy.

Poul : Damn he looks like the joker without makeup.

Martin: I know right . He's behavior too . (To him)
Fuck you too !

He laughed stupidly and irritatingly walking away throwing peace sign's before jumping clapping his legs whistling as everyone looked at him walk off with his hands in the pockets.

At Breezes house.

Around 10pm .

Breeze and Ditebogo looked at the time on the phone sitting on the high chairs laughing as the ladies went up and down covered in flour with aprons on playing A Kitchen Master game .

Ditebogo: 10 , 9 ,8 ,7

Rose : Oh my gawd ...!

Breeze: 3 2 1

Both : 0 ..

Breeze : Time is up ! Baby your cheating !

Sagi : it was just a simple strawberry on !

Ditebogo: (laughs) Your not supposed to do that !
When the time is up , you completely stop everything.

Sagi: (smiling) Come on .. just one tiny little strawberry.

Rose : (laughs) You cheated aunty still ..but its ohk .

The held hands as Breeze took the plates and went back to sit next to Ditebogo tasting Sagis dish first . They looked at each other smiling then back at her before pulling Rose's and taste it then put the forks down . It was a tough one to decide .

Breeze: I dont know .

Ditebogo: I know .. Sis your dish is a little bit pre-cooked . I think its becouse your put it in the oven with 9 mins left after mixing so many ingredients. Otherwise the flavors are good but would've hit it if it was fully cooked . Rosella darling yours too was good though it missed a little bit of flavour . But I do like both your presentation even if sis cheated .

Sagi: I didn't- (poute) J ust a strawberry...right love?

Breeze: (laughs) No no no dont try to smooth talk

me . You did cheat and your trying to cheat by sweat talking me .

Sagi :(laugh) No I'm not !

She threw him with a handful of flour laughing and the girls laughed at him and he stood up from the chair dusting himself laughing.

Breeze: (laughs) you are !

Sagi :(laughs) Your supposed to be my husband and agree with me!

Breeze: (laughs) I also have to be honest!

Sagi : (laughs) You stabber !

She threw him with more but he shielded with Ditebogo and it landed on her as she was still laughing. She quickly leaned over taking both full hands and threw at them both then suddenly it turned into a flour fight .

They all stopped at the sound of a doorbell all covered with flour looking like they've been dipped in a cement. They turned back to each other and laughed at one another unaware that they all looked funny but stopped as the bell rang again .

Breeze: I'll go check .

He sneezed dusting his face and opened the door still all smiley looking at the men in cowboy clothes facing away .

Breeze: Can I help you .

He turned still with his hands on the waist and raised his head with a smirk. Breeze's heart suddenly pounded looking at him feeling his heart pump beyond abnormal as it should . His whole body was shaking feeling his chest tighten as the heart beat even faster on the chest ready to crack

it's way out.

Him : Hello brother.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

Comment

-
-
-
-
-
-
-
-
-

[08/02, 14:06] Lynne : Chapter 100 .

At Breezes house

Breeze: James .

James : Aren't you happy to see me ?

Breeze: Did you expect a welcome home party from

me ?

James : Should I have ?

Breeze: You're the one standing on my doorstep asking if I'm happy to see you , you tell me .

James : I'll admit, (raised hands) I guess I did expect a different welcome than a sarcastic one .
Don't know if it's hatred or what that I sense in your voice but something tells me you're scared . Don't be .
I'm here under good intentions.

Breeze: Why here out of all the places you could have gone to?

James : Because you're my brother .

Breeze: I wasn't your brother when you tried to kill me ?

James looked at him as his memory unburied every last moment of torture he endured paying for the damage he's done. He turned around rubbing his lip and Breeze stepped out closing the door dusting himself.

James : I payed for that .

Breeze: if it was you , would you think it was enough?

James : ...

Breeze: I'm mean seriously you - yourself James Lyon would you think that someone that tried to kill you and went to jail for it would have had enough ?

James: Do you have to turn tables right now brother ? This is supposed to be a family reunion.

Breeze: Well over the time I learnt that it's not really the Lyon family reunion without a fight of some sort. So tell me brother .

James : I had to deal with a lot of things in there and including bastard judges and now your -

Breeze: Get out of my yard- I already got my answer.

He walked over to him with a pity face . He knew that this wasn't going to be pleasant but then he

cant afford to be thrown out at night .

J ames : You cant throw me out .

Breeze: And I also cant let you in my house where my wife and kids live . My family!

J ames : I am family!

Breeze: You made sure that you had no space in my upcoming life too many years ago J ames .
Leave .

J ames : Breeze come on man - I'm sorry... I know it's not enough but then I mean it . I have always been since the day of the fire . The days I spent in jail wondering if it could have been possible you survived. I'm so so sorry little man .

Breeze: Its too late for that dont you think !

J ames : No it's not. I know that deep down my little man is still in there behind this one standing before me I can hardly recognize and has already forgiven me . I know it's not too late. I know that I've missed a lot in your growing but then one thing I know is

your a master of forgiveness and I hope one day even in years to come you'll forgive me .

Breeze: Well if that's so little you know about me then fine - your forgiven now could you please ...!

James : Breeze please.. I have nowhere else to go . Your my only option and the only family I have left .(teary) I'm scared to go at uncles house . Breeze i have nothing . I could have gone to my house but then I dont know if it's still there . My cards are expired . I'm hungry and have been walking for a while trying to get to you . Out of all people I went straight to you . Please brother - even if it's one night- one night with you I swear I wont bother you . I'll leave tomorrow and never turn my head back . I wont harm your family . I have nothing on my back I'm clean . Please brother , I'm begging you ...

The door slid open and Sagu stepped out dusting her hair and frowned looking at James . James turned looking at her and wiped his tear quickly and smiled .

James : Glad to see your still on the family tree .

Sagi : James ? I guess

James : In the flash baby .

Breeze: How did you know about her ?

James : I'm an ancestor , it's not that hard to keep up with the outside world . How are you ?

Sagi: I dont know if I should be terrified or stay surprised. Your a lot different in pers on than on the pictures.

James: So he still has my pictures ?

Breeze: only to remind myself that theres more to life than a sociopath brother . That I have more to be thankful for than to look back at the past .

James: So means I'm your motivator of some sort (smiling) I'm satisfied. (Holds chest) one thing though brother, I'm not a sociopath- just forever happy.

Breeze: Then go be happy els ewhere course your

not welcome here! Dont you ever step your foot in my yard and if I ever see you near by I'll rip you apart .

He pulled Sagi's hand walking in and shut the door as he stood by . His heart melted looking at the door when he saw rain drops on his jacket . His eyes welled up looking up and turned looking at the gate . There was no way he's leaving until he earns that forgiveness and besides, where will he go ? He sat on the stoep as it started raining but he didn't move until thunders started . He looked at his ring then took out his wallet taking out a picture looking at it under the lights of the thunders .

Inside .

Sagi looked at Breeze take off his shirt while the girls went their different ways and they got in their bedroom. He threw the shirt on the bed and went to take a shower leaving her sitting on the bed deep in thoughts . After a while he walked over standing

infront of her smelling fresh .

Breeze: What's running in that little rock head of yours ?

Sagi: (smiling) you dont want to know that , trust me.

She stood up heading to the shower when he pulled her by her hand spinning her and threw her on the bed then got on top of her .

Breeze: What is it ?

Sagi: I need to bath .

Breeze: Tell me first ? I know something is not sitting well with you.

Sagi: Do you really want to know?

Breeze: Yeah ..

He moved off and layed next to her and they faced

the ceiling.

Sagi: Not that I'm muddling in your family drama that I wasn't even there when it started but he's still your brother . I know what he did is highly uncalled for and unforgettable but the way you handled it just doesn't also do any good .

Breeze: What are you saying ?

Sagi: That we all have rough patches in our lives. Some may be like extreme but some can be resolved. Babe you got the second chance to family the least you could do is take a shot at it not to let it take a shot at you. Don't let your past with James determine your future . He's here to get help from you course if not from you then where will he get it ? You're the first person he thought of when he got out that should count at how sorry he is .

Breeze : Are you covering for him ? Sagi you don't even know this guy !

Sagi: Yeah your right , I don't- but you do . Better than anyone course your his your blood and he

needs you . Is this how you want our kids to grow up like , to turn their backs on each other in desperate need ? Baby were trying to grow a family here , not destroy it . We have to gather every piece of it until were one unbreakable family.

Breeze: ...

Sagi: And I realized you adopted J ack's words and let them influence you - how do you think he feels according to your experience of the same words ? Being told where to get out .

Breeze: This is different. Sagi that man tried to kill me , he poured patrol on me when I was still young and set fire on the house trying to burn me alive . He deserves something far more merciless than being chased out. This is even the kindest thing he ever will get from me .

Sagi : Dont forget that his still your brother . I wont try to fix things between the two of you unless if you do . You ones tried to make peace with J ack , what stops you from doing the same thing with him ?

Breeze: He is a stone coldhearted man. I cant let

him anywhere you or anyone else I care about .

Sagi : You do realize i can take care if myself right ?

Breeze :(stands) Fine , then I'm not letting him near my kids .

He walked to his closet and she got off taking of her clothes.

Sagi : Giving him a second chance wouldn't hurt you know . All I'm saying is that I'm tired of the forever lasting drama of this family . We fight always . Doesn't it annoy you . Kagiso will be back in a week and with the little time we have we should be bringing the family together and hold hands so that we wont be endangering his life more further. He's the best thing that's ever happening to all of us and the least we could do is show appreciation by putting spears down and sort out our differences, stop fighting. His mother might not say a lot course she believes in her son and doesn't want to ruin his happiness but me as a mother I understand her

pain . That woman is in a lot of pain and just like his son she manages to hide it and no one sees that . He's your brother Breeze. Try finding it in your heart to give him a second chance and let him prove you wrong . It's not always supposed to be a fight or punishment that has to open up our way of peace and forgiveness

She walked out of his closet and went to the shower leaving him standing in the middle of the closet . He turned around and put on his tracksuits then walked out picking his car keys heading downstairs. He shook his head opening the door to a thunder and James sitting on the stoep .

Breeze: Thought you'd be gone by now .

James : Thought I told you I need you .

Breeze: Come in .

He quickly put the picture in his pocket and stood

up walking over but Breeze stood on the doorway.

Breeze: Try anything nasty I swear brother - I'll never forgive myself to what I'd do to you .

James : Again, I'm not here to ruin your life. If I do , kill me without hesitation .

He moved aside and let him walk in taking off his wet jacket and shoes putting them by the door . Breeze looked at him and led the way heading to a spare room passing by Kagis o's. James took few steps back and peaked over looking at the sleepers besides the bed and the picture on the headboard.

James: Do you guys have someone else here ?

Breeze: A lot of people stay here .

James: A Male?

Breeze: Get off that door and get in here . That room belongs to someone yours will be this one .

James:(walking over) thought theres nothing wrong in asking but ohk ...

He walked in the room looking around and smiled walking to the insuit then went back to stand infront of the mirror looking at his beard then back at Breeze.

Breeze: You definitely should clean up .

James: I know . She was a lot more specific about that saying I look different.

Breeze: She meant that you aged .

James : I dont age brother .

Breeze: (sarcastic) yeah right...

He turned walking out and James took off his clothes going to the insuit standing by the mirror . He needed to cut off his hair and beard course Wow! After a while he walked out feeling fresh with a

towel around his waist just as Breeze walked in holding clean clothes and threw them on the bed looking at him putting his hands in the pockets.

James : I'll never get used to that position but thanks for letting me in your home .

Breeze: Dont get too comfy, I'm only doing this out of the goodness of her heart if it was me - you'd still be out there . She believes that you have it in you and that you really deserve a chance, please don't prove her wrong .

James : Then I guess I should be thankful to have her as my sister in law. What happened to that other one ? The all independent woman always in suits?

Breeze: She's married.

James : Did not see that one coming so I wont ask any further. Thanks for the clothes .

Breeze: whatever- good night.

James : good night .

He walked out and he sighed putting on the boxer standing in front of the mirror. At least he still fitted . He folded the clothes nicely and packed them in the couch then went on his knees praying . After a while he got up and got in bed with a smile on his face hoping to continue their conversation tomorrow.

In Breezes room .

Breeze took off his clothes and wore pjs then got in next to Sagi who was reading a cookbook . He sighed taking it from her pinning his lips on hers sinking in with her as she cubed his face. He went down kissing her neck as she smiled .

Sagi: Wasn't that bad right ?

Breeze: Wasn't but we shouldn't be too ignorant let's just hold our breaths.

Sagi: Its good that at least you didn't let him sleep

out when he can have a-

Breeze: Shhh ... enough about James for the night, let me take care of you now .

He winked at her before pulling her nightdress up leaving wet kisses slowly to her bellybutton then to her abdomen as his hands pulled out her panties. She held her breath as he slowly separated her legs and looked at her before working his magic on her when she gasped raising her lower back moaning . The feeling was too good she held his head deep moaning his name feeling her body travel to distances and her head clearing .

The next day .

James got out of his room rubbing the down on his face and hands. It felt good to be able to take a shower now and then when you like unlike in jail. He stopped by Kagiso's room and stood by the door

staring at the picture though it wasn't clear from where he was standing but he could tell it's a boy .

Someone cleared their throat behind him and he calmly turned looking at Rosella.

James : hii .

Rose : morning, I'm sent to come check you .
Breakfast is ready downstairs.

James : oh ...thanks. Uhm ..who's room is this ?

Rose: Uncle's son .

James : oh ...

He walked downstairs with her and went to sit around the table looking at the mouth watering breakfast.

James: Good morning.

All: Good morning..

James : how are you?

All: Fine / good

James: same here

They served their food over silence and James realised how awkward it was around the table and put his fork down folding his hands on the table looking at them .

James : ohk ..I guess the awkwardness we're all feeling its becouse I joined in . I'm James Lyon . The elder brother .

Rose : (gasped) What ?!

Ditebogo: Are you kidding ?

James : Nop .

Ditebogo: (shocked) As in like AKA thee 1st Lyon boom boom set fire on his brother then wing ring the police ? Oh my God! We're screwed right ?

Breeze: I hope not .

James : Not really. I'm not here under bad intentions. I'm just here to reconnect with my brother whom by the way seems not to be interested.

Breeze: If I wasn't I would have let you die in the cold last night .

James : all thanks to her course you wouldn't have let me in , but anyway thanks to you too brother for fitting me in inside that stone heart of yours.

Breeze: (rolled eyes)

James: So are you going to tell me your names though you seem familiar in my eyes ?

Rose : Rosella Lyon . Your partner in crime's daughter.

James : Did not see that one coming . But ohk my partner in crimes daughter , nice to finally meet you though we are going to have to work on that little stinky attitude of yours. I dont like it . Dont worry we got all the time in the world , luckily I happen to be patient so we'll deal with it course clearly Jack failed as a father like I failed as a brother . You ?

Ditebogo: I'm sure you know me , Odirile's young sister ?

James: Tebogo ?

Ditebogo: Ditebogo .

James : Damn straight I know you . You were like 3 the last time I saw you if I'm not mistaken . You do look like him in a female figure and you got his attitude too. Where is he by the way ?

They all cleared their throats drinking their drinks as two nannies walked downstairs carrying the kids . James looked at them as they put them on the baby high chairs next to Sagi and Breeze and picked an apple still staring at them .

James : Are this my niece and nephew? What are their names ?

Breeze: I thought it wasn't that hard to keep up with the outside world.

James : I said it wasn't that hard not that it was

simple. So ..

Sagi: This is Air,ENZOKUHLE and this is Melokuhle

James : And who's the other kid missing ? I realized there is a room upstairs that I'm not allowed to even look in too not to even stand by the door , I could tell that its someone that means a lot.

Breeze: Then why are you even asking when you already know it belongs to someone that means a lot?

James looked at him and sighed putting his hands together looking at Rose .

James : please the daughter of my partner in crime tell your so beloved uncle that I'm sorry and I dont know how long its gonna take for him to get it but like i said ,I'm patient. Please tell him to forgive me and just let me prove myself to be better. Secondly please use your wise words a man could use to tell him that I'm not here to destroy anything that he's

built . Thirdly ? I dont know- there's no third but I'm sure It'll be there as time goes by only if he forgives me and gives me a second chance.

Breeze looked at him before standing walking away when Enzo cried for him . He walked back and picked him from his seat then went out with him

Sagi : You can't expect him to just open his arms for you .

James: And I'm not , not sure if he ever will .

Ditebogo: (low) hope he doesn't.

James turned his head looking at her but she pretended like she didn't say anything and continued eating . After they had breakfast- they cleared the table and Ditebogo went upstairs to nurse her baby while they remained in the kitchen.

James: Can I please help with that ?

Sagi: No its ohk, I can do them don't worry .

James : so I should sit down and fold my legs ? Noo ..I think I'll just wipe the dishes when your done washing them .

Rose : Ohk ..I'll see you guys tomorrow- i got to go .

James : Why dont you wait for me and I'll accompany you? Besides I need a tour it's been a while .

Rose : Ohk .. I'll go pack up Airs stuff so we could leave .

James : Is he your child ?

Rose : No , mine is Aiden , he's at his father's. Air is my little brother .

James : Oh .. At least my boys know how to plant their seeds . Jack has a son !

They both turned continuing with what their doing and Rose went out leaving them in the kitchen when

he frowned looking at Sagi washing the dishes with a long face .

James : So - he's- not Jack's son ? Isn't it ?

Sagi: Nop .. look a lot has happened in the past years meaning the chapters of this family have been written and closed so dont try to open up old wounds within your 6hours around already.

James: But in every story there's a summary and knowing my roots - in this family theres always another chapter to be told . Of forgiveness -which apparently you guys are yet to step in to . (Pulls a dish cloth) How am I going to walk with you guys on the same pace if all of you tell me everything in riddles. Not so long I asked about Odirile and y'all ignored me . Then again about the kid that's missing and still. Now it's Air , the same thing .

Sagi: Maybe you should stop trying so hard to fit in in just few hours here .

She wiped her hands and threw the cloth on the counter heading out leaving him stunned . He swallowed and continued washing the dishes until he was done . He walked to the dining room and found Rose with Air .

James : Shall we ...

She stood up picking his bag and they went out to her car . He saw his little brother heading behind the house when thoughts crossed his mind but eventually went there following him .

James : Breezey ..

Breeze: What?

James : I'm heading out to Jack's.

Breeze: Good . Stay there . My house is full.

James looked at him feeling his throat crack and

looked away licking his lips then back at the nicely hit they were building.

James : Who's house is that ?

Breeze: Thought you were leaving.

A moment passed with James not knowing what to say to him . He bit his lip and put his hands in the pockets.

James : Thanks for letting me stay for the night. I didn't deserve that . I was hoping maybe I'd stay with you till I get back on my feet but I was wrong - I need to be my own man . You did enough, thanks .

He looked at Enzo who was looking at him and forced a painful smile pitching his soft hand before turning around to leave then stopped.

James : I can see my presence suffocates you brother . I'm sorry that over the years you lived with the fear and trauma because of me . I really am . But you should know that being in there wasn't any easier . I told you I payed but I guess it isn't enough and you dont even care to find out how which I also understand. That place is hell in its beginning. I faced a lot more including your image hunting me all the time . You should know that I didn't do what I did on purpose but I was under an influence of anger . Ever since you were born me and Jack became nothing in the eyes of our parents . We suddenly turned into black sheeps . You were the favourite , taken everywhere they go and given everything you wished for . It hurts Breeze being left out . Especially when your a child. One day Jack came running into my room and told me that he saw a will and when I went to check , everything was under your name and nothing was going to be left for us . That day was the day they were going on a gathering at uncles house , so I went to my friend's and cried to them little did I know when they meant to help they meant to cut dad's breaks . Later

that night when I came back I and Jack pured patrol everywhere then we set fire .

He sniffed wiping his tears and turned looking at Breeze who was facing away .

James : I didn't know you were in the house brother . If I did I would have taken you out with me . I was used to them taking you everywhere they go . (Sniffed) When i heard you scream from inside i wanted to get in but the house had already cought a huge flame i couldn't come get you so i called dad and told him what i did . (Teary) By then I didn't know about the car breaks so as usual and out of fear he drove with high speed and when he stepped on the brakes the car wouldn't stop until he hit a truck by the bridge and fell into the water . I even called the police and firefighters the second dad cut the call. I handed myself over and took all the blame so Jack wont be in jail .

Breeze's eyes welled up when Enzo wiped his eyes with his little soft hand . James bit his lip trying to gather himself and looked up at the sky .

James : I couldn't bury our parents. I wasn't allowed to communicate with anyone not to even ask if you were fine . I was considered the most dangerous youngster in our community. Everyone hated me . Even in jail they heard and I was beaten now and then not forget to mention I was raped . Twice . And that's when I learned to fight back though I kept hearing your screams in my head that I'd even cry alone at night course I couldn't sleep . I went on for months until I was given sleeping pills until few months ago . So I'm sorry brother. I'm really sorry I allowed jealousy and pain take control over me . Sorry I allowed my ganster friends to deal with my issues unknowingly which robbed you your happiness. I'm sorry . I promise this is the last time you see me , I wont bother you anymore course now I can see what a lot of damage only a family member can do that I did. Ik sorry brother .

He took out his old wallet and took out the small picture he was looking at last night. He walked over to him and gave it to Enzo then started walking off .

James : Kept that with me . Good bye brother .

Breeze sighed looking at the picture his son was playing with and gently took it from him looking at his parents on it .

-
-
-
-
-
-
-
-

- .
- .
- .
- .
- .
- .

[08/02, 14:06] Lynne : Chapter 101 .

At the Lyons Mansion.

They stepped out of the car as James stared around seeing the changes in this yard . He looked at the house and he could tell it was the same one that was meant to be Breezes but then Jack took it to himself after the family fled they had .

Rose : You look surprised...

James :No - I'm just recalling. It wasn't like this the

last time I saw it .

Rose : you've been gone for a long while , a lot of things have changed dont you think ?

James : I guess .

They walked in the house and Rose led him to the dining room going check her mother upstairs finding her sleeping . She walked over and put Air on her back before putting the bag next to them and folded her hands .

Rose : Mom ?

Jane : Hhmm

Rose : I know that Air is my brother and that uncle Breeze is the father but I think now your over doing it .

Jane :(yawning) What ? Get him off so that I can sit up . What are you saying?

Rose : What I'm saying is that you overworking

yourself isn't doing any good to rebuild the family bond. You work over time dodging your consequences im sure your performance at work has dropped course your always tired yet you keep going to work . Air misses you and you giving him to his father isn't doing any good course your missing some experiences in his life .

Jane : I'm not overworking myself. I'm just doing my job as a doctor which is helping people .

Rose : Mom you have a baby . The hospital surely knows and understands that . Taking a break wouldn't hurt you even a tiny little bit and I can see your not doing this course you like but your doing it just so you could avoid aunt Sagi . Tell you what - she's past that . She's moved on and even attended sessions to work herself up . If she can do that , I believe you too can . Go seek for professional help course this isn't helping. Not to us, not to you,not to anyone . I'm heading out .

Jane: Where are you going?

Rose : I'm going to get Aiden .

She walked towards the door and remembered James then turned back looking at her carrying Air .

Rose : Oh and there someone who's in need of your help downstairs.

Jane : Isn't a bit early for guests?

Rose: not for this one course he's kinda not a guest .

She walked away and she got off picking her son and wore her shoes heading downstairs. Her joints went weak looking at James standing staring at her with his hands in the sweater . He did look a lot like his siblings one wouldn't miss it.

Jane : James?

James : Jane.. you look pale.

Jane: and you look the same . Wow - uhm ..have a sit .

James: Thanks..

They sat down and she called a maid to bring them juice then she walked away leaving them trying to figure out the last time they actually saw each other.

Jane: its been a while . So long . How are you ?

James: Not long enough. I'm ohk though I wish I had done something in there to increase my sentence even further course out here it sucks .

Jane : James you just got out - why would you wish for something like that ?

James: I guess I now realize to me life is way better in prison than to live and be surrounded by those who you consider family but they dont view you as one of them . My life was a little bit easier in there .

Jane: Being surrounded by murders and all the forbidden kinds?

James :Yeah at least then I didn't have to worry about anything and fitted however until hours ago

being put in the middle of two factions not knowing if whether i should move on or keep forcing to be forgiven. I should be happy I'm our J ane- but instead I'm being punished even more and even worse by my own brother. But anyway- those are my problems .

J ane: (sigh) well your not alone . I also did something unforgivable J ames , and I doubt Sagi will ever trust me or forgive me ever again.

J ames: ...

J ane : the thing I did kinda tore the family right in the middle when it was in a process of getting fixed . I ruined Breeze's marriage and in the process I ruined mine and that's why J ack in jail as we speak.

J ames: yeah I heard he's in there but I didn't know the reason. What did you do ?

J ane : ...

J ames : If we want this to work as a family we should at least learn to communicate. I wont judge besides I wasn't even there when it happened anyway. So what is it ?

Jane: did they tell you who's the father? His father?

James : no they all shut me off when I asked.

Jane : its Breeze. Breeze and I lost our ways some time ago and had him in the process. This caused a lot of fued leading to a divorce, cheating and death etc.

James: Care to elaborate..

Jane : Breeze and I cheated and his wives found out triggering Sagi's mental condition then Abigail also went out of road . Discovered it wasn't just a mental condition but a serious one - Psychopathy. Abigail cheated too out of pain and anger pulling someone innocent into the Lyon drama who by the way Jack somehow arranged to marry our daughter Rose . His old friend Jacob's son by the name of Mxolisi. This made Sagi go nutts .Which months before the wedding I realized I was pregnant and told him . As time went by - I felt dragged to him and went there to poke Sagi knowing her issue and she lost it heating me and I sent her to a mental prison. By then Abiagil was sent away to gather herself and to

her return she went blust and suddenly out of jealousy of Rose's marriage to Mxolisi and to have a child too she filed for divorce and spilled the beans to Jack the day I went into labor. That day they fought and Breeze almost choked the life out of Jack but then Jack found a easy way around and stabbed him making him spent days in the hospital. Uhm ... With Rose she got blind and the only person capable of saving her was Breezes son whom by the way Jack kidnapped as leverage and also sent his puppies to go get Sagi from prison . That's the day we lost a family member in an explosion saving Breezes son from the cruelty of this family . Odirile died .

James : Why would he take Sagi ?

Jane : He was planning on operating her illegally and donate the kids to some families in need of a child . Other than that - life has been going great. Actually this whole thing started the day Rose lost her best friend Nakedi . That's when everything went south for this family course she dragged her with .

James : So - Air is Breeze's son and when adding them all together he has 4 kids. Then in the process lost a wife and someone close to him like a brother. He has a mentally ill wife and a bitter baby mama while on the other hand he has to nurse his wounds of loss and childhood trauma adding with a responsibility to take care of Jack's family since its traditional to do so . Rose lost a bff and was exposed to the darkness then arranged in a marriage as a result with her aunts side-nigga and got pregnant in the process. Got blind and the rescuer was Breeze's son whom was almost killed by Jack trying to barbecue him but instead he barbecued the wrong person and that threw him in jail . Sagi was cheated on and triggered by both partners and sent to prison by a bitter baby mama which led her to her trap of losing her kids illegally. That hurts . And Jack's was being played all along that's why he reacted in such a manner . Then theres you - You tried attaching strings that aren't meant to and got a panel beating out of jealousy. Wow ... a lot has happened indeed. This people are surely in pain besides you . Did I forget to mention

one ? You haven't told me the name of the son .

Jane : His name is Kagiso. He's the chosen one of this family who bounds us together even now course if it wasn't for him Breeze would have gone to his old ways of gangsterism. Sagi would have killed him actually all of us if it wasn't for him crossing her mind. Rose would still be blind or worse she's would've killed her baby . I would still remain even more bitter and Jack would be dead by now . Abigail would be - I dont know. But at least one good would come out of it , Odirile would still be alive .

James picked his glass looking at her kiss Airs forehead and play with his hand .

Jane : I'd be long dead with this little beautiful soul in my arms right now . That's what's been happening a year ago .

James : So where is Breeze's son ?

Jane : Hes initiating . He's gifted.

James: Oh ..that's good . Woo ..wow .

Jane : yeah ..wow .

He put the drink down trying to process the whole thing and he couldn't be more proud that even after the whole drama they still manage to hold hands. This shows that it's only a matter of time till they get back together as one . Even though it wasn't clear he still was proud .

James: So as you know I did some horrible thing to your baby daddy- I'm homeless .

Jane : No your not - (smiling) this was once your home and will always be . You can stay here for as long as you want .

James: (smiling) Thanks a lot . And one last thing - can you help me with job hunting, even if its cleaning toilets or whatever just to get busy and earn something of my own. Please

Jane: Your brother owns a club why dont you ask him to help ?

James : him and I don't see eye to eye- at least not now .

Jane : ohk ...let me get my keys and let's go sort out your life . It's the least I can do after the whole about "me" thing I created in this family.

James : you don't have to pamper me I can do that myself.

Jane: I'm bored so its best I spent my time on something worth it than ruining lives .

At Mxolisi's house.

Rose pressed the door bell and stepped back as the door unlocked then Abigail stepped out covered in icecream.

Rose : I shouldn't ask should I ?

Abigail: Please dont .

They laughed and she stepped aside letting her in finding Mxolisi taking pictures of him while he ate the icecream covered with it on his face laughing. She smiled seating on the couch and Abigail brought her a glass of juice.

Rose :(smiling) Mxolisi do want to kill my kid with sweat stuff?

Mxolisi: He cried for it what would I have done . I told him that he wont luck anything as long as daddy is alive and well .

Rose : He's a child he didn't even get that promise please limit the sweats . Auntie please..

Abigail: When I talk it's as if I'm - I'm - im not heard .

She put her hand on her mouth and ran off to the bathroom quickly shoving her head into the toilet throwing up . Rose stood up in a hurry from the

chair and followed her finding her vomiting then slowly rubbed her back as Mxolisi stood by carrying Aiden .

Mxolisi: Baby are you ok ?

Rose : has she been throwing up recently?

Mxolisi: Yeah , she'd say she feel nausea and run off to vomit. This is getting serious and she doesn't want to go to for a check up .

Rose : Nausea ?

Abigail: (gasped) yep ..

She got up and went to rinse her mouth then washed her face looking at herself on the mirror with Rose standing by with a smirk on .

Abigail: What ?

Rose: Isn't this what you've been praying for ?

Abigail: Praying for what ?

Rose : (smiling) Your pregnant.

Abigail : I cant conceive, I made peace with that .
This is just a regular sickness it'll pass .

Rose : Well God works miracles. What's the best way to find out than a check up ?

She folded her hands with a naughty smile while Mxolisi held himself not to show how happy he was to hear that . Abigail turned looking at her and shook her head heading out leaving them .

Mxolisi: And the mood ?

Rose: Totally normal. Pregnancy hormones. Your going to be a father of two . (Smiling)
Congratulations.

Mxolisi: I dont want to hold my breath , but thank you.

Rose : Oh come on ...dont tell me you both lost

hope .

Mxolisi: I didn't- she did .

Abigail: (walking over) Whatever..

She walked past the and Rose took off Aiden's clothes and bathed him . Within minutes she was done and dressed him and they all left in different cars since Rose was heading home and they headed to the hospital.

At Breezes house

Breeze read the third line on his laptop for the seventh time and even if it was easy to read and understand to him it didn't thinking of what James said to him . He shut the laptop looking at the kids playing around next to his table and rubbed his face . His son was coming back and Sagi was right - he doesn't need to be dealing with any drama but to enjoy his break free. Surely being there us not nice

either. He picked his phone but then realized he didn't have a phone . He sighed dialing Rose just as Saji walked in all smiley .

Breeze: And then ...

Sagi: Good news . The sanitarium agreed to let Bonolo come celebrate with us . Isn't is amazing that finally we'll get together ? And please dont forget to invite J ames and - 'her' .

Breeze: That's great ..I was about to call .

Sagi: Well then please when your done hit me with good news .

Breeze: You look happy. (Smiling)

Sagi: That's because I'm happy ...dont forget to send someone to go get Kagiso's mother. We need to sort out some things with her ,your uncles will be here for that in mins .

Breeze: (frowned) You called them ?

Sagi: Yeah ..

She picked the kids and walked out with them as he chuckled dialing Rose .

At the hospital.

Abigail looked at the two red lines on the pregnancy test and gave it to Mxolisi who smiled at her but she had a straight face as the doctor sat by .

Abigail : What ?

Mxolisi: Shouldn't you be happy ?

Abigail: This things are not 100% accurate last wait for the other one.

Doctor: Well there's only one way to be surely sure , please lay on the bed and pull up your shirt .

She stood up and went to lay on the bed pulling her

shirt and the doctor wore gloves before applying a gel on her and started scanning her smiling .

Abigail's heart raced as her smile built up pulling Mxolisi's hand

Abigail : (teary) are you serious ?

Doctor: Mmh hmm . It looks like 11 weeks .

Abigail: (crying) oh my God..

Mxolisi stood up from the chair and hugged her as she cried tears of joy while the doctor stood by admiring .

.

.

.

.

.

- .
- .
- .
- .

[08/02, 14:23] Lynne : Chapter 102 .

At the hospital.

After her check up - they walked out of the hospital holding hands with priceless smiles on their faces . It was indeed an amazing day to them . Blessed.

They walked towards the car when her phone rang in Mxolisi's hand .

Mxolisi: Its Sagi .

Abigail: You can answer it .

Mxolisi: But your here , why dont you ?

Abigail: (smiling) I'll explode and I dont want to -

not yet . I want it to be a surprise , maybe at the welcome home party of Kagiso.

Mxolisi: You seem too excited. Makes me happy (smiling and answered) Hey Sagi.

Sagi: Hii ...how are you ?

Mxolisi: Amazing. Yourself?

Sagi: Epic . Look - before you give me excuses which by the way I'm not in the mood for , I'm inviting you guys on a treaty dinner. I think there are a lot of things that we need to put on the table over a meal or drinks. Things that we never had a chance or afraid to talk about .

Mxolisi: I thought we're cool ?

Sagi: We are , but I just need you guys to get here .

Mxolisi i consider my friends as my family so you being here at this dinner where we all pour out our heart and our feelings might also clear the slate and let us start afresh. Please ...

Mxolisi: I'll pass this to Abigail and we'll see .

Sagi: I want you here please , I'm begging you . If

not then at least for me . For my sake . You know my status .

Mxolisi: Are you guilt trapping me ?

Sagi: Depends on how you take it . Love you .

She hang up and he smiled looking at Abigail who was holding her hand smiling.

Abigail : She's sweet isn't she ?

Mxolisi: (smiling) And manipulative too .. she invited us on some sort of a peace treaty dinner . She thinks this is the way for us to put everything out in the air and sort it out for us to move on on clean slates . Are we going?

Abigail: She has always been a darling- I also feel like the whole fued is just too much holding grudges and plotting each others pain . I think we should go and maybe talk things through with each other and find an easy route forward. (Hugged him) That's what Odirile is hopefully wishing for . To see

us united as one .

Mxolisi: (wrapped her kissing her head) Your right.
Let's go get ready then .

They walked to the car and drove off .

At the mall .

James and Jane walked out of the Bank as he carried his nephew looking at his new credit card . It was a bit weird to him after so long having this piece of plastic in his hand as an easy access to his money in the bank . He smiled putting it in his pocket throwing Air up in the Air as he laughed and so did they .

James : (smiling) He's a fun kid . I'm sure babysitting him is not that hard .

Jane : It isn't..at least that's what they say .

James : They ? Your the mother ..

Jane : I am - just that recently I've been avoiding my problems including him . So I missed a lot in the short period of time away from him and I guess it's safe to call me a bad mother .

James : A bad mother?

Jane : Yeah .. i mean - that's what i am right? Dont tell me that thought didn't cross your mind ?

James : Actually it didn't. I just think your going through a lot of distress which is why you've been absent in his life . I dont know how long it's been and definitely not what love can make one do but I heard it does a huge mess . Some of the guys are in cuffs course of it so I guess you should be grateful that you didn't do anything stupid enough to land you in there leaving your kids behind . Sometimes it's good to avoid conflict course one might end up getting hurt or worse ,so to me it's the right decision or like you said she'd have killed you leaving Rose and Air motherless .

Jane : But it's also bad - I'm lonely. I'm depressed

and all . I miss a lot in my life. My husband is in jail and I cant even bring myself to go visit him course I'm not sure if he'll even want to see me . My daughter thinks im selfish and self-centered. Inconsiderate. Sagi - the best thing that's ever happened to this family and everyone's favorite is patiently waiting for me to miss a step and separate my head from my neck . Abigail doesn't even talk to me . Breeze looks at me over the shoulder . Kagiso I'm sure hates me too cause I'm the reason why he almost got killed sending him to go get Rose then got kidnapped. (Teary) Is there anyone who isn't waiting for my down break ? !

James : Yeah ..

Jane : And who's that ?

James : Everyone you mentioned.

Jane :(scoff) I just told you they hate me .

James: Hate is a huge word . Their just angry and patiently waiting for your I'm sorry. Just to hear two words coming out of your mouth which you also should mean from the bottom of your heart . I dont

really know Sagi but she seems like a really nice person . Understanding too . She understood me though I think it takes a lot of convincing and she's not really trusting so you gatta prove yourself like I'm willing to . So I guess we can both work on winning her heart.

Jane : I doubt.

James: R500 . That's a bet . Anyway thanks for the help , I really appreciate it . Now what's left is for me to find where I'll rent and a piece job.

Jane : Why dont you just talk to your brother ?

James : I don't want to push it . He has enough already on his plate .

Her phone rang in her bag and she took it out when her heart skipped looking at Sagis call . She showed it to James and he smiled walking to the car giving air his milk bottle.

Jane : Hello

Sagi : Hii .. how are you ?

Jane : I'm good. You?

Sagi : I'm fine . Look I was just calling to invite you on a family dinner. I hope you dont have plans - I'll be glad to see you here .

Jane : "Gald " you say ?

Sagi : I guess I did. Heard your also overworking yourself so I thought what's the best way for a hardworking doctor to relax ones in months? A dinner with family who adore her and appreciate her . Make sure you bring James - that's if he's with you .

Jane :(scared) Are you ohk ?

Sagi : I'm perfectly fine. J ust want us to clear some unresolved issues. Please be here .

She hang up leaving her hanging with a racing heart and a dry throat. Thoughts crossed her mind as she thought of her capabilities . She swallowed walking over with shaking knees, so this is how it

ends for her - over dinner then wake up dead . She got in the car and turned looking at her son in the back and back at James who looked at her terrified face .

James : Are you alright?

Jane : I think I'm reaching my end line . By tomorrow I think I'd be dead if not sick somehow.

James : ...

Jane : She just invited us to dinner with a clear voice. I have a feeling this might go south.

James : There's only one way to find out .

Later that day.

At Breezes house .

Sagi and Ditebogo prepared the table when the

elders walked in making noise laughing just as Breeze walked downstairs and for once in a lifetime wearing something different from black . A white shirt with a blue Jean, socks and sleepers meeting the elders greeting them .

Lyon: How are you my son ?

Breeze : I'm good uncle .

Aunt : I can see that , you even changed your closet .
Now that's a real way forward my boy .

They laughed hugging when the door bell rang and Breeze excused himself to open the door to James carrying Air and Jane by his side . It was awkward seeing them like this cause in his mind he pictured them as a couple but then hey it's non of his business. He smiled as Air waved his hands and he took him stepping aside for them to come in when car lights bounced on him . He watched as Mxolisi got out of the car to open her door and she got out before shutting it . If that's not perfect then we don't

know what it is cause it's the little things that matter to a woman . They walked over holding a bottle of red wine and a cake greeting him with hugs.

Mxolisi: What's up ?

Breeze : Nothing much . Oh and I need us to discuss something . It's business related but we can always discuss it. Hey love .

Abigail: Hey babe . Where are my kids ? Bring my first boy here .(takes Air)

They followed her inside finding everyone around the table besides Sagi and Ditebogo. They sat down joining in the conversation and Jane stood up going into the kitchen finding them missing hello with one bowl.

Jane : Hii..

Them : Hello .

Jane : Need any help ?

Sagi : yeah sure .. help us carry that to the table please. Thank you .

They walked back to the filled table and put everything on the table before sitting down as the kids played on the floor besides baby Odirile who was sleeping in his baby cot next to his mother . They heard someone rushing in and turned to Rose carrying Aiden and a plastic in her hand .

Lyon : Your latemy girl .

Rose : (smiling) I'm so sorry mogolo . It will never happen again .

Lyon: it better not cause its rude .

Rose : I swear ...

She out Aiden next to the other kids and gave them toys before going to put the icecream in the

refrigerator then came back to sit next to Abigail. Everyone passed the dishes to one another serving themselves when again the door bell rang . Breeze bit his lip as his heart pounded and stood up going to open the door .

Breeze: Mrs ..

Veronica: (smiling) No need for formality . Call me Veronica. Sorry I didn't bring anything, but I promise I will bring something next time .

Breeze: (smiling) No problem. Come on in. We were just about to eat .

He stepped aside for her to walk in then closed the door behind them walking to the table . Her knees shook looking at the filled table and the kids on the math playing. To her surprise they all turned with smiles and Jane even called her to sit next to her then joined in . The whole dinner was filled with happiness and Veronica got to experience what gets her son glued to this people . It was for the first

time being invited to a dinner and this reached her expectations. Everyone was just happy .

After they were done eating , the elders called Veronica aside and went to the dinning room to go talk to her leaving Breeze with a pounding heart . The girls stood up clearing the table leaving Mxolisi and Breeze on the table meanwhile Rose and Ditebogo came back to take the kids upstairs to sleep .

Mxolisi: Are you good ?

Breeze : I don't know man . That woman has been through a lot and I've taken her son from her when she needs him the most . I only met her once and never stepped in her yard to make up a conversation and talk about her son but instead put his life in danger. She felt that .

Mxolisi: She seems understanding just like her son. I'm sure Kagiso wouldn't leave his mother hanging without telling her what's happening around here in his life. Damn straight you were wrong not to do

this earlier but the woman seems cool and from my knowledge a mother would do anything just to see her son happy. She sacrificed her happiness which is him and let her come be happy with you here cause he loves you all .

Breeze: I just hope when they talk to her they don't mess it up making her take my boy away from me . I love that boy man . After his return I want nothing separating us - not even this chosen thing . I'll lock the door with chains and 7 locks .

Mxolisi: (laughs) He's gifted Breeze, do you even think you'll be able to lock him in cause if they want him he'll just find a way out and you'll never find him unless they are done . You won't even hear him walk out just like they didn't even when they were wide awake .

Breeze : Screw Nakedi .

Mxolisi: Except this time it wasn't Nakedi but his ancestors. Dont worry - Kagiso is your son and nothing is gonna change that . Even though they don't impress her in there , you know you and

Kagiso will always be a son and a father .

Breeze: I wish I was in there to -

Aunt : Breeze ! Come in here !

Breeze: (low) God damnit!

Mxolisi: (laughs) you'll be fine .

He stood up rubbing his sweating hands and went to the dinning room finding the air in here not so smooth . He went to sit on an empty sit rubbing his hands as the conversation took off .

Outside- James looked up in the sky thinking of his future but nothing came to mind . He looked around his little brothers yard and sat down on the stoop with a sinking heart. This wasn't supposed to be like this . He hates feeling like this and sure as hell hurts.

The door slid open and Rose put her hands in her hoodie walking over and sat next to him . She turned to him and then looked at the stars in the sky

Rose : Why are you out here alone?

James : Thinking. Doing a lot of thinking at the same time. Shouldn't you be upstairs nursing the kids ?

Rose: I should be but the I realized that one person went missing right after dinner and here you are . Tell me - what's it that's bothering you so bad making you exclude yourself from the rest of us ? This was supposed to bring us together.

James : Well Rosella , my place in this family has been erased from existence I'm just here as a clone. Your uncle hates me and the only reason I here its because Sagi invited me here . So theres no way I can fit in .

Rose: Your still family. The Blood running through his veins is the same as the one running through yours and that's what will always make you a Lyon. Your his brother, he's just angry . You still have a place in the family.

James: ...

Rose : So what were you thinking about?

James: Life its self.

Rose: Care to explain..

James : Well my dear niece - my life is on hold with no one and nowhere to call home. I got nothing of my own only the clothes I'm given and 30 000 R in my account and it sucks !

Rose: Where did you get 30k ? You just got out .

James : I used to be a Lyon and they used to save me some money for just in case until the fire . So with it I have to think 3 times or else I'll end up with nothing . I'm going to look for a place to stay and a job . Even though its not a permanent, at least to keep me busy .

Rose : Oh . Then why dont you ask Ditebogo if you could crush in at her house cause no one stays there since she moved here . I'm sure she wont mind and besides the yard needs someone to look after it or uncle OD will toss and turn cause he loved

his place and expects it to be taken care off . As for a job - my dad's company is running itself and it's under my name as the one to benefit it so you could uhm take over . For now if you d-

James : (smiling) I will .. I'll be glad too . That's if the employees wont fight against it . Who are the shareholders ?

Rose: Dad made sure that he is the one with every single share in that company and worked hard for it until it grew up to be where it is without help . It makes a lot of money and that's what makes it the root of our family then uncle Breeze's club. Club 808 where the fun never ends.

James: So the family runs two big businesses? I'm impressed!

Rose: Yeah ..but soon it'll be three adding to a Gallery. Uncles son loves art and he's really good at it .

James : Wow ..

Rose : yeah .. so we are never financially stranded but we love making a whole lot of money just to add

cherries on top . Sometimes youd swear it's the money that makes us fight this much course in every rich family theres always something that will blow your brains .

He pulled her into a side hug kissing her head as she smiled.

James : Your so generous . Thank you little Jack.

Rose: (smiling)welcome home uncle .

In the kitchen- Sagi ,Jane and Abigail washed the dishes over silence until it stuck on Jane's throat. He stopped washing the dishes and turned to them .

Jane: I'm sorry.

They both looked at her and she swallowed fiddling with her fingers . Thus was even more difficult than

she expected.

Jane: I'm sorry . What I did was wrong and totally uncalled for. I broke your marriage and had a son with your husband making everything even worse plus sending you away . I was selfish and totally evil. I thought of no one else's feelings but mine.

Abigail: Why did you do it ?

Jane : I was in pain and vulnerable. Breeze was there for me when no one else was .

Sagi : We were there for you !

Jane : I'm sorry! At least that's what I thought - that no one felt the pain I was in as a mother watching my daughter drifting away . I was completely wrong to let what Breeze and I did happen cause my pain is no excuse to what we did . I broke your marriage and at the same time broke mine. My life is a mess as it is cause now I'm avoiding everything coming my way out of shame . I'm really sorry Sagi . I know how much you trusted me and I blew that up . I know how much you cared and was willing to work

past that but I also blew that . I'm truly sorry and if theres anything I deserve from you - then I'll take it if it'll make you forgive me .

Abigail turned around to rinse 4 more plates when she stopped biting her lip . She turned back to them and sighed balancing herself with the counter.

Abigail: I'm sorry too .

Them: ...

Abigail: If it hadn't been for me letting the pain and jealousy take control you wouldn't have been through the trauma you've been through . I let jealousy consume me for not being the one to carry Breeze's child and went to blust in front of Jack . He wouldn't have known if it wasn't for me . Odirile would still be alive. I'm so sorry Sagi . Please forgive me .

Sagi looked at them with a neutral face holding a

dishcloth in her hand and a plate . She could tell they mean it from the bottom of their hearts and that's what she was fishing for - a simple I'm sorry coming out of their mouths . She smiled opening her arms for a group hug and they smiled hugging her and they laughed feeling their hearts being lifted the heavy weight.

In the dinning room- Veronica wiped her tears looking at Breeze facing down rubbing his hands and then looked at her . More tears flowed out of her eyes and then stood up going to Breeze. She gave him her hands and helped him stand hugging him .

Breeze: I'm so sorry it took me so long . I really love your son and take him as my own . I promise I'll bring no more danger to his life and protect him in every way a father can . I'm willing to do whatever it takes to be a part of his life .

Veronica: (crying) I'm also glad that he met you . A

man that loves him as his own and cares less about his background. My son has been through a lot in that area but everytime he comes here I could feel it in me that he's happy even on the phone . He talks about you when he's with me and doesn't want to spend more time there cause it bears a lot of pain he went through . (Pulled back) I'm also glad that you found the courage to meet me up with your uncles to show me how determined you are to be his father. I cant thank you enough for being a father figure in his life - what he's always wanted. For giving him a family he's always wanted and a place to call home. Know that I expect nothing more but for you to give him the love you promised to give him . He's my only son and there only thing that makes me want to live on .

Breeze: I wont let you down Veronica.

Veronica: Sure you wont .

They hugged once again and the elders stood up to welcome her too into the family hugging her . After

a while Breeze excused himself going to the dining room finding Mxolisi pressing his phone .

Mxolisi: Your smiling too much than you should . I guess it went well .

Breeze: Even better . Wheres J ames ?

Mxolisi: He's outside if I'm not mistaken. I saw Rose walking out maybe she's with him . You said you want us to talk about business. What is it ?

Breeze: Oh yeah... I'll send everything to you via email and you'll go through it . It's about the club and the workers complains about the environment they work in . So they asked for compensations . Just in case. I want you to look into it and tell me if I set everything alright.

Mxolisi: ohk ..

He walked away and went outside finding J ames and Rose sitting on the stoep . They turned looking at him and Rose stood up excusing herself and

went inside leaving them to have a chat . Breeze sighed walking over and sat next to him .

Breeze: Why are you out here ?

James : Needed some air . Why ?

Breeze: Just asking .

They sat in silence for a while looking at wherever their eyes land at . It was even awkward but good to be on each other's side like this .

Breeze: I'm sorry about the way I talked to you . That was rude and definitely not welcoming.

James : You said that out of care for your family and want to protect them from everything that might try to hurt you . I understand Breezy .

Breeze: But your family too . The least I could have done is let you be and enjoy your first day out and dont throw everything in your plate .

James : I understand. Its ohk little man . I kind of deserved it . I mean it my fault that everything is happening right now and I wont hold you against anything .

Breeze: And that's why I also dont want to hold you against it either.

James turned looking at him .

Breeze: Yeah ... my son is coming back and has been through a lot . Heart break , trauma and went in and out of hospitals cause of this family drama . I dont wish to see him again in that state cause he has that thing of bottling things up in him and when he explodes he turns murderous. All he wishes for is peace in his life and a happy family .

James: ...

Breeze: I'm willing to forgive you brother. I cant keep holding on to the past and let it determine our future as family . I want us to start on a clean slate

with open hearts and minds. I'm also willing to forgive Jack for what he did. I'm tired of fighting , of anger and pain . What I need is good and happiness in my life . I forgive you James. You my brother and will always be my brother . No matter what parallel universe I wish to live in - nothing will change that.

A tear ran out of James eye and he wiped it looking away . He stood up and gave Breeze his hand and they bro hugged for the whole 3 mins .

James : thank you .

A while later - they all gather in the dinning room . Jane and Sagi walked with juice and glasses putting them on the table pouring for each. The elders went to bed leaving them behind and they all raised their glasses .

Sagi : As a family we went through our upside down just like any regular family . We had our downbreaks and extreme breaks . We fought and lost in the proces but still we managed to get back together .Here's to our time together, welcoming and forgiveness dinner . For us to keep on holding hands as we are going to take new steps to our lives as one. To always be there and support each other . To love and to protect . To not turn our backs and no more fighting. Heres to family !

All : To Family !

*

*

*

*

*

*

*

*

*

A week later

*

*(sorry if I miss anything, I know less on welcoming a healer home)

*

*

*

*

*

At the graveyards.

Early in the morning .

Veronica and the elders bowed before the grave talking to their fallen ones asking for success and for life filled with blessings . For protection and

more love . For them to guide their son as he'll be returning home back to them again after being away for months to fulfill their wish.

After they were done they got up and left with happy faces to go prepare for the welcoming .

At Breezes house.

The yard was filled with a lot of people they all as a family could hardly recognize. Some they've never seen before yet they brought their hands to help while some claimed to be family . Everyone was going up and down . Big pots and fire plus goats and a cow just everything for a perfect celebration.

The men handled the fire and everything that was too heavy for woman while woman cooked and did woman duties at a ceremony.

At the gate - Rosella drove further with Bonolo on the other side smiling so hard that her cheeks

hurt . She went to park in the neighbors yard and they got out taking her bag heading there .

Bonolo : I cant wait to see him . It's been so long .

Rose : I know right. Let's hope he hasn't burned up like most do .

Bonolo: (smiling) let's do hope that . I'm sure Ditebogo can't even hold on to see him - her heart must be racing .

Rose : She sure cant wait either .

They walked into the yard and went to the house heading upstairs to their room passing by people.

Ditebogo's heart skipped hearing the door open and tossed looking at them then smiled. She put her breast in her bra and got up for a group hug laughing.

Ditebogo: Oh my God - I missed you .

Bonolo : I missed you too . Your glowing !

Ditebogo: So are you - come over ..tell me what's been happening in there .

They went to sit down and Bonolo gasped looking at baby Odirile. He looked just like his father with those long lashes and thick eyebrows. His eyes were even bright and light brown as if the sun was glowing in them while he sucked on his fist . You'd swear he was a coloured with curly hair .

Bonolo: (teary) Oh my God...its like looking at him in a baby form . He's super cute can I hold him ?

Ditebogo: (smiling) you dont have to ask .

She gently picked him up and stood up rocking him with a priceless smile on her face . The baby was so cute . One will think he was a doll or something.

Bonolo: Hello baby - I'm your fairy God mother . My name is Bonolo. What his name ?

Rose:(laughs) Fairy God mother ?

Ditebogo: His name is Odirile. After Odirile.

Her smile dissolved into a frown as tears build up looking at baby Odirile. He held him tighter to her chest as tears rolled down and walked over to sit in between Ditebogo and Rose

Bonolo: (smiling) it's a beautiful name . Im glad his name is carried on .

They hugged when they heard car bells outside approaching when their hearts skipped . They looked at one another and Rose stood up then Bonolo all excited .

Bonolo: Aren't you coming ?

Ditebogo: I cant go out with the baby. I'll stay in here surely I'll see him .

Bonolo: Or maybe your scared to see him after so long?

Ditebogo: I guess that counts but I cant go out with him .

Rose : Then we'll bring him to you .

They gave him the baby and kissed her forehead exiting the room . She layed him down and stood up going to the bathroom to pee then washed her hands when she was done . The door slid open an Veronica walked in all smiley holding a plate full of food and went to put it besides the bed and picked her grandson as Ditebogo walked over and sat on the bed picking her plate .

Ditebogo: thank you ma .

Veronica: you welcome my darling. I just came here to check how you both are doing first . Did you

feed him ?

Ditebogo: yeah he ate before I breastfeed him .

Veronica: good ... let me go check on your boyfriend and I'll come back right away after I'm done there .

Ditebogo: ohk..

She put the baby down and walked out leaving her to eat . She became anxious and stood up going to stand by the window looking outside.

Meanwhile the woman ululated holding brooms , pots and everything they could carry while dancing as Kagiso stepped out wearing exactly what traditional healers wear while barefoot. It was really great to be home seeing all this people around though his heart was aching to see his mother and the rest of his family . Breeze walked by his side smiling and he couldn't help but laugh .

Breeze: Why are you laughing?

Kagiso: I guess I'm just too excited. I'm happy to see you .

Breeze: Some here son .

Vernon came rushing over and tears blurred her sight looking at her son and couldn't help but rush over for a warm hug crying. There's nothing more warming than a mother's hug . He rapped his hands around her body with a tear escaping his eye while she broke down crying holding him tight .

Veronica: (crying)Thank God!

Kagiso: I'm never leaving again mama .

They broke the hug and she stood back as they brought a goat over . The goat was slaughtered as a sign to show that he has cleansed himself. Though it was a bit touching to see it being slaughtered like that but it had to happen anyway .

Other initiates and the initiator walked over to him

and took the goat while his family from his father's side he hardly even knew came over getting ready to leave to the river . They got into the cars and Veronica went to ride with Breeze and others as they drove out .

Breeze: Is it necessary to go to the river?

Veronica: Yeah ...it is believed that the ancestors live close to the rivers and seas .

Breeze: And so many goats ?

Veronica: Kagiso will have to slaughter as many animals course it's the most important part of the ceremony. For those that died in the sea and those that died on the road for blessings . Cows too ..it'll depend on how many they want but usual usually its 1 .

Breeze: You make it sound like it'll take more than a day .

Veronica: Maybe about 5 days and the sixth day will be final .

Breeze: So we're taking him there to ask for blessing and all then we go home and come back again ? It seems like a lot of work..

Veronica: No he'll be sleeping there . Then on the third day he'll go to the sea and spend 2 nights there.

Breeze: Ahgg ! This thing will drown my boy I swear to God!

Veronica smiled as he drove along the rocky road. He was hoping to spend the day with him but then now he's forced to drive him away early this morning after his return.

.
. .
. .
. .

On the sixth day .

Kagiso danced with other initiates in the middle of the yard under the hot blazing sun . He hasn't gotten a chance to breath in the past couple of days and he was so exhausted he had no choice. He kept telling himself that it was finally over to keep him going .

After dancing he went to sit under the tend on the traditional math when again he was called before he could even relax to slaughter another animal .

After the slaughtering his uncle from her father's side walked over to him and went on his knees giving him a stick made of an ox tail that he slaughtered and white was decorated with beads . Veronica walked over holding a dry leopard skin putting it on his shoulder and bowed walking away as everyone stood by watching while the initiates sang .

He was officially an initiator , allowed to train initiates and begin to practice as a sangoma.

He stood up and went to dance again all alone this

time as everyone cheered and all .

A while later - Bonolo and Rose walked over to him and jumped in his arms laughing and he held them tight swinging them though they were a bit heavy for him .

Kagiso : Damn y'all gained weight!

Bonolo : And your still strong . Were you guys lifting over there .

Kagiso : Not really... but then I've always been strong .

Rose : Makhosi (bows clapping hands playfully)

Kagiso: (laughs) Would stop it ..

Rose : come on , your officially a traditional healer . So we have to treat you with respect and according to your status .

Kagiso: Hey ..me being a sangoma changes nothing ohk . I'm still the same Kagiso you all know this is

just a filter . I'm the guy you met with nothing and still am .

Sagi: (walks over) Except we cant pretend like it doesn't matter like you say ..(hugged him) Welcome home sonny .

Kagiso: (smiling) Thank you ..

Abigail : what about me ? I didn't get a hug .

Kagiso : That's because your standing 16 feets away from me !

They all laughed as she walked over and hugged him . Breeze , James and Mxolisi walked over to them and bro hugged him as the ladies stood by watching.

James : So this is the son .

Breeze: Yeap ..

James : My name is James . Your uncle.

Kagiso: James ?

Breeze : Yeah ...we have a lot to catch up on boy .
But first you need to go check up on your air
upstairs.

Kagiso: (heart skipped) Excuse me , my what ?

They all looked at him surprised by his neutral
sudden face . Breeze bit his lip looking at him and
sighed .

Breeze: Boy you better go upstairs before I assume
what I think is true and trust me it wont be nice after
that .

Kagiso frowned looking at all of them and walked
into the house jogging up as the things he wore
made noise all the way upstairs. His heart raced
with ever step closer until he reached the door and
sighed slightly opening the door .

Ditebogo quickly stood up from the couch looking
at him as her heart pounded so hard on his chest.

He looked at her and walked to the bed when his eyes popped looking at the baby sleeping. It was like he was looking at himself as a baby and crept him out but eventually a smile pulled his cheeks . The smile brought tears of joy and then a laughter of happiness and excitement looking at Ditebogo.

Kagiso : That's me right there .

Ditebogo: (smiling) Your not mad ?

Kagiso: Are you kidding me ? Why would I be mad ?come here

She walked over hugging him tightly and he kissed her head . She raised her head looking at him when he pinned his lips on hers kissing her . Butterflies raised in her stomach as chills ran down her spine. It's been so long since she felt like this . He broke the kiss and hugged her looking at his son .

Ditebogo: You want me to wake him ?

Kagiso: No ..let him sleep , I'll see him when he wakes up . Besides I smell sweat . What his name ?

Ditebogo: Odirile. I named him after my brother since no name came into my mind but that . You can always change it if you dont like it .

Kagiso: I love it. (Looks at him) he looks just like me ! This is amazingly creepy .

They laughed still hugging . He looked at him then back at her and smiled .

Kagiso: Sorry I wasn't there when you gave birth to our son . I promise I will never be absent in his life and I'll be the best father to him .

Ditebogo : I know you will .

Kagiso : And a husband to you .

She quickly raised her head looking at him and he

looked at her . She felt like her ears just betrayed her for a second and swallowed looking at his serious face.

Ditebogo: What ?

Kagiso: Marry me . I dont know how we're gonna make it happen but I got enough to provide for us in my account from the hustle and the money I received from dad . Plus I think in few months I'll be stable. Please ..

Ditebogo: (pulls back) Kagiso I do love you . And I've been waiting patiently for your return but I dont want you to marry me just because I carried your son and feel like you owe me .

Kagiso: I love you and I want to marry you.

Ditebogo : I dont want you marrying me knowing you still have feelings for other girls too .

Kagiso : What are you talking about?

Ditebogo : Do you love Rosella?

Kagiso: How is this about Rose ?

Ditebogo: You want to marry me - I know that but we cant tie the knot knowing we have lose ends . Rose is capable of doing the most and she loves you and trust me i hate the fact that I'm saying all this and I know that you love her admit it . Be honest with me .

Kagiso:

Ditebogo: You guys are meant to be together and I understand that. If your going to marry me please let it be under good terms and not an escape course I almost died for getting in between you and her.

Kagiso: What do you mean ?

Ditebogo: It doesn't matter just be honest with me . Please ..

Kagiso: I do love her but what matter is I want to be with you

Ditebogo: As much as you want to be with her - right?

Kagiso: (rubbs his face) ...

Ditebogo: (hugs him) I love you but I just cant come

in between you and her . She cares and loves you deeply like you do for her .

Kagiso: So is that a no ?

Ditebogo: Its not a yes either .

Kagiso: Your sacrificing our love for each other for her .

Ditebogo : For he both of you . I want you two to be happy.

Kagiso: How am I going to be happy without you ?!

Ditebogo:...

Kagiso: Fine I love you and I love her . I want you as much as I want her . I want to spend every second of my life just like I want to spend it with her . I tried staying away from the both of you and I cant. I tried avoiding her by all means but I couldn't as much as I couldn't when they told me to stay away .

He broke the hug and went to sit on the couch rubbing his face .

Kagiso: How about you marry me both then ?
Course Cleary I cant stay away .

Ditebogo: A polygamy? You think you can handle it ?

Kagiso: Why wouldn't I ? Please Ditebogo...I love you .

Ditebogo: Pass this to her first and find out how she feels about it and if she agrees then fine .

Kagiso: So it's like you need an approval from her to be with me .

Ditebogo: I'm not asking permission from anyone but I cant pretend like I don't care about her feelings building our family with her tears . She's meant to be with you and you know it . Despite the challenges you've been through you still love her and that ofcourse matters .

He sighed standing and bit his lip going to kiss her and walked out . Tears blurred her eyes and went to

sleep next to her son pulling him over in a hug sobbing.

In the kitchen Jane stood in the middle of the kitchen with the rest of the ladies and when Kagiso walked in they all kept quite smiling.

Kagiso: Please dont stop on my account I'm looking for Rose .

Jane : She's outside serving the food to the guests.

Kagiso: oh ..ohk thank you .

He walked out and without looking any further he spotted her giving food holding a huge tray with Bonolo passing by everyone to pick their plates . He waited for them to finish when Mxolisi and Breeze walked over to him .

Mxolisi: What are you staring at ?

Breeze: (followed his eyes) Rose of course . She my niece and I love her but her out of all people? She's gonna kill you this time .

Mxolisi: I thought you'd pick Ditebogo.

Kagiso: i tried so hard not to love her but its impossible. I can't help it . Even if she doesn't want me - the love I have still will grow multiply making it easier for her to find more ways to break my heart . But still I cant stay away . From the both of them .

Breeze: You mean -you- ohk ...

Mxolisi: I say go for it .

Breeze: But know its gonna hurt one way or another. Talking from experience but dont worry- I'll be there for canceling. If you love them and they agree on it then fine - take the step and have them as yours .

They walked past him going into the house and he stood there watching them .

Meanwhile Bonolo felt eyes on them and looked around finding Kagiso staring at them . She waved

at him and he waved back and talked to Rose looking at the guests not wanting to alarm him .

Bonolo: Hes staring .

Rose : huh ..

Bonolo: He's desperately waiting for you by the door .

Rose : We are not sure about that . He's in love with Ditebogo and he's the father of his child why would he ?

Bonolo: one way to find out . Go ...

She sighed calling a girl who passed by to help Bonolo and wiped her hands on her dress walking over to him . She wont ever get used to feeling so weak everytime she's near him .

Rose : A little birdie informed me that your staring .

Kagiso: And that birdie happened to be Bonolo ?

Rose : Not really but someone around there . An elder.

Kagiso: Well that elder better not be the one that waved at me .

Rose :(laughs) why are you staring? Its rude .

Kagiso : Can we please go upstairs to Ditebogo's room ? There's something I need to talk to you about .

Her heart pounded as the thought of if whether she told him about the poisoning or what . She swallowed as tears burned her eyes and looked back at Bonolo before walking in following him .

He opened the door for her to get in and closed the door as Ditebogo got up wiping her eyes and looked at him . Rose looked at Ditebogo and couldn't help but get down on her knees breaking and he frowned looking at her .

Rose : I'm so sorry...I didn't mean to please forgive

me . (Crying) please Kagiso..

Kagiso : What are you talking about?

Rose : (looking at Ditebogo) You didn't tell him ?

Kagiso: Tell me what ?

Rose : Nothing. ..

Kagiso: Clearly its something for you to get on your knees like this breaking down in front of me . What happened?

Ditebogo: Nothing ... we had a misunderstanding her and I but we sorted it out its nothing you should worry yourself about . Its cleared up.

Rose :(stood up) Thank you...

Kagiso: Can I please get a hint?

Ditebogo: Misunderstanding.

Kagiso: that was not it but ohk ..I hope whatever it is doesn't repeat itself. Rose do you love me ?

Rose : is that a trick question?

Kagiso: No ...

Rose : Uhm ... I...I do ... Kagiso I've always loved you ever since I layed my eyes on you on a video . Before I met you in pers on. You know that ? J ust that you've been avoiding me after the whole marriage thing and trust me I get why you wanted nothing to do with me until then . I'd also react the same or even worse . I love you . I know I hurt you and I take it all in me just please forgive me . And if you called me here to confess infront of her then fine I will . I love you and It'll always be you . I'd also understand if you and Ditebogo are dating or about to . I wish you a lot of happiness .

Ditebogo: You see- I told you .

Rose : Told him what ?

Kagiso: i love you too .

Rose : (gapsed) What ?

Kagiso: Rose I don't know if you realised it yet but I cant stay away from you . Yes you hurt me but everytime I hear your name or voice I cant control my affections . I loved you too ever since i met you . Both of you . You both have stayed in my mind even

when I had a lot to think about . My feelings for the both of you have no depth. My love for you is forever expanding inside of me and has no boundaries. It's crazy cause I never felt like this especially for two people. I'm in love with the both of you . So ... marry me . Both of you .

They looked at each other for a while as he stood by staring and then they smiled looking at him .

Rose : (smiling) Yess ! Multiple yeses!

Ditebogo: (smiling) Yesss !

They both ran into his arms hugging him tight as he breathed out with a huge smile on his face . Best welcome home ceremony ever .

He kissed both of them before hugging them when the door slid open and Bonolo walked in . She held her waist and they all looked at her .

Bonolo: Did I miss something?

Kagiso : I'll catch you guys later . (Left)

Bonolo: Why is he leaving on my account? What's going on ?

Ditebogo: He asked to marry us !

Bonolo: 'us' you mean the both of you ?

Rose : Yess !

A while later around 19h00 .

They walked out of the house he'll be working in and he smiled hugging his father and everyone else that helped . They all walked into the house leaving the guest outside and Abigail walked over to him holding papers and a pen in her hand .

Abigail : So u figured since you and I are on the same line or work and are interested in the same thing- I thought maybe it'll be best if I give you this

other than sell it when you need it the most .

Kagiso: (looked at the papers) the Gallery! ? Are you serious right now ?

Abigail: Dead serious.

He pulled her into a tight hug not knowing how to thank her and finally broke it quickly signing the papers and gave it to Mxolisi.

Mxolisi: Well ...its final . You legally own a Gallery. Congratulations!

All : Congratulations!

*

*

*

*

*

5 months later .

Everyone sat on their chairs wearing white as the family sat on the front seats admiring this lovely union . Soft music played in the background as a photographer took multiple pictures at the three of them hiding hands .

To some it was for the first time being at a polygamy wedding and they were glad to find out how it goes.

They were so beautiful in their mermaid wedding dresses that revealed all their beauty out for everyone to see . Kagiso stepped back a bit as they both held hands smiling looking at one another .

Ditebogo: Rosella Lyon .. today I take you as my sister wife . My lover , sister and best friend. I promise to love and to hold . To always be there for you . I have loved you since we were little girls and now i vow to grow old and grey with you . I love you so much you have no clue . We've been through a

lot and managed to break through I pray and know we can always fight together as one . God I've never felt so happy like I am today (teary) I vow to love you always and forever. Through sickness and in health .

Rose :(teary) oh ..im getting all weepy..

Everyone laughed and she shyly looked down smiling and Ditebogo carefully wiped the tear that escaped her eye no ruining her make up .

Rose : Ditebogo... my sister . My beloved girlfriend. Your not just the love of my life but your my life itself. You've been there for me through my hard times giving me your shoulder to cry on . You've been a sister to me when I needed one . You've always considered my feelings and cared for me even though I turned out to be a pain in the behind. Your the best thing that everyone wishes for in this this world and I consider myself lucky to be the one that got you . Today as we stand in front of everyone

and the lord - I vow to love you , to be there for you till death do us apart. Through sickness and in health. I love you so much .

They let go and hugged each other as the crowd clapped their hands . Kagiso looked at them feeling his tears and looked up making them go away then stepped over holding their hands.

Bonolo walked over with her elegant dress and gave the pastor the rings.

Paster : Can we all bow our heads and bless this three young souls rings . (Praying) Father we come before you with your children. Help them unite and give them strength and courage to fight whatever facing their way . With this rings help them to love and let their love grow higher than the mountains, deeper than the ocean . May their marriage be filled with joy and passion. For thir love to strengthen in time and to grow with age . Always be there to guide them and protect them . Amen .

Everyone: Amen .

They all opened their eyes and gave them the rings .
He held Ditebogo's hand and Rose's looking at the
both of them seeing how flooded their eyes were

Kagiso: With this rings my two lovelies - I vow to
love you . To always be the one to hold you and
make you smile for the rest of your lives . You both
mean everything to me and I cant stand another day
in this world without you guys by my side . With you
two by me I know heaven is close and you give me
strength to always fight . We have been through
bitter fights and disagreements but the best thing is
we've stood strong against any of them . I could
not ask to God for a better gift than what you are to
me . I vow to hold both y'all's hands and never let go
. To be the best husband I can be and the best
father to our kids. To make sure that every time you
close your eyes you open them to paradise . To
always and forever love you . Till death do us apart .

He slid the first ring on Ditebogo's finger and then the other at Rose as they couldn't hold in anymore and cried . Sagi walked over with Bonolo and they helped gently wipe their tears as he held their hands gently squeezing them until they calmed down as everyone smiled at them .

Ditebogo: (heavily breathed) from the moment I met you at the library- I couldn't get away from you . They tried by all means to keep us apart since you had been through a lot and I was willing to share it with you . Kagiso Mokwena I love you . Your my heart and my soul . I love you more than life itself, more than me . I'm so thankful of God for giving you to me . I feel so blessed to have you as my lover . I'm in love with everything that makes you who you are and not for a second will i wish for anything better . I'll always love you - till death do us apart.

Rose : (crying) Kagiso you and i have the most extreme history together. We got separated and

still like magnet found our way back to each other .
You've been the one that was always there for me
through darkness and pulled me out of it . The one
to help me get my eyesight back . My guardian and
till to this day where you officially become mine .
I'm in love with you and hate the fact that I love you
more than myself. Being with you drives me crazy
right now and not being with you drives me crazy.
My live for you grows in seconds . Every time I
spend with you means a lot to me . You must
biggest joy . My life and my universe . My biggest
sorrow is not being with you course without you all I
see is darkness . Your my night and shinning armor
and for that I dont ever wanna lose you. Your the
most ideal man I could ever wish to be with cause
you understand and get me unlike nobody else's .
You've been my dream and up until today you still
are . Your the one I can easily open up to . I find
comfort in you and I dont ever want to lose that . I
love you Kagiso Mokwena and I promise to be the
wife you wish me to be . To bring joy and happiness
in our home . Till death do us apart .

They held hands sliding the ring on his finger as few woman wiped their tears looking at them as some took pictures and videos . A tears escaped his eye and Rose smiled wiping it quickly and he laughed .

Pastor : I think I'm gonna cry (crowd laughed)but anyway ..With the power in me and of the one from above I now pronounce you husband and wife's.
You may kiss your brides .

He smiled pulling them both by their waists as they giggled and kissed Ditebogo first then Rose.
Everyone clapped their hands standing as they walked by on the aisle.

Breeze: you better treat each other with respect
kids !

They laughed walking past them going to take

pictures with everyone following them for a chance to take one photo with the newly wed couple .

Later after the crowd has left at Breezes house.- they all sat behind the house on the lawn while the elders where inside and put on the old videos watching them on the white sheet over drinks and strawberries but before James stood up holding Odirile's phone and went through the notes and sighed looking at them . Abigail was laying on Mxolisi's thighs while caressing her bump. The newlywed couple was laying on their tummies with strawberries and chocolate before them . Breeze was laying on Sagis laps while Jane was sitting on a camp chair with juice in her hand . The only person missing was Veronica who was with the elders in the house and Bonolo was sitting by with her legs folded with a sandwich in her hand .

James : "" So by now as you all are reading this - hopefully a year has passed without me . And even

so I hope your holding each other as one . I want you to know that what I did - I did it out of love and care for you all . Knowing Kagiso with the little time I spent - surely your blaming yourself for my sacrifice. Dont be . I died with love in my heart .

To Breeze- my brother and my friend. You've always been there for me man . I know that my funeral must be devastating to you but I need you to find a way to move on past me . Dont let my death hold you back . You once told me that you think your broken , tell you what - in my eyes you looked nothing like broken . Your the strongest person I've ever met to break at the time like this and with that I know you will find a solution forward and always will .

To my little annoying mouse , I love you girl . Sorry that I did not get a chance to come say goodbye. I know this must be hurting you more than I can even imagine, I'm sorry . But I know that your grown now and capable of making the decisions of your own and I hope you make the right ones . Surely by now your a lawyer if not chasing people out with my

gun . Either way I need you to live one sister and have a family of your own . Find a man who'll love you and the one you love . You have my blessings . And please try to resist a pretty face . Make me proud sister

To my smucles.. baby I know you got a hot head as a husband. But even so i know he loves you and never will stop loving you . I cant God enough for giving me the chance to meet you. For our friendship and I hope it lives on within the both of us even in my death .

To my baby- I'm sorry love . I should have called at least but I dont have enough time . I hope one day you'd find it in your heart to forgive me . I have no enough words with my hands shaking but please honor my wish of you living your life to the fullest. Dont allow yourself to stop loving. I love you Nolo.

To the rest I didn't mention. I love you all. Please try to live on your lives with endless love in your hearts and do less fighting . I wish you all to live a

happy life toge- " (the massage cut there) Together
...

They all wiped their tears as James held the phone in his hand and walked over giving it to Ditebogo. They spent moments in silence when Ditebogo stood up raising her glass of juice.

Ditebogo: you heard him . The man said it and as we all know "lentswe la mofu ale tshelwe " so let's honor our fallen members last wish and do as such .
To Odirile!

All : To Odirile !

The all raised they glasses and Ditebogo went to sit down next to them then Kagiso wrapped his arm around her waist when all of a sudden he yawned outloud . All of them their hearts skipped and he got up getting in his knees holding his thighs as they looked at him . He finally stopped breathing outloud

and raised his head looking at them .

Rose : Are you ohk ?

Kagiso: He says he's at peace . (Smiling) And he'll always look out for the rest of us .

Ditebogo jumped in his arms and they fell as she cried .

Kagiso: Its ohk ... he loves you and always will .

They got up and he kissed her before laying back as everyone smiled relived looking at his videos with them play on the white sheet .

THE END

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.

.